THE ANCESTORS OF
TWO BROTHERS:
Thomas Earl Garner
&
Robert Paul Garner

by
Lila Niemann Garner
2007
Lila Niemann Garner 1937 –

The pin worn in this 2007 photo is the same one that is worn by her Grandmother Millie Schilling Gumbel in the illustrations on pages 111 and 117.

Photo by Randy’s Studio, Milford, Nebraska
# Table of Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Foreword</th>
<th>iii</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Errata and Updates</td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Book One</strong></td>
<td>683</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations 1a and 1b</td>
<td>685</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>First Generation 1a</strong></td>
<td>687</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations 1a</td>
<td>689</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>First Generation 1b</strong></td>
<td>695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations 1b</td>
<td>697</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Second Generation</strong></td>
<td>703</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>737</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Book Two</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Third Generation</strong></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Fourth Generation</strong></td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Fifth Generation</strong></td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sixth Generation</strong></td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Seventh Generation</strong></td>
<td>271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Eighth Generation</strong></td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Ninth Generation</strong></td>
<td>399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>483</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Tenth Generation</strong></td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustrations</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Eleventh Generation</strong></td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Illustration</td>
<td>615</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Twelfth Generation</strong></td>
<td>617</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Thirteenth Generation</strong></td>
<td>658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Fourteenth Generation</strong></td>
<td>671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Fifteenth Generation</strong></td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sixteenth Generation</strong></td>
<td>677</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Seventeenth Generation</strong></td>
<td>679</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Eighteenth Generation</strong></td>
<td>680</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nineteenth Generation</strong></td>
<td>681</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Appendices</strong></td>
<td>753 - 770</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Index Begins</strong></td>
<td>After 770</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Gamer & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

Foreword

While genealogy has been a lifetime interest, I found time to get really serious only after our first grandchild, Brandon Thomas Garner, was born early in 1985. At first, the idea was that I would make a wall “Family Tree” chart for Brandon, and I have to admit that I really pestered his other grandmother until she provided what information she had about his mother’s family. As it turns out, more than twenty-one years have passed, and Brandon is still without his chart. Brandon has a sister, Lauren. Ancestral information for his two cousins, Jacob and Joel, was provided by their mother. For all of them, this book will have to take the place of charts.

I attended a workshop and discovered early that a lot of genealogical information was available. The workshop gave me ideas about how and where to research. My invaluable source has been the Family History Center in Lincoln, Nebraska and its parent Family History Library in Salt Lake City, Utah. Of course, there is a limit to every archive’s holdings, and this pursuit of ancestors took Ben and me to Alabama, Arkansas, Connecticut, Georgia, Illinois, Mississippi, Missouri, North Carolina, South Carolina, Tennessee, Texas and Virginia. We also traveled to Germany for research, with trips to France, the Isle of Jersey, Scotland and Sweden just to look at ancestors’ homelands. After Ben died, I made tying-up-loose-ends research trips to Arkansas, Kentucky, Tennessee, North Carolina, Virginia and Germany.

Before I even thought about having a computer I filled out Family Group Sheets by hand, and I was struck by the sheer number of relatives who either never married or who had no children. John Greenleaf Whittier wrote, “For of all sad words of tongue or pen, the saddest are these: It might have been.” The saddest words I have written are “Died without issue.” My Aunt Nellie, Nellie Angelica Gumbel Bye, my mother’s sister, who was very dear to me and who died without issue, is the one who comes most often to mind. She and Uncle Charlie married rather late in life; she was eight years older than my mother and was like a grandmother to me. It was she who compiled what was to become the backbone of my research on the Gumbel family and to a lesser degree on the Schilling ancestry. She liked for everything to be “nice,” and therefore left out some interesting things about the family.

An early version of my word processing program warned that my writing style was “ponderous”. I started across the top of the pedigree chart, writing Garner biographies first. As I gained experience and confidence, I know my writing improved to some degree. Please don’t be too critical—I don’t pretend to possess any writing style.

The book is arranged in the Ahnentafel style. The two brothers, Thomas Earl Garner and Robert Paul Garner are persons 1a and 1b (Bob is not a second-class person, he’s just younger than Tom). Using the Ahnentafel system, one doubles a person’s number to find his/her father, adds one to the doubled number to find his/her mother. After Person #1 (in the case of this book after Persons 1a and 1b) males are always assigned even numbers and females always have odd numbers.

Anyone who finds an ancestor who is a sibling of one of Tom and Bob’s direct ancestors can assign the sibling the same number as the direct ancestor, and the number doubling can be carried on to isolate his branch of the family from the rest. “Things equal to the same thing or equal things are equal to each other” applies to children born of the same parents as well as to geometry. When I knew the names of siblings, their spouses and whether or not they had issue, it is noted.

Why does Book One come after Book Two? I wish there was a really good explanation. I was ready to print Book Two, but couldn’t quite make myself finish Ben’s biography and my own
autobiography. I decided to go ahead and print Book Two, thinking that when there weren't any excuses left, I would finish Book One, and that is essentially what happened.

**Illustrations are always keyed to the Ahnentafel Numbers.** There are photographs of several ancestors, a photo of a painting of one, several signatures, and a number of gravestone pictures; these are the illustrations I have focused on, and there are a few other illustrations. I have not attempted to incorporate the pictures into the text, preferring to place the illustrations at the end of their respective generations where there is no possibility of bleed-through from the reverse.

The book was really compiled for my direct descendants, its purpose to present the names of direct ancestors I have located and documented in my research, and to present their biographies in a usable form. Where possible, I tell something about each person, either from my own personal knowledge, from the family lore or from information found in newspapers, courthouses, church records, etc. As the research moves farther and farther back from the present, there is less and less information available. Therefore, the earliest generations contain scarcely any vital statistics and nothing about their lives.

**Theories:** There are some family branches that I have been unsuccessful in researching, and sometimes I have developed one or more theories or have been furnished questionable "facts". Inability to distinguish fact from dreamed-up scenario has been a problem among genealogists. I once mentioned a theory to a distant cousin only to have it appear on his computerized Family Group Sheet as a fact; people seem to think that once something gets into a computer, that makes it correct! When I have developed theories and wish to expound upon them, I have used this

| Abadi font |

in the hope that all will be alerted that what they are reading is unproven. Perhaps this will save research time for a future family historian.

I often wrote while Ben was playing in cribbage tournaments, we spent a portion of some winters in Texas, and I wrote while camping after Ben died. Parts of the book were written at the following places other than at home in Milford: Burwell and Alexandria, Nebraska; Yankton and Sioux Falls, South Dakota; Des Moines, Iowa; and Mission, Texas.

Milford, Nebraska
27 January 2007

“A people that take no pride in the noble achievements of remote ancestors will never achieve anything worthy to be remembered with pride by remote descendants.”

– Macaulay.
Errata and Updates

Somehow I let my program slip away from its formatting, and printed more than one hundred even page numbers on the inside instead of the outside of the page. Instead of reprinting, I printed an additional page number in the correct position. I have seen a misplaced period and several typographical errors that do not change the meaning of the text. Some make it seem like I don’t understand grammar and spelling. If these errors are distracting, I’m sorry. Ben would have caught my typos if he had lived. He was planning to proofread.

After the illustrations were printed, I learned that tintype photos are mirror images. I should have mirrored them with my photo program.

After the pages were printed, the items below came to light, either as new information or errors in the text:

Page 53, Person Number 8: According to Index to Arkansas Confederate Pension Applications, compiled by Desmond Walls Allen, Jesse Garner served in Company B, McNeil Arkansas Infantry. His wife Mary, Person Number 9, received a widow’s pension from Clark County, Arkansas.

Page 66, Person Number 10: In the list of children, Euclid J. Dafford is child 5, Cora Elizabeth is child 6, and Neva Ann is child 7; Euclid and Cora were accidentally merged into the same line.

Page 81, Person Number 13: Jette Grolm’s twin brother was named Wilhelm, not William.

Pages 128, 129 and 130, Persons Number 18 and 19: Early in 2007 I was contacted by Ms. Gary Hagood Brightwell, a descendant of John Blassingame Robinson’s sister Esther Benson Robinson, who inherited what she describes as the greater bulk of Frances Miles Hagood “Queenie” Mauldin’s papers. Gary also has copies of the papers accumulated by Queenie’s sister Lucie Virginia Hagood Bruce. Although every document has not yet been scrutinized, she has found neither a Robinson family record nor a letter from Elizabeth Ann Clingman Robinson, which are mentioned on the above pages. After the Mauldin and Bruce collections are catalogued, they will be merged with the James Earle Hagood Papers, which are archived and may be researched at the South Caroliniana Library at The University of South Carolina at Columbia.

Page 149, Person Number 29: Nowhere in her biography did I state specifically that Angelica Nuhn’s parents were Wilhelm Nuhn and Anna Margareta Bätz.

Page 158, Person Number 30, and Page 162, Person Number 31: A message posted on the Internet in 1999 brought an answer in 2006: “Ludwig Altendorf” was really “Ludwig or Louis Ohlendorf”. The couple did have issue: Henrietta Koch (née Ohlendorf), mentioned on Page 161, is their daughter. While this new information

1 ©1991, Conway, Arkansas.
proves that Henrietta Koch was Conradine (Krome) Schilling’s own niece and not a Schilling niece, there is still no indication about whether Herman Schilling had additional siblings whose names are not known (Footnote 107, page 158).

Pages 159 and 252, Persons Numbers 31 and 62: I had searched diligently through indexes and passenger lists fifteen years ago without success. New (2006) indexes found the Krome family arriving at New Orleans on the Ship Olbers on 23 December 1846, having sailed from Bremen. I could not find the date of her departure from Bremen, but in other years, the voyage took 50 days and 52 days. There has to be some time for repair and restocking of supplies, so it seems clear, allowing for this lag time in New Orleans in June and at Bremen after her return from New Orleans, that she must have departed Bremen on second her 1846 voyage about 1 November 1846. Someone surely remembered ‘five weeks’ wrong when Conradine’s obituary was written, confusing it with 50 days.

Page 187, Person Number 32: I failed to note a small but possibly important clue for finding Garner roots in Germany: if it is true that they were potters, one might research the parts of Germany where suitable clay for making pottery is found.

Page 199, Person Number 38: Last complete paragraph “…between Frances Anderson…” should read, “between Francis Anderson…”.

Page 271, Person Number 72: According to Fauquier During the Proprietorship by H. C. Groome\(^2\), an Act provided that “Thirty acres of land the property of John Monroe, in the county of Fauquier, shall be and they are hereby vested in John Monroe, William Brown, John Robinson, Joseph Smith, Minor Winn, William S. Pickett, Alexander Scott, John Dearing and Daniel Floweree, gentlemen, trustees, to be by them or a majority of them, laid off into lots of half an acre each, with convenient streets, and establish a town by the name of Salem.” The town was platted on 27 April, 1797. It seems certain, since both John Robinson and Joseph Smith were named, that this is our John, whose second father-in-law was Joseph Smith.

Page 272, Person Number 72: First complete paragraph: “…Joseph’s widow, Sarah (Smith) Robinson…” should read “John’s widow…”

Pages 420 and 483, Person Number 309: It is puzzling to me, when her own patriotic service was proved, that Elizabeth (Pledge) Poindexter’s gravestone and plaque only honor her as “Wife of a Revolutionary Soldier.” I didn’t realize this until a new photo management program magnified the picture so that the words on the plaque could be read.

Page 468, Person Number 428: Ms. Hilcker’s name was Anna Ilsabein, not Alla Ilsabein.

Page 487, Person Number 578: “North Franham Parish” should read “North Farnham Parish.”

---

\(^2\) Richmond: Old Dominion Press, 1927.
Page 575, Person Number 1424: In the second paragraph of his will, Peter Gunnarson Rambo names his daughter and her husband. Their names are Yertrude Bankston and Andrew Bankston, not Bandson as is printed. The name eventually became Bengston.

Page 705, Person Number 2: Line three in the fourth complete paragraph should read “…but the year is not stated.”

While editing the index, I realized that I had a lot of trouble with names like Marie and Maria, Catharine and Catherine, Herman and Hermann among others.
Notes:
Book Two:

The Generations Gone Before
Beginning with Generation Three

For reasons of privacy and the threat of identity theft, names only, no data, are being published on the Web for the first two generations, all of whom are living (2006) except Person Number 2, Bennie Fay Garner.

If any reference is made to pages or footnotes that appear among the first two generations, it is unfortunate that they cannot be referred to. The times we live in make it imperative that we not disclose too much about ourselves.

FIRST GENERATION: THE TWO BROTHERS

1a – Thomas Earl GARNER: he is married and has a son and a daughter.
1b – Robert Paul GARNER: he is married and has two sons.

SECOND GENERATION: THEIR PARENTS

2 – Bennie Fay GARNER
3 – Lila Marie NIEMANN

Book One
(Generations One and Two, above)
Begins on Page 683
Notes:
THIRD GENERATION

4 - Jessie Claude GARNER, the son of Jesse M. Garner and his wife Mary Jane née Robinson, was born 1 November 1884 in the Salem community near Amity, Clark County, Arkansas. Papa, as we called him, used Claude as his first name, but was legally Jessie Claude.

He married Neva Ann Dafford on 24 February 1908 in Amity. The couple drove up to the home of Goodin Deaton, Justice of the Peace, in some kind of horse- or mule-drawn conveyance, and Mr. Deaton, a distant Garner relative through the Jacksons, came out and married them where they sat in the wagon or buggy.

The couple became the parents of nine children, two of whom died young. The five sons who survived to maturity fathered five children, including one who was adopted, and the two daughters had three children. Papa must have been sorry not to have more grandchildren; I once heard him remark, referring to his sons, “I was a better man than any one of them.” The two daughters had three children, and there are seven great-grandchildren.

Too young for the Spanish-American War, he would have been exempt because he had a family by the time men were drafted for World War I service. He was required to register for
the draft however, and he did so at Arkadelphia, Arkansas on 12 September 1918\(^1\).

In 1917, Claude ("Claud" in the record) was chosen to represent his local church, Salem-Clark Missionary Baptist Church\(^2\), at the Pike County Baptist Association as a messenger.

His World War I draft registration card, C3-1-6, Serial Number 1330, Order Number 508, states his name as Jessie Claud Gamer, but his own signature appears on it "Jessie Claude Garner". His permanent home address is Amity, Clark, Arkansas, his age is 33 years, and his date of birth is November 1\(^{st}\) 1884. His race is white, with a check in one of the Indian categories “Citizen”, the other Indian category being “Non-citizen”\(^3\). He was a native-born U. S. citizen, and his occupation was farming, at Amity, Clark County, Arkansas. His nearest relative was Mrs. Neva Gamer of Amity. He is described as “short” at 69 inches tall, stout in build, with blue eyes and light hair. He had lost neither a limb nor an eye, and had no obvious physical disqualifications. I infer from the date and the “C” series, that this was the third registration for the World War I draft. The war was nearing its end by the time he was required to register, but of course no one knew that when the decision was made to carry out that registration.

Papa was also required to register for the World War II draft, and did so on 27 April 1942. His name on the card is Jessie Claude Garner, but he signs J. C. Garner. He lived at Route 3, Amity, Arkansas. His age was 57 years, and he was born at Amity, Arkansas on 2 November 1884. Mrs. Claude Gamer, Route 3, Amity, Arkansas is listed in the blank that asks for “Name and Address of Person Who Will Always Know Your Address”. He was employed by Mr. John Francis, Amity, Arkansas.

His son Vance Garner remembered (2003) that John Francis had a lumber mill, so it is reasonable to assume that Papa was working at the lumber mill in 1942.

The back of the World War II draft registration card indicates that he was white, five feet nine inches in height, and weighed 167 pounds. His eyes were blue, his hair brown and his complexion light brown. He had “no other obvious physical characteristics that will aid in identification”. He was not drafted nor did he volunteer for military service.

He was a gentleman and a gentle man. He was a hard-working farmer, raising cotton, corn, peanuts, watermelons, etc., using mules as draft animals. He raised hogs to put meat on the table; the first cold snap in the fall meant hog-killing time, and additional hogs were slaughtered as winter progressed.

When there was surplus produce from the garden, he would load it onto a wagon and take it

---

1 The entire registration group “C” was apparently required to register on that date. The whole world seems to have stopped while this registration, 12 September 1918, occurred.
3 As recently as November 2003, descendants of Elizabeth Poindexter, née Pledge were continuing to assert that the Dawes Commission unjustly rejected their claims to Indian enrollment in 1896. A demurrer seems to have been filed, however, and may still have been pending in 1918, or Claude may have thought it was still pending.
to Hot Springs to sell. This was a slow trip; he would get as far as Chinquapin Springs the first night, camp there, go to Hot Springs and transact his business and get as far back as Chinquapin Springs the second night, and home before nightfall on the third. This was a regular stopover for people going to Hot Springs from northern Clark County and the Glenwood area. Road rebuilding has obliterated the old camping place so it really cannot be identified any more.

He managed a peach orchard during the depression of the 1930s, supervising the employees but doing his share of the hard work in that era before mechanization. His family lived in a house that went with the orchard. An old Model-T truck was part of the orchard equipment, but he never learned to drive it, and the family never owned a car.

His Application for Social Security Number gave me the second firm evidence, the first being from her marriage record, to conclude that his mother’s maiden name was not Clingman, as family members were insisting, but Robinson (although the name on the form is ‘Roberson’). His signature found in Illustration 4 is from that form, dated 13 August 1941.

His adult children laughed about the fact that each time the family moved, they lived in a house closer to Amity; and by the time Ben finished high school, they were living in town. Claude later worked in the logging industry, then at a sawmill, where he sustained an injury to his hand that put an end to his working life. Although he was without formal training, he did some barbering for family members; relatives would come on Sundays and have him cut their hair.

He enjoyed playing baseball while he was able, and in later years was called upon to umpire. Ben remembered him finishing homemade baseball bats—probably fashioned from native hickory branches—using a piece of broken glass to smooth them. Sunday baseball was acceptable, but Sunday fishing was not. When I came into the family, I found this hard to understand, because fishing, as I knew it, was a pleasant Sunday pastime. When we went fishing, there was no expectation of catching enough fish to eat; if we did so, it was an unexpected bonus. For the Garners, to fish was to expect a catch, thus putting meat on the table, which explains why it was ‘work’ forbidden on Sunday. When a fishing trip culminated with a meal of fish cooked at the river, Papa was the cook. Ben remembers one occasion when the fishing was not very successful, but someone caught a large gar. Papa cooked it by first boiling, then frying it, and Ben says, “It wasn’t bad”.

His daughter Lottie remembered an interesting anecdote: Claude and his family set out from their home in or near Amity, with mules and wagon, to visit his mother, Mary Jane Gamer, who lived in the Salem Community. This of course was before they had telephones, so she wasn’t expecting them; it was also before electric motors and radios, so silence prevailed unless there was human conversation or natural noise. Papa sneezed at a crossroads about

---

4 This is a place just west of Pearcy that was locally known as Chinquapin Springs and Camp, but was apparently not officially named. Local residents state (2002) that due to rerouting of the road and other changes, it can no longer be found. It was probably named for the chinquapin tree, a type of oak. There is a Chincapin Street in Hot Springs, and the word is sometimes spelled ‘chinkapin’.

5 Ben is Person Number 2 in this book.
three quarters of a mile from her home, as the crow flies, and she remarked to her son Peter (the two made a home together) that Claude was coming, she heard him sneeze. This may belong in Mary Jane’s story (a mother is a mother forever), but his loud, distinctive sneeze belonged to him.

Ben remembers that Papa did the family shopping when the children were young, going to Amity with a mule-drawn wagon. In cold weather he wore an old overcoat, thought to be left from someone’s Army service; it had large pockets. The kids were always waiting for him to come home, because they would find a sack of candy—what he could buy for a nickel—in one of the pockets. In those times, a nickel would buy quite a lot of candy.

He also did all the family letter writing—at least we never received a letter written by ‘Mama’. The letters were always brief, but he did keep in touch, and gave any family news there was to tell. I’m sorry now that none of his letters was saved, but we weren’t thinking about how important things of that nature would seem, in the future. His daughter Sue related that Papa was very good at mathematics, and was able to help his children with homework.

The family Christmas usually consisted of a crate of fruit, half apples and half oranges; the wooden crates were divided in the center.

It was told to me that a neighbor complained to him about having nothing to eat except white gravy. Papa is said to have told him that if he would raise a garden, there would be something else to eat.

He carried a pocket watch in the bib pocket of his overalls, and entertained grandchildren sitting on his lap by letting them listen to it tick.

Photos are rare—he really didn’t like to have his picture taken. One reproduced here in Illustration 4 was taken when he was about 28 years old, the others was taken well after his prime.

He would have told me whatever I wanted to know about the family, if I had only asked. I recall asking about the Garner family’s ethnicity (I’m sure I didn’t know that word then), and he said he reckoned they were Scots-Irish. So far I haven’t found that ethnicity among his ancestors, but it certainly could be from his Grandmother Garner, who was Susan Jackson, or from his mother’s Robinson family who are first found in Virginia and about whom no immigration facts are known. It does seem strange to me that he did not mention having had a brother Robert at the time we named our baby Robert Garner, although this happened during his last illness and he may have been too weak to initiate a conversation.

In his later years, he suffered from arthritis or rheumatism, and rubbed liniment on his aching joints. At the end of this ‘treatment’, he would rub the last of the liniment off his hands onto his head, and he declared, only half in jest, that the liniment was making hair grow on his nearly bald pate—he was not absolutely bald but his hair was very thin.
Because Papa became disabled before he was old enough to retire, the Garners were poor in their old age. Therefore, he didn’t make a will, there was no estate to settle, and as far as I know there is nothing on file in the courthouse. Son Clyde had bought a house for them to live in.

Papa died 4 September 1963 at the hospital in Arkadelphia, Clark County, Arkansas, of cancer that started in a lung (he was a heavy smoker) and eventually spread to his liver and other organs. He is buried in Jones Cemetery near Amity, under a huge, beautiful old magnolia tree.

His obituary, from The Gazette, Little Rock, Arkansas, follows:

“Jesse Garner, Amity Resident

“Arkadelphia, Sept 5—Jesse Claude Gamer, aged 78, of Amity, a retired sawmill employee, died Wednesday at a hospital here. He was a native of Clark County and a member of the Salem Baptist Church. Survivors include his wife, Mrs. Neva Dafford Gamer; five sons, Clyde Gamer and Pap Gamer, both of Texas, Willard Gamer and Vance Gamer, both of California, and Benny Fay Gamer, of St. Louis; two daughters, Mrs. Lottie Pettifer of Amity and Mrs. Sue Thomason of France, and eight grandchildren. Funeral will be at 2 p.m. Saturday at the First Baptist Church at Amity. Burial will be at Jones Cemetery by Murry Funeral Service.”

By way of explanation, “Pap” should be “Pat”; Ben’s name was “Bennie” not “Benny” and he was living in East St. Louis, Illinois; Lottie’s name was Pettifer, and Sue was living in France because her husband was stationed there with the U. S. Army.

Siblings, surname Garner:
- Susan Elizabeth married Elias Howell; issue
- Miley E. married Dennis B. Hill; issue
- Peter Jacob married Laura Shaha; issue
- Martha L. died young without issue
- Arthur K. married first Annie Givens, no issue; married second Alice Wright, issue
- John B[lassingame?] R[obinson?] married Rhoda Wright; issue
- [Jessie Claude]
- Robert, disappears from census, presumably died young without issue
- Gracie married William Waldrum; issue
- (One or two more siblings, names not known, died young without issue)

See Illustration Number 4 and Illustrations Number 4 and 5 (two pages).

Parents are Numbers 8 and 9.

6 Beside his gravestone is a home-made, square cement marker without engraving. It marks the grave of his niece, Ethel Howell. The family came to Amity from their home at Delight for a visit, and Ethel got sick and died while they were there, so she is buried at Amity near the Garner babies, William (who was called ‘Earlie’) and Charles.
5 - Neva Ann DAFFORD was born 4 February 1892 near Amity, in Clark County, Arkansas, to William Green "Billie" Dafford and his wife Jane, née Runyan. Some of her relatives called her ‘Nebb’.

She attended a school that was conducted at the church in the Salem Community near Amity. She appears to be a teenager on the only school picture we possess. The only place I find her handwriting is her signature is on Ben’s delay birth certificate; it is likely that she also signed delayed birth certificates for some of her other children.

On 24 February 1908, twenty days after her sixteenth birthday, she married Claude Gamer. Their daughter Lottie believes that Neva wouldn’t have been allowed to marry so young if it hadn’t been for a rather unhappy situation at home. After the death of Billie Dafford, Neva’s father, she and her brother, Euclid “Euke” lived at the family home with their mother until Euke’s marriage. His wife wasn’t well, and Neva was called upon to act as a servant. When Neva wanted to marry (and it certainly was not a jumping-out-of-the-frying-pan-into-the-fire situation: Claude Gamer was a good man, good to her, hard-working and able to make a living), her mother gave permission in spite of Neva’s youth, as she saw it as her chance to make a better life for herself.

The family was of the Baptist faith, but Neva is said to have stated, “I was rocked in a Methodist cradle”; her mother’s family was Methodist, but among her ancestors can be found Lutherans, Quakers, Baptists, Episcopalians and probably others.

She became the mother of nine children, seven sons and two daughters, whom she disciplined with a switch. The oldest and the youngest died young, but the others grew to maturity and married. I personally heard her admit to crying every time she found out she was pregnant; the babies kept coming. She didn’t consult a physician during her pregnancies; a few weeks before her confinements, Papa would arrange with a local doctor that he would attend her when it was time for them to send for him.

She sewed clothing for her family, making underclothing from sugar sacks. She had a particularly practical pattern for a sunbonnet: Thirteen buttons fasten the bonnet to the bill, so it can be taken apart when laundered, and each piece can be laid out flat for ironing.

Daughter Sue told about her mother selling eggs so that there would be enough money for something extra that the children needed for school.

Reading through microfilms of some of the few Amity newspapers that have been saved, I chanced upon this article that gives a little insight into customs of the times.

*Amity Owl, 9 February 1933:*

"The relatives of Mrs. Claud Garner surprised her on her birthday which was last Saturday, by gathering with well filled baskets and making it a merry day."

---

7 Ben is Person Number 2 in this book.
Although I never sensed it after I came into the family in 1956, daughter Lottie remembers that her mother was deathly afraid of electrical storms and tornados, and prevailed upon her husband to dig a storm cellar whenever they moved to a place that didn’t already have one.

She was a ladylike woman and wanted her daughters to be ladies, exhorting them to keep their knees together, to keep their knees covered by their skirts. Like many southern ladies of her era, she used snuff, keeping a clean coffee can by the side of her rocking chair, to use as a ‘spit can’. The heavy, footed glasses (up North they would be called schooners) that contained her Tuberose® Snuff were later used for serving iced tea.

I have heard her remark more than once, “I just love to stay home”, and this may account for the fact that Papa did the shopping. She admitted that she especially liked for her hair and her feet to look nice. Her daughters gave her home permanents and dressed her hair in later years. She didn’t have her hair bobbed until she was a mature woman, and doubtless took care of it herself when it was long. During her old age, it was hard to find nice-looking, comfortable shoes because her feet were painful and somewhat deformed due to arthritis.

After Claude’s death, she and daughter Lottie Petifer moved to a new apartment in Amity, and Clyde sold the house they had been living in to his sister Sue and her husband, who was retiring from the U. S. Army. The house remained in the family, but Neva remarked that she “…felt like she had left Claude” when she moved away.

She suffered from high blood pressure and the debilities of old age, and died 2 March 1970, at a hospital in Hot Springs. Her obituary, published in the Hot Springs, Arkansas Sentinel Record on 4 March 1970, follows:

“Mrs. Neva Garner

ARKADELPHIA—Mrs. Neva Dafford Gamer, 78, of Amity, died Monday at her home.

“She was the widow of John C. Gamer and a member of the Salem Baptist Church near Amity.

“Survivors include five sons, Willard Gamer of Fresno, Calif., Vance Gamer of Lompock, Calif., Clyde Gamer of Dallas, Tex., Pat Gamer of Wichita Falls, Tex., and B. F. Gamer of Milford, Neb.; two daughters, Mrs. Sue Thomason and Mrs. Lottie Petifer, both of Amity; two brothers, Euke Dafford and Bob Dafford, both of Texas; and eight grandchildren.

“Funeral will be at 11:30 a.m. today at the First Baptist Church at Amity, Rev. John Holmes officiating. Burial will be in Jones Cemetery by Murry-Ruggles Funeral Home.”

Errors known to me, in order of their appearance:
1. She was the widow of Jessie C. Gamer.
2. Vance lived at Lompoc, California.
3. Daughter, Mrs. Petifer, is ‘Lottie’.
4. Brother, Euke, lived at Amity, not in Texas (unless he was temporarily living

8 Tobacco was an integral part of the southern culture and people saw nothing wrong with its use, not realizing its unhealthful qualities.
with a daughter there).

She is buried beside her husband at Jones Cemetery near Amity near the two sons who died young. Daughter Lottie, during her lifetime, installed her gravestone among the family group as well, and Clyde and Sue and their spouses are buried elsewhere in Jones Cemetery.

Siblings, surname Dafford
Andrew J., married Melissa Ellen Davis; issue
James Archey (or Archibald) “Jimmy”, died young
Nora Bell “Node” married Willis Alexander Wright; issue
Robert Lee, never married
Euclid J. “Euke”, married Mary Hart née McMenis; issue
Cora Elizabeth, married Thomas Monroe Lambert; issue
[Neva]

See Illustrations Number 5 and Illustrations Number 4 and 5 (two pages).

Parents are Numbers 10 and 11.

6 – Oscar August NIEMANN was born on Wednesday, 24 August 1892 to Gottlieb Niemann and his wife, Henriette née Groilm, on the Niemann farm in G Precinct south of Seward, in Seward County, Nebraska. He was baptized with the names ‘August Oscar’ on Thursday, 29 December 1892 by the Rev. P. Speidel. The witnesses were his mother’s sister Caroline “Lina” (Groilm) Schmidt and her husband August, who would have traveled from their home in Elm Creek for the occasion. Rev. Speidel was the pastor of Friedens Evangelical Church in Seward. According to the church record, the ceremony took place in the parsonage.

Oscar’s baptismal certificate is quite elaborate. By the time it came into my possession in 1992, it had been folded, rolled and reinforced with tape until its condition has to be described as very bad indeed. I contacted a paper conservator in Kansas City who agreed to accept the job of restoring it. It went by registered mail to Kansas City in a box, because I was afraid that flattening it would damage it further. When it came back more than a year later, it was beautifully restored and the tape marks had all been removed. She could have done further restoration, perhaps removing or at least minimizing the fold marks; but the money already spent (about $500) seemed like a lot to me, and I chose to leave the document as it is now. The conservation steps she took should prevent further deterioration, and it is in a mylar (archival plastic) sleeve and framed behind glass that filters ultra-violet light.

Having this original record of his birth and baptism constituted proof of his birth date, and

9 Some descendants state that the ‘J’ stand for ‘Jefferson’, and others assert that it stands for ‘Jackson’.
10 There is a question about her name; her daughter Ludy thought it was Nora Bell or maybe Elnora/Lenora Belzora, and her sister Cora’s family bible entry says ‘L. B’.
11 Uncle Bob’s death certificate states that he was a widower; the informant was the administrator of the Home for Aged Masons where he lived during his old age, and I believe the informant simply assumed that he was a widower.
unlike many, he had no trouble proving his age when he became eligible to receive Social Security benefits.

The garment Oscar is wearing in his baptismal photo looks to be very elaborate as well as very warm. I inquired of his youngest brother’s widow, Edith Niemann, about its whereabouts, but she didn’t recall anything about it; as far as she knew, the family in Germany had never mentioned seeing it. I believe it is the same dress worn by Uncle Walter when he was baptized, and maybe he got it when things were divided; I didn’t think about asking his daughter Christa before she died. The Niemanns had to have two dresses when the twins came along, so the dress may have been discarded, may even have been sold at the Niemann auction in 1900.

When my first baby was expected I was wishing for twins, and Oscar remarked that he wouldn’t wish twins onto anyone. One of his earlier memories was being required to help (and a child nearly five years old could do a lot of fetching) after his twin sisters were born in April, 1897.

I found a yellowed scrap of paper containing the following:

“Oscar Niemann
5 years old in July 1898
Dist. 86”

District 86 was a rural school about 2.4 miles southwest of the Niemann farm, in Section 9 in J Precinct, and presumably Oscar started to school there.

He mentioned that school was difficult for him. The schools in Seward County were of course conducted in English, and it would have been trying for a child coming from a family who spoke mostly German at home.

As I began to document the family lore that the Niemann family went to Germany for a visit in 1900 and were persuaded to remain there, the first indication of a departure date was that the family cannot be found on the 1900 census. I found a newspaper article stating that they had departed from Seward on 19 April 1900. This trip, intended for only a visit, certainly made a vast difference in Oscar’s life, as well as the lives of other family members. All the life events that genealogists usually record—birth, marriage, death and burial—occurred in Seward County, Nebraska, and if one didn’t know otherwise, he could infer from those facts that Oscar had never left Nebraska.

Since I did know about the more than twenty-four years spent in Germany, I searched for and found his confirmation and a bit of military documentation; and I have his German passport. The documents created in Germany use the spelling ‘Oskar’.

After they settled in Germany he had to adapt to a very different educational system, and I have come to believe that his learning process was complicated because he was at least somewhat dyslexic. My guess is reinforced by something his Aunt Lina Schmidt wrote to him on 13 August 1934, translation by Rosemarie Cummins:
“...Please write so I can read it better....”

I possess a copy of a letter that he wrote to her later, and while his handwriting is not classic Old German Script, it is legible—he may have been more careful than he had been earlier, in response to her demand.

The Niemann Hof (farmland, farmstead and its dependencies) in Währntrup was in the parish of Oerlinghausen until a new parish with its seat in Helpup was established about 1906. The class having begun their confirmation instruction on 23 September 1905, Oscar’s confirmation took place in Helpup on 30 September 1906, with first communion on the same day. Interestingly enough, the Helpup confirmation record, in a different, more modern handwriting than the confirmation entry, contains this in the ‘remarks’ column (the ZIP code is wrong):

“Amerika. Mrs. Oskar Niemann, 214 East Seward Street, Seward, Nebraska 62434.”

I don’t know when or why these remarks were written unless a reunion was being planned, and by the time I found this, his youngest brother Hugo, who might have been asked about him and furnished the information, was no longer living. Addresses of a few other 1906 confirmands appear in the ‘remarks’ column, and a cross—the German genealogical symbol meaning death—appears beside many of the names.

Oscar remembered with pleasure the wonderful German white asparagus, and that some family member went some distance to buy it. Relatives there tell me that Serine is the prime (nearby) place to get white asparagus, the sandy soil there providing the perfect environment for asparagus production, and that is where one would have bought it before the era of the modern market.

He told of working in the hay field, cutting hay with a scythe and having to set the pace for the other hay-cutters, the farm employees, although he was young and they were experienced.

There is a delightful picture of the Niemann siblings taken about 1910: four big teenagers (Oscar already showing signs of balding), and little Hugo about a year old.

Oscar served six years in the German army, two years in peacetime and four years in wartime (or perhaps the reverse). I’ve heard him tell this many times but I didn’t ask any questions. His service in the German Army begs the question, why would a citizen of the United States fight for Germany? The answer is that a young man in Oscar’s situation either conformed and served, or he was shot as a spy.

As I began to do research, I wanted to know with which Regiment and which Company he had served. One thing he did tell was that few men survived from his immediate group, perhaps platoon—the number of survivors is eight in my own recollection, but I don’t know

12 ZIP codes came into use in the United States about 1960.
where I got that number.

The World War I era German military personnel records did not survive World War II, ruling out any research in military records. However, hospital records did survive, and I knew that he had been hospitalized for boils, an affliction seldom seen since the advent of the antibiotic medications. Boils are caused by the staphylococci bacterium, which is highly contagious. The spreading of the bacteria was not understood at that time, however, and he was assigned, as an ambulatory patient, to help care for other patients. He learned to wrap sprained limbs with elastic bandages, and was able to do it with skill, wrapping the bandage neither too loose nor too tight.

Late in 2001, I wrote to the Krankenbuchlager (repository for military medical records) in Berlin, and on 31 January 2002, I received an abstract, in German of course, of his medical record. He was treated twice at Lazaretts (military medical facilities) in Lille, France, for Darmkatarrh (enteritis: inflammation of the intestine, especially the ilium) and for Furunkel (boil). The boil was on the fourth finger of his right hand (if it was oozing, the matter would have gotten onto the elastic bandages with which he was wrapping other patients...).

Apparently he was not treated there for his cough, which was caused by exposure to mustard gas when the wind changed and blew the gas back at the Germans. I knew about the boils (and I believe there was more than one), and I knew his digestive system was fragile although I didn’t know that the problem started so early in his life. I did know, however, that the Army was not well fed, and when the soldiers were starving, someone shot a cat, cooked it, and told his fellow-soldiers that it was rabbit, but divulged his secret after they had eaten it.

I really hoped to find out his rank and the name or number of his military unit; and while his rank was not given, the unit was stated: as a reservist, he served with the 10th Company, 55th Infantry Regiment. It is said to have been involved in some of the bloodiest battles of the war, including vicious hand-to-hand fighting13 which he shuddered to recall. A calendar of its employment is below, abstracted from two Regimental histories14 written while memories were fresh and records were still available. I had known about the march through Belgium, a slog though mud and cold water that he blamed for the leg pain that plagued him the rest of his life. Following is a calendar of the 55th Infantry Regiment’s employment (translation by Oscar’s great-grandniece, Veronika Timpe):

1914: Belgium (Eupen-Wavre-Nivelles-Seneffe-Thuin). Infantry Regiment 55 took part in the siege of Maubeuge. The Division was then deployed near Rheims (September). From October the 13th Infantry Division was deployed in Artois (near Angres-Souchez) and later near Fromelles-Aubers.

1915 until March 1916: in Artois (Neuve Chapelle-Festubert).

---

13 From a Website dealing with Verdun: “The fringes around the shelled zones were usually spared by the opposing artilleries because the infantry were fighting there hand-to-hand with knives, bayonets, grenades, guns and flame throwers, until every square yard of earth became hotly disputed.”
March through September 1916: Verdun (Hill 304)  
September 1916: Somme (Bouchavesnes-Cléry sur Somme)  
September 1916 through May 1917: Verdun (Hill 304)  
June and July 1917: Chemin des Dames (Cerny)  
August and September 1917: St. Gobain  
September and October 1917: Crépy-en-Laonnois  
October 1917: Chemin des Dames (Laffaux)  
November 1917: resting near Sedan  
December 1917 and January 1918: Verdun-Meuse (Bois de Malancourt - Haucourt)  
Then training and resting [in preparation for the] Kaiserschlacht  
March and April 1918: Picardie (Roisel – Morlancourt - Dernancourt)  
April and May 1918: Avre (Castel – Hill 82 - Hailles)  
June through August 1918: Somme (Villers - Bretonneux - Mericourt - Bazentin)  
September 1918: resting in Alsace  
Last part of September and October 1918: Argonne Forest (Monthois - Challerange - Landres - Saint Georges - Bantheville - Nantheville)  

His grandsons remember being told as children by their Grandmother Mildred Niemann that Oscar was awarded one or more medals; what they remember is that he had an Iron Cross, First Class, but the are not absolutely certain that the terminology is correct. I suspect that it is not, because my research tells me that the First Class Iron Cross was usually reserved for officers and that it was rarely awarded. I found on the Internet a reference, with picture, of an Eisernes Kreuz 2. Klasse (Iron Cross Second Class). He gave this medal to a boy who delivered the newspaper in Seward. His wife asked him at that time if he didn’t want to save the medal for his own grandsons, and he replied that he didn’t want them to know anything about the war.

There is said to be a book about the history, of Infanterie-Regiment Graf Bülow von Dennewitz, 6. Westfälisches Nr. 55 (Infantry Regiment of Count Bülow von Dennewitz, 6th Westfalian No. 55). The regiment was founded on 5 May 1860, part of the Armee Korps Number VII. It belonged to the 13th Infantry Division. The regiment was located in Detmold, Höxter and Bielefeld. I have not pursued finding the book because I don’t read German well enough to comprehend it.

Oscar’s grandsons also remember being told that he was present when a Christmas Truce occurred, a time when the Germans communicated with their American and allied adversaries across the battle lines. He would have been able to speak some English and was perhaps one of those doing the talking. I have not delved deeply into the historical documentation of the truce; the boys remember being told that 1917 was the year it occurred.

---

15 The German is “Höhe 304” and ‘hill’, while a good translation, implies an imprecise meaning; it is a point in the terrain 304 meters above sea level. Its exact location could be found by someone interested enough to obtain a topographical map of the region; it is described as “southeast of Malancourt” in a New York Times article printed on 16 December 1916. It is also near Consenvoye, where Oscar’s brother-in-law Peter Kühn is buried. He died as a result of wounds sustained in action in August, 1916.
16 On 21 March 1918, General der Infanterie Erich Ludendorff launched his series of major offensive assaults against the British, called in German the ‘Kaiserschlacht’ but known to English-speakers as the Battle of Picardy, in an effort to gain a decisive victory before the effect of the United States’ entry into the war could be fully realized.
but the sources I’ve found so far seem to point to 1914. His regiment would not have been in France, where it is supposed to have taken place, at that time.

I have not seen it myself, but I was told that there is a book Silent Night by Weintraub, about the Christmas truce. Also, there is also a song by the American singer-songwriter John McCutchen called “Christmas in the Trenches” that deals with the event. National Public Radio is said to have done a story about it a number of years ago, but I am not personally familiar with the program. An inquiry on an Internet mailing list brought this comment:

“It is such a powerful image. The Western Front is imbedded in our minds as hell on earth, and to juxtapose it with the most festive day of the Christian year gets to the core of our humanity.”

After Germany’s defeat, life was difficult for most Germans and Oscar was no exception; he suffered for the rest of his life from the cough caused by mustard gas, and must have suffered emotionally from the trauma induced by the slaughter he had witnessed. At some point he went to Berlin, and described Unter den Linden so that I wanted to see it. Ben and I eventually did do.

It must have been after the war’s end and he had returned home to Währertrup that Oscar fell in love with a young woman who lived in the nearby parish of Lage, Ella Erne Friederike Wilhelmine Tellmann. Their marriage was opposed and prevented; relatives in Germany think that his brother Walter was instrumental in keeping the couple from marrying, perhaps thinking that if Oscar, the eldest, would marry a woman who would inherit a Hof (Ella’s father was only a merchant), he as the next oldest son would inherit the Niemann land. Ella, who was a month older than Oscar, married Friedrich Simon Christof Oberschmidt of Oberschönhagen, Lage parish, on 15 June 1923. I searched the church records for many years after the marriage, and found no issue for the Tellmann-Oberschmidt couple.

As the story came to me, Oscar danced at Ella’s wedding and then departed for America. After I found her marriage date, I realized that he must have danced at her wedding and then decided to depart for America, because the date of his departure is known, and is too long after the wedding for the ‘facts’ to hang together.

His passport, bearing the words “Deutsches Reich Reise-Pass” was issued at Detmold on 21 August 1925 in the name of August Oskar Niemann, but his signature reads only “Oskar Niemann”. According to my translation, the facts about his birth and dwelling place are correct as we know them; his build is described as medium, his face oval, his eyes blue, his hair blond, with no identifying marks present. The passport was valid until 20 August 1927.

On 12 September 1926, Oscar’s sister Alma wrote from her home in Dortmund to their mother, who had sailed to America on a business and pleasure trip (translation by Rosemarie Naether Cummins):

---

17 Uncle Walter did occupy the Niemann Hof with his wife, but family documents tell about his mismanagement of it, and he was forced to leave. Uncle Hugo, the youngest Niemann son, inherited the land.
"...How does Oscar like it, did he get acclimated? The 23rd of this month he is gone for a year...."

Since his passport is stamped with a departure date from Hamburg on 23 September 1925, we don’t know what date he actually bid his family in Währstrup goodbye. He sailed on the Cunard Line Ship *Andania*, arriving in New York on 5 October 1925.

I have (2006) the trunk he brought from Germany, the luggage tag that says "Hamburg – New York" still tied to one of the handles, another tag giving the 23 September departure date, and stating that his passage was Third Class. He rode on what he described as the immigrant train to Nebraska, and I have a note in his wife’s handwriting that states that he arrived in Seward on 9 October 1925.

He had quite a number of relatives in the Seward area, descendants of his mother’s Stülwolf uncles, as well as the Nieburs—the grandmother of the Niebuhr/Niebur immigrants (Louis who settled in Seward County dropped the ‘h’ from his name) was a sister to his grandfather Christoph Niemann. Likely the main reason for his settling at Seward was the location of the Niemann farm.

When we have driven through Nebraska’s Platte Valley, I think of him riding his motorcycle from Seward to Elm Creek to visit his Aunt Schmidt. It is very hard for me to imagine him ever riding a motorcycle. He related that he found he used less gasoline going from Elm Creek to Seward than he did going from Seward to Elm Creek. Of course, that was a geography lesson being taught to me: the elevation is considerably higher at Elm Creek than it is at Seward, although the gradient is so gradual that there is no sensation of going up or down.

As was the case with many immigrants, Oscar lived with farming families, perhaps several, as a boarder. He did farm labor for a living, meanwhile achieving a better command of the English language; he always spoke with an accent. At the time the 1930 census was taken, he was living on the Niemann farm with his second cousin once removed Alvin Niebur and his wife Mary Alice nee Johnson. It must have been about this time that he met his future wife, Mildred Hilda Gumbel. What I recall is that they met at a picnic, but I don’t know whether it was a Friedens church function and members were encouraged to invite their friends, or whether the girls employed as telephone operators planned it and those who had male friends asked them to invite other eligible men.

Mildred had been brought up in the Methodist church and taught that dancing was a sin. Oscar had loved to dance, but I believe he never danced again after he met Mildred. I recall him telling about dancing with a rather large young woman whom he described as ‘light on her feet’. I wonder if she was Ella. (I was a tall girl although not fat, and maybe he was telling me that I too, might be light on my feet if I learned to dance.) At Christmas time in 1930 Mildred wrote to Oscar’s cousin Anna Streiff and her son John, telling of their engagement and that she had an engagement ring.

---

16 Had the Niemann family remained in Seward, Oscar would have been in the same confirmation class as Alvin’s brother, Louis Niebur.
Their marriage license was issued in Seward County on 23 February 1932, and they were married on 24 February 1932. Spelling seems not to have been important to Seward officials: the marriage license gives the bridegroom’s mother’s maiden name, Grolm, as ‘Grolmen’.

I have her wedding dress, a brown print crepe with a cowl neckline. His suit was brown, and if I recall correctly it had alternating pale blue and buff pinstripes. A Seward newspaper printed the following announcement:

“At a wedding solemnized at the Evangelical parsonage, Wednesday afternoon at 3:30 o’clock Miss Mildred Gumbel, daughter of Mrs. Millie Gumbel of Seward, became the bride of Oscar Nieman. Rev. Thomas R. Marshall read the service in the presence of the immediate relatives and close friends. Mrs. Nora Parker of Utica attended the bride, and Fred Gumbel, brother of the bride, was best man. A wedding dinner was served to twelve at the bride’s home. Mr. and Mrs. Nieman will live on a farm near Seward.”

Journalists were as careless about spelling as county officials.

The dinner guests are listed in Mildred’s handwriting in a little booklet called *Our Wedding Day*: “Fannie, Will and Dean Sanders; Alpha and Alvin Gumbel; Nellie Gumbel; Nora Parker; Fred Gumbel; Lester Gumbel; Mother Gumbel; Oscar and Mildred Niemann”. The next two pages contain a list of bridal gifts: “Mantle clock [to Bob Gamer], Ship Picture, Gas Iron [there wasn’t any electricity at the farm—I remember when it came], Vase [to Bob Gamer], Mirror, Magazine Basket, Braided rug, Silver Salt & Pepper, Silver Sugar and Cream on tray [I believe this was pewter], Quilt, Bowl & 4 custard cups, Two Amber Bridge sets (dishes [depression glass, later used for every day until only a couple pieces remain]), Bed Pillow (fancy), Waterless cooker [Ben used this for a popcorn pan], Kitchen doll, Dutch oven [to Tom Gamer], Six silver teaspoons, Six silver tablespoons, Wall shelves [an oak what-not shelf that Lester Gumbel made].”

There had been a lot of moisture that winter, the day was warm, the frost came out of the ground, and the dirt road to the Niemann farm was a quagmire. Oscar had borrowed a neighbor’s spring wagon to get to Seward for his wedding and to bring his bride to his farm home afterward. They made the trip successfully, but a few days later one of the springs on the wagon broke, and the neighbor declared in jest that the disaster was intended for the bride and groom but happened a little late. A prankster, Alvin Niebur gets the blame, spread axle grease or some such substance on the seat of the outdoor toilet. Recall that 1932 was in the depth of the depression and that the newlyweds didn’t own a flashlight, and imagine the mess!

Oscar and Mildred lived on the Niemann farm for a short time, but there was some kind of family problem, and Aunt Schmidt, the farm owner, forced them to move. At about that time, Mildred’s mother’s health was failing, and they moved to her home in Seward to care for her. Sometimes Oscar’s only employment was as a farm laborer for a dollar a day—the depression....
When he wanted to bring his wife a little gift, he would buy a picture, usually of a sailboat or sailing ship. I wanted to reuse a picture frame after her possessions came to me, and I took something out of the frame and uncovered a pretty sailboat picture beneath it; on the back was written, “July 2, 1933 from Oscar when he was working on the C. & N. W. [Chicago and North Western] Railroad at Superior”. I never knew that he ever worked for the railroad, so both the picture and its identification were surprises.

Mildred gave birth to a stillborn daughter, Janet Ruth Niemann, on 21 November 1935. Janet was buried the next day in the Gumbel lot in the Seward Cemetery.

Oscar had lost his United States citizenship when he fought for Germany during World War I, and he had to be naturalized in order to reclaim it. He first filed a Declaration of Intention to become a citizen on 27 January 1926. No information is found in that document that isn’t otherwise known. The document states that it is “Invalid for all purposes seven years after the date hereof”, so it would have expired on 26 January 1933, and he had not finalized the process by then. I don’t know the reason, but I can guess that he either had listened to someone who said he shouldn’t have to be naturalized because he was born in the United States, or he felt incompetent to deal with the English language enough to be able to answer the questions that would be asked of a prospective citizen. In any case, he again filed a Declaration of Intention on 10 September 1934. Only one “new” bit of information is contained in the document, listing “Scar on back of neck” in the blank for “visible distinctive marks”.

This time he completed the process, and was one of 59 persons, sixteen of whom were Germans, who were granted final citizenship papers on 10 May 1937. The certificate contains the following statistics: He was a 45-year-old white male, with florid complexion, blue eyes, blonde hair, 5 feet 8 inches tall and weighing 180 pounds, and was married. He signed “Oscar August Niemann” beneath his photo.

After the entire process was complete, he was told that if the county officials had been able to advise him correctly, he would not have had to go through the Declaration of Intention process and the waiting period.

I, Lila Marie Niemann, was born to Oscar and Mildred on 1937, when they were living with Mildred’s mother in Seward. I’m sure that every man wants a son, but I was never made to feel any disappointment on that score.

The story was told that during my infancy I was sick with a high fever and Oscar was walking the floor with me and singing to me when the doctor came—physicians made house calls in those days. He did whatever he could for me and told my dad that if he wanted the baby to get well, he would have to stop singing. Music was definitely not one of his talents.

On 18 August 1939, Aunt Schmidt turned the Seward County farm land over to Oscar by Warranty Deed for $1.00 (I don’t know whether the dollar ever changed hands or not). She

19 The same day, Mildred’s sister Nellie Gumbel Bye, my Aunt Nellie, stepped off a curb in Seward and broke her ankle.
sent this deed to Dietrich "Dick" Dohrmann, the Seward County Sheriff. I don’t know whether she sent it to him in his capacity as sheriff or as a relative; Dick Dohrmann’s wife was Anna Stullwold, a first cousin to Lina Schmidt and to Oscar’s mother, Jette Niemann. Aunt Schmidt had mortgaged the land heavily, so instead of receiving his parents’ land as his inheritance, he was faced with paying off the debt.

After the sale of the Gumbel home in Seward, the Niemann family moved back to the farm south of town on 1 March 1942. The house and buildings were not in good repair, and they set about making the house livable and making a living off the farm. There simply was not enough money to start a complete farming operation, so they rented out the tillable land but retained some hay ground and the pasture land so that Oscar could go into livestock production. Mildred owned some shares of Lincoln Telephone and Telegraph stock she acquired while employed by that company, and she sold these so that they could buy livestock.

The debt weighed heavily, and they decided to sell 80 acres of the farm and use the proceeds to pay off the mortgage, which they did in 1948.

I thought I remembered that Oscar was compelled to register for the World War II draft, and when draft registration records became available to the public, I sought his registration at the National Archives Branch in Kansas City. I had remembered correctly: He registered on 27 April 1942, part of the Fourth Registration which included men born on or after 28 April 1877 and on or before 16 February 1897. Facts stated on the card are correct as far as I know except his eye color, which was blue, not gray. His height was approximately five feet, eight inches, and his weight was approximately 195 pounds. The registration form did not contain any questions about previous military service.

World War II complicated everyone’s life, but farm living was comparatively tranquil. It was complicated, however, by the Big Blue River’s almost-annual rampages. When the river got so high that flood waters got into the house itself for the first time in 1951, the decision was made in June that living there was no longer possible. Oscar and Mildred arranged to have the house moved to Seward. They bought a lot, hired a house mover, stored the furnishings temporarily, and the house and family were settled in their new location before winter. Indoor plumbing and the addition of a modern bathroom made it seem like Heaven.

Oscar was employed in Seward by Hughes Brothers, manufacturers of crossarms for utility poles. During this employment he paid into the Social Security program (farmers had not been covered under Social Security during the time he was farming), thereby gaining enough benefits so that he received a monthly check during his old age. He later did substitute police work in Seward, and was often hired privately for duty during Seward events.

Oscar and Mildred celebrated their twenty-fifth wedding anniversary in 1957 with a party at their home in Seward. The following article appeared in a Seward newspaper:

“SILVER WEDDING NOTED

“Sunday evening Feb. 24, Mr. and Mrs. Oscar Niemann of Seward were honored in observance of
their 25th wedding anniversary, when many friends and relatives gathered at the Niemann home.

“The Niemanns were presented with a three-piece decorative pottery set.

“Hi five was the diversion of the evening. Theodore Bluhm and Mrs. Alfred Eggerling received high scores and Raymond Keller and Mrs. Ed Keller consolation prizes. Door prize went to Otto Keller.

“Lunch of sandwiches, pickles, jello, cake and coffee, served by the guests, was followed by group singing accompanied by Miss Velma Keller at the piano. During the evening, Mr. and Mrs. Ben Garner of Arlington, Va., called by telephone to extend their congratulations to Mr. and Mrs. Niemann. Mrs. Garner is the former Miss Lila Niemann, daughter of the honored couple.”

It was only after my own grandchildren started to arrive that I realized how important they were. Oscar was absolutely delighted with my boys. He was sixty-eight years old when his first grandson was born, but when the boys got big enough, he crawled around on the floor so they could ride on his back. By the time they really begin to remember, he was beginning to be an old man and didn’t participate in any antics of that nature.

Although there had been some family trouble about the farm among earlier generations, Oscar and his cousin-once-removed John Streiff were able to bury the hatchet and enjoy each other’s company. John and his wife Opal were congenial with the Niemanns, and the two couples visited back and forth between Seward and Streiffs’ Nebraska Sandhills ranch west of Tryon. Oscar and Mildred were on their way out there for a visit one time, and the road to Tryon was on detour. Settlement is sparse, and they drove and drove and drove on the detour, seeing absolutely nothing until they began to be uneasy. Finally, a sign could be seen in the distance, and they thought they would soon find out where they were and where the next town was. Instead, the sign read, “Prepare to meet thy God”. This did nothing to assuage their uneasy feeling, but they eventually did arrive at the Streiff home. They enjoyed telling this story on themselves all the rest of their lives.

By 1959, Oscar and Mildred had saved enough money that they could afford to buy a new car. They discussed the option of foregoing the car in favor of a trip to Germany, and it was Oscar who decided that he would rather have the car. They bought a new 1959 Chevrolet.

In 1960, grandchildren began to arrive. On one train trip to St. Louis where Oscar would meet a new grandson, the conductor announced to passengers that former President Harry S Truman was in another passenger car. Oscar had a brief chat with Truman, whom he found charming and interested.

On 30 September 1964, Mildred and Oscar finally felt able to afford a permanent marker for Janet’s grave; while choosing it (I regard the little lamb engraved on it as really cute), they saw a stone in the catalog that appealed to them, so they had their own marker installed in the cemetery at the same time. It saved selecting a stone after Oscar’s death, for which Mildred was very thankful.

Oscar’s health was not good for a long time before his death. His main complaint was diverticulitis, but he began to suffer from several debilities of old age, including diabetes and
glaucoma. His eyesight was poor, and he became quite deaf but didn’t have the patience to adjust a hearing aid. Oscar died on 25 April 1978 at Memorial Hospital in Seward; until his final hospitalization he was living in the same house he was born in. The death certificate gives the cause of death as acute renal failure due to severe generalized arteriosclerosis, with diabetes mellitus as a contributing condition. Mildred, Lila and Ben were at his bedside when he died.

I possess three different clippings of his obituary, certainly from the Seward Independent, from the Lincoln Journal and one other, but I do not know which one appeared in which paper. The information in all three is the same:

“Oscar A. Niemann, 85, of Seward, died Monday, April 25. He was born in Seward on Aug. 24, 1892. He was a retired farmer and retired member of the Seward Police Department.

“Survivors include his wife, Mildred; one daughter, Lila (Mrs. Ben) Gamer of Milford; two sisters, Mrs. Alwine Meier and Mrs. Alma Plassmeyer, both of Germany; a brother, Hugo of Germany; two grandchildren.

“Services will be held at 10:30 a.m. Thursday, April 25, at the Untied Church of Christ, Seward, the Rev. Don Hartman officiating. Burial will be in the Seward Cemetery [sic].”

He was buried at the Seward Cemetery, Lot 295 of the Original Survey, on 27 April 1978 after funeral services at Friedens Church in Seward. The funeral texts were Psalm 23, Ecclesiastes 3:1-8 and Revelation 7:13-17. The congregation sang Morning Has Broken and Almighty Father, Strong to Save.

The transcription of his will follows:

“Last Will and Testament

of

Oscar Niemann

“I, Oscar Niemann, of Seward, Nebraska, hereby make, publish and declare this my Last Will and Testament.

“ITEM 1. I direct that all of my just debts and expenses of last illness and funeral be first paid.

“ITEM 2. Subject to the foregoing, I hereby give, will and bequeath to my wife, Mildred H. Niemann, all personal property owned by me at the time of my death, both tangible and intangible, the same to be hers absolutely.

“ITEM 3. I hereby give, will and devise to my wife, Mildred H. Niemann, the life use, income and possession of all real estate owned by me at the time of my death, and subject thereto hereby give, will and devise said real estate to my daughter, Lila M. Garner.
"ITEM 4. I hereby appoint my wife, Mildred H. Niemann, Executrix of this Will. In the event of her death or inability to so serve, I appoint my daughter, Lila M. Garner, as Executrix; in either event no bond shall be required.

"ITEM 5. I hereby revoke all former Wills by me at any time made.

"IN TESTIMONY WHEREOF I have hereunto set my hand this 23rd day of January, 1976.

"/signed/ Oscar Niemann
Oscar Niemann

"We, whose names are hereunto subscribed, do hereby certify that Oscar Niemann, the testator, subscribed his name to this instrument in our presence and in the presence of each of us, and declared at the same time in our presence and hearing that his instrument was his Last Will and Testament, and we, at his request, sign our names hereto in his presence and in the presence of each other, as attesting witnesses.

"/signed/ Natalie D. Coffman, Seward, Nebraska
/signed/Robert I. Eleven, Seward, Nebraska"

Siblings, surname Niemann

[Oscar]
Walter Adolf, married Paula Dora Cronemeyer; issue without issue
Alma Adelma, married first Peter Kühn, issue; married second Carl Plaßmeyer, issue without issue
Alwine Amanda, married Fritz Meier; issue
Hugo Hans, married Edith Inge Kiel; issue

See Illustrations Number 6 (one page) and Illustrations Number 6 and 7 (two pages).

Parents are Numbers 12 and 13.

7 - Mildred Hilda GUMBEL was born on 25 August 1903 at Leahy20, Seward County, Nebraska, to George Alfred Gumbel and his wife Millie, née Schilling.

Her father was the grain buyer there, and the mill and elevator were choice playhouses for the Gumbel children. Mildred told of making ‘mud pies’ from the mill-floor sweepings. They contained dirt, of course, but also contained enough flour so that when they were set aside to ‘bake’ (dry), mold sometimes formed on them. When this happened, the “pies” became “cakes” and the mold was the “frosting”.

The Gumbels usually made a trip to Seward with a horse-drawn conveyance on Saturday night, and one child at a time went along. One of Mildred’s earliest memories was riding in the buggy (or maybe it was a wagon) and watching the moon as it seemed to keep up with their pace. On one occasion, her mother offered to buy candy for her, but she said she didn’t

20 Leahy later was spelled ‘Leahey’. Pronunciation: Lee-high. The town vanished by about 1960, and not even a tree marks its location on the landscape now (2006).
want any. She evidently thought that the candy had been purchased anyway, and asked for it later, then was terribly disappointed when she found out that no candy had been bought.

Before Mildred was old enough to start school, the family moved to Seward, and she attended the public school there. She found schoolwork difficult, and much later realized that nearly all the children in her class were lots older than she, which probably accounted for the fact that school was easy for them. She remembered a teacher, Miss Mary Nihill, who made her life particularly difficult, and later decided that Miss Nihill didn’t like her because her brother Fred, a couple of years older, was such a naughty boy that Miss Nihill probably took out her frustration with him on his sister.

Every detail of the traumatic experience of the 14 May 1913 Seward tornado stuck in her mind. The clouds looked ominous and everyone in the neighborhood was outdoors, watching. There was a fad at that time of making beads out of paper strips. A long skinny triangle of paper was cut, and the wide end was wrapped around a hatpin. Using paste, wrapping continued until it was all wound around the hatpin, making a “bead” that was thin at both ends and thick in the center. The bead was slipped off the hatpin to dry, and another was made. She and her family were out in the street, watching the storm, and she was stirring the paste (probably flour and water) for bead-making, in a little paste pot. Her mother made the decision that since they would be unable to get Grandmother Schilling to the cellar (she had rheumatoid arthritis), none of the family would take shelter there. The tornado drove a stick through the side of the house and it landed on a bed in an upstairs bedroom, but it didn’t do other damage to the Gumbel home at Fifth and Moffitt Streets, except to the trees. A number of Seward people were killed and some were seriously injured.

Mildred remembered a visit from her mother’s uncle, Robert Schilling of Milwaukee, to the Gumbel home in Seward. Before I started genealogical research, I was present when she and Aunt Fannie discussed his visit, describing him as a nice old guy, a spiffy dresser, who bought candy for the kids. He also tried to persuade the family to embrace his religion, Spiritualism. Both Mildred and Aunt Fannie thought he had never married, a bit of misinformation that threw me off the track for a long time when I attempted to find the Schilling history. The adults spoke German during his visit and the younger children didn’t understand, which explains their confusion. Due to the fact that the trees are so severely trimmed in the photos taken of him during his Seward visit, I believe it was after the tornado.

At one time I was expressing some interest in the family, and Mildred told me that some male member of the family who lived “up north” had done something scandalous that was whispered about, but she didn’t know what it was, who it was or where he belonged in the family. I have come to believe that it was Uncle Robert Schilling, because he and his wife parted, and he maintained a home with a widow woman and his wife maintained a home with a gentleman friend. This was before 1910, the story related by a great-granddaughter of Robert and his wife Clara.

Mildred described herself as skinny, shy and without self-assurance during her childhood, but admitted that she could be pushed just so far. While her mother was sewing for her, an obese neighbor commented that it was pretty hard to fit a broomstick. Mildred remembered
retorting that it wasn’t any harder than fitting a washtub. This was in an era when children were seen but not heard, but she remembered that her mother didn’t scold her.

One school subject that interested her particularly was sewing. Two years of sewing instruction were offered when Mildred was, I think, in fifth and sixth grades. The sewing lessons were moved to seventh and eighth grades at the time she was ready for seventh grade, making four years of sewing instruction, and she benefited all her life from this early training.

When Mildred was in ninth grade, her sister Nellie was Chief Operator at the Lincoln Telephone and Telegraph Company office in Seward. She was unable to find enough qualified girls to work as telephone operators, and offered little sister Mildred a job, so she quit school and went to work. She worked as a telephone operator for thirteen years, when she married—operators who got married were discharged if they failed to resign, because jobs were for unmarried women. Married women’s husbands supported them.

Many of those thirteen years were spent working nights. She had a cot and could sleep while no one required the operator’s services, but reported that after radios came into general use, people stayed up until “all hours” and there was no rest for the night operator. The years she was working were during the time when every telephone call required the operator’s help in making the connection. These hours probably were responsible for her contracting tuberculosis some time during the 1920s. She was unable to work for a year, but recovered fully.

People expected a great deal from telephone operators, demanding to know the time of day and answers to whatever questions came to mind. The operators were exhorted not to divulge any personal or confidential information that they happened to hear. While she didn’t tell who asked the question, she found one conversation with a phone subscriber so funny that she told about it long after it happened. A woman called ‘Central’ (the operator was referred to as ‘Central’) and asked if Mrs. So-and-so had died. Mildred replied that if the death had occurred, she hadn’t heard about it. Then the woman asked, “Well! When is she going to die?”

At the age of twenty-one, on 6 February 1924, Mildred was initiated into the Rebekah Lodge. The Rebekahs are the wives, sisters, daughters etc., of members of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, although Odd Fellows themselves also join the Rebekahs (her father was an Odd Fellow). She and her sister Nellie were very active, and they both filled all the chairs (held all the offices). After serving as Noble Grand (presiding officer), she belonged to the Past Noble Grand Club for a number of years but eventually found that it was not rewarding enough to continue her membership. She did remain active in the Rebekahs as long as she was able, and paid her dues until she died, although she wasn’t able to attend meetings the last year or so.

As far as I know she didn’t date many men, but she did have a friend named Ted Rohlfs. They went together for a number of years, and he gave her some interesting gifts. Among them are an oak rocking chair—Tom and Sue Garner have it now (2006)—and a dainty gold
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

necklace, the pendant set with a tiny pearl and a diamond chip. Ted (1884-1971) lived in or near Seward all his life, but never married. As I think about how to write what I sensed about the relationship, the word ‘lukewarm’ comes to mind.

Thinking about the many women I knew who were Seward telephone operators, it occurs to me that most of them were not very young when they married. Mildred was certainly no exception—she was twenty-eight at the time of her marriage. The little I know about her meeting with Oscar can be found in his story.

Their engagement was fairly long—I found a letter written at Christmas 1930 in which she said she had an engagement ring, and they weren’t married until February, 1932. She told that she had always planned to be married on the eighth of June (her mother’s birthday) when it fell on a Wednesday. The eighth of June did fall on a Wednesday in 1932, but Oscar was ‘batching’ on the farm and persuaded her to push the wedding date forward. The twenty-fourth of February did fall on a Wednesday. I had this story in mind when I set my wedding date on a Wednesday. Mildred’s siblings who were born in Illinois before the family moved to Nebraska were baptized by a relative who was a Methodist (I think) clergyman. Mildred and her sister Fannie were not baptized as infants, and she was baptized on 29 March 1931 by the Rev. Thomas R. Marshall, and confirmed into membership of Friedens church by the Rev. Mr. Marshall on 5 April 1931. She served in several offices of the women’s organizations of the church, and was a faithful member of the Sewing Circle until her old age. Sewing Circle ladies at one time did quite a lot of sewing, making clothing for institutions supported by the church. Eventually they only quilted, donating the money they earned to the institutions.

The following two articles appeared in Seward papers about the time of the Gumbel-Niemann wedding:

“Miss Mildred Gumbel, a bride-to-be, was honor guest at the meeting of the Rebekah lodge on last Wednesday evening. Miss Gumbel was presented with a gift of silver by the lodge, a gift of silver by the Past Noble Grand club and Mrs. And Mrs. John Jausi and Chester, and Mr. And Mrs. John Britton also presented her with a silver gift. Out-of-town members present were Mrs. Martin Kubetzki and Mrs. Agnes Britton22 of Lincoln. Refreshments were served after the social evening.”

“Miss Inez Peterson entertained at a miscellaneous shower Monday evening in courtesy to Miss Mildred Gumbel. Ten guests were present who spent the evening informally hemming tea towels. Dainty refreshments were served suggestive of St. Valentine’s Day.”

To the best of my knowledge, no wedding picture exists. There is a nice portrait taken in January, 1936 (after Janet was born), but Mildred is not wearing her wedding dress. She had always been terribly thin, but after she married and lived on a farm, she drank a lot of fresh milk warm from the cow (!) and began to put on some weight, so I suppose she didn’ fit into

21 In 2005, I made a consuming, emotional search for birth family for an adoptee which culminated in success on Wednesday, 8 June. I never forgot Grandmother Gumbel’s birthday, and I’ll never forget this other event on the eighth of June.
22 The name should be ‘Brinton’. I wonder if the previous Britton mention should also have been Brinton.
her wedding dress by the time the picture was taken. Oscar is wearing his wedding suit, and continued to wear it whenever he dressed up, even after I begin to remember.

It was essential in those days for people to ‘make up’ wood in the fall. Wood was used to keep their homes warm during the winter and for supplying the cook stove. Corn cobs were good for starting fires and made a very hot fire, handy if whatever was to be baked required a hot temperature (and learning to cope with a wood-burning kitchen range and control its oven temperature was tricky). People tried to buy a little coal for use in the heating stove during extremely cold weather, and it was hoarded carefully because the price was almost out of reach during the depression. Sometimes they walked along the railroad tracks, picking up the coal that had fallen off the coal car and using it for fuel.

When Oscar and Mildred were newlyweds, I believe this was in the fall of 1932, they went to the pasture, which was wooded, to make up wood, and Mildred saw a skunk and began to call, “Here, kitty, kitty, kitty”. Much to her surprise and dismay, the skunk came to her. There was nothing to do except get to the wagon with as little motion as possible, where they sat until the skunk finally went away. She didn’t do that again! She was interested in nature, and could recognize and mimic bird calls and identify local wild animals by their droppings.

Their lives revolved around the shortage of money. Oscar bought half a dozen pair of ‘shucking gloves’ when it was time to pick corn. I suppose that was all they could afford. Corn husks are sharp and gloves wear out fast. They told how he would set out in the morning with gloves intact, and by the time he came in for lunch (this would have been a mid-morning lunch) half of them would be in need of mending. Mildred would patch them so they would be ready to use after ‘dinner’ (the noon meal), and after dinner would patch the ones that had been used between lunch and dinner. They made these six pair of gloves last the corn-picking season by this revolving use-and-mend method, and they could later laugh about the time he had made her as mad as a hornet by reporting that the wind had blown the patches off. They had an Aladdin lamp, and being able to see to do mending in the evening would not have been a big problem. The Aladdin has a mantle and makes a lot of light, unlike the more primitive wick-and-chimney kerosene lamps that were in general use before its advent.

Mildred’s cooking skills, before she was married, were limited to cake baking. She laughed about having ‘caught’ Oscar by baking and serving to him a white cake embellished with black walnuts. When they moved to the farm as newlyweds, she had a lot to learn, and a neighbor, Grace Curtis née Dunlap (Mrs. Ollie Curtis) taught her to bake bread. The flour they could afford—they took a couple of bushels of wheat to the mill, and received in return the result of grinding one bushel of flour, the other bushel being the payment for grinding—was inferior. She eventually did learn to make good homemade bread, excellent when she could buy suitable flour.

23 People who had to start fires usually kept 3 or 4 corn cobs stuck into a tin can that held about 2 inches of kerosene. The cobs would soak it up and catch fire quickly, making a hot blaze that started the rest of their fuel burning.
Mrs. Curtis also lent her a kerosene-fueled incubator and taught her to use it, so that scarce cash wouldn’t have to be put out for baby chicks. An old letter from Oscar’s Aunt Schmidt tells that she planned to give the couple some chicks at the time of their marriage; this would have been a good start on a self-perpetuating flock of chickens.

Although she adapted to farm life, she refused to learn to milk the cows, and when I got old enough to try, she was adamant in her determination that I not learn to milk, either. Milking makes women develop large, muscular hands.

Mildred’s pregnancy with Janet was complicated by high blood pressure, which was caused by a goiter that needed to be removed. On 3 May 1936, she and Aunt Nellie went to Kirksville, Missouri to the Osteopathic Hospital (a teaching institution) where she had the surgery. She received only a local anesthetic and the surgeon wanted her to keep talking, I suppose so that they could see throat movement. When they announced that they were ready to close the wound, she asked if they were going to hemstitch it—this with a gallery of medical students looking on. She reported in a letter to her mother-in-law on 14 June 1936 that, “I feel just grand now.” My Aunt Edith Niemann gave me a number of family papers in 2001; Mildred’s 1936 letter among them tells the date of the post-wedding photograph mentioned earlier, and contains the above quote.

I don’t believe Mildred ever got over Janet’s death. It came near Thanksgiving Day; her father had died the day after Christmas several years earlier and her mother died the day before Christmas the year I was born. She let these sad events spoil the holidays for her all the rest of her life. In recent years, I read more and more about problems encountered by the adult children of alcoholics (her father drank), and I’ve come to believe that the inability to rise above adverse experiences is one of those problems.

There is an entry in Aunt Nellie’s diary about a week before I was born. Mildred had gone dove hunting with “the boys” (I assume a couple of her brothers and Oscar) and Aunt Nellie was worried about her health. I can’t imagine being nine months pregnant and tramping around on the irregular ground found in a field where doves could be hunted, but I guess it didn’t hurt her any. Maybe the gunfire scared me enough that I’ve never been interested in shooting.

The Curtises had moved away by the time the Niemanns moved to the farm the second time, and Mildred set a number of hens and let them hatch chicks the old-fashioned way. She was very successful, and could tell by the shape of an egg, with about 90% accuracy, which eggs would produce pullets. One always wanted pullets—they would grow up to be laying hens so that one would have sufficient eggs, and were as good to eat as roosters if there were too many. Coccidiosis made a lot of chickens sick, and I’ve seen her save several chicks’ lives by blowing her warm breath into their lungs. She knew where to press at the base of their beaks to hold them open.

I can remember a time when the birds were making such an awful commotion near our farm home that she went out to investigate. She found a snake draped across a robin’s
nest, got her .410-gauge shotgun and shot the snake. She later climbed up on a ladder and looked at the baby birds, all of which were all right. Another time she went to the rescue of a Rhode Island Red chicken that was screaming in distress, and found a mink sucking its blood. The mink was almost exactly the same color as the chicken.

One year, the garden produced a lot of cucumbers—really a lot of cucumbers. She made pickles of every description, until nearly all the canning jars were full. In desperation she pulled up all but one cucumber vine, leaving it so there would be a few fresh cucumbers for the table. I have never forgotten this solution to the problem of too much produce, and realized fairly early that houseplants that I didn’t like (I didn’t inherit her green thumb) would die if I set them outdoors in freezing weather—killing them off in the freezer if the weather was warm has been my alternative solution. Incidentally, we didn’t like the mustard pickles that she made using up the cucumbers, and a neighbor lady said her family would try them and they liked them, so they didn’t go to waste.

A major event during the farm years was the drilling of a new well near the house. Water from the new well was much better as well as more convenient. The only other well on the place was a long walk away and its water contained a lot of iron, which gave a brownish cast to white clothing washed in it. There were rain barrels for catching rain water, and when there was enough of it, it was used for laundry; and if there wasn’t enough for that, there was usually enough for hair washing. I well remember watching the wiggle-tails (mosquito larvae) swimming around in the rain barrels. They could be eliminated with the addition of a little vinegar.

Mildred’s sewing expertise served her well during the war years on the farm and her whole life. Feed sacks, cotton bags that chicken feed came in, could be used for many household necessities, and she sewed dresses, under shorts for the men (her brother Lester, my “Uncle Slim” lived with us); several sewed together made acceptable sheets. Most households were not well stocked with linens before the war because of the depression, and linens were not available in stores after the war started. I recall once when she was pleased to be able to buy enough material for a print dress at Penney’s, and how annoyed and disappointed she was when she found the same print as feed sacks a bit later. The feed sack material was quite coarse.

Resourceful, she made the best of adversity. Once she was carrying a dishpan full of cream from which she planned to churn butter. Somehow it slipped out of her grasp and landed on the floor—but the splashing cream landed on the ceiling. It left a serious grease spot—before the days of paint that would contain such a stain—and she covered the grease with an old window shade, then papered over the shade with new wallpaper.

Like many of us, she had some really funny dreams. One she enjoyed telling about: There was a piano on a stage, and a man carrying a bucket walked onto the stage, set the bucket down near the piano, and began to play. As he played, the ‘notes’ flew into the bucket. Many years later, she happened to see an animated cartoon on television, depicting exactly the same situation as her dream.
Another dream that stayed with her for a long time happened after she had been watching Sid Caesar on television; he was portraying the Devil, and was prancing around on stage, dressed in red and waving a realistic, forked tail. Mildred had bought a new electric blanket for the upstairs guestroom, which was unheated, and decided that she would sleep there and make sure it worked all right and there were enough other covers on the bed. She turned the electric blanket on, and used a couple of other blankets as well. When she awoke wringing wet with sweat, she had been dreaming that she had died and gone to Hell.

Mildred was an avid fisherman (fisherwoman?). The word angler scarcely fits because it conjures up, for me at least, a mental picture of someone wearing hip waders, standing in rushing water with a creel at his waist, holding a bent pole on whose line a trout struggles. Fishing in the Blue River simply doesn’t qualify as angling in my book, although she always had a rod and reel. Many fishermen of that era simply had a cane pole with a line tied to the end. She often caught enough bullheads to make a meal. Sometimes when I was a child we took peanut butter and sweet pickle sandwiches to the river because they didn’t need refrigeration. It was probably a ten- or fifteen-minute walk from the farmstead to the pasture, where a good fishing spot could be found.

She enjoyed telling about the time they were visiting the Streiffs and went to a lake to fish. The fish were really biting, and somehow in the excitement of the moment she fell into the lake (the water was shallow and she wasn’t in any danger of drowning although she did not know how to swim). Of course she was wet, but neither she nor the others wanted to go back to the ranch for dry clothing (the fish were biting, remember!) so Opal found an old jacket in the car and Mildred put the jacket on like pants, with her legs through the sleeves. Changing clothes near the lake wouldn’t have been a problem, because there simply weren’t (and aren’t now) many people in the Sandhills.

After I was away from home, she received a wrong-number phone call that brought employment. Another Mildred Niemann lived in Seward, and a Mrs. Frieda Dittman, who ran a tea room, intended to call her but got my mother instead. Mrs. Dittman offered her a job, and she worked at the tea room, serving lunches and helping in general for a number of years. During that time, when she made a dress she made an apron to match, and these coordinated outfits brought nice comments from the tea room patrons.

When it was time to apply for Social Security benefits, she didn’t have any document created near the time of her birth. She was issued a delayed birth certificate on 14 October 1965, having exhibited as proof of her birth date a family bible where her birth is entered, a Seward School District No. 9 school census report for 1917, and an affidavit of her cousin, Frank H. Gumbel of Milford, Nebraska. The document states that the physician who attended her birth was Dr. Joseph Morrow. I guess she remembered having been told that. Birthplace stated on the certificate is “Seward” which is not correct; she was born at Leahy.

She suffered from migraine headaches throughout her reproductive life. A hysterectomy in 1969 solved a number of problems, some of which she believed had been caused by injuries suffered when she wrecked her bicycle as a girl.
In 1976, she fell and broke her hip. Hip fractures in older women often happen when the hip gives way and the lady falls, but this was not the case with her. She was in the backyard, hanging up clothes, when she heard the mail arrive. The grass was wet with dew, and hurrying, she slipped on the hillside and fell. (The slope is from west to east, and she was headed south.) She walked around in pain all day but finally sought medical treatment late in the afternoon. The hip was replaced and she began to recover, but lost consciousness for a moment after her return home, and the resultant fall broke the bone below the prosthesis. The next repair shortened her leg so that she had to wear a built-up shoe the rest of her life. She had been extremely vigorous up until the mishap, but it slowed her down considerably.

As Oscar’s health deteriorated, she spent a lot of time caring for him and cooking meals that conformed to his diet. She adjusted to his death as well as could be expected, and continued with her Rebekah Lodge and Sewing Circle activities. Late in her life, she realized that she shouldn’t be driving any more, and gave her car to me.

She was able to see the funny side of things during her later years. She always, during my memory, wore a corset with laces and stays, which I dubbed ‘Old Ironsides’. One time she washed her corset and hung it on the line, and a repairman came and had to do something in the back yard and saw it on the line. He remarked, “I see you washed your harness”. She was a bit embarrassed about telling this, but it was too funny to keep to herself.

She had never been sports-minded, other than fishing, and was able to laugh about the time her little paper boy, probably too young for the job, was short on newspapers. He divided up the papers by section so each patron would get something, and she got the sports. She did tell me once that she thought she would have liked to try playing golf if she could have done it when she was young.

With old age she began to experience some memory lapses; it was during the fall of 1992 that Ben and I realized that she often wasn’t thinking clearly. Ben had surgery for lung cancer that December, but before he went to the hospital, we looked at a nursing home near Milford and decided that if she continued to deteriorate, we would have to consider committing her to its care—we had always thought that when the time came, we would move to her home and care for her, but Ben’s illness made that impossible. She did fairly well until after Christmas that year, and in January Ben was having complications after his surgery when she called me one day and told me that she didn’t know where she was. The time had come. I called the nursing home we had chosen earlier, but there was no vacancy by that time. The manager recommended a facility in Lincoln, however; I went to look it over the next morning, decided it would be even more satisfactory than our earlier selection had been, and took her there that afternoon. It was the worst day of my life up to that point, and I suppose it was the worst day of hers, too. There was no other choice. She continued to deteriorate, and she died there on 22 August 1993, three days short of her ninetieth birthday.

Her death certificate states that the cause of death was congestive heart failure. I was the informant on the certificate, but was allowed no input about whether the facts that funeral director wrote down were correct. Although I stated that she was born at Leahy...
Long before she died, she stated to me several times that she thought funerals were conducted in a negative way: the family heard all the words of comfort during the funeral, and then had to go to the cemetery and face the finality of the burial. Her idea of the right way to do things was to have the burial early in the day, then go to the church for a memorial service; and that is what we arranged for her. The pastor used the following texts: Psalm 23, Ecclesiastes 3:1-14, Romans 8:31-39 and John 11:17-44. Her burial and funeral took place on her beloved Oscar’s one-hundred-first birthday, 24 August 1993. She is buried beside him in the Seward Cemetery.

Her obituaries appeared in the Lincoln newspaper as well as the Seward Independent, and all contain errors—she actually had, at the time of her death two grandsons, Thomas and Robert Garner; and three great-grandchildren, Brandon, Lauren and Jacob Garner. Great-grandson Joel Garner was born after Mildred’s death. From the Seward Independent:


“She was born in Leahy, Seward County. She was a member of Rebekah Lodge #353.

“Her survivors include her daughter and son-in-law, Lila and Ben Garner, Milford; sister, Fannie Sanders, Salina, Kan.; sisters-in-law, Alwine Meier and Edith Niemann, both Germany; three [sic] grandchildren; and two [sic] great-grandchildren.

“Memorial services were held Tuesday, Aug. 24, 1993 at the United Church of Christ, Seward, with the Rev. Joan Moss officiating. Interment was in the Seward Cemetery.

“Volzke Mortuary, Seward, was in charge of arrangements.”

At some time when her mental acuity was in perfect order, Mildred received a telemarketing call purporting to be from an attorney in Oklahoma, trying to persuade her do let him do estate planning. She didn’t listen to his entire spiel, but began to think about the fact that it might be a good idea, and asked me about finding an estate planner. I didn’t know anything about the subject, but Ben and I asked our tax accountant for advice, and he recommended an estate planning specialist in Lincoln, R. Lloyd Jeffrey. We consulted him, he advised forming some trusts, and put everything in order for us. He did write a will for each of us; so far his planning has stood us in good stead as neither Mildred’s nor Ben’s wills have had to be probated. Mildred’s will, not on file in the Seward County Courthouse because it was not probated, is transcribed below:

Last Will and Testament

OF

MILDRED H. NIEMANN
I, MILDRED H. NIEMANN, a resident of, and domiciled in, Seward, Seward County, Nebraska, do hereby expressly revoke any and all Wills, Codicils, and instruments of a testamentary nature, that I formerly may have made, and being of sound and disposing mind and memory, and not acting under any duress, restraint, or undue influence, being aware of the nature, location and value of my estate, knowing the natural objects of my bounty, having a testamentary plan, desiring to accomplish such plan, desiring to avoid intestacy, and intending to dispose of all real estate, personal property, and property of every kind which I may own on the date of my death, and over which I may have power to dispose, whether owned by me now, or acquired by me hereafter, and I do herein and hereby make, publish, declare, execute and acknowledge the following as my Last Will and Testament, in manner and form following, that is to say:

ARTICLE I - FAMILY HISTORY

"I represent, state and declare that I was born on August 25, 1903; that my sole and only marriage was to, and with, OSCAR A. NIEMANN on February 24, 1932, at Seward, Nebraska; my beloved husband, OSCAR A. NIEMANN, died on April 25, 1978; OSCAR A. NIEMANN and I had, as issue of said marriage, only two daughters, namely, JANET RUTH NIEMANN, who was stillborn on November 21, 1935, thus she is deceased and without issue, and LILA M. GARNER, daughter, whose full name is LILA MARIE GARNER, born on September 23, 1937. LILA M. GARNER is married to BENNIE F. GARNER, who was born on December 18, 1928, at Amity, Arkansas, although his Birth Certificate shows his date of birth as December 10, 1928. LILA M. GARNER and BENNIE F. GARNER have two living children, both sons, born as issue of their marriage, namely, THOMAS E. GARNER, whose full name is THOMAS EARL GARNER, and who was born on August 13, 1960, and ROBERT P. GARNER, whose full name is ROBERT PAUL GARNER, and who was born on August 14, 1963. THOMAS E. GARNER is married to SUSAN L. GARNER, and issue of that marriage is expected to be born on or about February 6, 1985. ROBERT P. GARNER is single, unmarried, and without issue. R. L. JEFFREY, Attorney at Law, 3601 Calvert Street, Lincoln, Nebraska 68506, is my Attorney, and he is familiar with my familial and financial facts and circumstances, and he has prepared this instrument in strict accordance with my express directions and intentions. THE FIRST NATIONAL BANK AND TRUST COMPANY of Lincoln presently has its headquarters at 13th & M Streets, Lincoln, Nebraska 68508. JOHANNA GROLM, now long deceased is the grandmother of OSCAR A. NIEMANN, and she is the great grandmother of LILA M. GARNER and also of JOHN A. STREIFF. As Grantor, initial Trustee, and initial Beneficiary, I made, executed, acknowledged and delivered the MILDRED H. NIEMANN TRUST AGREEMENT on May 8, 1984, and therein and thereby created that certain Trust which is named, styled and known as “THE MILDRED H. NIEMANN TRUST”.

ARTICLE II - TAXES, DEBTS AND EXPENSES OF ADMINISTRATION

I direct that all estate, inheritance and other death taxes of any nature, together with any interest and penalties thereon that may be payable upon or with respect to all property required to be included in my gross estate or taxable to any person receiving it under the provisions of any present or future domestic or foreign laws, regardless of whether that property passes under or outside of this Will or any Codicil to it or whether such taxes are payable by my estate or by any recipient or beneficiary of any such property, together with all debts which I am legally obligated to pay at the time of my death, my last illness and funeral expenses, and other costs of administration of my estate, shall be paid, or other provision for payment made, by my Personal Representatives out of my general estate in the same manner as an expense of administration of my estate, with no right of reimbursement from any recipient or beneficiary of any such property or any temporary or remainder interest in such property.
recipient or beneficiary of any such property or any temporary or remainder interest in such property. The Successor trustees of THE MILDRED H. NIEMANN TRUST under THE MILDRED H. NIEMANN TRUST AGREEMENT dated May 8, 1984, shall, if the assets subject to administration under this Will are insufficient to bear and pay in full the foregoing items, either pay such items, or any deficiency existing in the payment of such items, or furnish my Personal Representatives sufficient funds with which to effect complete payment and satisfaction of said items.

ARTICLE III – DISPOSITION OF TANGIBLE NON-INCOME-PRODUCING PERSONAL PROPERTY

A. Bequest to Daughter: If my daughter, LILA M. GARNER, survives me, I give and grant to her, all of my tangible non-income-producing personal property, including, but not limited to, my personal effects, jewelry, cameras, sporting equipment, tools, lawn and garden equipment, any automobile or automobiles owned by me at the time of my death and used as my personal vehicles, furniture, fixtures, household furnishings, silverware, china, dishes, kitchen utensils, linens and household goods.

B. Sale of Items Not Disposed of: In the event any items of said tangible non-income-producing personal property are not disposed of pursuant to the foregoing provision, I direct that said items be sold and that the proceeds be added to and disposed of as part of my residuary estate.

C. Regard for Memorandum: It is my wish that any memorandum I may leave whether or not addressed to my Personal Representatives indicating my desires with respect to the disposal of any items of my tangible non-income-producing personal property shall be fully performed.

ARTICLE IV – DISPOSITION OF RESIDUE

I give, devise and bequeath all of the rest, residue and remainder of my property, real, personal and mixed, of whatsoever kind and character, and wheresoever situated and being, whether owned by me now, or acquired by me hereafter, to the Successor Trustees under that certain Trust Agreement heretofore executed, acknowledged and delivered by me on May 8, 1984, named and styled “MILDRED H. NIEMANN TRUST”, under which the Trust named and styled “THE MILDRED H. NIEMANN TRUST” was created, to be added to the Trust Estate held thereunder and managed, invested and distributed by said Trustees for the uses and purposes and upon the terms and conditions set forth in said Trust Agreement.

ARTICLE V – SEPARATE TRUST FOR MINORS

In the event any part of my estate shall vest in absolute ownership in any minor, I devise and bequeath the share of such minor to the Trustees hereinafter designated, IN TRUST, nevertheless to be held, managed and distributed as a separate trust upon the following terms and conditions. During the minority of such person, the Trustees shall distribute to or for the benefit of such minor, such portion or all or none of the income or principal or both of such minor’s separate trust as the Trustees, in their absolute discretion, deem necessary or desirable to provide for the proper health, education, maintenance and support of such minor; any income from such separate trust earned in any calendar year and not distributed within one hundred five (105) days after the end of such year shall be accumulated and added to the principal thereof. At the time such beneficiary attains legal age, or upon his or her death, whichever occurs first, his or her separate trust shall terminate and the then remaining principal and any undistributed income thereof shall be distributed absolutely, free and clear of any trusts, to such beneficiary, or if he or she is then deceased, to his or her estate.

ARTICLE VI – FIDUCIARIES
A. Appointment of Personal Representative: I appoint my daughter, LILA M. GARNER, to serve as Personal Representative of this Will and of my Estate. If, for any reason, she fails to qualify, or ceases to serve, in her name, place and stead, I appoint my son-in-law, BENNIE F. GARNER, to serve as Personal Representative of this Will and of my Estate. If for any reason, he fails to qualify, or ceases to serve, in his name, place and stead, I appoint my grandsons, THOMAS E. GARNER and ROBERT P. GARNER, or the survivor of them, as Personal Representatives of this Will and of my Estate. If, for any reason, both THOMAS E. GARNER and ROBERT P. GARNER fail to qualify, or cease to serve, in their name, place and stead, I appoint THE FIRST NATIONAL BANK AND TRUST COMPANY of Lincoln, Nebraska, to serve as Personal Representative of this Will and of my Estate.

B. Appointment of Trustees: I appoint my daughter, LILA M. GARNER, to serve as Trustee of the trusts created herein or arising hereunder. If for any reason, she fails to qualify, or ceases to serve, in her name, place and stead, I appoint my son-in-law, BENNIE F. GARNER, to serve as Trustee of the trusts created herein or arising hereunder. If, for any reason he fails to qualify, or ceases to serve, in his name, place and stead, I appoint my grandsons, THOMAS E. GARNER and ROBERT P. GARNER, or the survivor of them, as Trustees of the trusts created herein or arising hereunder. If for any reason, both THOMAS E. GARNER and ROBERT P. GARNER fail to qualify, or cease to serve, in their name, place and stead, I appoint THE FIRST NATIONAL BANK AND TRUST COMPANY of Lincoln, Nebraska, to serve as Trustee of the trusts created herein or arising hereunder.

C. Waiver of Bond: I direct that no Personal Representative or Trustee named in this Article shall be required to furnish any bond or other security in any jurisdiction for the faithful performance of their duties as such, the same being specifically waived hereby.

D. Waiver of Qualification of Trustees: I hereby waive compliance by the Trustee appointed hereunder with any law now or hereafter in effect requiring qualification, or administration, or accounting by said Trustee to any Court.

ARTICLE VII – POWERS OF FIDUCIARIES

In addition to, and not by way of limitation of, the the powers and discretions elsewhere herein granted, or those conferred by law, or those conferred by the Nebraska Probate Code, as the same may provide, from time to time, I give and grant to my Personal Representatives and Trustees the power and authority to do any of the following as in their unrestricted judgment and discretion they deem advisable for the better management and preservation of my property, without resort to any person or court for further authority:

A. Sell and Exchange Property: To sell such property at either public or private sale for cash or on credit; to exchange such property, and to grant options for the purchase thereof;

B. Invest and Reinvest: To invest and reinvest in any property, including, but not by way of limitation, bonds, notes, debentures, mortgages, certificates of deposit, common and preferred stocks, mutual funds, common trust funds, share or beneficial interests in mortgage trusts or real estate investment trusts, real estate or any interest therein, and other property, real or personal, of every kind or nature, without being limited to the class of investment in which fiduciaries are authorized by law or any rule of court to invest funds;

C. Borrow: To borrow money and to pledge or mortgage any such property as security therefor;
D. Compromise Claims: To settle, collect, compound, compromise, release, sell or pay and discharge any and all claims or demands belonging to or made against me or my estate on such terms as may seem for the best interests of my estate, and to accept any security for any debt and to allow such time for payment thereof, either with or without taking any security, as shall seem proper;

E. Collect Property: To collect and receive any and all sums and any and all property of whatsoever kind or nature due or owing or belonging to them in their fiduciary capacity, and to give full discharge and acquittance therefor;

F. Real Property: To deal with real property in any manner lawful to an owner thereof. This authority includes the right to manage, protect, and improve it, to raze, alter and repair improvements, to see or contract to sell it in whole or in part, to partition it, to grand options to purchase it, to donate it, to convey it, to acquire it, release, or grand easements or other rights relating to it, to dedicate parks and thoroughfares, to subdivide it, to vacate any subdivision or any part thereof and resubdivide it from time to time, to lease it in whole or in part, and to renew, extend, contract for, and grant options in connection with leases. Leases, contracts to sell, mortgages and any contract entered into by them can be made on any terms and for any period, including a period beyond the period of the administration of my estate or any trusts; and,

G. Deal With Property as Absolute Owner: To do all such acts, take all such proceedings and exercise all such rights and privileges, although not hereinbefore specifically mentioned, with relation to such property as if the absolute owners thereof.

ARTICLE VIII – DEFINITIONS
Whenever used in the Will, unless the context of any passage thereof requires otherwise:

A. Singular Includes Plural and Masculine Includes Feminine: The singular includes the plural and the plural includes the singular, and the masculine includes the feminine and the feminine includes the masculine.

B. Personal Representatives: The term “Personal Representatives” shall include any and all personal representatives of my estate, whether in connection with the domiciliary or any ancillary administration thereof, and whether male or female, and whether one or more than one, as well as their substitutes and successors.

C. Trustees: The term “Trustees” shall mean the Trustee appointed herein and all substitute and successor Trustees.

D. Education: The term “proper education” shall be construed to mean not only all levels of education in the customary sense, including private tutorials and professional and advanced education, but also spiritual education, musical instruction and physical education, including summer camps for minor beneficiaries.

E. Health: The term “proper health” shall be construed to include medical, dental, hospital, drug and nursing costs, as well as all expenses of invalidism and costs of medically prescribed equipment and travel.

F. Maintenance and Support: The term “proper maintenance and support” shall mean the maintenance and support of the income beneficiaries in accordance with their accustomed manner of living.
G. Child and Children: The terms "child" and "children" shall mean descendants by blood of the first degree and persons conceived but not yet born.

H. Issue: The term "issue" shall be limited to lawful issue and shall include descendants by blood and persons conceived but not yet born.

I. Adopted Children: Legally adopted children shall be deemed to be natural born children of their adoptive parents, and terms of kinship or descent used herein shall be construed accordingly.

ARTICLE IX – APPLICABLE STATE LAW

This will shall be interpreted, construed and administered under the laws of the State of Nebraska and the Nebraska Probate Code as the same provide on the date of my death since I am a resident of and domiciled in the State of Nebraska on the date of execution hereof and since this Will is being made by me within the State of Nebraska.

ARTICLE X – WAIVER OF ATTORNEY-CLIENT PRIVILEGE

I hereby waive the attorney-client privilege existing between R. L. JEFFREY, Attorney at Law, and me, and I specifically authorize said Attorney to testify as to any conferences, conversations, or discussions, which I had with him in connection with the preparation, execution, acknowledgment, declaration and publication of this Will and my testamentary plan which is set forth in this Will.

ARTICLE XI – EMPLOYMENT OF COUNSEL

I hereby represent, state and declare that it is my express desire and wish that my Personal Representatives and Trustees appointed hereunder shall employ R. L. JEFFREY, Attorney at Law, 3601 Calvert Street, Lincoln, Nebraska 68506, if he is, on the date of my death, ready, willing and able, as counsel, to assist them in the administration of my Estate, and the administration of any trusts created under this Will, notwithstanding the waiver of the attorney-client privilege made by me pursuant to the provision of ARTICLE X above, and it is my voluntary, unilateral and express wish and direction that he will accept such employment.

ARTICLE XII – CONSTRUCTION OF WILL

The headings and subheadings used throughout this Will are for convenience only and have no significance in the interpretation of the body of this Will, and I direct that they be disregarded in construing the provision of this Will.

I, MILDRED H. NIEMANN, the Testatrix, sign my name to this instrument, consisting of eight (8) typewritten pages, this included, on the margin of each of which I have placed my initials for the purpose of identification, all done on this 28th day of November, 1984, and being first duly sworn, do hereby declare to the undersigned authority that I sign and execute this instrument as my Last Will; that I sign it willingly; that I execute it as my free and voluntary act for the purposes therein expressed; that I am of legal age; that I am of sound mind and under no constraint or undue influence.

/s/Mildred H. Niemann
Testatrix
We, R. L. Jeffrey, Letha L. Jeffrey and Jim L. Henshaw, the witnesses, sign our names to this instrument, all done on the 28th day of November, 1984, and being first duly sworn, do hereby declare to the undersigned authority that the Testatrix signs and executes this instrument as her Will; that the Testatrix signs it willingly; that she executes it as her free and voluntary act for the purposes therein expressed; that each of us, in the presence and hearing of the Testatrix hereby signs this Will as witness to the Testatrix's signing; that to the best of our knowledge the Testatrix is of legal age; that the Testatrix is of sound mind and under no constraint or undue influence.

/s/ R L Jeffrey of 6420 Westshore Drive, Lincoln, Nebraska
/s/ Letha L. Jeffrey of 6450 West shore Drive, Lincoln, Nebraska
/s/ Jim L. Henshaw of 7330 Yosemite Drive, Lincoln, Nebraska.

STATE OF NEBRASKA )
COUNTY OF LANCASTER )

Subscribe, sworn to and acknowledged before me by MILDRED H. NIEMANN, the Testatrix, and subscribed and sworn to before me by R L Jeffrey, Letha L. Jeffrey and Jim L Henshaw, witnesses, on this 28th day of November, 1984, at Lincoln, Nebraska.

/s/ Margaret A. Ostwald
General Notary Public

The Trust Agreement, mentioned in the above will, carries the provision that if no issue survived me (Lila), the issue of John A. Streiff would inherit. This was done especially to assure that the Nebraska farm land would remain in Niemann-Grolm family possession and not go to the Gumbel or Garner families. Brandon Thomas Gamer is the issue of Tom's marriage who was expected on 1985. Tom and Sue also had Lauren Renee Garner in 1988; Bob married Sally in 1987; their marriage produced Jacob Louis Garner in 1992 and Joel Robert Garner in 1993. The worry about issue seems to have been solved; it is to be hoped that the provision for inheritance by the issue of John A. Streiff will not come into play.

Siblings, surname Gumbel

- Alvin George, married Alpha Pierce; no issue
- Nellie Angelica, married Charles Harvey Bye; no issue
- Lester Conrad Ernest, married Pauline Walker née Wolf; no issue
- Harry Alfred, died young
- Fred William, married Nora Parker née Shirley; issue
  [Mildred]
- Fannie Harriet24, married Will E. Sanders; issue

24 Aunt Fannie was a peppy lady who worked hard rearing a large family; Uncle Bill always made a good living, but their circumstances were bettered by her frugality. During her later years, kitchen carpeting came into vogue, and she selected for her postage-stamp-size kitchen one of the few available patterns. It was green with an orange fleck, which didn't go very well with the wallpaper, a pink floral pattern. So Aunt Fannie, no longer young, climbed up onto a ladder, and using a yellow marker colored all the pink flowers, turning them orange to match the new carpet.
See Illustration Number 7 (two pages) and Illustrations Number 6 and 7 (2 pages).

Parents are Numbers 14 and 15.
Illustration Number 4: Jessie Claude Garner signature of 13 August 1941, from his Application for Social Security Account Number.

Illustration Number 5: Neva (Dafford) Garner’s signature from her son Ben’s delayed birth certificate dated 10 May 1944.

Illustration Number 5: Neva Dafford, from a school picture ca 1905.

Illustration Numbers 4 and 5: Claude and Neva (Dafford) Gamer ca1912.

Illustration Numbers 4 and 5: Neva (Dafford) Gamer ca1950.


Illustration Numbers 4 and 5: Gravestone of Claude and Neva (Dafford) Garner in Jones Cemetery near Amity, Clark County, Arkansas.
Claude’s dates: Nov. 1, 1884 – Sept. 4, 1963
Neva’s dates: Feb. 4, 1892 – Mar. 2, 1970
Lower line: SHELTERED AND SAFE FROM SORROW
Illustration Numbers 4 and 5: Claude and Neva (Dafford) Garner, 1961.

Illustration Numbers 4 and 5: Claude and Neva (Dafford) Garner, 1961. Same pose as above, with background removed.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

Please do not write on this page; bleed-through may spoil illustrations on reverse.
Illustration Number 6: Oscar Niemann, baptismal photo, 29 December 1892. Photo by Givens, Seward, Nebraska.

Illustration Number 6: Oscar Niemann, early in 1895. Photo by Givens, Seward, Nebraska.

Illustration Number 6: Oscar Niemann passport photo, 1925. Note the raised seal, one petal and one thorn of the beautiful Lippe Rose visible lower left.

Illustration Number 6: 1925 signature on Passport.


Illustration Number 6: Signature from his 1976 Last Will and Testament.
Illustration Number 7: Mildred Gumbel, age 3 according to her own photo identification; she looks younger to me.

Illustration Number 7: Mildred Gumbel, about ten years old. Self-described as a tomboy, Mildred loved her bike, a man’s bicycle that her brothers Lester and Fred assembled from salvaged parts.

Illustration Number 7: Top: Mildred’s signature found in her sister Nellie’s autograph book, dated 30 November 1918; center: signature from a check dated 30 September 1964 in the amount of $260.00 in payment for gravestone—she always signed “Mrs. Oscar Niemann; bottom: signature appearing on her Durable Power of Attorney dated 11 November 1983.
Illustration Number 7: Mildred Gumbel with her hair down: the Gumbel girls normally wore braids. About age 13.

Illustration Number 7: Mildred Gumbel, hair bobbed (a daring thing to do) about 1925.

Illustration Number 7: Mildred Gumbel, about 1930. This pose, or one very similar, was sent by Oscar to his parents in Germany. Seen there, in an album but unidentified, by Ben and Lila Garner in 2001.

Illustration Number 7: Mildred (Gumbel) Niemann, last known photo, May 1993.

Illustration Number 7: Mildred (Gumbel) Niemann, photo for church directory, 1981.
Illustration Numbers 6 and 7: Oscar and Mildred (Gumbel) Niemann, January 1936.
No wedding picture was taken at the time of their marriage in 1932.

Illustration Numbers 6 and 7: Mildred (Gumbel) and Oscar Niemann, ca1977.

Illustration Numbers 6 and 7: Gravestone of Oscar and Mildred (Gumbel) Niemann, Lot 295 of the Original Survey, Seward Cemetery, Seward, Seward County, Nebraska (Seward Cemetery has also been known as North Cemetery)
FOURTH GENERATION

8 – Jesse M. GARNER was born 8 November 1845 in McNairy County, Tennessee to Peter Garner and his wife Susan née Jackson. His middle initial is found in only two places, at least by me: the 1850 census of Taney County, Missouri, where he is J. M. Garner; and the 1900 census of Amity Township, Clark County, Arkansas, where he is Jesse M. Garner. I read the middle name “Morgan” for him somewhere, and there was indeed another Jesse Garner whose middle name was Morgan, but, lacking proof, I’m holding to using only the middle initial M. The family moved on to Clark County, Arkansas by 1856; his sister Miley Garner Herron’s 1932 obituary tells a little about the journey:

“...she came to Arkansas in an ox cart, driving through Hot Springs when Central Avenue was a creek and the springs were in their natural state. There was only one lodging house, a general store and a few residents...”

According to the 1850 Agricultural Census of Taney, his father, Peter Garner, possessed 3 horses and 2 working oxen; the oxen probably were able to endure such a trip under the yoke better than draft horses. We have driven in a modern car from Branson, Missouri to Amity, Arkansas, and the going is tough, even on the excellent highways of today, so I don’t envy the family such a trip.

Few personal details of Jesse’s life have survived. At least two of Jesse’s brothers, Calloway and Pleasant, served in the Confederate Army, and Calloway was killed. Jesse’s uncle, William Garner and his son were Union soldiers; families were torn apart by their members’ loyalties. As far as I know, Jesse did not see any war service.
On 18 August 1867, Jesse married Mary Jane Robinson in Clark County. They lived in the Salem community, reared a large family, and Jesse died 16 July 1903. The family believed his death was caused by appendicitis, but in those days, there was no way to find out for sure. No obituary can be found in microfilmed newspapers (but copies of all local newspapers don’t exist), and if any family member has a clipping, I haven’t been able to find it.

He is buried at Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine in Clark County, and a fine tribute has been engraved on his stone: “An honest man is the noblest work of God”.

Half sibling, surname unknown (from his mother’s first marriage to Mr. ): Pemeca or Nrecey or Nancy [25]; married Jesse M. Garner’s Uncle Jesse Garner; issue

Siblings, surname Garner

John married Martha
William married Martha Jane Abney; issue
Lucinda married Pinckney C. Tucker; issue
Miley E. married Isaac Newton Herron; issue
Calloway married Nancy Caroline Tucker; issue
Pleasant married Louisa Tucker; issue
Nancy married Jesse A. Case; issue
[Jesse M.]
Margaret married Alexander Mays

See Illustration Number 8.

Parents are Numbers 16 and 17.

9 – Mary Jane ROBINSON was born 8 August 1851 to Dr. John Blassingame Robinson and his wife Elizabeth Ann nee Clingman. Her granddaughter (my sister-in-law), Lottie Gamer Petifer has repeated to me the family lore that Mary Jane was so small when she was born that she would have fit into a pint cup. Her birthplace is in question. The family was living at Mount Ida in Montgomery County, Arkansas where her father practiced medicine. She may have been born there. The other possibility is that when her mother’s confinement date approached, the family traveled to neighboring Clark County, where Elizabeth’s parents lived four miles north of Amity. Her father was Dr. A. B. Clingman. I favor the first scenario; the very tiny size of the baby makes me think that she was premature, and they wouldn’t have gone to Amity early enough for her to be born there. If her obituary can be believed, however, she lived in Clark County all her life.

Mary Jane’s father died when she was about thirteen months old. It is probably safe to assume that little Mary Jane and her mother lived in the Clingman home after Dr. Robinson’s death. Indeed, even though her mother had remarried to Dr. Joshua Ham Cross in 1854, Mary Robinson, age nine, was living in the Clingman home when the 1860 census was taken. My sense is that the Clingmans reared her and she may have

[25] Death Certificates found for Ncecy’s children state that her maiden name was Jackson.
'gone by' the Clingman name, because that is what family members – my contemporaries – thought her maiden name was. Perhaps her mother’s illness (she died young, but was living with her second husband and family in Polk County on the 1860 census day) was the reason that Mary Jane lived with the Clingmans.

It has also occurred to me that she was called "Emmjay", because she was listed as "M.J. Gamer" in her grandmother Clingman's estate papers, and when her cousin once removed Mrs. W. D. Cubage wrote an article that appeared in the Little Rock newspaper, she referred to Mary as 'M.J.' There are papers in existence connected with the greater Clingman family’s application for membership in the Cherokee Tribe, as descendants of Bettie Pledge who married Thomas Poindexter. Her name is 'Mary Jane Gamer' in those papers.

Mary Jane is said to have been slight of stature and full of fun. The family tells a story that she is said to have told on herself: Her son Peter (they made a home together after both were widowed) drank hot water instead of coffee, and one morning when she was pouring his water, she accidentally spilled some in his lap. She asked, “Did I bum ye, Peter?” to which he replied, “Nope, jist m’ leg.”

She kept candy on hand to treat her grandchildren and let them cut pictures out of her magazines. Some of the grandchildren remember her preserving pears and apples for the winter by wrapping them individually in paper. Fresh fruit in winter must have been as much of a treat as candy; at least it is as well remembered.

The 1900 census states that she was the mother of twelve children, eight of whom were living; the 1910 census states that she was the mother of eleven children, seven living. Robert, the youngest, had apparently died between 1900 and 1910. The discrepancy between eleven and twelve cannot be explained.

A few issues of Amity newspapers exist, and I chanced upon these two mentions of Grandma Garner while pursuing something else.

Amity Owl, 1 April 1926:

"Peter Garner had a house covering [installation of a new roof] last Wednesday and twenty two of the Self Help Club members were on hand and could have had more if they had got the news. Grandma Garner was assisted by Miss Rivers, Miss Era Adams and Mrs. Arthur Gamer in getting up one more of those splendid dinners and from what I saw every man made a pert hand at the table."

Amity Owl, 13 August 1931:

"The writer and wife had the pleasure of eating a birthday dinner with Grandma Garner. Her kin folk and friends brought their baskets loaded with good things to eat. At n[o]on the long tables were

26 See biography of Person Number 38 for information about Mrs. Cubage and her writings.
27 The claim was denied, and there is no proof that Bettie Pledge had Cherokee ancestry; this is discussed at length in the biography of Person Number 309.
placed under the old native oaks and then loaded with stewed, fried and baked chicken and all the dressings that goes with them. Good old country sausage, cake, pies, custards and so much other good eats I am afraid I will smother the Owl\textsuperscript{28} if I name them all. There were 30 present to wish Grandma many more such birthdays. Grandma is 80 years of age and still able to do most of her house work.”

On 22 August 1912, Mary J. Garner made her will. It is typewritten on the letterhead of W. B. Harris, Confectioner, of Amity, Arkansas. Its text, with spelling and punctuation retained as nearly as possible, follows:

“I, Mary J. Garner, of Amity, Clark county, Arkansas, a farmer make this my last will. I give, devise, and bequeath my estate and property, real and personal, as follows, to Gracie G. Waldrum all of the following land lying in the county of Clark and state of Arkansas. The north \( \frac{3}{4} \) of the west half of the NE. \( \frac{1}{4} \) of the NE. \( \frac{1}{4} \), Also all of the NW. \( \frac{1}{4} \) of the NE. \( \frac{1}{4} \) except the SW. \( \frac{1}{4} \) of said 40 acres which is deeded to A. K. Garner. All in Section (36) Township (5) South of Range (23) West. Containing forty-five acres. And all of my household goods and share equally in all other property, both real and personal with the rest of my children, J.B.R. Garner, P.J. Garner, A.K. Garner, J.C. Garner, M.A. Hill and S.E. Howell,.

“I appoint C.P. Palmer, a merchant of Amity, Clark county, Ark. executor of this my will.

“In witness whereof, I have signed and sealed and published and declared this instrument as my will at Amity, Arkansas on August the 22\textsuperscript{nd}, 1912.

/s/ Mary J. Garner

“The said Mary J. Garner at the said Amity, Ark. on said xx 22\textsuperscript{nd}. of August, 1912, signed and sealed this instrument, and published and declared the same as and for her last will. And we, at her request, and in her presence, and in the presence of each other, have hereunto written our names as subscribing witnesses.

“Attest: /s/ W. D. Dillard [could be M.D.Dillard]

“Attest: /s/ S. E. Richardson

“Attest: /s/ Oscar Feimster

“Signed and sealed in my presence on this the 22\textsuperscript{nd} day of August, 1912.

W. B. Harris
Notary Public.

“My commission expires)
October the 8\textsuperscript{th}, 1912. )”

According to her Death Certificate, Mary Jane died 23 June 1932 of “Rumalgia of the hart [sic]”; it is not known if she was experiencing an illness and expecting to die soon when she made her will nearly twenty years earlier. She is buried beside her husband at Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine in Clark County. Two newspaper obituaries follow:

\textsuperscript{28} The Owl reporter had a whimsical way of making it seem that he was in the presence of a living, breathing owl.
Arkadelphia Southern Standard, Arkadelphia, Arkansas, Thursday, 30 June 1932:

“Mrs. Mary Garner Died

“The many friends of Mrs. Mary Garner were grieved to learn of her death which occurred at her home in the Salem community in Amity township on Wednesday afternoon of last week. Mrs. Garner was the widow of the late Peter [sic: should read ‘Jesse’] Gamer who died about 25 years ago. The remains were interred in the Alpine Cemetery on Friday morning, the funeral services being conducted by Rev. Taylor Stanfill, pastor of the Baptist Church at Amity. Mrs. Garner was 83 years old and had lived in the western part of the county all her life.

“She is survived by 3 sons, Arthur, Claud and Peter Gamer of Amity Township and 3 daughters, Mrs. Grace Waldrum, Mrs. Mila [sic] Hill and Mrs. Susan Howell, all of Delight.”

Daily Sittings Herald, Arkadelphia, Arkansas, Tuesday, 28 June 1932:

“‘Grandma’ Gamer of Salem was laid to rest in the Alpine Cemetery Friday morning. She was 81 years old, one of the oldest settlers of Clark county. The family has the sympathy of the entire community.”

There is a problem about dates. Both her Death Certificate and her gravestone state a death date of 23 June, which was a Thursday, while the Southern Standard obituary says that she died on Wednesday afternoon. It does seem like it would have been really soon to bury her on Friday, if she died on Thursday. I don’t believe there is any way to prove that either date is correct.

She is buried beside her husband in Pea Ridge cemetery at Alpine, her gravestone inscribed, “Rest Mother in quiet sleep, while friends in sorrow o’er thee weep”.

Half siblings, surname Cross
   Ann Martha married George Luton Harris; issue
   Susan Elizabeth married Noel Parrish, issue; married second, Mr. Chambers
   Lucy disappears from census, presumably died young without issue

Step siblings, surname Cross
   The children of Dr. Joshua Ham Cross and his first wife Lucinda née Reeves

See Illustrations Number 9.

Parents are Numbers 18 and 19.

Robinson books: The Joseph and Martha Robinson Generations and John Robinson of Virginia

---

10 – William Green DAFFORD is my genealogical “brick wall”. I have accumulated a lot of paper concerning families whose names begin with ‘Daf’, but really know little more than when I started searching for his roots in 1989. Therefore, his life story here will necessarily take a different form than those whose roots were found and about whom I could make definite conclusions. My theories and guesses appear in this Abadi typeface.

First I want to say a few words about family lore: there is a sort of rule of thumb about family lore—it has to be suspect in that people misunderstand, remember wrong or transfer lore from one side of the family to another; but it nearly always contains a grain of truth.

**Fact:** Billie is first found in Clark County, Arkansas on 6 December 1876, when his name appeared on his marriage bond as W. G. Dafford. He signed with an “X”. Billie was 22 years old; his bride, Miss M. J. Runyan was also 22. Bondsman was Geo. W. Driggers, who signed his own name. The document states the marriage date as 7 December 1876.

**Research:** I searched for a Dafford—Driggers family connection, but I have been unable to establish common counties of residence before the Driggers’ arrival in Clark, although they lived fairly near the Runyans in Alabama at one time. When this Driggers family (Mrs. Driggers was née Blair) left Clark County, they went to Hunt County in northeast Texas, near where some Daffem families with roots in both Indiana and Missouri were living. There is no evidence that this is anything other than a coincidence, and these Texas Daffem families do not contain a William or Billie of the right age who can’t be otherwise accounted for later.

‘**Facts’ about Billie’s birthdate and place:** There are five sources that do not agree on Billie’s age and birthdate:

1. When Billie’s marriage was documented on 6 December 1876, his age is given as 22 years; therefore, he was born about 1854.
   
   **Observation:** Jane’s age is also given as 22 years, but she was really 21 years old, having been born on 1 September 1855.

2. On the 1880 census of Clark County, Billie is 23 years old (this subtracts to a birth about 1857), born Illinois, father born Georgia, mother born Tennessee. His wife Jane is 22, birthplace Alabama, parents born in Alabama.

   **Observations:** According to the census ages, Billie was only one year older than he was at his marriage more than three years earlier, and Jane aged not at all since her marriage. Jane was really 24 and was born in Alabama, not Arkansas. Her parents were both born in Alabama, as stated on the census.
3. On the 1900 census of Clark County, Billie was 42, born June 1857 in Georgia, parents’ birthplaces unknown. Jane was 44, born September 1855, birthplace Alabama, both parents born Alabama.

**Observations:** Jane’s birthdate, her birthplace and the birthplaces of both parents are correct.

4. Mrs. Lucille Isabelle Small Yates, a granddaughter of Billie’s son Andrew J. Dafford, possesses a record stating that Billie’s birthdate was 10 September 1855. She also states that Billie’s birthplace was Illinois, and her son Harry Eugene Yates reports that she did not research the census records to find this, but it is family lore. According to a Runyan family history *Tracking Barefoot Runyan* by Marie Runyan Wright, Billie’s birthdate is 10 August 1854. His birthplace is given as Tennessee.

**Observations:** The above information is believed to have been provided to Mrs. Wright for her book by Billie and Jane’s son, Euclid J. Dafford, “Uncle Euke”, but no source is given. In *Tracking Barefoot Runyan*, incorrect dates and name spellings are given for persons about whom I have personal knowledge; some of these are apparently typographical errors, some perpetuated from wrong information that was supplied by family members.

5. When Billie finalized his homestead land grant on 21 December 1885, he furnished information under oath, and stated his age as 25 years. This points to a birth year of 1860.

**Observation:** If born in 1860, he would have been only sixteen when he got married, and it is very doubtful that he would marry that young. I wish there was paperwork filled out in 1879, because I think that he had to be 21 years old (the rule was, over 21 years) to file a Homestead claim. If he was 25 years old in 1885, born in 1860, that would make him only nineteen in 1879 when he filed for his Homestead grant.

**Facts found in the land record:** United States Bureau of Land Management records state that William G. Dafford received Homestead Certificate No. 3878 (Application 7219) on 1 June 1888. This land is described as the

“northeast quarter of the southeast quarter of section twenty-three and the north half of the southwest quarter of section twenty-four in township five south of range twenty-three west of

---

30 I find it strange that this came down in the family lore, because Andrew J. Dafford stated his father’s birthplace as Georgia on the 1920 census; this could have been because of how the question was framed, however—the census taker may have asked Uncle Andrew where his daddy came from rather than where his daddy was born.

31 This can be remembered from a story that purports to be true: people told about taking up a claim and having each of their children do so at the same time. Nobody looked these people over and a land-office clerk filled out the papers. The parents would (it is said) write “21” on pieces of paper, and have the young kids put the papers in their shoes. Then if challenged, they could ‘truthfully’ swear that they were “over 21”.
the Fifth Principal Meridian in Arkansas containing one hundred and twenty acres”

The payments mentioned in the papers, for this land, include $3., $13. and $5. to the Arkadelphia newspaper, for advertising that the claim was to be finalized. The land lies about 2 miles west and a bit north of the Runyan Ford.

Research: No genealogical facts are contained in the Certificate; the paperwork generated by the application and finalization of the Homestead grant only muddies the waters. (No papers about the 1879 application were sent in response to my search request.) The final papers were drawn up on 21 December 1885, and Billie swore that the statements were correct. He states his age as 25 years, and that he is a native of the United States.

I really wonder if he thought they were asking him how old he was when he applied for the Homestead land in 1879, and he answered that he was 25 (this would place his birth in 1854). I cannot believe that he was trying to be deceptive. One must remember that, even if he looked the document over before he signed it with his mark, he couldn’t read and write, so wouldn’t have known that there was an error on it.

I quote three of the questions and answers because they flesh out the family:

"Ques. 3—When was your house built on the land and when did you establish actual residence therein? (Describe said house and other improvements which you have placed on the land, giving total value thereof.)

"Ans. My house was built on the land about the 10th of July 1879, at which time I established actual residence therein. I have one dwelling house, one smoke house, two corn cribs, dug one well, made a garden, planted an orchard. Total value of improvements two hundred dollars.

"Ques. 4.—Of whom does your family consist; and have you and your family resided continuously on the land since first establishing residence thereon? (If unmarried, state the fact.)

"Ans. My family consists of a wife and three children we have resided continuously on the land.

"Ques. 6.—How much of the land have you cultivated and for how many seasons have you raised crops thereon?

"Ans. I have cultivated ten acres of the land and raised crops thereon seven seasons."

Observations: His witnesses also state that he has ten acres under cultivation, and that he has made a crop for the past seven seasons. These would be the crop years of 1879, 1880, 1881, 1882, 1883, 1884, and 1885; he got possession in January 1879 and could easily have made a crop that year (although the house wasn’t ready for occupancy until July), and it was December 1885 when the form was filled out, so his crop was already made for that year.

32 The Runyan Ford was a shallow place to ford the Caddo River about five miles east of Amity, named because a Runyan farm lay just to the west of the crossing. A low-water bridge was eventually erected there; it was later replaced by a modern bridge. It was removed and no crossing has been possible there for a number of years, but there are plans to erect a new bridge (2005).
He says he has a wife and three children, and that fits with what we know: Andrew, Nora and Robert. Jimmy was already dead in 1885, and Euke wasn’t born until 1886.

**A study of Billie’s children and where they thought he was born:** I looked for each of Billie’s children on the censuses taken during their lifetimes. F means Father, M means mother, the state abbreviations are U.S. Post Office standard, and † means dead; their mother’s birthplace is known to be Alabama, so I have stricken through a wrong response; I considered only the father’s birthplace in 1880 and 1900.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>1880</th>
<th>1900</th>
<th>1910</th>
<th>1920</th>
<th>1930</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Andrew J. 33</td>
<td>IL</td>
<td>GA</td>
<td>blank</td>
<td>F=GA, M=AR</td>
<td>F=US, M=US</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James A. 34</td>
<td>IL</td>
<td></td>
<td>†</td>
<td>†</td>
<td>†</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nora Bell</td>
<td>(born 1880) 35</td>
<td>GA (at home)</td>
<td>F=TN, M=AR</td>
<td>F=AL, M=AR</td>
<td>F=TN, M=AR</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert Lee</td>
<td>(born 1882)</td>
<td>GA (at home)</td>
<td>F=TN, M=AL</td>
<td>F=TN, M=AL</td>
<td>F=AR, M=AR</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euclid J.</td>
<td>(born 1886)</td>
<td>GA (at home)</td>
<td>F=TN, M=AR</td>
<td>F=KY, M=AL</td>
<td>F=AR, M=US</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cora Elizabeth</td>
<td>(born 1888)</td>
<td>GA (at home)</td>
<td>F=TN, M=AL</td>
<td>F=KY, M=AR</td>
<td>F=US, M=AL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neva Ann</td>
<td>(born 1892)</td>
<td>GA (at home)</td>
<td>F=TN, M=TN</td>
<td>F=TN, M=AR</td>
<td>F=TN, M=AL</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Clues, ideas and rule-outs:** On the 1910 and 1920 censuses, Billie’s adult children list their father’s birthplace as Tennessee, Kentucky and Georgia. Uncle Bob said in 1920 that his father was born in Georgia, and there is a little ‘T’ above Georgia. Before I found William in Georgia in 1870, I thought that ‘T’ could mean Texas—this sent me to Texas on a wild goose chase for a time—but I have come to believe that Uncle Bob did not really know where his father was born and was vacillating between Georgia and Tennessee, probably having heard both those states mentioned as his father’s one-time dwelling places.

**Conclusions about Billie’s age and birthplace:** The age discrepancies may be explained by Billie’s being younger than his wife, which she wished to conceal; or he may have been told to subtract something from his age to persuade Bushwhackers to believe he was a child, then lost track of his true age 36.

**My own belief is that he was born in June 1857, perhaps the 10th, since those who give a date are consistent about that.** I also think that he truly may not have known how old he was.

**Taken together, the clues from the 1880 and 1900 censuses regarding Billie’s birthplace and those of his parents conflict enough that they are not really helpful; yet, the ways the enumerators posed the questions may have resulted in varying information being given.** Example: “Where were you born, Mr. Dafford?” vs. “Where did you come from, Mr. Dafford?” Regarding Billie’s children, one must necessarily give less credence to the answer to “Birthplace of Father” question, when a wrong answer was given to the

---

33 A child in the home when census was taken.
34 A child in the home when census was taken.
35 Aunt Nora was born on 22 September, well after the census target date of 1 June 1880.
36 A precedent: Florence Hovey related that Angelica Nuhn and her sisters engaged in some ‘white lies’, trying to confuse a boyfriend about which sister was the oldest; they confused themselves enough so that later they were not absolutely sure of the truth.
“Birthplace of Mother” question; it is certain that Jane Runyan was born in Alabama.

**Fact:** While Mrs. Wright in *Tracking Barefoot Runyan* states that Billie’s death date is 17 March 1902, (Uncle Euke Dafford almost certainly gave the information to Mrs. Wright) the Arkadelphia [Arkansas] Southern Standard of Thursday, 27 March 1902, under “Amity Notes” printed this death notice:

“Mr. Billie Dafford, one of our oldest citizens, after a brief illness, died last Monday. He leaves a family to mourn his loss.”

**Observations:** “Last Monday” would have been 24 March. I suspect that this was printed a week after the Amity paper printed it, and the death date really was 17 March 1902. Copies of the Amity newspaper, from which the Southern Standard probably copied this, do not survive.

Life expectancy was short at that time, but it seems strange that he would have been regarded as one of the community’s oldest citizens. If he had been born as early as 1850, which he almost certainly was not, he would have been only 52 years old when he died. Family lore from the Andrew J. Dafford branch states rather emphatically that Billie died at the age of 45 years; this places the birth year in 1856 or 1857.

Death certificates were not required in Arkansas at that time.

**Fact:** Billie, sharing a gravestone with his wife, is buried at Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery, located three miles north of Amity, Arkansas on Highway 182 West (2001). Gravestone data: Dafford, Billie 1854-1902.

**Observation:** Their infant son James is buried nearby.

**Research:** There was once a Methodist church called Thompson’s Chapel at the cemetery site. I have attempted without success to find church records of the now-disbanded congregation, although the church archives staff provided a photo of the church.

**Family lore, two versions:** From Fem Lambert, daughter of Billie’s daughter Cora who married Thomas Monroe Lambert comes the statement that Billie’s middle name was ‘Green’. Lucille Isabelle Small Yates, granddaughter of Billie’s son Andrew J. Dafford states that Billie’s middle name was ‘George’.

**Research result:** I was able to document the name ‘Green’ with the U. S. Government forms Application for Social Security Account Number of two of his sons, Robert Lee Dafford in Texas and Euke J. Dafford (he signed ‘E. J. Dafford’) in Arkansas, both of whom wrote “William Green Dafford” in the blank asking for father’s full name. Since Robert “Uncle Bob” didn’t communicate with anyone, these brothers would not have consulted each other before filling out their forms, so I believe the name Green must be correct. Taken with the middle initial ‘G.’ on the marriage document and the land record, there seems to be a preponderance of evidence, but of course the two documents
containing the initial ‘G’ would also be evidence for the name ‘George’.

**More family lore, two versions:**

1. From the Garner family of Billie’s youngest daughter and youngest child Neva, comes the lore that Billie was sent by his mother walking from his Tennessee home (some say Kentucky), “during the Civil War” to escape Bushwhackers.

   **Observation:** Whenever I’ve heard this lore repeated, it was always his mother who sent him away, his father not being mentioned.

   **Research result:** Mary Bondurant Warren, historian, genealogist and writer in Athens Georgia, suggests that there were “mini civil wars” going on in isolated areas where persons of different opinions lived. They called each other “Bushwhackers.”

2. From the family of Billie’s eldest son, Andrew J. Dafford, different and more specific details, and more information:

   a. that Billie with his parents relocated from Illinois to Mississippi prior to the commencement of the Civil War;

   b. that Billie was a U. S. Civil War orphan, both of his parents having died as a result of the war;

   c. that when Billie was twelve years old, in 1867, he was placed on a horse-drawn wagon with a family that he didn’t know and then relocated to Arkansas with this ‘new’ family whose name was Holcomb; and

   d. that due to being so young at the time of his ‘adoption’ (no one has ever suggested that the Holcombs adopted him or that he ever used their surname) he may not have remembered his actual last name, and some sources report that his name may have been Stafford;

   e. that he was 45 years old when he died.

   **Observations:** Willis Dafford, son of Andrew J. Dafford, was the first to mention to me that he had heard that Billie was sent away with a ‘wagon-load’ of other boys. If Billie’s “new family” had other orphan boys besides Billie, others of his family were not aware of it, and Neva Dafford Garner’s branch of the family had not heard it at all or didn’t remember it when I began to seek information.

   My first encounter with the name Stafford was also from Willis, who stated that it was suggested by his own daughter. Willis was a Methodist who went to church conferences away from his home church. When he introduced himself, (Dafford stated after the name-ending ‘s’ of Willis), his name was inevitably heard as ‘Stafford’. I discounted the Stafford possibility because of most Daffords not having names ending with ‘s’, but James would be another combination subject to mishearing although it ends with more of a ‘z’ sound than an
‘s’ sound (see my analysis of names in “Clues, ideas and rule-outs”).

My own theory is that Billie knew that Dafford was not exactly correct, but I believe that Dafford is closer than Stafford; it could have been any of the Daffron variations (my first choice) or Draffon, or Gafford, Pafford or Tafford, Hafford, even Brafford. There is known to be a Daffor family living in Floyd County, Georgia; this name is sometimes written Dafur, Dafir, Dafour and Dafore (seventeen spelling variations have been found by one researcher); there is also a family named Swafford, sometimes written Swifford, living in Floyd County about the time Billie was there.

James DeFoor enlisted as a Private in Company I, 29th Infantry Regiment, Georgia, on 26 October 1861. His residence is given as Floyd County, Georgia. He died of disease on 1 December 1862 in Savannah, Georgia. A man named Martin DeFoor served in Company C, First Regiment, Georgia State Line, Floyd County Infantry in the Civil War, enlisting in Floyd County, Georgia; Billie didn’t name a son Martin.

Lore: His adult children said that after he settled in Arkansas, Billie never attempted to communicate with parents, siblings or anyone left behind.

Observations: Is this a family trait? Billie and Jane’s son Robert Lee Dafford moved to Texas and never married; he seldom communicated with his siblings, but they did know where he was. A nephew, Clyde Garner, was encouraged by his mother to seek out his Uncle Bob while traveling in Texas. Clyde did so, and related that after he told Uncle Bob that he was Neva’s son, Uncle Bob said, “Is that so?” and turned and walked away. One son of Billie’s daughter Cora Lambert’s sons also moved away from his home and family and communicated with his siblings only rarely and with seeming reluctance.

If Billie was indeed an orphan, there wouldn’t have been anyone with whom he might have tried to communicate. In addition, he may have been sensitive about his illiteracy and not wanted to ask his literate wife to do his writing for him.

Research result: No member of any Dafford, Daffron, Daffern etc., family with whom I have corresponded has ever heard of a family to which Billie might belong. I established a ‘Daffron’ mailing list through the Internet Genealogy service Rootsweb, and have communicated through that medium with many branches of the families beginning with ‘Daf’, and while many are related to each other although not spelling their names the same way, I have found no one with knowledge of Billie.

A number of people who research Daff— have looked at Billie’s photograph at my behest, to see if a matching picture is among their ‘orphan pictures’. Nothing has been found so far.

Facts: I found, on the 1870 census of Floyd County, Georgia, William Dafford, white male age eighteen, born Illinois, not literate, works on farm, enumerated in the William Terry family: William, white male farmer age 68 born South Carolina, not literate but eligible to vote, with $500.00 worth of real estate and personal estate worth $250.00; Jane white female 63, occupation keeping house, not literate, born Georgia; Martha
Jane, white female age 31, born Georgia and not literate with no occupation. This young man, at age eighteen, is a little too old for our Billie, but I firmly believe that he is ours.

Observation: This William Dafford on the census conflicts with the lore that Billie was taken from Mississippi to Arkansas by a Holcomb family. It is possible that William and Jane Terry are Billie's grandparents or old neighbors of his parents, and he went there after the Holcombs took him to Arkansas, then returned to Arkansas where the Holcombs lived. This theory negates the family lore that he never attempted to communicate with family members left behind.

It is interesting to note that there is a Holcomb family vignette in Clark County Past and Present, a history of Clark County, Arkansas. The submitter, Evon Allen Teague of Bismarck, Arkansas, relates that Asa Chandler Holcomb, a Civil War veteran (Company G, First Regiment, Georgia Cavalry), was living in Floyd County, Georgia in 1870. The next year the family moved to Clark County, Arkansas, making their home eight miles east of Amity.

A scenario: Let us suppose that the census takers were correct about Billie's age in 1880 and 1900, and he was born in 1857. This makes him 12 or 13 in 1870; suppose that when the enumerator copied the census (the pen-and-ink copy is the one available for research), he mistook a 3 for an 8, and copied '18' instead of '13'. Now skew the family lore of the Andrew J. Dafford family, and have Billie and his parents go to Georgia instead of Mississippi before the Civil War—after all, when Billie eventually did come to Arkansas from Georgia, he would have gone through Mississippi and he may have related Mississippi events to his children.

It doesn't take much adjustment of dates for the Holcombs to have brought Billie with them when they came in 1871. Billie would have been about 13 years old. It is easy to understand that the Holcombs, who may have been strangers to Billie, would have been willing for a big boy to make the trip to Arkansas with them. If this scenario proves to be true, it places Billie less than three miles from the Runyans, into which family he later married, in Clark County, Arkansas. The old Runyan Ford on the Caddo River, home of Wes and Minerva Runyan, Jane Runyan Dafford's parents, is about five miles east of Amity. The distance of two or three miles between the Holcomb and Runyan farms would have been easy 'courting' distance!

Another twist to this scenario: Suppose that the above is true, except that Billie and his family did go to Mississippi; and that was the place where, according to the Garner family lore, the Bushwhackers were such a threat that his mother sent him away; and that he went alone to Floyd County, Georgia where he lived with the Terrys in 1870, and from whence he left for Arkansas with the Holcombs in 1871.

Collateral fact: Albert C. Runyan, age 20, born in Illinois and a painter by trade, was also enumerated in Floyd County, Georgia in 1870. He was living at the home of a Sproull family born in South Carolina.

Observation: So far nothing has been found that would link him to Billie's Illinois

37 There is lore in another family I've researched, about a young Henry Garner going with the Goodin Deaton family from Tennessee to Arkansas, "to help with the oxen".
birthplace or to the Runyan family into which Billie later married. I inquired of some Runyan researchers and they believe that this man was probably from Edgar County, Illinois, but I haven’t found parents for Albert, either. The link seems too tenuous to pursue in depth. Some people by the name of Dafferran were living in Edgar County about the time he would have been born, but Billie is not a child in any Daffron (or similar spelling) family there in the 1860 census.

**Lore:** The Knox County Courthouse at Knoxville, Tennessee, stood on land which had been owned by Billie’s granddaddy.

**Research result:** This seems unlikely; Gen. James White, founder of Knoxville, owned the land where the antebellum courthouse stood. Billie was illiterate; it seems likely that the grandson of a general would have been taught to read and write. Perhaps the wrong county was remembered, or Knox County was in another state, or something else was misunderstood or just remembered wrong. Billie’s mother’s maiden name is unknown, and whether this lore was supposed to apply to his Dafford grandfather or his mother’s father is not known.

I have also ruled out for the same reason, the courthouse site in Vincennes, Knox County, Indiana, which the county bought from a physician named Jacob Kuykendall.

**Lore:** Billie told that his father stored a bag of gold under the bed, a bag so heavy that Billie (as a child) was unable to pull it across the floor.

**Observation:** This tale may be true, or may have been told to entertain his children, who were unable to separate fact from fiction.

**Naming pattern:** I looked for a naming pattern; Billie and Jane’s children’s names were:

1. Andrew J. (the ‘J’ stands for ‘Jackson’ according to some of his descendants, and for ‘Jefferson’ according to his son Willis Dafford’s obituary and Mrs. Wright’s *Tracking Barefoot Runyan*)

2. James Archey (or Archibald)

3. Nora Bell according to her descendant Ludy Wright Perry; Lenora/Elnora Belzora according to a family tradition; and L. B. in a family bible formerly owned by Fern Lambert but given to Britt Elam in 2001; Nora Ann in *Tracking Barefoot Runyan*

4. Robert Lee

5. Euclid J. Cora Elizabeth

6. Neva Ann
Jane’s father was Jefferson Wesley Runyan; her mother’s father was Archibald Houston/Huston; she had a brother Andrew Jefferson Runyan. The Runyans were Confederate, perhaps accounting for Robert Lee’s name. There was a Dr. John Euclid Kennedy practicing in the Amity area, and Uncle Euke may have been named for him; indeed, Dr. Kennedy may have attended Uncle Euke’s birth. I was told by a family member that Uncle Euke’s middle initial J. stands for John, but I have been unable to find documentation for that. Andrew Jackson\(^{38}\) and James\(^{39}\) seem to be the only male names that can’t be accounted for, suggesting that they come from Billie’s ancestors. The female names Elizabeth and Belzora were in the Runyan family; otherwise the girls’ names seem not to come from the Runyans.

In addition, I thought that among the names of Billie’s grandchildren, the name ‘Vance’ seemed likeliest to have been a surname, possibly that of Billie’s mother. Vance Garner never heard anything about being named for anyone and believes that his parents just liked the name. His middle name is ‘Floyd’ and one wonders if his mother had heard her father speak of Floyd County, Georgia, and liked the name on that account.

Giles Daffron (Dafford on one census) of Knox County, Indiana had a son named Green. There was a Green Martin Daffern born in Texas, the son of a William Daffem whose middle name is said to be Green, but no documentation can be found for the middle name. This man is too old to be Billie; his children’s names are known, and Billie is not among them.

The 1860 census of Marion County, Tennessee lists a John Dafford with an eight-year-old William. I thought for a while that Billie belonged in this family; on a later census, however, the same family can be found with the Daffron spelling, and William has a middle initial which is really hard to read but is definitely not ‘G’. His descendant states that his middle name is ‘Levi’.

Inasmuch as Billie was unable to read, he wouldn’t have known whether his name was written correctly or not. Possible variations include Daffer, Daffron, Daffem, Daffin, Daffed, Daffer, Daffour, and those possibilities spelled with only one ‘f, plus Dapher and Dappron. Other suggestions: Tafford, Gafford, Stafford and Swafford. Census indexers sometimes see Dofer, Dofer etc.

A poignant thought has haunted me ever since I found Daffrons at Amity, DeKalb County, Missouri: Did the family make plans to meet there when they for whatever reason went separate ways, and Billie somehow misunderstood, arrived at Amity, Clark County, Arkansas, found they were not there, but stayed on anyway? It probably is not

\(^{38}\) But Minerva Huston’s mother Judith Borum Huston’s father Edmund Borum fought a War of 1812 battle near New Orleans where Andrew Jackson distinguished himself, so it is possible that his name was a ‘household word’ during Minerva’s early years.

\(^{39}\) Could Billie’s mother’s maiden name have been James? I thought for a while that she may have been related to the famous ‘Bushwhacker’ James brothers, but have mostly discarded that theory because of the geography.
likely, because the Missourians were literate people who owned a business, I believe a hotel.

Richard Largaespada, who researches a Daffin family with Maryland roots, writes, “I recently [2001] found that the middle initial ‘G’ in Joseph G. Daffin stood for ‘Green’. He lived in Maryland in the late 1700s and early 1800s.” Richard has not yet found a reason for this name, conjecturing that it may have come from an ancestor on Joseph’s mother’s line.

Some possibilities:

A possible family for Billie was enumerated at McDonough Post Office in Henry County, Tennessee on 16 July 1860: Joel C. Dofer [could be Dafer] 25, male, farm laborer, no real estate, $20.00 personal estate, born Georgia; with Mary 25; William 3; Martha 2; Aletha 17 and idiotic; John C. 13; and William F. 12. They were all born in Georgia. The last three persons could be the siblings of Joel, if their surname really is the same as his. Census takers were so careless and some people being counted were so close-mouthed and contrary, that these people could be the siblings of Joel’s wife, or could simply be people being cared for by the family, and only got enumerated under the surname of head-of-household Joel. Idiotic was a legal term at that time. In that they are in Tennessee with Georgia birthplaces, in a far-northwest Tennessee county with close proximity to both Kentucky and Illinois, this family fits most known facts and the family lore, with the exception of the bag-of-gold story and Billie’s Illinois birthplace. After indexes became more available, and searchable by first name only, I was still unable to find an Aletha close to the right age and in the right place.

An index of Tennessee Civil War Soldiers includes Joel Daffron. He enlisted in 1861 at Knoxville, Knox County Tennessee (eastern Tennessee) and died in a hospital in Bowling Green, Kentucky in 1861. An ‘expert’ on the Civil War told me that a man living in Henry County would not have gone back to Knox County to serve in a military unit with his relatives and old neighbors, but I think it is possible, especially if he took his family back to his wife’s people in Georgia, then set out with a brother, cousin or neighbor, caught up in war hysteria. Knoxville, Tennessee brings the Knoxville of the family lore about the courthouse into the picture even though the courthouse land ownership has been ruled out. It also brings the state of Kentucky from the family lore into Billie’s story, although not as Billie’s birthplace as some of his adult children stated on the census records.

If Billie belongs in the family of Joel and Mary “Dofer/Dafer” of Henry County, Tennessee in 1860, and Joel the soldier who died in 1861 is that same Joel, Mary would have been a young widow. She very likely remarried and didn’t apply for a widow’s pension, as Confederate pensions were not available until much later. This could explain the lore that mother sent Billie away, no father being in the picture. It could also conceal Billie in the 1870 census if his mother remarried and he ‘went by’ his mother’s new surname, not a factor if the William Dafford on the 1870 census of Floyd County, Georgia, is our Billie, lost both parents in the Civil War, and traveled to Arkansas with
the Holcombs.

It is not likely that the above family is Billie’s if he is a grandson of William and Jane Terry, because their daughter Mary married one Samuel Fetherston Vaughn. A daughter of that couple, America B. Vaughn, moved to Hot Spring County, Arkansas, next to Clark County where Billie ultimately settled.

For Billie to be the grandson of William and Jane Terry, he would have to be the son of a daughter other than Mary—unless Mary had a husband named Daff—and was widowed before she married Vaughn. This is impossible if both of Billie’s parents died in the Civil War.

Sallye Swafford Hartford in Sherwood, Oregon researches (2005) a Martha Garner, born in 1831 in Georgia, who married a Mr. Green. She married a second time to William Marion Swafford or Swofford on 11 January 1863 in Dawson County, Georgia. A case might be made for Billie to be the son of Martha and Mr. Green, perhaps named William George Green. When his mother later married Mr. Swafford, he could have dropped ‘George’ as his middle name and used his former last name of Green, becoming William Green Swafford. This represents a stretch of the imagination, without an Illinois connection and bringing, unaccountably, the Garner name into the mix.

**Conclusion:** I have followed every firm lead—and some not so firm—and every bit of family lore, and I cannot guess with any confidence the names of Billie’s parents. I feel more confident about stating his birthplace as Illinois.

Parents have not been identified.

See Illustration Number 10 and Illustration Number 10 and 11.

11 – Minervia Jane Elizabeth RUNYAN, who was called Jane, was born 1 September 1855 in Talladega County, Alabama, the daughter of Jefferson Wesley Runyan and Minervia Hillsman Huston. (For Huston surname spelling evolution, see the biography of Person Number 23.)

The Runyan information is taken from Marie Runyan Wright’s two Runyan volumes: *Tracking Barefoot Runyan – Descendants of Isaac Barefoot Runyan and Up the Runyon Runion Runyan Tree*; I have found the first book helpful, with some exceptions; some mistakes may be regarded as typographical errors. For example, Jane’s birth year is given on page 87 as 1854; her next older sibling, Orabelia Mary was born 28 December 1853, and there wasn’t really enough time between births for her to have been born 1 September 1854. I believe that 1855, stated elsewhere in the book and on her gravestone, is correct. The errors appear to be caused by carelessness or gullibility on Mrs. Wright’s part, or attributable to

---

40 I ran across Sally’s message while I was researching a Garner family who turned out not to connect to our’ Garners.

people who gathered information for her. I personally furnished corrections about our family to her, and she included them in the second volume but made a serious error in transcribing one fact\(^\text{42}\) that had been correct in the first book. Inasmuch as at least one learned Runyon/Runyan researcher\(^\text{43}\) refers to the second book as “fiction”, I have not relied heavily upon it.

I am not able to tell a great deal about Jane’s life. The Runyan family moved from Alabama to Columbia County, Arkansas, thence to Clark County, where she married Billie Dafford. They established a farm home, and his Homestead papers state that they had a dwelling house, a smoke house, a dug well\(^\text{44}\), an orchard and a garden; Jane surely worked hard to feed and clothe her family, preserving the produce for winter use. The well was not especially convenient; within my memory it was across the road from the dwelling, but it is possible that the road was moved after the well was dug. Carrying water must have been a never-ending chore. I remember the house myself, visiting after Uncle Euke was widowed and living there alone. The house was heated by a fireplace, and there was something unique about the hearth, but I don’t recall what it was.

Some of the children were still young when Billie died, and life must have been difficult. They made a home together at the Dafford farm, not very happily after Euke married, according to family lore. Jane’s photo, date not known but copied from a tintype, looks as though she had lost many teeth, a common thing during the time she lived.

Jane died on 30 November 1914, and is buried at Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery near Amity; she shares a gravestone with her husband. I searched for but did not find Jane’s obituary in the available newspapers.

Siblings, surname Runyan

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Status</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>William F.</td>
<td>died young without issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orabelia Mary</td>
<td>married William McDougal; no issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Minervia Jane Elizabeth]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Newton Houston</td>
<td>died young without issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andrew Jefferson “Dutch”</td>
<td>married first Dovie Sims Adcock, issue; married second Margaret Ada Wright, issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Archibald</td>
<td>married Emily Francis “Emma” Williams; issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Permelia Caroline “Kate”</td>
<td>married George Washington Tackett; issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Jackson “Jack”</td>
<td>married Annie F. Baggett; issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isaac Wesley “Ike”</td>
<td>married Sara Ella “Sallie” Buck; issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry Franklin “Frank”</td>
<td>married Ida Mae Pharr; issue</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

See Illustration Number 11 and Illustration Number 10 and 11.

Parents are Numbers 22 and 23.

---

\(^{42}\) Lottie Garner married James Petifer; their daughter Jamie Sue’s surname was Petifer, not Garner. She married Richard Curtis Thomas.

\(^{43}\) See Appendix 6.

\(^{44}\) As opposed to a well that was drilled.
12 – Heinrich Gottlieb NIEMANN, always called Gottlieb, was born on 5 October 1850 at Wahrentrup, Lippe-Detmold, Germany, to Johann Christoph Niemann and his wife, Friederike Henriette Florentine née Lükìng, the youngest of their eight children. He was baptized by the pastor of the Evangelical church in Oerlinghausen on 20 October 1850, and according to the church record, “the child’s father” (my translation) was the only witness.

Gottlieb was confirmed on 25 September 1864, his instruction having begun on 15 April. He is among four male confirmands in the group who received their instruction privately, and I cannot offer any explanation for that. Others received instruction at schools held in villages in the parish.

Gottlieb’s handwriting suggests that he was educated beyond the rudiments. He was a skilled horticulturist, learning, almost certainly during his early years in Germany, the art (or is it a science?) of grafting a desirable branch to a more vigorous root, ultimately producing a more robust plant, one that bears better and/or more fruit.

He was interested in rose culture as a hobby, and once went to Switzerland to obtain a blue rose. I suspect that it was not truly blue, perhaps having a more lavender cast than roses usually have. There is a sworn affidavit in connection with his Nebraska farm’s takeover by the Alien Property Custodian, that he had not left Germany after his arrival there in 1900. Taking that into consideration, it seems like he must have made his trip to Switzerland before he ever came to America, but my understanding of this blue rose lore always was that it was during his son Oscar’s (my father) youth in Germany.

There is sort of an elaborate family lore in Germany, related by my Aunt Edith (Kiel) Niemann, widow of Gottlieb’s youngest son Hugo, that Gottlieb came to America to escape military service. He was certainly the right age to have been required to serve in the Franco-Prussian War, fought between 19 July 1870 until the Treaty of Frankfurt was signed 10 May 1871. Hidden in a corner of the trunk that his son Oscar brought with him from Germany in 1925, I found a brass button, obviously from a military uniform and embellished with the Gothic letter $; someone has suggested it stands for Preußen (Prussia).

Tante Edith’s understanding was that he was engaged in “clearing the land” (she said those last three words in English) in America. I have tried to find him on the 1880 census, but he cannot be found in the every-name index. She believes that he would not have dared to enter Germany for 30 years after his departure to avoid military service, so he may have been on firm legal ground when he returned to visit Germany in 1900. I firmly believe, however, that this story got transferred from someone else, possibly one of Tante Edith’s own relatives, some of whom live in the Cincinnati area.

According to Auswanderer aus dem Fürstentum Lippe (1878 – 1900) by Fritz Verdenhalven, Gottlieb Niemann from Wahrentrup, born at Wahrentrup 5 October 1850,
emigrated in April or May, 1888. His destination: America. If he had been in trouble with the military authorities as outlined above, permission to emigrate would not have been granted in 1888.

Verdenhalven’s findings line up perfectly with immigration information found in a United States passenger arrival list. The ship Saale, H. Richter Master, arrived in New York on 16 June 1888. “Gottl. Niemann”, a “worker” from “Rinteln”, age 30 (he was really 37), boarded at Bremen (Bremenhaven), a German citizen whose intended destination was “U.S.A.”. He was assigned space in the first compartment, steerage. He had one piece of baggage, his purpose described as “intending protracted sojourn”.

I cannot account for the statement that he was from Rinteln, a small city near the River Weser. Twenty-five-year-old Carl Wissmann, whose name appears just above Gottlieb’s on the passenger list, is also from Rinteln. He, too, is mentioned by Verdenhalven, born 1862 at Ehrentrup, with two brothers already in America. His occupation is also stated as “worker” on the passenger list, but Verdenhalven calls him an Okonom which can be translated as economics student, economist or farmer.

I conjecture that Gottlieb and Carl boarded a riverboat at Rinteln and may have misunderstood a question or even purposely disguised their places of residence in Germany.

The Saale made a stop in Southampton, England, where 32 additional passengers boarded. A total of 537 passengers made the voyage to New York.

The first documentation that I have found of Gottlieb’s presence in Seward is his Declaration of Intention to seek United States Citizenship, on 1 March 1889, on file in the Courthouse in Seward, Nebraska.

I researched his purchase of the farm, part of which is now (2006) mine, and found in the courthouse in Seward, in Deed Book 1, on page 334, a Warranty Deed from Robert T. Cooper and Emma D. Cooper and John S. Henderson and Josephine Henderson, granting to Gottlieb Niemann, for the sum of $4,800, dated 7 May 1889,

“The South half of the North East quarter of Section thirty-three Township eleven North, Range three East 6th P.M. Also that part of the North half of the South West quarter of Section thirty four lying and being South of the Blue River. Also Lot one of the South half of South West Quarter Section thirty four all in Township eleven North Range three East of the Sixth Principal Meridian. Lot one as above described containing sixty eight acres in accordance with the plats on record in irregular Tract Book in the office of the County Clerk of the County and State aforesaid.”

When Ben and I made our last trip to Germany together at Easter, 2001, Edith Niemann gave me a folder full of old family papers, including the original deed to the farm. It contains the same information as the deed found in the courthouse. I was delighted to receive it, and it is in my safe deposit box.
Cooper was advertising the farm (the legal description matches) as early as 1 March 1883, and the Reporter, a Seward newspaper stated on 5 April 1888 that Captain Cooper would sell his farm at auction on 30 April. How he came to continue ownership until Gottlieb bought the farm in 1889 is not very understandable; a Mr. Heumann already had the portion that was cut off as going with the mill site by 1892 when he leased it to Martin Hulshizer, and certainly had it before Niemann completed his purchase by 1889; Heumann was a neighbor of Niemanns in Germany, and I wonder if he had a hand in bidding it in for Gottlieb at the auction, arranging to complete the transaction after Gottlieb’s immigration.

Now a landowner, Gottlieb evidently set about finding a bride. No lore about his meeting with Jette Grolm comes down in the family. Both had come from the Principality of Lippe-Detmold, and there was a certain tendency for immigrants who had come from the same region to seek one another out. Their marriage record is recorded in Seward County, and the document contains some errors. The license was granted on 21 September 1891. Gottlieb’s age is stated as 35 (he was really twelve days short of 41) and Jette’s age is correctly given as twenty. His father’s name is stated as Gustav Niemann (really Christoph) and his mother’s name is more nearly correct: Frederica Luking. Jette’s father’s name is given as Henry Grolm (really Heinrich) and her mother’s maiden name as Lena Siebold, the worst interpretation of all; her name was Johanne Henriette Luise Süßwold. None of those names is nicknamed ‘Lena’, but ‘Siebold’ is not too far off phonetically.

The Certificate of Marriage is included on the same page: P. Speidel, Evangelical Minister, certifies that on the 23rd day of September, 1891, at Seward, he joined in marriage Gottlieb Niemann and Miss Henriette Grolm, and there were present as witnesses August Heumann and Augusta Hartwig, both of Seward.

The Rev. Mr. Speidel wrote the same facts in the church record of Friedens Evangelical church, adding that the ceremony was conducted in the church, and naming two additional witnesses, Gustav Tempel and Ida Medow.

I have two or three copies of their wedding picture. Jette is quite covered up by the bridal finery, and looks to be scared to death. I don’t know exactly how I came about the information, but I know that they had a wedding dance in the yard of the Seward County farmhouse (my mother thought I dreamed this up, but I think I know that they had some kind of a portable dance floor, and I even think I know where in relation to the house it was set up) and the Thomas Family Band provided the music, which I believe was of an oom-pah-pah nature. A historical Special Edition of the Seward County Independent dated 4 July 1972, contains a photo of the band members, identifying them as Carl, William, J.J., George, J.C., Theodore and Ehrman Thomas and Bill Schmidt, and states that this was one of the first bands in this vicinity. A Thomas descendant, Bryce Butler, states that among the instruments

---

46 Robert T. Cooper married Miss Emma Brenizer of Germantown, Ohio at the home of W. O. Antrim near this city [Seward], by the Rev. Chestnut (Presbyterian) on 25 September 1887. The Seward Reporter states that his friends thought that Capt. Cooper was a confirmed bachelor, and were surprised at his marriage. If he achieved his rank in the Civil War, it does seem like he would have been a rather old bridegroom.

47 This was new information for me, and enabled me to isolate “my” Gottlieb and his parents on the International Genealogical Index when I began to do research.
were fiddles, a bass, cornet, clarinet, trombone, trumpet, little tuba, and mandolin.

No newspaper account of the wedding can be found, nor did I find any mention in Seward newspapers about the births of the couple’s first two children, Oscar, born 24 August 1892 and Walter born 10 December 1894. Both boys’ baptisms are recorded in Friedens church records. Beginning in 1897 and continuing until his final departure from Seward in 1900, Gottlieb and his family got some newspaper coverage, misspellings retained in each case:

**Seward County Democrat, Thursday, 8 April 1897:**

“Mr. and Mrs. G. Niemann had a pair of twin girls born to them yesterday, and Gottlieb is one of the proudest men in the community now.”

**The Seward County Democrat, Thursday, 15 April 1897:**

“Bitten by a Dog.

“As G. Niemann was going from his potatoe field near the mill to his home last evening, he noticed a large dog lying along the path, and picking up a clod threw it at it. This seemed to irritate the beast and it sprang at Mr. N., but he was on the alert and grabbing it by the neck probably avoided some severe treatment although as it was the dog’s teeth were imbeded in his face. Quite a lively tussel followed, and in response to the cries for help a neighbor came out with a gun and put an end to the savage beast. Mr. N. was considerably frightened about his wounds and had them treated by a physician, but it is believed nothing further will develop from them”

On 21 April 1897, the **Blue Valley Blade**, another newspaper published at Seward, gave a somewhat different account of the incident:

“Gottleib Neimann had a round up with a big dog down by Cooper’s mill last Wednesday that he will not forget very soon. As he was standing near the mill, the dog, whose ownership is unknown, suddenly sprang upon Mr. Neimann and commenced to bite and scratch him in the face, neck and arms. Mart Hulshizer heard his cries for help and grabbing his shot gun went to Gottlieb’s aid, and getting the beast off of Mr. Neimann, Mart gave the dog the contents of both barrels, but it took a third shot to end his career. Mr. Neimann’s right arm was considerably hurt and his neck is somewhat hurt, but nothing serious.”

**Blue Valley Blade, Wednesday, 25 April 1900:**

48 Martin Hulshizer was born 29 January 1847 in Coshocton County, Ohio, the son of Godfrey Hulshizer and Mary Phoebe Young. He married Rebecca Bowersock, who was born 21 March 1848 in Ohio. He was a miller. The couple had three known children, and there are living descendants (2001). [Source: Hulshizer Heritage, compiler: Jerri McCoy, 4131 Frontier Dr SE, Olympia, WA 98501] Martin and Rebecca were married on 12 December 1867 in Mason County, Illinois [Source: International Genealogical Index—extraction from Illinois Civil Records.] The Seward Reporter of 7 January 1892 reported that Martin had leased the Heumann mill, and described him as a “miller of long experience”. This is ample proof that he is the one who saved Gottlieb from the dog, because the dwelling place that went with Heumann’s mill was adjacent to the Niemann farmstead. Martin and Rebecca Hulshizer are buried at Greenwood Cemetery in Seward.
“Gotlieb Neiman and family departed on Thursday of last week for a visit to Germany and they will also visit the Paris Exposition on their return.”

Seward Independent-Democrat, Thursday 26 April 1900:

“Mr. and Mrs. G. Neiman and Mrs. A. Hartwig and daughter Della left here last Thursday for Germany.”

The Seward Reporter of 16 August 1900 states that Mrs. Adolph Hartwick and Della returned from Germany last week.

The Seward Reporter 30 August 1900:

“Gottlieb Niemann, who, together with his family, went to Germany several months ago, returned last week having decided to sell out and go back to the old country to live. His family did not return with him. Notice of his sale will be found in another column.”

The auction notice, spelling and errors retained (the printer seems to have run out of the number ‘1’ and uses ‘T’ as a substitute) from which we can glean information about how large and varied his farming operation was, and how well he had done while living in the United States:

“Public Sale.

“On Wednesday, the 19th day of September, commencing at 10 a.m. I will sell to the highest bidder on my farm 3½ miles southeast of Seward, near Cooper’s mill, the following property: 3 mares 6 years old, probably in foal, 1 horse 6 years old, 1 good work horse, 1 good work mare, 1 Shetland pony 4 years old, 4 milch cows, 6 heifers, some of them will be fresh soon, 7 head of calves, 1 full blood Shorthorn bull 3 years old, 6 dozen Plymouth Rock chickens, Plano binder, 2 mowers, 1 hay rake, 1 single row stalk cutter, 1 stalk rake, 1 Union corn planter with 140 rods of wire, 1 new Fuller & Johnson lumber wagon, 1 wagon with hay rack, 2 lumber wagons, 1 sulky plow, 1 16-in. walking plows, 3 three section harrows, 2 walking cultivators, Superior press drill, 1 broadcast seeder, 4 sets of work harness, 3 sets of fly nets, and other articles, 1 new carriage, made by Mr. Dunphy in Seward, 1 new pony cart made by Dunphy, 1 spring wagon, I cook stove, 1 heating stove, 1 bed room set, 3 bedsteads with springs, 1 extension table, 3 rocking chairs, 1 clock, 1 ice box, 1 dozen chairs, 2 washing machines, 2 cupboards, 1 iron kettle, sausage grinder and press, some canned fruits and other articles to numerous to mention. Free lunch at noon.

“Terms of sale: Ten months time will be given on sums over $10 if paid when due, purchaser giving note with approved security. If not paid when due 8 per cent interest will be charged from date of sale. All sums of $10 and under cash. 5 per cent off for cash.

“GOTTLIEB NIEMANN”

Seward Independent-Democrat, Thursday, 6 September 1900:

“Gotlieb Nieman, living south of town, will have a sale in a few days, soon after which he will leave

49 Their family is not mentioned, but all four children accompanied them to Germany.
50 A sulky plow has a seat for riding, contrasting with ‘walking plow’.
for Germany where he has become the heir to an estate valued at $40,000."\(^{51}\)

Blue Valley Blade, Wednesday, 12 September 1990:

"Gotlieb Nieman, who lives near Cooper's mill, intends selling out and going back to Germany to take care of an invalid brother who has willed him all his property amounting to several thousand dollars."

Seward Independent-Democrat, Thursday, 11 October 1900:

"Gotlieb Niemann left Tuesday for Germany."

I found the finality of the last article compelling. The previous Tuesday would have been 9 October, but I'm not sure but what Tuesday of the previous week, the 2\(^{nd}\), is what was meant. His descendants in Germany state that he brought with him a McCormick Binder\(^{52}\), the first mechanical binder in Lippe.

Gotlieb's brother Christoph, who died in 1910, made good on his promise to see to it that Gottlieb inherited the Niemann farm at Währertrup, and the family prospered there. Gottlieb and his family spoke High German in the house, but he was able to speak the local low German dialect to his farm workers.

The couple had a fifth child, Hugo Hans, in 1909. They were able to send Oscar to an agricultural school in Lage, Walter must have gone there or to a similar school also, and the twins, Alma and Alwine, were sent to a finishing school in Bremen. World War I brought difficult conditions, the two older sons both serving in the army and son-in-law Peter Kühn being killed in action, but the farm itself seems not to have been unduly affected.

Gotlieb's health had deteriorated by 1 January 1920 (and we don't know how long before that). Jette's cousin Minna Grolm wrote to Aunt Schmidt on that date, translation by Rosemarie Cummins,

"...Niemanns have it now in their house like a prince, and Uncle Niemann [Gottlieb] is so frail that he has to use 2 canes to walk..."

Gottlieb and Jette Niemann made a combined will on 16 May 1924, declaring each other as heir (German couples were able to make a joint will according to the Lippe law of 1786).

In January 1927, just after Jette Niemann had returned home after her trip to Nebraska, the Niemann house in Währertrup burned. It was not a total loss, and most of the contents were saved. A letter from Alma to Aunt Schmidt states that, "Mother was inconsolable, but Father

---

\(^{51}\) Farmland was being advertised in Seward County for $2,400. per 80 acres or $30. per acre. Gottlieb owned 220.74 acres in Seward County, or about $6,222. worth of land for which he had paid $4,800. on 8 May 1889.

\(^{52}\) A farm machine for harvesting small grain; it cut the grain, carried it on canvas rollers to the back of the binder, placed a length of binder twine around a sheaf of the appropriate size, tied it securely, cut off the twine and kicked the sheaf out onto the ground. The sheaves would be shocked and the grain would dry and be threshed later.
was calmer", and goes on to say that while the contents of the house were standing unprotected outdoors, there was some looting. The Niemanns rebuilt the part that was not restorable, making various improvements. My own opinion is that the house was not the last time I saw it, and never was, 'princely', but it is a comfortable, well-maintained and beautiful home. The walls are two feet thick, just like I was told as a child—but it was only on my 2001 visit that I happened to think about that and verify it.

Gottlieb suffered a stroke in 1930 or early 1931, and after that he was nearly bedfast. His daughter Alma’s letter of 16 April 1936, translation transcribed below, states that he had been in bed for almost 6 years when he died the previous month.

During World War I, control of the farm in Nebraska had been taken over by the Alien Property Custodian (APC), an arm of the federal government, because Gottlieb, living in Germany, was considered to be a hostile alien. A great deal of correspondence was generated due to this situation. Gottlieb himself entered into correspondence with a number of bank and government officials while he was able, and after his health failed, his daughter Alwine’s husband, Fritz Meier, took over the correspondence in Gottlieb’s name.

The progression of events as I understand them, are these: With the entry of the United States into the war, the APC gained control of, but not the title to, the Seward County land. Some monies, farm income, were paid to Gottlieb (I think after the war was over), a percentage being retained in Washington by the APC. An old letter indicates that the family planned to come back to America, leaving Walter to take charge of the Niemann land in Germany, but instead, Oscar came to America alone and all the rest of the family remained in Germany. Jette came to Nebraska in 1926 and ‘sold’ the Nebraska land to her sister, Lina Schmidt who paid some cash (which was used to take care of some obligations the Niemanns had acquired, as well as to pay the percentage of the purchase price which had to go to the APC) and gave them a mortgage for the remainder of the purchase price. During the depression, Lina was short on cash; she somehow got the Niemanns to release their mortgage, and she mortgaged the Niemann farm, using the proceeds to solve her cash-flow problem. Ultimately, she got a Federal Land Bank (government) loan (the terms were much more favorable than the bank loan) and paid off the private bank mortgage with it. Times continued very bad, and when she was unable to make the payment that was due to the Federal Land Bank, she turned the farm over to Oscar.

The farm was supposed to have been his inheritance, and he did get it, but it was burdened with the heavy mortgage described above (see his story).

Meanwhile, on 11 January 1934, officers of the court in Oerlinghausen went to the Niemann home and interviewed Gottlieb Niemann, who was “lying in bed obviously sick, but it was possible to have a conversation with him to determine that he was in full possession of his mind”.

On 29 January 1934, Henriette Niemann, armed with the above court-acknowledged verification that Gottlieb’s mind was clear, approached the court in Oerlinghausen on her

53 See Jette’s story for more about this.
own and Gottlieb’s behalf, asking clarification of the inheritance law, and intending if the court found it legal, to pass over their eldest son (Oscar) as heir because he was in America and was not expected to return, and to pass over their second son (Walter) “…as he lacks the necessary energy and qualities to manage a farm successfully. He, the second son, has managed the farm for several years, but not successfully; he has permitted the farm to run down.” (Translation of the court document by an unknown person.). The court found that they were allowed to designate whomever they wished as heir, and they then invalidated their 1924 joint will and made a statement that their new joint will, designating the third son, Hugo as heir, was to be read “…after the death of the longer-living of us…” This legal manipulation required Oscar to sign a document agreeing to the plan (evidently Walter was permitted no say in the matter, because he had already failed as a farm manager). The Niemanns’ granddaughter, Alma (Kühn) Timpe remembered being present when Oscar’s relinquishment document arrived in Wahrentrup, and stated that Walter was very angry and kicked the walls and hit the doors with his fists. Alma told this to her granddaughter, Veronika Timpe, before the Timpe family came to visit us in Nebraska in 1997.

Three letters telling about Gottlieb’s last illness, death and funeral have been saved. I own these documents (2003), and supplied some clarifying information, which is bracketed54. I translated the Fritz Meier letter (he wrote very clearly) and Rosemarie Cummins translated those written by Gottlieb’s daughter Alma:

11 December 1934 [Tuesday]

“…Papa is not good. I wonder if he will live until Christmas. On Thursday he was very bad, we thought he had left us, on Sunday he was a little better. Hugo just told me he is still the same, I called him. On Sunday his speech was confused. Papa asked me on Sunday how my mother is. To Mother he said as soon as possible he wanted to go to Seward and get examined [he had lived in Seward, Nebraska until 1900 and had been in Germany ever since] and to Wilhelm Wiese he said he noticed that the end is near. Carl’s mother [Carl Plassmeyer, Alma’s husband] visited him yesterday and he was alert and answered all her questions....”

[Stationary of Fritz Meier, Bank Director, Telephone Bad Salzuflen 2921; written to his wife Alwine (Niemann) Meier’s brother, Oscar Niemann, in Seward, Nebraska.]

“Schöntmar (Lippe) the 14th March 1936

“Dear Brother-in-law Oscar!

“Since you last heard from Wahrentrup Father [his father-in-law] passed away peacefully on March 10. Today, on Saturday, the 14th of March, we have laid him to his last rest in the Helpup Cemetery near Uncle Christoph [Gottlieb’s oldest brother]. Alwine went early today to the Hof [Niemann farm in Wahrentrup] where the rest of the siblings were together; I came there after midday with my brothers August, Heinrich and Paul and my daughter Christel. [Carl] Plassmeyer [husband of

---

54 I made these bracketed annotations when I compiled the letters into the volume “The Family Letters: The Family Secrets”. Sometimes the annotations are redundant here because the comments are better explained elsewhere.
Alwine’s twin, Alma] came in the meantime with his 2 children, Alma and Carl-Adolf. Father was laid out solemnly from the Dehle. [Rosemarie Cummins helped with this word; she believes that it would now be spelled Diele, and the meaning is hall or entranceway. Since the house in Wahrenbrup has a huge central entrance hall, the meaning fits.] The barn was decorated with fir greens, in the same way also the doorway of the barn. Six large laurel wreaths were on the wall near the heavy oak coffin, which was made by Brinkmann from oak cut on the farm in 1920. These relatives came: Uncle and Aunt from Stemmen [Jette Niemann’s brother Heinrich Grolm and his wife Minna], Uncle Carl and Alwine from Langenholzhausen [Carl Ottemeier, widower of Jette’s sister Auguste, and their daughter Alwine Brandsmeier], August Brinkbock [his mother was Julia Stüllwold, sister to Jette Grolm Niemann’s mother], Lessmeiers from Waddenhausen and Wendlinghausen [I don’t know how these people would be related, but I wonder if he got the name wrong and they were Lessmans, relatives of Jette Niemann’s sister Lina (Grolm Schmidt’s husband August Schmidt), Wilhelm Niemann, son of Gottlieb’s brother Fritz] from Kachtenhausen. The sermon was preached by the new Pastor Ellermeier from Stapelage, standing in for Pastor Müller of Helpup who is ill. He preached very well and in prayer also remembered you who are so far away.

“With cool and cloudy weather a big participation was carried out. The Kachtenhausen Veterans Society played an impressive part, and a 12-man-strong orchestra with 2 flags marching ahead were especially solemn as they stood at the cemetery. After the funeral we relatives went once again to the Hof, and after a restorative lunch we traveled back to our homes.

“Dear Oscar! You have on this day been especially in our thoughts, you who although the eldest son were unable to attend your father’s funeral. But we must not grudge Father eternal rest, who was suffering especially in his last days.

“We great heartily you and your dear wife.

“Alwine, Fritz and Christel”

[From Alma Plassmeyer nee Niemann to her brother Oscar Niemann in Seward, Nebraska].

Oerlinghausen 16 April 1936 [Thursday]

“Dear Mildred and Oscar

“Mother asked me to write to you, and she thanks you for your last letters. I’ll gladly write to you because Mother doesn’t have time and she doesn’t write at all...Dear Oscar first I want to tell you about Papa’s death. He was in bed almost 6 years. That was a long time for Papa and also for Mother. He was always happy if somebody came and talked to him. It gets very lonesome if you lie there by yourself. Whoever has to take care of a sick person that long a time, that is not easy. Mother is 64. We had thought a couple of times previous that Papa would die, but he would sleep for 3 days and then things turned around again. Since Christmas he went downhill, didn’t eat much. The last 3 weeks he suffered a great deal. He had old-age burning in addition. [?] One of his big toes had halfway rotted away and both heels were down to the bone. He had terrible pain. When I asked him if it hurt somewhere, he always said the feet. We need to be happy that he can rest now. On Monday Papa said to Mother I’m lost, so he did feel that the end was near. He died on the 10th [Tuesday] of March [Tuesday], not the 11th, in the evening at 8:15. I was there on Sunday and got ready to go on Tuesday afternoon at 2. Carl was surprised that I wanted to go down there again, I had just been there Sunday, and Carl said greet him nicely for me. When I got there we still talked together. I left the room, he
said to me I should come right back. It was already hard for him to talk and the talking became more
difficult. I left at 6:15, we could hardly understand him any more. I was sure he wouldn't make it
over night. I wrote to Dortmund to Alma [her daughter] that Grandfather was not good, and I took
the card to the mailbox at 8 o'clock. As soon as I got home Karl-Adolf said quick, the telephone. I
didn't even hear it because we had the radio on. It was Hugo [brother to Alma and Oscar] on the
phone, and said Papa just went to sleep. I didn't know what to say - only 2 hours after I left him.
That evening Carl said to me it was nice that you went down there today. That afternoon it was like
someone was telling me: you must go home. He could not have held me back that day. For the
funeral everything was very nice. The hall was decorated with pine boughs. On the dungheap they
planted a 1½-meter-high pine tree and the land from the house to the street was strewn with pine
needles. It was a large funeral. Saturday morning Mrs. Szeute said to her husband I'm sure anxious
to know how much livestock on the Niemann farm dies. When the old Stolting died, they lost a
horse. That happens often when a farmer leaves his farm, at least one head of livestock will die also.
In the afternoon a cow got bloated. Just as the funeral was taking place she bellowed and the Falke
punctured her. By 9 o'clock the animal was no better, so Mr. Sieveke came and got the cow and
butchered it. It was a good cow; she gave better than 20 liters of milk daily. It is always the best if the
cow has to die, that the meat can be used. Walter took good care of Papa, he could lift him better than
Mother. Walter has been back on the farm for a year now in February...

"My dear Oscar, write again.

"Many greetings to your dear wife, from all of us, from your sister

"Alma"

The Helpup church record states that Gottlieb died on 10 March and was buried on 14
March, 1936; that he was a farmer and married man, dwelling at Nr. 3 in Währentrup; that
he was married at Friedens Church in Seward, Nebraska.; that his death was a result of
debility of old age and "old age burning". The latter is evidently a local term, because it isn't
found in a dictionary of genealogical terms. The letter quoted above mentions the same
ailment. There is another old letter that states that he had diabetes, also.

I have a nice printed funeral announcement with a black border. Alma corrected, in her letter
above, possible misinterpretation of his death date. While it states that he died on Tuesday
evening, which would have been 10 March, the announcement itself is dated 11 March at
Währentrup. The funeral was on Saturday, 14 March, at four o'clock in the afternoon.

His descendants in Germany state emphatically that Gottlieb was not a Nazi, but a snapshot
of his grave taken immediately after his burial depicts large floral sprays decorated with
swastika-embellished ribbons. It may have been expedient on the part of florists to provide
these, and for families not to challenge edicts promulgated by Hitler's government. Uncle
Christoph's monument can be seen in the photo.

If Oscar received a copy of the Niemann joint will after Jette's death in 1948, it was not
saved. The inventory is included in her biography.

Siblings, surname Niemann
Caroline Wilhelmine Friederike "Hanne", married Jobst Heinrich Hermann
Christoph Hünkemeier
Johann Christoph, never married
Konradine Augusta Florentine, issue while unmarried; married Hermann Heinrich
Friedrich Huth; issue
Friedrich Wilhelm August "Fritz", married Augusta Thusnelda Ellerbrock; issue
Juliane Louise Emilie, died age 3 months
Karoline Johanna Ernestine, died age 5 years
Dietrich Gustav, never married
[Heinrich Gottlieb]

See Illustrations Number 12 and Illustrations Number 12 and 13.

Parents are Numbers 24 and 25.

13 – Caroline Auguste Henriette GROLM was born 26 August 1871 in Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe Detmold, now a part of Nordrhein-Westfalen, Germany. Her parents were Simon Heinrich Konrad Grolm nee Lodewig and Johanne Henriette Louise nee Stillwold. She was called Jette (say Yetta in English) and signed her name Henriette Niemann; I don’t know why she dropped the Caroline and Augusta. It was customary for Germans to have a “call name”; many names were often bestowed at a child’s baptism to honor Godparents, and it may have been necessary to use none of them as the child’s call name, so as not to offend the ones whose names were not used.

Documentation of her birth and baptism is found in the Varenholz church records, but is very hard to read. She and her twin, William Gustav, were baptized on 5 September 1871. Their birth dates are clearly 26 August. Jette’s Godmothers were her mother’s sister, Caroline Hagemann (nee Stillwold: her married name appears as Hagemeier elsewhere in Lippe church records) of Krankenhagen, and Auguste someone, her surname may begin with ‘B’, of Stemmen.

Ben and I visited the Grolms in Stemmen on our first trip to Germany in 1959. Jette’s birthplace, Number 22 in Stemmen was pointed out, but looked to be vacant at that time. Eventually her brother Heinrich’s great-granddaughter Christine Grolm and her husband, Phillip Day and their family moved into the house, and it was almost completely refurbished when it burned beyond repair during the summer of 1994. The Days have built a new home at the site.

Jette’s twin brother died on 23 February 1883. The cause of death is stated in the church record, but I can’t read it.

“Karoline Auguste Henriette Grolm” is listed among the maidens confirmed on 4 April 1886 at Varenholz, from the school at Stemmen. The class was examined on 28 March

---

55 One of my dreams was to sleep in each of the villages from whence my immigrant ancestors departed for America. I was privileged to stay over night with the Day family in Stemmen during my 2005 trip to Germany, the last segment of the dream to come true.

56 Examination was often on the Sunday before Palm Sunday, with confirmation on Palm Sunday and first communion on Easter, but Easter fell on 25 April in 1886.
1886, the normal public examination proving knowledge of the catechism.

When Jette was 15 years old, according to a quote found in a letter written by her daughter Alma, she came to the United States. I don’t know whom, if anyone, she came with. I have not searched passenger lists for her name because, as someone has remarked, “So many ancestors, so little time....” There is family lore that she sailed on the Ship Columbus, but it is not clear which voyage was meant by that. My Aunt Edith Niemann, the widow of Jette’s youngest son, my Uncle Hugo, relates the family lore that Jette had to work very hard at home, and decided, since she really knew how to work, that she would go to America where things couldn’t be any worse and might be better. I have a list^57 of emigrants from Lippe Detmold, and Jette is not on it; the surprising thing is that her brother Friedrich Heinrich Wilhelm Grolm is on the list, stating that he proposes to leave for Nebraska, his brother-in-law August Schmidt having been there three years. (This is a bit misleading; August Schmidt married Heinrich’s sister Caroline “Lina” 7 November 1883 in Seward County, Nebraska, but had emigrated earlier. He had been Heinrich’s brother-in-law for three years.) His proposed emigration date was from 20 January up to some time in February 1887. Heinrich did not come to America. I have no idea whether Jette came in his place after he got ‘cold feet’ or why he happens to be on the list. The list is woefully incomplete, and Jette’s non-inclusion is not surprising.

There is something of a family precedent for a young woman coming to America: Jette’s father’s sister Wilhelmine Lodewig came to America in 1857. At least two young women acquaintances were on the same ship, and they went to Allamakee County, Iowa, where some other emigrants from Langenholzhausen settled.

Jette’s sister Lina, who married August Schmidt, had come earlier; three of their mother’s brothers and a sister were living in Seward and Buffalo Counties in Nebraska, which probably influenced their decision to settle there. Jette ‘worked out’ to earn her living.

Excursus: Some explanation for this expression has to be made here. Working out has come, during perhaps the last quarter of the Twentieth Century, to mean doing physical exercise to become or stay fit. Working out, at least during the last half of the Nineteenth Century and well into the Twentieth, was an expression used to mean that a young woman of marriageable age worked outside her parents’ home as a cook, housekeeper, laundress, child-care provider— anything that needed to be done to keep a household running, to relieve the lady of the house of whatever chores she couldn’t manage alone.

***

I have been unable to find out whom Jette lived with or whom she worked for. The school census for Seward County District 9 (Seward and environs) can’t be found, and of course the 1890 Federal Census burned. Since I didn’t find her in any nearby school district, and she would have been young enough to appear on a school census before she married, I’m guessing that she lived in Seward or at least in the Seward school district. She may have worked

^57 Auswanderer aus dem Fürstentum Lippe (1878 – 1900) [Emigrants from the Principality of Lippe (1878 – 1900)], by Fritz Verdenhalven, Verlag für Regionalgeschichte, Bielefeld 1995.
for a Goehner family, but that is only a guess.

One thing is certain: she learned how to bake pie. I wrote the following when I compiled a family recipe book a number of years ago:

“When we went to Germany in 1959, my Uncle Hugo Niemann wanted me to bake a pie. I was young and didn’t have a recipe, but I made a tough-crust apple pie. Although pie is almost unheard-of in Germany, Grandmother Niemann’s pie tins had been saved. He really didn’t speak any English, but after the pie was made he uttered two words in English: ‘Custard Pie’. Apparently it was Grandmother Niemann’s specialty, retained from her years in America.”

Roasted goose is a Christmas tradition in Germany; my dad told about how she nailed a goose to a board, nails through the webs in his feet, to fatten him for a fine Christmas dinner. He had nothing to do but eat, and lack of exercise made the meat tender.

She was skilled at knitting, able to knit socks and turn the heels smoothly. My dad treasured all his life, a pair of socks that she had knitted. They were in my mother’s cedar chest when we divided the contents of her house, and went with the cedar chest to Bob Garner.

She evidently visited Lina and August Schmidt, who lived near Elm Creek, Nebraska on one or more occasions. Among Jetta’s photos illustrated in this volume is one taken at Kearney. I have several copies of it, and one of them says on the back “To S. F. August 1890”. The only S. F. that I can think of is her cousin once removed, Simon Freitag, who lived near Goehner, Nebraska; but if she gave it to him, how did it come into my parents’, and thus my own, possession? Before her marriage, Lina had apprenticed to a seamstress, and it’s my guess that she made the beautiful dress Jette is wearing in the photograph.

At this point Jette’s story becomes mingled with her husband’s, q.v. After her marriage to a man old enough to be her father in 1891, she gave birth to four children at her Seward farm home: Oscar, Walter, and twins Alma and Alwine. A large number of German immigrants settled in Seward and nearby; George Humrickhouse, M.D., the ‘Deutscher Arzt’ (German physician) placed a ‘professional card’ in the Seward Reporter of 1 August 1887. A news article in the same paper states that he speaks German. After I found this information, I hoped that Jette was able to have Dr. Humrickhouse or anyway a German-speaking physician or midwife, to attend her during her confinements.

Going back home to Germany to show off her husband and children must have presented an exciting prospect to Jette, perhaps a dream come true that turned into a lifelong nightmare. It was, at least in part, her own efficiency that prompted Uncle Christoph to offer the farm at Wahrentrup to his brother Gottlieb. Jette must have had to scoop out a place for her family to live while they were visiting there. After his mother’s death, Christoph, who was unmarried, had allowed things to run down to the extent that chickens were roosting in the kitchen. It was after the young family left Wahrentrup and were visiting Jette’s parents in Stemmen,

The pie tins must have been among those things taken back to Germany when Gottlieb came to Nebraska and auctioned many of the family’s possessions. I wonder if she gave him some instructions about what he was to ship to Germany. If she didn’t think about the pie tins, he would have saved them of his own accord if he liked pie.
and would soon be on their way back home to Nebraska, that Christoph decided that Jette was "the woman for the house"—the woman who could create order out of the chaos that prevailed there—and sent word of his proposal: he would see to it that Gottlieb inherited the Niemann Hof if he would move there and care for Christoph in his old age.

Family lore among the Niemanns in Germany says that Uncle Christoph's widowed sister Auguste Huth (Tante Huthchen: little Aunt Huth—I have seen her picture and she was a woman of small stature) was at odds with him, a probable reason for him wanting Gottlieb to take over the farm instead of taking the chance that it would go to her sons. The Huth boys were born in 1875 and 1877, so they would have been young men by the time Gottlieb and Jette arrived in Germany in 1900, and Auguste must have been making her home with them in Lage by that time. At least one of them was affiliated with Nagel & Huth, merchants, and it was after hearing the rumor of that firm's bankruptcy, brought home from school by Oscar in 1910, that Uncle Christoph sickened and died; he is said to have had considerable money invested in the firm.

My dad remembered that his mother cried when faced with the prospect of staying in Germany, but the man of the family made the decisions, and they stayed. I have been curious about whether Jette and the children remained in Stemmen with her parents while Gottlieb made his return voyage, or whether she had to go immediately to Währntrup and try to whip the house into shape. Tante Edith Niemann thinks that Oma had to go immediately to Währntrup with the children while Opa came to America to put his affairs in order. My sense is that there were servants, the Kotters who lived in the dependencies of the Hof, who would have helped with the physical labor and helped tend the children; they had simply been allowed to become lax while there was no woman in charge of the household.

I recall my dad telling that Jette rode a horse sidesaddle, and I wonder if her saddle was shipped to Germany from Nebraska. No sidesaddle is listed in the newspaper auction notice.

In 1909, Jette gave birth to the Niemanns' fifth child, Hugo Hans. His daughter Susanne Niemann related to me the family story about his birth. His mother realized that things were not quite as usual with her, but did not suspect that she was pregnant, thinking her age was to blame. After some months, she began to have a great deal of pain, and Gottlieb either went or sent someone else, to Oerlinghausen for a physician. The doctor examined her and announced that the pain was quite normal and that a baby would soon arrive. The aunts were said to be embarrassed because they had readied no baby gifts.

Jette and Gottlieb celebrated their silver wedding anniversary 23 September 1916, during the turmoil of World War I. Their first grandchild had arrived on 1 September, but her father, son-in-law Peter Kühn had been killed in action on 10 August. They were doubtless consumed with worry about their sons Oscar and Walter both of whom were serving in the German army. A beautiful china cabinet or breakfront, presumably an anniversary gift from Gottlieb to Jette, is still in use at the Niemann home in Währntrup.

Jette's second voyage to America came in 1926, when son Oscar was already living in Seward.
Excursus: For a time after I researched her trip, I asked myself if I would have possessed her courage, but I have come to believe that I’m fairly spunky—maybe I inherited some of my demeanor from Jette. Today, not quite ten months after Ben’s death, I am sitting in Mission, Texas, writing on my laptop, having driven the more than 1,100 miles alone, even enduring some car trouble and taking care of it and myself. I rented a trailer to live in at Bentsen Palm RV Park (the dwelling Ben and I had occupied the past two years in the same park was not available when I asked—I had cancelled my reservation shortly after Ben died) and while not as nice as last year’s accommodation, it is adequate. The main thing is that I’ve proved to myself that I can do whatever I want to.

Update: During the summer of 2005, I flew from Omaha to Frankfurt via Cincinnati, rented a car, and said my goodbyes, as I’m not likely to make such an ambitious journey again. I visited cousins in Dortmund, Währertrup, Stemmen, Langenholzhausen, Niedermöllrich, Deute, Borken, Stendal, Schartau, and Veitshöchheim. I also visited a friend in München.

***

Jette sailed from Bremen on 15 August 1926 on the North German Lloyd Ship Derflinger, built in 1907, H. Hashagen, Master. An old letter tells that there was a Fr. Willer, whom she knew, traveling on the same ship; they could have kept each other company, but I wonder if it wasn’t more a case of Jette taking care of Fr. Willer. The reason I think that, is that Fr. Willer was going to visit her daughter in St. Louis, and the letter indicates that Jette would go through St. Louis on her way to Nebraska, which is not the most direct route from New York where the Derflinger landed on Jette’s fifty-fifth birthday, 26 August 1926.

The passenger list is fairly accurate, except that Hannover is given as Jette’s birthplace. Her nearest relative in Germany was her husband, Gottlieb Niemann who lived in Währertrup/Oerlinghausen, her visa was issued on 6 July 1926 at Koeln, her destination was Seward, Nebraska, where she would visit her aunt, Henriette “Sullwald”, she had previously been in Seward from 1887 to 1900, she planned to stay for six months, she already had a ticket to Seward, she was 5 feet 5 inches tall with fair skin, both her hair and eyes were “GR”, and she had no marks of identification.

She did not intend to become a citizen of the United States, her mental and physical health were good, she was neither a polygamist nor an anarchist, she did not believe in or advocate the overthrow by force of the United States Government, she had not been an inmate of an almshouse, and she had not previously been deported from the United States.

To say that she would visit her Aunt is certainly correct, but it doesn’t tell the whole story. Her real purpose was to ‘sell’ the farm to her sister, Lina Schmidt, in order to get it out of the hands of the Alien Property Custodian. The mock sale did take place and Schmidt gave Niemanns a mortgage, which they doubtless planned to tear up as soon as Oscar got his feet on the ground and was ready to assume responsibility for the farm—he may have had to regain his United States citizenship before he could take possession of the farm. Instead, Aunt Schmidt got them to release the mortgage, she borrowed a sum of money using the
farm as collateral, spent the money, then couldn’t make the mortgage payments. She finally got the Federal Land Bank to lend her the money so she could pay off the first mortgage. When she couldn’t make the payments on the second mortgage, she turned the farm, encumbered with debt, over to Oscar.

Jette made the most of her visit to America, where she visited old friends from her earlier sojourn in Seward. Seward newspapers report that she spent part of a week with Mr. and Mrs. Val Rocker; the Suellwold family had a reunion at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Dick Dohrmann in Staplehurst, and she and her sister Lina Schmidt visited with Mr. and Mrs. Gustave Tempel. Suellwold researcher Elmer Heekman found a clipping telling about the Ricenbaw cousins taking her to Elm Creek to visit Lina. That clipping contained the best clue I found about what time of year she might have come (before I found the passenger list), mentioning that the fourth cutting of alfalfa was ready to mow, indicating late summer.

Before all the legal maneuvers were completed, she was becoming anxious. Her niece Anna Schmidt Streiff wrote to Attorney Thomas in Seward, asking him to try to expedite matters, as Mrs. Niemann wanted to leave for Germany before Christmas.

There is a picture of Jette feeding Aunt Schmidt’s chickens, another of her wearing a cover-up apron—she is said always to have worn a large apron. Aunt Schmidt must have done some sewing for the two of them, as there is a snapshot of the two, wearing identical dresses. Aunt Schmidt was matronly in a slim way, but Jette was definitely stout.

A family letter says she would like to have visited some very distant relatives in Council Bluffs, Iowa, but there wasn’t time between trains; it is also noted that there was no place to sit while she waited in Omaha for her train, and she had to stand the entire time she waited.

She was widowed in 1936, her husband having been nearly bedfast for nearly six years. His mind was alert until almost the end, and maybe she was able to count her blessings for that. More grandchildren had arrived in the 1920’s: daughter Alma, widowed by World War I, married again and had a son; daughter Alwine had a daughter; son Walter had a daughter. The 1930’s brought two daughters (one stillborn) for son Oscar and a son for Walter. Jette didn’t live long enough to know about Hugo’s children, both born in the 1960’s.

World War II again spared the Niemann Hof in Währentup from physical destruction, but the war seriously disrupted everyone’s life. Jette escaped prosecution after having some dealing about a cow, with a Jew. Her son Hugo, however, was required to carry a sign that read something like, “I did business with a Jew” in Oerlinghausen, the nearby small city. Having her son suffer for her own forbidden act would undoubtedly have been a bitter pill for Jette to swallow.

I have wondered if the Niemanns buried the silverware, because when a pie server was given to me in 1959, its handle was damaged. It occurs to me that the damage may have been sustained when it was dug up, but I’ll admit that my imagination sometimes runs away with me.
Shortly after the war was over, some American soldiers came to the Niemann farm and grabbed some chickens. Jette came out of the house and spoke to them in English, asking what they were doing with her chickens. They must have been so surprised because she was so feisty and because she spoke English, that they gave the chickens back (I’m not sure whether or not they had already killed the chickens) and stole chickens elsewhere to compensate.

There is a side to Jette that I cannot account for, and the information has come to me from enough sources that I cannot ignore it. She seemed to favor Alma, one of her twin daughters, over the other. Family members remarked upon it in letters, and the unfavored daughter, Alwine, certainly knew that she was not the favorite. In addition, Alwine’s husband, Fritz Meier mentions in a letter to Jette’s sister Lina (Grolm) Schmidt, that both he and Alwine have been abused, that Alwine was treated very badly when she went to her parents’ home in Währertrup a week after her wedding, that “One does not treat a total stranger in that way, that begs and enters the house.”

Jette died on 31 January 1948. The Helpup church record states that she was the farm lady of Währertrup No. 3, and the widow of Gottlieb Niemann. She died of heart weakness and dropsy (edema, water retention). This may indicate, in more modern terms, congestive heart failure. Her funeral was on 4 February 1948, and she was buried beside her husband in the cemetery near the Helpup church.

Excursus: I well remember the day the letter came from Germany announcing her death. It was really cold and there was snow on the ground. I was not in school, but I don’t know whether I was sick or if it was a Saturday. I was putting a jigsaw puzzle together, a Walt Disney characterization of Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs. The news spoiled the puzzle, but I still have it. I was really sad, even though I never saw my grandmother; my other grandmother died when I was three months old, and both grandfathers were dead before I was born.

***

The Gottlieb and Henriette Niemann joint will finally was opened. I have not seen a copy of it, but I found an inventory among family papers in Seward:

1. The land was valued at RM87,700.

2. There was only enough harvested grain on hand, to keep the farm going until the new crop was harvested. One extra horse was valued at DM800. and a fifteen-year-old Opel automobile was valued at DM600., total worth DM1,400.

3. After the money in savings and checking accounts was used to pay the loans and debts,

---

60 Reichs Marks
61 Deutsch Marks
there was DM7. left.

4. Outstanding debts: The moneys owed by workmen were paid at the same time with farm products and labor.

5. Personal items: Dresses, linen and personal items were divided between the heirs, and were at times given away according to the wishes of the deceased. Total value was DM500.


There were no other debts.

Dated at Währentrup #3, the 14th April 1949

/s/ Hugo Niemann

If an obituary appeared in a newspaper, I have not seen it, nor did a printed death notice come into my possession.

Siblings, surname Grolm:

Johanne Friederike Caroline "Lina", married August Schmidt; issue
Johanne Augusta Conradine, married Karl Ottemeier; issue
Friedrich Heinrich Wilhelm "Heinrich", married Minna Prasuhn; issue
Wilhelm Gustav, twin to Jette, died young
[Caroline Auguste Henriette "Jette"]

See Illustrations Number 13 and Illustrations Number 12 and 13.

Parents are Numbers 26 and 27.

14 – George Alfred GUMBEL was born on 29 July 1864 at Peoria, Peoria County, Illinois to Ernst William Henry Gumbel and his wife Angelica, née Nuhn. The family moved to Warsaw, Hancock County, Illinois before George was baptized by his mother’s brother, the Rev. Mr. Jacob Nuhn, on 5 March 1869. There is a note in the handwriting of his daughter Mildred, stating that his eyes were blue.

I own (2003) his baptismal certificate and it is quite ornate and colorful. I have preserved it with archival materials, placing it in a Mylar sleeve and framing it, using glass that is resistant to ultraviolet light. The form is printed in German Gothic type, and the blanks are filled in by hand, using old German script.

He attended school in Warsaw, but did not graduate from high school; I recall being told that he completed the eighth grade but I have not attempted to document that fact. He was
competent in mathematics and understood the bidding process, necessary to his carpentry business in Seward.

While living in Warsaw, he affiliated with the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, Hancock Lodge #71. A beautiful badge was mailed to him—I wish the postmark was legible. Printed on the envelope is a list of patents covering the lodge's badges, the last one mentioned being 4 April 1896. He may have joined long before then and purchased his badge later.

He married Millie Schilling on 21 September 1891 in Warsaw. The family bible contains a marriage certificate, which reads:

“This Certifies that the rite of Holy Matrimony was celebrated between Geo. A. Gumbel of Warsaw Ills and Millie Schilling of Warsaw Ills on Sept. 23rd, 1891 at Warsaw Ills. by Rev. Wm. Schoenig. Witness: Fred Gumbel, Tillie Meisbach”

Tillie was a friend to Millie—they worked together as young women in St. Louis—and Fred was George's brother.

Both George and Millie had spoken German at home, and both were fluent in English as well. They chose to speak German in their own home, but realized their mistake when their eldest son started to school speaking only German. After that, English was spoken in the Gumbel home except when they didn't want the younger children to know what was being said. Seven children were born to the couple.

Interestingly, George's occupation was “cooper” when the family was living in Warsaw, Hancock County, Illinois at the time the 1900 census was taken. Other information is correct as far as I know, except that his wife was born in Illinois, not Missouri as the census states. Of course, that makes then children’s ‘birthplace of mother’ answer wrong also.

Three of George's brothers migrated to Nebraska; Frank is the one credited with coaxing George to follow him, and the family moved to Leahy, Seward County, Nebraska in 1901. He was the grain buyer and miller there, but constant exposure to the grain dust began to cause lung trouble, and the family moved on to Seward about 1908, where he worked as a carpenter and cabinetmaker.

He engaged in general carpentry, building houses, barns and other structures. He was also a talented, meticulous, cabinetmaker. I have (2006) a desk that he built for his daughter Mildred (my mother) and a fern stand, both of which I regard as fine furniture. Tom Gamer has his carpenter’s bench and toolbox, and I'm sure he made both of those. I also have an ironing board without legs that was made to place across the zinc-clad kitchen table in my possession. These are almost certainly examples of his early work; both can be described as primitive. My mother remembered picking wood splinters, the bane of any carpenter, out of his hands.

At some time during the early 1920's, George went to Greenwood, LeFlore County,
Mississippi, to build a house for a distant cousin, Mrs. Lillian Spurrier née White. Mrs. Spurrier was a native of Illinois and wanted a house built by northern standards. The house, at 709 Dewey Street in Greenwood, was in good repair when Ben and I visited there during the summer of 1984. It is a two-story house displaying something of an oriental aspect, the rooflines curving up near the eaves.

Excursus: There is interesting background information involving the reason for him being selected to build Mrs. Spurrier’s house. Before World War I, his son Alvin had apprenticed to a photographer named Walford in Seward. I don’t know how it happened, but I suppose Uncle Alvin wanted to see something of the country, and he applied for a position with Mrs. Spurrier, a photographer in Greenwood. He accepted the job and went there to work for her, incidentally registering for the draft and being drafted for service in World War I from LeFlore County. My understanding is that it was only after he was there that he and Mrs. Spurrier compared notes and discovered that they were slightly related. Mrs. Spurrier was the daughter of Vachal M. and Barbara White, whose maiden name was Ellenberger. Her mother, Elisabeth, had been born a Gumbel, and was a sister to Carl Gumbel, Alvin’s great-grandfather.

Another connection to Seward came with the marriage of Mrs. Spurrier’s daughter Velma to Jack Givens, son of another Seward photographer.

Carl Gumbel’s photo is one of the illustrations in this book (Generation 6, Person Number 56, q.v.), and writing on the back of the original indicates that it had been owned by the Whites because it is identified in one place as “My uncle B. E. White”. It is identified otherwise as “Charls Gumbel and wife, Alvins Great Grandfather” and since it came to the Gumbels’ possession, I regard that it is certainly Carl. The woman pictured in the original is his second wife who is not our ancestress.

***

George was an avid reader and accumulated a large library. The only book that remained for me to inherit is The Mischief Maker by E. Phillips Oppenheim. Inside the front cover appears “Geo. A. Gumbel Seward Nebr.” in his own handwriting.

I don’t know when he started to drink, but the bald fact is that his family suffered the consequences of his excessive use of alcohol. He didn’t stay drunk all the time; he was a binge drinker, coming home drunk on Saturday nights. Every Saturday night? I don’t know. The family lore is that he had little tolerance for alcohol, “He only had to smell the cork and he was ‘under’”.

Excursus: The propensity for addictive behavior is said to be genetic, so the descendants of

Mrs. Spurrier’s daughter, Mildred Spurrier Topp, wrote two books, Smile Please (Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, 1948) and In the Pink (ibid., 1950), set in Greenwood and telling about life there during her youth.

the two brothers who are the subjects of this book, Thomas Earl and Robert Paul Garner, need to be aware that there are several ancestors, among them Barefoot Runyan, John Milner and Peter Gunnarson Rambo, in addition to George Gumbel, whose alcohol abuse was notable enough to become a part of public or family records.

***

His occupation was ‘grain buyer’ when he bought a $1,000 life insurance policy on 2 February 1904 from The Fidelity Mutual Life Insurance Company. The company paid his widow, Mildred Gumbel, $1,011.22 after his death. The form they supplied lists “Bilateral Pulmonary Tuberculosis” as the cause of death.

His Nebraska death certificate contains correct information as to birth, marriage and parentage; his death age of 65 years, 4 months and 27 days is correct as calculated by my computerized genealogy program, and the hour of death is given as 4:00 p.m. His age and death hour differ from what is stated in his obituary. “Bilateral Pulmonary Tuberculosis, Emaciation, General Intoxication due to Tuberculous infection” are stated as the causes of death, the diagnosis having been confirmed by a sputum test.

My Aunt Nellie, George’s daughter Nellie Gumbel Bye, wrote his death date in the family bible, and the hour she states is 4:30 p.m. The discrepancy is minor and irreconcilable. The death age found in his obituary is simply wrong.

“Funeral Services Are Held For Geo. Gumbel
Well-Known Citizen Died Thursday and Was Laid to Rest Sunday Afternoon

“Funeral services over the remains of George Alfred Gumbel, a resident of Seward for many years, were held at the Chain & Wood funeral home at 2:30 Sunday aftermmoon [sic]. The services were in charge of Rev. R. J. McKenzie of the M. E. church. Burial was made in the Seward (north) cemetery.

Obituary

“George Alfred Gumbel passed away at his home at Seward Thursday, December 26, 1929, at 4:30 p.m., aged 65 years, 5 months and 26 days.

“The deceased was born in Peoria, Ill., July 29, 1864, and was baptized in the German M. E. church March 5, 1869, at Warsaw, Ill., where he had moved with his parents, where he grew to manhood. On September 23, 1891, he was united in marriage to Millie Schilling. To this union seven children were born, one son, Harry Alfred, dying in infancy.

“For the past year he had been in poor health, failing rapidly for the last six months. His last days were made pleasant by the flowers, cards and personal calls of his friends.

64 See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 7. During the early part of 2006, we identified the adoptee’s birth father; Rev. Ronald J. McKenzie is the adoptee’s great-granduncle. It was a goose-bump coincidence for me to find his relative officiating at my grandfather’s funeral.
“He leaves to mourn his loss his wife and six children: Alvin G., Nellie A., Lester C. E., Fred W., Mildred H. and Mrs. Fannie Sanders of Seward, one son-in-law, Will E. Sanders, and one grandson, Dean Wallace Sanders, of Seward. He is also survived by two brothers and two sisters, Frank C. of Garland, Adam J. of Milford, Mrs. A. W. Ehlebe and Miss Anna Gumbel of Warsaw, Ill.

Those who served as pall bearers at the funeral were John Jausi, John Stocker, W. E. David, Ed Jeary, David Rivers and J. W. Mueller.”

Millie Gumbel bought, “...for and in consideration of the sum of One Hundred-----DOLLARS, in hand paid...” the East Half of Lot 295 in the Original Survey of the Seward (North) Cemetery, completing the paperwork on 31 December 1929. The lot contains eight burial spaces, and her husband, George A. Gumbel was the first of the family to be buried there.

Excursus: When Oscar and Mildred (Gumbel) Niemann’s daughter Janet was stillborn in 1935, Millie agreed that they might use one of the spaces for her. Millie herself was buried next to George in 1937, and the remaining five spaces were inherited by her surviving children. Mildred and Oscar Niemann arranged to buy their interest from Mildred’s surviving siblings in 1958, and erected their gravestone soon after that. They are both buried there. I inherited the remaining three spaces upon Mildred’s death in 1993, and Ben and I had our stone installed soon after that. Ben’s ashes were buried there in 2002, and mine are to be buried beside his. One space remains, between Millie Gumbel and Janet Ruth Niemann; I have stated in jest that it is reserved for my future husband.

***

There is a card index to Seward County estate papers, and George Gumbel’s name is not found in the index. He and his wife owned their home in joint tenancy with right of survivorship, presumably making estate settlement unnecessary.

siblings surname Gumbel

Carl Henry, married first Ada Rogers, issue; married second Amelia Wemhoff, issue
William Justice, married Katherine Apfel; issue
Frank Conrad, married Wilhelmina Hans; issue
[George Alfred]
Elizabeth, died young without issue
Anna Margaret, never married
Frederick Ernest, never married
Adam Jacob, married Emma Flora Thomas; issue without issue
Lillian Angelica, married Albert William Ehlebe, no issue
Katherine Elmira, married Edward Grimpe; issue

See Illustrations Number 14 and Illustrations Number 14 and 15.

Parents are Numbers 28 and 29.

Jausi was an IOOF Lodge brother; Stocker and Rivers were neighbors and may have been Lodge brothers; I cannot account for the other three.
15 – Millie SCHILLING (otherwise Mildred) was born on 8 June 1864 at Quincy, Adams County, Illinois to Herman Schilling and his wife Conradine née Krome. The family made some moves during her childhood. They were living in St. Louis, Missouri when her brother Robert was born 21 December 1867, and had settled in Warsaw, Hancock County, Illinois by the time her brother Alvin was born 2 September 1869. She grew to adulthood in Warsaw, where she married George A. Gumbel on 23 September 1891.

Excursus: I read somewhere that the person who was assigned the surname Schilling when surnames were acquired in feudal times (in what is now Germany), was someone who had somehow pulled himself up by his own bootstraps. Evidently he was able to accumulate some money, either by a special act of bravery or other favors to his lord, and was able to buy his freedom from serfdom.

***

Before her marriage, she worked out in St. Louis. Life for servants was pleasant or not, depending on the employer. The story came to me that Millie worked for a family whose members included a young woman who dressed in the height of fashion. One of Millie’s tasks was doing the ironing, and one particular garment belonging to the young woman was white and pleated and especially difficult to iron (irons were heated on the stove and there wasn’t any control—scorch showed up on white). It was worn every time it was clean, so it had to be ironed often. After several weeks, Millie gave it a ‘lick and a promise’, not conforming to her usual high standard. The owner was irate and told Millie that she would iron it herself, which she proceeded to do. She must have found it impossible, because Millie never saw the garment again. I don’t know what the employment situation was at that time, but I have concluded that Millie must have been willing to chance being dismissed. I have always admired her for the independence she displayed.

Tillie Meisbach, the maid of honor at her wedding, was a St. Louis friend. Tillie later married a Mr. Richter and had a son Arthur.

I have Millie’s wedding ring. It is gold, with enough copper in the alloy to give it a pink tinge; it is deeply engraved with a pretty pattern, but is broken along one line in the pattern. The ring, which is size nine, is the only clue I have to what size woman Millie was, although her niece, Winnifred Gumbel, once described her to me as “rawboned”. My own wedding ring, when it was new, was size seven and one-half (it had to be enlarged later), so I infer from that, that she was not small. I do remember being told that when the Gumbels had a cow, Millie did the milking. Women who milked developed large, muscular hands.

Millie bore seven children, six of whom grew to adulthood. Harry died of diphtheria at the earlier age. The other children, six of whom grew to adulthood, were:

- Robert Schilling, born 21 December 1867, who married Margaret O’Malley and had six children.
- Herman Schilling, born 2 September 1869, who married Elizabeth Reavis and had four children.
- Charlotte Schilling, born 2 September 1869, who married John Blevins and had two children.
- Wilhelm Schilling, born 2 September 1869, who married Mary Ann Doetsch and had three children.
- Emma Schilling, born 2 September 1869, who married John W. Johnson and had three children.
- Elizabeth Schilling, born 2 September 1869, who married John M. Doetsch and had two children.

For an explanation of ‘worked out’ see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 13.

I had a charcoal drawing of Tillie, and a photo purporting to be Arthur as an infant. I posted messages on various genealogical sites on the Internet, trying to find homes for these pictures, but no descendants came forth. Reading Aunt Nellie (Gumbel) Bye’s diary I happened onto Tillie’s death date, a friend in St. Louis found her obituary naming survivors, and the portrait found a home in Texas with a grandson.
She was an expert seamstress who sewed for herself and her family. She also was skilled at the fine arts; I have a quilt that she pieced and quilted, and a lovely tablecloth that she is said to have embroidered when her son Fred was a baby.

She liked the niceties, and required of herself that a linen tablecloth be in daily use. With a family of eight or more at the table, spills were common and usually occurred at the first meal after the tablecloth was changed. A family byword spoken with remorse, "Clean tablecloth" came into use when an accident happened, because a bad spill nearly always happened when the tablecloth was fresh.

After the family's move to Nebraska in 1901, she is said to have remarked that the electrical storms seemed closer on the Nebraska plains than they had in Illinois.

I know little about her food preferences, but have recipes in her handwriting for Baked Ham Loaf, Splendid Grape Jelly, and a grape juice drink. The lore came to me that Millie didn’t like celery and was revolted by its smell when her neighbors disturbed their growing celery while working in their gardens. Her daughter Mildred (my mother) related that her mother was not a very good manager. She served elaborate meals immediately after her husband's payday, but the pickings became slim toward the end of the week.

She liked to work on jigsaw puzzles, and when she put a piece in place she would exclaim, "Oh boy, oh boy, oh boy...".

The family's home at Leahy was near the grain elevator, which was necessarily adjacent to the railroad tracks. Consequently, a lot of 'bums' or 'tramps' who were riding the rails came to the door asking for food. It was her policy never to turn one away empty handed. After I found the family lore that her grandfather, Gottfried Schilling had left his family "never to be heard from again", I began to believe that she reasoned that she could and should pass the favor on, thinking that some kind woman, somewhere, may have given him sustenance. Gottfried was born in 1798, so there was no chance that he was still living when the Gumbels moved to Leahy in 1901.

After the family moved to Seward, they rented a number of different houses and moved often, engaging the services of a drayman. At the time of the tornado in 1913, Millie's mother, Conradine Schilling was living with them, and Millie made the decision that since she couldn't get her mother, who was crippled by arthritis, to the cellar, none of the family would take shelter there. They all survived, but a number of Seward people perished in the storm.

The wife of Millie's brother Oscar Schilling died in 1919 in Illinois, and he brought his two-year-old daughter Bernice to Nebraska to be cared for by his sister. She remained with the Gumbels until he married again in 1926.

Her brother Robert Schilling died without issue on 29 July 1921, and Millie shared his estate...
with her two living siblings, receiving $1,600 in a partial distribution, perhaps an additional sum later. When George and Millie Gumbel bought the house at 804 Main Street in Seward in 1923, Millie’s name was listed first in the documents about the transaction, probably because they used her inherited money as a down payment.

Her name is puzzling, the only consistency being that she didn’t have a middle name. I have not found a record of her baptism. She was ‘Millie’ everywhere I found her name until after her husband’s death. She was the beneficiary of her husband’s life insurance policy, and was ‘Mildred Gumbel’ when the death benefit was paid. The policy was issued in 1904, and I have no way of knowing whether she as beneficiary was actually listed as ‘Mildred’ at that time, or whether she used the name ‘Mildred’ when she applied for the benefit. I have a First National Bank of Seward passbook issued to ‘Millie Gumbel’. She signed papers about the purchase of the family home ‘Millie Gumbel’, but signed her will ‘Mildred Gumbel’. Her gravestone is engraved ‘Mildred Gumbel’. A document dated 15 September 1942 and found in her estate papers contains this paragraph:

"Your Petitioner [Executrix Nellie A. (Gumbel) Bye] further alleges that MILLIE GUMBEL, grantee in the deed to Lots 12 and the East Half of Lot 11, in Block 56, Harris, Moffitt & Roberts’ Addition to the City of Seward, Seward County, Nebraska, except a strip of land 10 feet wide off the East side of Lot 12, recorded in Book 37 page 318, was the same person as Mildred Gumbel whose estate is being administered in this proceeding."

Millie died at 8:00 p.m. on 24 December 1937, having been under her physician’s care since 15 October 1937 according to her Nebraska death certificate. Her parents’ names are not correct, her father’s name being stated as “Henry Schilling” and her mother’s name as “Carolina Krone”. The remainder of the information is correct as far as I know. The cause of death is “Hypertensive Heart Disease with Congestive Heart Failure” and “Kidney Failure”, with “Arteriosclerosis” listed as a contributory cause. The physician was C. S. Griffin, D.O.

Nearly identical renderings of Millie’s obituary appeared in two Seward newspapers, the one transcribed below and one under the headline “Mrs. Geo. A. Gumbel”. The dates given for the family moves to Leahy and to Seward are not the same as those passed down in the family lore. In addition, The Lincoln Star printed an abbreviated death notice. I found another clipping similar to the Star article but from an unidentified newspaper.

"OBITUARY
"Mrs. Millie Gumbel

“Millie Schilling was born at Quincy, Illinois, June 8, 1864, and passed away at Seward, Nebr., December 24, 1937, at the age of 73 years, 6 months and 16 days.

“At an early age she moved with her parents to Warsaw, Ill., where she grew to womanhood. On Sept. 23, 1891, she was united in marriage to George Alfred Gumbel who preceded her in death Dec. 26, 1929. To this union seven children were born, one son, Harry Alfred, dying in infancy. In 1902 they moved to Leahey, Nebr., where Mr. Gumbel was manager of the elevator until 1909, when they moved to Seward.

“She is survived by six children, Alvin G., Omaha; Mrs. Nellie A. Bye, Seward; Lester C. E., Seward;
Fred W., Worthington, Minn.; Mrs. Mildred H. Niemann, Seward; and Mrs. Fannie H. Sanders, Lamar, Colo; two brothers, Alvin Schilling, Davenport, la., and Oscar Schilling,, Warsaw, Ill.; five 68 grandchildren, together with other relatives and friends.

“She was a member of Laurie Rebekah Lodge of which she was a faithful member.

“Funeral services were held at the Chain and Wood Chapel on Monday, Dec. 27, 1937, at 2:30 p.m., in charge of Rev. C. Jankowsky. Burial was made in the Seward north cemetery.

“Card of Thanks

“We desire to express our sincere thanks to the neighbors and friends and the Rebekah Lodge for the many acts of kindness and the beautiful floral offerings, during the illness and death of our beloved mother.

“Mr. and Mrs. Alvin Gumbel  
Mr. and Mrs. Charles Bye  
Lester Gumbel  
Mr. and Mrs. Fred Gumbel and family  
Mr. and Mrs. Oscar Niemann and family  
Mr. and Mrs. Will Sanders and family”

The following obituary appeared in the Lincoln Evening Journal on Friday, 31 December 1937. I am printing it to point up the unreliability of obituaries, although when reasonably accurate they can be invaluable to the researcher. Errors are underlined:

“Mrs. Millie Gumbel.

“SEWARD.—Funeral services were held at Chain & Woods for Mrs. Minnie Gumbel, 73, who died Christmas eve. Rev. C. Jankowsky officiated and burial was in Seward. Mrs. Gumbel had lived in the county 35 years and in Seward 20. She leaves three sons, Alvin of Omaha, Lester of Seward and Fred of Washington, Minn., and three sisters, Mrs Mittie Bye and Mrs. Mildred Nuemann of Seward, and Mrs. William Saunders of Lamar, Colorado.”

Her will is on file in the courthouse in Seward, Seward County, Nebraska. A transcript follows:

“I Mildred Gumbel, of Seward, in the County of Seward, and State of Nebraska, being of sound and disposing mind and memory, do make and publish this my LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT, in manner and form following:

“FIRST: I direct that my funeral expenses; the expenses of last sickness, and all my just debts, be first fully paid.

“SECOND: I give, will and bequeath to my son, Alvin G. Gumbel, the sum of Seven Hundred ($700.00) Dollars.

68 Dean, Dale and Carol Sanders, Lila Niemann, and son Fred’s stepson, Cecil Parker.
THIRD: I give, will and bequeath to my daughter, Nellie A. Bye, the sum of Five Hundred ($500.00) Dollars.

FOURTH: I give and bequeath to my daughter, Mildred H. Niemann, the sum of Five Hundred ($500.00) Dollars.

FIFTH: I give, will and bequeath to my daughter, Fannie H. Sanders, the sum of Three Hundred ($300.00) Dollars.

SIXTH: I give, will and devise and bequeath all of the rest, residue and remainder of my estate, both real, personal and mixed, and wheresoever the same may be situate, to my six (6) children, to-wit: Alvin G. Gumbel, Nellie A. Bye, Mildred H. Niemann, Fannie H. Sanders, Lester C. E. Gumbel and Fred W. Gumbel, share and share alike, as tenants in common.

SEVENTH: I hereby nominate and appoint my daughter, Nellie A. Bye, sole Executrix of this my LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT, and I hereby revoke any and all former Wills by me at any time heretofore made.

I hereby authorize and empower my said Executrix, Nellie A. Bye, to sell any and all of my personal property and real estate, without the license of any Court therefor, and she is hereby authorized to execute deed or deeds to any real estate which I may own at the time of my death, to the purchaser thereof.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, I have hereunto subscribed my name to this instrument, which is my LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT, at the City of Seward, Nebraska, this 11th day of January, A. D. 1935.

[signed] Mildred Gumbel

We, whose names are hereunto subscribed, do hereby certify that MILDRED GUMBEL, the above named testatrix, subscribed her name to the above and foregoing instrument, in our presence and in the presence of each of us, and at the same time, in our presence and hearing, declared said instrument to be her LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT; and we, at her request, in her presence, and in the presence of each other, sign our names hereto, as attesting witnesses.

Dated at Seward, Nebraska, this 11th day of January, 1935.

[signed] B. F. Norval
Post Office, Seward, Nebraska.

[signed] Martha Miesner
Post Office, Seward, Nebraska.

[signed] Harry L. Norval
Post Office, Seward, Nebraska.

There are a number of documents among her estate papers, but no information contained in them was new to me and I didn’t photocopy all of them for my records.

The following legal notice appeared in the Seward Independent on 22 September 1942:

(McKillip, Barth & Blevens, Attorneys)
"NOTICE OF FINAL SETTLEMENT

"In the County Court of Seward County, Nebraska.

"In the Matter of the Estate of Mildred Gumbel, Deceased

"The creditors, heirs, legatees, and all other persons interested in said Estate, are hereby notified that on the 22nd day of September, 1942, Nellie A. Bye, Executrix of said Estate filed a petition in said County Court, praying that her final administration account filed herein be settled and allowed; that an assignment of the residue of said estate be made to the persons entitled thereto, and that she be discharged from her trust as such Executrix and that if you fail to appear before said Court on the 9th day of October, 1942, at 9 o'clock A.M., and contest said petition, the Court may grant the prayer of said petition and make such other and further orders, allowances and decrees, as to this Court may seem proper.

"WITNESS my hand and seal of the County Court this 22nd day of September, A.D. 1942.

"(Seal) P. H. WIEGARDT,
29-31 County Judge"

Siblings, surname Schilling
Alice, married Alexander Gross; issue without issue
[Millie]
Robert, never married
Alvin, married Christine Schaob[?]; issue without issue
Oscar, married first Caroline Zimmer, issue; married second Henriette Braun née Brault; no issue

See Illustrations Number 15 and Illustrations Number 14 and 15.

Parents are Numbers 30 and 31.
Illustration Number 8: Gravestone of Jesse M. Garner in Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine, Clark County, Arkansas.
Top of stone: Father
Nov. 8, 1845 - July 16, 1903
At bottom of stone: An honest man is the noblest work of God.

Illustration Number 9: Gravestone of Mary Jane (Robinson) Garner in Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine, Clark County, Arkansas.
Top of stone: Mother
Aug. 6, 1851 - June 23, 1932
At bottom of stone: Rest Mother in quiet sleep while friends in sorrow o'er thee weep.

Illustration Number 9: Signature from the Last Will and Testament of Mary Jane (Robinson) Garner, dated 22 August 1912.

Illustration Number 9: Mary Jane (Robinson) Garner, nineteen teens or twenties.

← Illustration Number 9: Mary Jane (Robinson) Garner, about 1900-1910.
Illustration Number 10: William Green Dafford. Undated photo in custody of Fem Lambert until her death in 2006; may have gone to Britt Elam. (Photo not contemporaneous with wife’s picture. Original is very large.)

Illustration Number 11: Minervia Jane "Jane" (Runyan) Dafford, undated, from a tintype in possession of Fem Lambert. May have gone to Britt Elam.

Illustration Numbers 10 and 11: Gravestone of Billie and Jane (Runyan) Dafford at Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery near Amity in Clark County, Arkansas. This snapshot is the best I could do. Engraving:

DAFFORD

Jane 1855-1914

Billie 1954-1902
Illustration Number 13: Henriette "Jette" Grolm, about 1890. Dress may have been made by her sister Lina Schmidt, who was a trained seamstress.

Illustration Numbers 12 and 13: Gottlieb and Jette (Grolm) Niemann, 23 September 1891.

Illustration Number 13: Jette Niemann, 1926 passport photo.

Illustration Number 12: Gottlieb Niemann, from a 1926 family picture taken before wife Jette departed for America.

Illustration Number 13: Jette Niemann at Elm Creek, Nebraska, 1926.
Illustration Numbers 12 and 13: Gottlieb and Henrietta (Grolm) Niemann. Gottlieb’s vignette has been isolated from their 1891 wedding picture, and Jette’s vignette is from her ca1890 Kearney photograph, both originals found on page 103.
Illustration Number 12: Gottlieb Niemann's signature from a 10 August 1928 business letter about the farm in Seward County, Nebraska.

Illustration Number 13: Henrietta Niemann's signature from a 10 August 1928 business letter about the farm in Seward County, Nebraska.

Illustration Number 12: Gottlieb Niemann's grave immediately after his burial on 14 March 1936 at Helpup. The family declares that he was not a Nazi, but it was expedient to conform—thus the swastikas on the ribbons.

Illustration Numbers 12 and 13: Niemann stone at Helpup, 1959, “Resting place of the Niemann Family of Währentrup”. Stone was renovated before 2001, removing the end pieces, including that engraved with Gottlieb and Jette’s names.
Illustration Number 14: George Gumbel, from a family picture ca1885.

Illustration Number 14: George Gumbel, from a family photo, ca1898.

Illustration Number 14: George Gumbel, probably taken about 1926 or 1927.

Illustrations Number 14 and 15: Signatures of George and Millie Gumbel from a legal document dated 17 February 1923 when they purchased their home in Seward.
Illustration Number 15: Millie Schilling, age about one year, from a tintype family picture ca1865.

Illustration Number 15: Millie Gumbel, probably about 1915. Son Alvin was beginning to take photography seriously and often experimented with artistic poses, using family members as subjects.

Illustration Number 15: She signed Millie or Mrs. G. A. Gumbel until she signed her Will in 1935, the first time "Mildred" is found.

Illustration Number 15: Millie Schilling as a young working woman in St. Louis, ca 1885-1890. Charcoal on paper backed by cardboard, 16 × 20 inches (image about 14½ × 16 inches), by an unknown artist. Original portrait owned by Lila Niemann Garner, 2006.

Quarter-moon pin, owned by Lila Niemann Garner 2006, is seen on many photos of Millie until late in her life.
Illustration Number 14: George Alfred Gumbel. Portrait by his son, Alvin Gumbel. "Gumbel 1920" can be seen in the lower right, the script evoking the Art Deco era.
Illustration Number 15: Millie (Schilling) Gumbel, portrait by her son Alvin Gumbel. In the lower left corner, the script reminiscent of the Art Deco era: “Gumbel 1921.”
Illustration Numbers 14 and 15: George and Millie (Schilling) Gumbel were married 23 September 1891 in Warsaw, Hancock County, Illinois.

Illustration Numbers 14 and 15: Gravestones of George and Millie (Schilling) Gumbel in Seward Cemetery, Seward County, Nebraska.
16 – Peter GARNER was born to John and Elizabeth Garner about 1810 in Moore County, North Carolina. Proving that the family lived in Moore County was not easy; a John Garner can be found in a Moore County census with the correct mix of sons and daughters, but that alone proves nothing. When the book Arkansas’ Damned Yankees\textsuperscript{69} was published, listing Arkansas men who enlisted as Union soldiers, Peter’s known brother William Garner was found with his son, enlisting from Saline County and naming his birthplace as Moore County, North Carolina.

By 1825, John and Elizabeth had moved with their family to McNairy County, Tennessee. It was probably there, about 1831, that Peter married Susan née Jackson. They remained in McNairy until sometime between their son Jesse’s birth in 1845 and 1 June 1850, the target date for the 1850 census, when they were enumerated in Cass Township, Taney County, Missouri. Cass Township was separated from Taney and is now in Stone County, a region made famous in the book Shepherd of the Hills by Harold Bell Wright.

The Agricultural Schedule of the 1850 Census helps to understand the sort of life the Gamer family led there. Peter Gamer had thirty improved acres and thirty unimproved acres worth $300, as well as farm implements and machinery worth $100. He had three horses, two milch\textsuperscript{70} cows, two working oxen, three other cattle, six sheep and twenty swine. The value of his livestock is stated as $325. He raised “Indian Corn”, oats, tobacco, beans, Irish potatoes and sweet potatoes. Production of ten pounds of wool, 130 pounds of butter and thirty

\textsuperscript{69}Arkansas’ Damned Yankees: An Index to Union Soldiers in Arkansas Regiments, Allen, Desmond Walls; Frontier Press.

\textsuperscript{70}The correct way to spell ‘milk’ in 1850.
pounds of beeswax and honey is listed. Animals slaughtered were worth $15, and "Value of Homemade Manufactures" is listed as $15.

Certificate Number 10299, on file with the Bureau of Land Management, records Peter Garner's purchase of forty acres of land in Taney County, Missouri on 16 December 1850. Presumably these are in addition to the sixty acres he owned when the 1850 census was taken; however, it is possible that he already possessed this land by census day but the paperwork was not completed until December.

Present-day Stone County is beautiful, but the earth is covered with stones, and it would have been hard for a farmer to grub out a living there. Peter's wife's sister Lucinda, with her husband Goodin Deaton and family, had moved from Tennessee to Clark County, Arkansas. They must have communicated to the Garners that things were quite good there, and the Garners made the move to Clark. Peter Gamer's first land purchases in Clark were made 10 October 1856 and totaled 120 acres, according to the Bureau of Land Management.

The older children had married in Missouri, and most if not all of them went to Clark, also. Ages and birthplaces found in census records seem to imply that they did not all go at the same time, because some were still having babies in Taney while others were already having babies in Clark.

By 1860, Peter Garner owned real estate worth $800 in Alpine Township, Clark County, and valued his personal property at $1,200. The younger children were still at home, and Peter's mother was living with the family, as were two nephews of his wife and two unexplained people.

Although an article in the book Clark County Past and Present states that Peter Garner's brother Jesse had owned a large plantation and many slaves, I have found no evidence of any of our Gamer line who owned slaves. It is easy to transfer family lore from one side of the house to the other; perhaps that is how this wrong information came to be repeated.

By 1870, the children had all moved away from the parents' household. Barbary Jackson, Susan's mother was living with them, also one William Maynard, a 58-year-old farmer born in Georgia, whose presence cannot be explained.

When the 1880 census was taken, Peter and Susan were alone except for a hireling, nineteen-year-old Lawrence Arnold.

Peter died on Sunday, 5 February 1888; the Arkadelphia Southern Standard printed this death notice on 10 February 1888 (page 3, column 2):

"Peter Garner an old citizen of this county died at his residence near Amity last Sunday at the advanced age of 81 years. Uncle Peter was a highly respected man and his death will be mourned by many friends."

©1992, Clark County Historical Association, Arkadelphia, Arkansas, Wendy Richter, Editor. Printed for the Association by Walsworth publishing Co.
He is buried at Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine, his flat, homemade stone engraved only "Peter Garner". Grass with runners sometimes covers the stone during the growing season. His gravestone is nine feet, six inches directly west of the larger stone of his son Jesse Garner.

Siblings, surname Garner

[Peter]
John, Jr. married Mary A. "Polly" Richardson; issue
Sarah Jane married Elhana Winchester Wilson; issue
William "Billy" married Nancy Richardson; issue
Elizabeth "Betsy" married Stephen A. Smith; issue
Jesse married Pemeca/Necey/Nancy __________, Peter’s stepdaughter, issue;
married second Mrs. Josephine Johnson; married third Mrs. Tabitha "Betsy" Jones, née Garner
Stephen married Nancy Thornton, issue; married three more times
Pleasant; not sure he belongs in family
Calloway; not sure he belongs in family

See Illustration Number 16.

Parents are Numbers 32 and 33.

17 – Susan JACKSON was born about 1808 in Georgia. Her mother’s name was Barbara or Barbary, but her father’s name is not known.

Susan had a daughter, Pemeca72 or Necey or Nancy (some see ‘Romerica’ and ‘America’ on the census), when she married Peter Gamer, but nothing is known about a first marriage. All her Gamer children except the last, Margaret, are believed to have been born in McNairy County, Tennessee; Margaret was born after the move to Taney County, Missouri. From there the family went to Clark County, Arkansas. A great deal of work and planning must have gone into making moves like these, and Susan must have been well-organized to keep everyone fed and reasonably clean, especially when her children were small.

Her daughter Miley Gamer Herron’s 1932 obituary73 contains this sentence:

"Before her marriage she was Miley Gamer and a cousin of the Confederate General Stonewall74 Jackson."

It is certainly possible that Susan was from the same family as Stonewall Jackson, but no proof seems to be available. My own opinion is that someone asked about whether there was a

72 Descendants have obtained death certificates of Pemeca’s children in an attempt to ascertain Pemeca’s maiden name. Where ‘Maiden name of mother’ is given, it is given as ‘Jackson’. Susan may have been a Jackson and married a Jackson, or she may have been unmarried.
73 Descendant Cherry Shanda née Suggs, who owns the original obituary clipping, believes it is from an Arkadelphia newspaper, but concedes the possibility that it is from a Hot Springs or Amity paper.
74 Thomas J. Jackson.
relationship, and someone else conjectured that it was possible, then the family lore was embroidered upon to include the ‘fact’ that this Jackson family was related to that of Stonewall.

Susan’s death date is not known; she was living in 1880 and was not found on the 1900 census. No obituary has been found. She is buried beside her husband at Pea Ridge Cemetery; her stone, north of his, reads “Susa Gamer”. Whoever scratched her name into the stone (and it is not a professional job) must have realized that if he engraved an ‘n’, there wouldn’t be room enough remaining for the entire name ‘Gamer’.

Siblings, surname Jackson

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Relationship</th>
<th>Issue</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>married Hiram Case</td>
<td>issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susan</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucinda</td>
<td>married Goodin Deaton</td>
<td>issue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy</td>
<td>married William Case</td>
<td>issue in Polk County, Missouri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isham</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

See Illustration Number 17.

Parents are Numbers 34 and 35.

18 – John Blassingame ROBINSON was born about 1 July 1825 at Pickensville, South Carolina, to Dr. John Robinson and his wife Eliza Blassingame. Linking him to his parents was the most difficult research problem that I was ultimately able to solve.

He signed his name John B. Robinson, seemingly to distinguish himself from his father, and I refer to him as John B. for the same reason. I believe there’s a slim chance he was called ‘Bill’, slim because he had a brother William; his wife’s niece, Melinda Jones Cubage thought his name was William Bilikin Robinson. No doubt the name Blassingame was unfamiliar to her and it was remembered incorrectly as Bilikin; if his nickname was Bill, however, it would have been logical for her to think that his first name was William. His parents may have nicknamed him Bill as a sort of shortening of Blassingame—quite a stretch of the imagination, but the only reason that occurred to me for a long time, for Melinda to have thought his name was William. I later realized, however, that Melinda knew about the son of A. B. and Ann Martha Clingman who died young, William Wickliffe Robinson Clingman, and she probably thought that was John B.’s name, when in fact it was his brother’s. Melinda remembered some other things wrong: that John B. was from North Carolina, and that he died about the beginning of the Civil War. His widow probably did die about that time. By then she was the wife of Dr. Joshua Ham Cross.

No document that I have been able to find states John B.‘s exact birthdate.

75 At one time, a descendant of Nancy who married William Tucker believed that she belonged in this Jackson family, although I personally found it very doubtful. Later information found that Nancy who married William Case was née Jackson and was very likely Susan’s sister, essentially ruling out the presence of two daughters named Nancy.
76 Only circumstantial evidence links her to the family. She could be a cousin or other relative.
77 Only circumstantial evidence links her to the family. She could be a cousin or other relative.
78 See biography of Person Number 38 for information about Mrs. Cubage and her writings.
When the 1850 census was taken, John B. Robinson was enumerated in the A. B. Clingman household and his age was given as 24, birthplace South Carolina. The actual enumeration was on 28 October 1850, but the count was supposed to have been as of 1 June 1850; of course we don’t know whether the enumerator abided by that rule. Elizabeth Ann Clingman’s age was given as eighteen.

Clark County Arkansas Marriage Book C., page 168, documents his marriage:

“I John Edington an acting and duly commissioned Justice of the Peace in and for the county of Clark in the state of Arkansas do hereby certify that on the fifth day of November AD 1850 at the Residence of Dr. A. B. Clingman in said county of Clark in the State of Arkansas I did Duly Join [in] marriage John B. Robinson aged 28 years and Elizabeth Ann Clingman aged Sixteen years All of the County of Clark in Said State of Arkansas according to law and then declared them to be Husband and Wife given under my hand the 15th day of Nov 1850 [signed] J. Edington JP”

My theory is that Edington transposed the numbers when he wrote the ages of John and Elizabeth, because he wrote sixteen and she really was eighteen; 26 would have been more nearly correct than 28, for John’s age, and although it still wouldn’t jibe with his census age, it would be very close to that stated in his obituary.

One of my first Arkansas breakthroughs was finding John B.’s name in indexed death and marriage notices for the Arkansas State Gazette & Democrat. As soon as I could, I went to the Arkansas History Commission (the state archives of Arkansas) in Little Rock, and found the death notice in the microfilmed newspaper collection. Arkansas State Gazette & Democrat, Little Rock, Friday Morning, December 17, 1852, page 3, column 7:

“Died At his residence, in Mount Ida, Montgomery county, on the 14th September last, Dr. John Blasingame Robinson, in the 28th year of his age.”

The only places I have ever found his middle name spelled out are in reports of his death. It seemed likely that Blas(s)ingame was his mother’s maiden name, and I wrote to Dr. W. Doak Blassingame who maintains a family archive. He suggested Dr. John and Eliza as parents for John B., but was unable to offer proof except that they did have a son named John.

At my next research opportunity, I went to the Montgomery County Courthouse at Mount Ida and read those of the court minutes (I found no loose papers) that pertained to the settlement of his estate. Nothing of great import is contained in them. A number of persons owed him money for medical services, and several people came forth to make claims against the estate. His widow’s remarriage is noted before the estate is settled, but nothing is mentioned about guardianship for his daughter. The inventory of his estate, found on page 82 of the First book of Probate Records of Montgomery County, Arkansas, follows:

79 When one considers that ‘in the first year of his age’ means the year between the person’s birth and his first birthday, then looks at “the 28th year of his age”, it clearly means that he is 27 years old and his 28th birthday is approaching.
"January Court Term. Met first Tuesday and adjourned until tomorrow. Wednesday morning: Adjourned until tomorrow.

"Thursday morning, 8 o’clock:

"And on this day, to wit, the 6th day of January AD 1853 [came] James H. May Administrator of the Estate of John B. Robinson deceased and presented an Inventory of said Estate which Inventory is ordered to be filed

| 1 Vol of Ramsbotham fro’s 80 of partuition |
| Paxtons Anatomy |
| Dickinsons Practice |
| Biggs Bop. Med. |
| United States Dispensatory |
| First Lessons of Phisology |
| Sims (?) Surgery |
| Elements of Midwifery |
| Condi on Diseases of Children |
| Druits (?) Surgery |
| Traviners (?) Surgery |
| Johes Chymesty (?) |
| Blairs & Robinsons Lectures and Books |
| Set of Books Set of Vials |

After the theory developed that John B.’s parents were Dr. John Robinson and Eliza Blassingame, we went to South Carolina and tried to make the link from that end. I found that Dr. John Robinson had given a tract of land to his son John B. Robinson, but it didn’t prove that the same John B. went to Arkansas. John B.’s signature was found in Dr. John’s estate papers.

I advertised in a South Carolina genealogical publication, asking how I would prove that he belonged in Dr. John and Eliza’s family. Mrs. Ayliffe Jacobs Bogle of Marietta, Georgia responded. She is descended from John B.’s brother, William Wycliffe Robinson. She promised to help all she could and has been my tireless ally. She found a note by a relative and genealogist, Frances Miles Hagood “Queenie” Mauldin, which stated that John B., son of Dr. John and Eliza, had attended West Point but did not graduate. The led me to research West Point, which didn’t prove anything, except that it was interesting and helped to ‘flesh out’ his character. His signature is found several more times in papers connected with West Point.

Next I searched for a signature in Arkansas, to compare with the ones found in his

---

80 I have used the character for ‘Florin’ here because it resembles most nearly, of anything available to me, the character used in the handwritten court minutes. A search of the Internet found The Principles and Practice of Obstetric Medicine and Surgery, in Reference to the Process of Parturition by Ramsbotham, Francis H(enry): Philadelphia, Lea & Blanchard, 1843. Blocker, p 328. This edition not in Cordasco [probably some kind of authority unknown to me], who lists the first American edition, revised, of 1842 and an 1845 “new” edition (40-1106). Not in Wellcome, Waller, or any of the other collection catalogues usually consulted. Second American edition, revised. Price quoted 2004, $150.00.
father's estate papers and the West Point documents. Ben and I visited every courthouse possessing pre-1851 estate papers in Clark, Montgomery and the surrounding counties, because I thought he would have made (and signed) claims against estates for payment for his medical services. No signature was found.

On 16 October 1847, Dr. John B. Robinson presented a claim against the estate of Wiley Newberry in Clark County, but the paper on file is apparently a handwritten copy, because the handwriting, including the 'signature', is the same as that in most of the other loose papers connected with Newberry's estate. It may, however, give a better idea of just how early he went to Arkansas, it being the earliest documentation found. It probably is our John B.; it seems unlikely that there was another Dr. J. B. Robinson in Clark County, given the small population of that frontier area, yet he always signs John B., not J. B.

County Court Record No. 1, Montgomery County, January Term 1852, contains this entry:

"Ordered that John B. Robinson be allowed [sic] Ten Dollars for examination of Mary Roberts in the case of the State vs Harvey Wyatt."

It seemed to me that he would have signed a receipt for this warrant, but no receipt can be found.

In Pendleton District and Anderson County, S. C. Wills, Estates, Inventories, Tax Returns and Census Records81 a Jno. B. Robinson made a purchase at the 14 March 1845 personal estate sale of Dr. John Robinson; this may be 'our' John B. I also found a John B. Robinson mentioned as making a purchase at the estate sale of Sarah Kerr on 20 January 1849. I corresponded with a descendant of Robinsons from that County who stated that her Robinsons seem to have a connection to a Barr family, and perhaps it is one of those Robinsons who made the purchase, because I believe our John B. was already in Arkansas by that date.

I spent quite a lot of time checking lists of officers and men who fought in the Mexican War. I did not find John B., although I was unable to find a complete list of medical officers. I gave up on this pursuit when I found evidence that he was already practicing medicine in Clark County, Arkansas by October 1847.

The Whittington Store ledger in Mount Ida was searched; no one including John B. seems to have signed for purchases, so no signature was found, but entries in the ledger give a few minor insights about his activities. He was in Mount Ida by March 1851, when he purchased five pounds of nails. Several items are illegible; other things that can be read include one bushel of wheat, five pounds of sugar, pork, pickled pork, beef, three pounds of sugar, more nails, quinine, expectorant, hair tonic, several boxes of ague pills, calomel. His last transaction seems to have occurred on 11 August 1852. Perhaps he became ill soon after that.

It was from West Point records that I gleaned enough information to guess his birthdate: he was 17 years old when he was admitted to the Academy Class of 1846 on 1 July 1842. On 20 January 1843, sixteen cadets were discharged by authority of the Chief Engineer, John B. among them. On a document dated Saturday, 29 January 1843, reporting on cadets who at the probationary examination in January 1843 were found deficient as of 20 January, his age is given as seventeen years and six months. Some other facts emerge: his deficiency is listed as being in mathematics, he had little aptitude for military life, his study habits were good, but his general conduct was bad (contrasted with “very bad” for several others among the sixteen). His guardian, his uncle Dr. Willis Robinson, was informed by letter on 1 February 1843 that he had been discharged (permitted to resign).

From the above statements, I settled on a birthdate of 1 July 1825. The fact that Eliza was making green cheese on that date (described in a diary—see Eliza Blassingame’s biography) probably means that he was not born on that date, although Mrs. Laurens, whose diary describes the scene, probably would not have mentioned Eliza’s advanced pregnancy. She could have given birth later that same day. It does seem as though Mrs. Laurens would have mentioned the fact that there was a new baby at the Robinson home, if he had been born a few days earlier.

**Excursus:** John Jakes, in his book *North and South*[^82], focuses on the U. S. Military Academy Class of 1846, his two main characters being fictional class members, one of them from South Carolina. I believe his research is reliable because he mentions that sixteen young men, known to be the correct number, did not pass the January examinations. This is a good source for reading about the traditions, the conditions, the food and academy life in general during that period. Jakes credits a Professor James Morrison, a former Army officer and West Point faculty member with answering many questions and providing him with a copy of the Tidball Manuscript, “...a memoir of life at the Academy by Cadet John C. Tidball, class of 1848”, from which he seems to have drawn heavily.

Several members of the Class of 1846 went on to fame, including Thomas J. “Stonewall” Jackson, George McClellan and George Pickett.

***

All during my search, I was wrestling with statements found in R. W. Simpson’s *History of Old Pendleton District*. In one place, Simpson states that Dr. John Robinson and Eliza Blassingame’s son John Robinson was unmarried; elsewhere he states that John married “Alabama lady”. It does seem remotely possible to me that he married first an Alabama lady, she died, he went further west to Arkansas and married Elizabeth Ann. It seems more likely, however, that whoever provided information got Arkansas and Alabama confused (they are both west of South Carolina and both begin with ‘A’), and the Alabama lady he married was really the Arkansas lady.

At one time, I was dreaming up a reason for Dr. and Mrs. Clingman, whose eleventh child was born a few days after John B. and Elizabeth Ann’s marriage, to have been named William Wycliffe Robinson Clingman, obviously after John B.’s brother. My theory was that John B. and his Alabama lady had a son

named William Wycliffe Robinson, mother and baby both died, and rather than face the prospect that he would expect a son born to him and Elizabeth Ann to be given the same name, her parents ‘used up’ the name.

The use of this name by the Clingmans and the fact that the John B. of South Carolina had a brother by that name (the spellings differed slightly), was an important part of the preponderance of evidence that I gathered, for it seemed to indicate that John B. of Arkansas was connected to or was the same man as John B. of South Carolina.

In desperation, on 7 July 1998, Ben and I went back to the History Commission in Little Rock. I was determined to read every Arkansas newspaper extant, for the time frame of John B.’s death, in the hope of finding an obituary more complete than the one in the Arkansas Gazette & Democrat. This strategy proved fruitful.

Arkansas History Commission, Newspaper Collection, Arkansas Miscellaneous Roll #2, The Whig, Little Rock [Arkansas], Dec. 16, 1852, pages not numbered:

"DIED"

"Leaves have their time to fall, and flowers
To wither, at the North wind’s breath;
But all, thou hast all seasons
For thine own, Oh Death!

"Died, at his residence, in Mount Ida, Montgomery county, on the 14th September last, Dr. John Blasingame Robinson, in the 28th year of his age.

"Dr. R. was the eldest son of Dr. John Robinson, of Pendleton district, S.C., long and favorably known as one of the most able and skilful [sic] physicians of his age. He acquired his profession in the State of S.C., and some few years ago removed to Arkansas, where he married the daughter of Dr. A.B. Clingman; and at the time of his death, was engaged in an active and lucrative business.

"He was an open-hearted, generous, high minded young man, and bid fair to become an ornament to his profession, and a most useful citizen. A wise Providence has, however, removed him from the scene of his labor and usefulness, and thus left many friends in the State of his adoption to mourn his loss. E.L.H.

"Mount Ida, Dec. 6, '52.
"Gaz. & Democrat, True Democrat, and Arkadelphia Standard, please copy"

The True Democrat did copy the obituary word for word but spelled ‘skillful’ correctly; the Gazette & Democrat copied only the paragraph quoted first, above; and no copies of the Arkadelphia Standard are known to exist. I have inquired of the Montgomery County Historical Society about who ‘E. L. H.’ might be, but no one seems to know.

The cause of John B.’s death is not known, but cholera is a possibility, because there were periodic epidemics during that time frame.
Cemeteries in and near Mount Ida have been searched and no gravestone has been found. He is not listed in the Montgomery County cemetery book. My belief is that he is either buried in Mount Ida, where many of the old, native-slate gravestones have sloughed away layer by layer to almost nothing, or in the cemetery called Old Old Bethel where A. B. Clingman and his wife Ann Martha are buried. Only some fieldstones remain there as grave markers. It has been given as a 'rule of thumb' that before motorized transportation, people were buried within five miles of where they died. If this holds true for John B., he is buried in Mount Ida.

During my quest, I checked the enrollment lists of several Southern medical schools, and John B. did not appear on any of them. In light of the obituary statement that he received his medical education in the state of South Carolina, my best guess is that he apprenticed to his uncle, Dr. Willis Robinson, riding with him on his rounds in the South Carolina Up-country, a common way to obtain a medical education in those days.

After I found the proof contained in his obituary that he was the son of the couple I believed to be his parents, finding an exact birthdate took on less importance. Before proof was found, an exact birthdate might have ruled out his being their child, because I have birthdates for some of his siblings, and a birthdate less than nine months either side of that of any other child in a family would have made it impossible for him to have been born to that couple. If I had found a birthdate, and it fell sufficiently far between the other births for him to have been their child, it would have added another item to my ‘preponderance of evidence’ collection.

I believe that there are three possible birthdate sources: 1. A family bible or other family record, because in his mother’s application for a War of 1812 Widow’s Pension, a family record is mentioned, but no one with whom I’ve corresponded knows what happened to it; 2. The late “Queenie” Mauldin collected genealogical material, including Robinson family information, and is said to have given it to “many people”, but I have been able to locate little of her collection; 3. John Blassingame Robinson wrote a letter of application to Senator William Butler of South Carolina applying for an appointment to the United States Military Academy at West Point and may have stated his birthdate, but, while I’ve traced the letter as far as its forwarding by Butler to the Secretary of War, with a notation on 3 November 1841 that it was forwarded to by the Secretary of War to “Engineer Office”, Engineer Office (now Corps of Engineers) papers have not been microfilmed and I have not gone to the National Archives in pursuit. Correspondence with an employee of the National Archives, however, brought the assertion that the Library of Congress has Butler’s papers. I tried to find William Butler’s papers in the Library of Congress Manuscript Division, and the papers of a William Butler of South Carolina are archived there, but he is an earlier William Butler. The South Carolina State Archives can’t find any papers of the William Butler who represented South Carolina in the Congress of the United States during the early 1840s.

siblings, surname Robinson
Elizabeth Caroline married Washington Earle Holcomb; issue
Erasmus B.; died young without issue
Ann(a) LaBruce married Alex Sloan Briggs; issue
[John Blassingame]
William Wickliffe married Elvira Caroline Hagood; issue
Esther Benson married James Earl Hagood; issue
Mary Adaline “Polly”; never married
Jane A. married Samuel Owen; issue
Sarah C. “Sallie” married John Partlow; issue
Julia V. married William Lee; issue
Mildred Lindsey “Minnie” married James Madison McFall; issue

See Illustration Numbers 18.

Parents are Numbers 36 and 37.

19 – Elizabeth Ann CLINGMAN was born 15 July 1832 in Hardin County, Tennessee, to Dr. Alexander B. Clingman and his wife Ann Martha nee Clingman. The family stayed in Hardin County for more than two years, taking a break from travel on their trek from North Carolina to Texas, their planned destination. Eventually, of course, they stopped in Clark County, Arkansas, and never went on to Texas.

Elizabeth Ann was probably named for a young woman who seems to have been everybody’s darling among the North Carolina relatives, Elizabeth Ann “Betsy” Clingman. The daughter of Jacob and Jane (Poindexter) Clingman, Betsy was a double first cousin to Alexander and a first cousin to Ann Martha; she married Richard Puryear and had a number of children. My sense is that our Elizabeth Ann was probably called Betsy, or perhaps Betsy Ann.

We really know nothing about Elizabeth Ann’s early life. She was the eldest daughter in a large family, so it was doubtless necessary for her to take a lot of the household work off her mother’s hands, especially when there was a new baby in the family. The Clingmans in Arkansas did not have any slaves; for Elizabeth Ann’s generation, it was the norm.

On 5 November 1850 she married Dr. John Blassingame Robinson, at her parents’ home in Clark County. The young couple had evidently moved to Mount Ida by March of 1851, that being when Dr. Robinson’s name first begins to appear in the register of Whittington’s store there.

Elizabeth gave birth to her first child, Mary Jane Robinson on 8 August 1851. The baby was probably premature, if we can believe the family lore about her being so small that she would have fit into a pint cup.

Life must have looked rosy for Elizabeth; her baby was thriving, she had an industrious young husband who promised to be “an ornament to his profession”, and then disaster struck. Her husband died, probably quite suddenly. She must have been devastated. Although her brother, Dr. A. M. Clingman was practicing in Mount Ida, Elizabeth almost certainly took her baby and went back to her parents’ home four miles north of Amity, and made her home there.

Among Frances Miles Hagood “Queenie” Mauldin’s papers, there is a document stating
that the “attached letter” purports to be from the wife of John B. Robinson. However, no letter is attached, and queries that I’ve posted have not brought forth any answer as to where Queenie’s papers can be found. It would have been nice to see this letter, to see her handwriting and signature.

In those days, remarriage was expected of a young widow, and Elizabeth Ann married again on 16 October 1854, this time to a man about seventeen years older than herself, Dr. Joshua Ham Cross. He had six sons, and his first wife had died some time after the 1850 census was taken. Managing a large household was nothing new to Elizabeth, and the family began to grow. She gave birth to Ann Martha Cross on 30 July 1855, and to Susan Elizabeth Cross in 1857.

There is another child, Lucy Cross age 5/12, on the 1860 census. By 1870, Dr. Cross had remarried to a lady named Rebecca, who was born in North Carolina, and Lucy is not mentioned. Dr. Cross was dead by the 1880 census (he can be found on the mortality schedule) and his widow is enumerated with Susan age 23 and Sallie, age nine whose mother was born in Tennessee. If Sallie and Lucy are one person, she would have had to be nineteen and would have to have been missed by the census taker in 1870 to be Elizabeth Ann’s daughter. Elizabeth Ann was born in Tennessee, so I mention this mystery ‘just in case’. After 1880, I have not found Lucy/Sallie, and there is no mention of her in the A. B. Clingman or Ann Martha Clingman estate papers.

Perhaps Elizabeth’s health had begun to fail by the time the 1860 census was taken, because, although Elizabeth was counted in the Cross household, her daughter Mary Jane Robinson was enumerated in the home of the Clingman grandparents.

Family lore coming down in Mary Jane’s family, concerning Elizabeth’s death, seems to be nil. When Mary Jane died, her son Peter Gamer, the informant for her death certificate, thought her mother’s maiden name was Robison, when of course it was her first married name, misspelled. Ann Martha (Cross) Harris’ descendants believe that Elizabeth died at Russellville, Pope County, Arkansas in September, 1861. The descendants of Susan Elizabeth (Cross) Parrish Chambers have repeated family lore saying that she died and is buried at or near Dardanelle in Yell County. Elizabeth’s niece Melinda (Jones) Cubage wrote about the family, believed Dr. Robinson died at Mount Ida “about the beginning of the Civil War”. She mentions Elizabeth’s marriage to Dr. Cross, but says nothing about Elizabeth’s death.

I tried to find her burial place in Pope County and neighboring Yell County, and found nothing. If any newspaper printed an obituary, I have been unable to find it, although I believe I have looked at all extant newspapers for the 1860-61 time frame, believing that Melinda was remembering Elizabeth and not her husband, with her “beginning of the Civil War” statement. I tried to find out if there was some physician with a superior reputation living at Russellville or Dardanelle. A Dr. Russell founded Russellville. There is a hill or mountain nearby that has a reputation for healthful air and there was once a sanitarium there, but it was established long after Elizabeth Ann’s death. My searches have produced no answers.
After mulling over these ‘clues’ I have come to the conclusion that Elizabeth Ann is buried in Polk County where the family lived, in the cemetery at Ink where Dr. Cross is almost certainly buried, but without a marked gravestone. My rationale, with some background information, follows:

Today, when one does research at the Arkansas History Commission, the state archives of Arkansas, and wants to discuss Pope County, he spells P-o-p-e; the same goes for Polk County, P-o-l-k; the two words are easy to misunderstand. I believe that someone could have told a family member that Elizabeth was buried in Polk County, and that the hearer misunderstood that she was buried in Pope County. The next person, associating Pope County with Russellville its county seat, remembered Russellville. That person told someone else that she was buried at Russellville; the next person remembered the region, Dardanelle being very near to Russellville, and repeated not quite correctly, the lore that she was buried in Dardanelle, which is in Yell County.

I literally left no stone unturned: there is a large, square, dressed fieldstone in the cemetery near the little town of Ink in Polk County, near the stones of Ann Martha (Cross) Harris and her husband, and I lifted it up, just to make sure that nothing was carved on the underside. Nothing could be seen. A mound that is bricked up nearby is believed to be Dr. Cross’ resting place, but it is unmarked. There is said to have been another similar brick structure, but there isn’t much left of it. Perhaps it belonged to his first wife Lucinda. My best guess is that the fieldstone is Elizabeth Ann’s marker, but it is only a guess.

Only if we can find a family bible or a newspaper clipping (some newspapers were published but copies have not been found) that states Elizabeth Ann’s death date and burial place exactly, will we know the answers.

Siblings, surname Clingman

Alexander Michael “Uncle A.M.” married Julia A Saunders; issue
[Elizabeth Ann]
Mary Catherine died about age three of convulsions
Jane Poindexter married Dr. Alfred Jones; issue
Isaac Jarratt, Lieutenant, CSA, died of battle wounds at Murfreesboro, Tennessee; unmarried
Francis Henry died in Civil War; unmarried
Peter Jacob died in Civil War; unmarried
Thomas Lanier died in infancy
John Pattillo died in Civil War; unmarried
Arthur Kizzee married Martha Delia Tankersley; issue
William Wycliffe Robinson died in infancy

Descendants of a Burke family who lived in the Clingman neighborhood during the Civil War, related family lore to Cousin Jim Bowman in the late 1990s, that a Burke daughter had become pregnant by one of the four young Clingman men who went away to war and never returned. She “rode away on horseback” with an Indian or to an Indian Reservation and took refuge there, according to the family legend; Jim states that he assured these Burke relatives of hers that had the young man come home from the war, he would have done the honorable thing by her.
Martha Arkansas Louise \(^{84}\) “Aunt Matt” married Berry Thomas Strickland; issue

See Illustration Number 19.

Parents are Numbers 38 and 39.

22 – Jefferson Wesley RUNYAN was born 17 October 1822, probably in Shelby County, Alabama to Isaac Runyan and his wife Mary née Lowery. Mrs. Wright \(^{85}\) writes, “He was listed in the 1850 U. S. Census of Talladega County, Alabama, as being born in Alabama. Since the family first went to Shelby County, and since Talladega County, which bordered Shelby, was not created until 1832, then it is almost certain that he was born in Shelby County.” Her rationale is the best assessment available, and is likely correct.

No information about his early life comes to light, but it is a fact that in later life he was called ‘Wes’, and this nickname was probably already used when he was a child.

On 8 August 1850, Wes married Minerva Hillsman Huston. Mrs. Wright found the marriage recorded in Marriage Record Book I, page 11, in Talladega County, Alabama. The Rev. William Mitchell conducted the marriage ceremony. He was Minerva’s uncle, the second husband of Minerva’s father’s sister Elizabeth Huston Mauldin Mitchell. I have seen records giving Mitchell’s title as Justice of the Peace.

I found that the 1850 census enumerator did abide by the rules, counting people in the households where they dwelt on the target census day, although he made his rounds several months later. Wes Runyan is listed on the census in the home of his parents, where he lived on census day, although he had already married by then (and he and his bride may have lived with the parents of one or the other); and she was enumerated as a child in her father’s household also. It is often hard to know whether the census taker abided by this particular rule, but in this case of the marriage between the census day and the day of enumeration, the rule was obviously obeyed.

Four children were born to the couple while they were living in Talladega County, Alabama, where they owned land along the Coosa River. Late in 1857 or early in 1858, Wes and Minerva and their children, along with his parents and several other Runyan families, made a move to the newly-created county of Columbia, Arkansas; where they bought land near McNeil. Mrs. Wright found that a railroad was serving Talladega County by mid-1858. It is not known whether there was service to the west, but families were still traveling by wagon train long afterward. It is not known how the Runyans traveled.

I checked the Slave Schedules of the 1850 Census of Talladega County and the 1860 census of Columbia County. Wes did not own any slaves, nor did his father Isaac Runyan.

Six additional children were born while the Runyans lived in Columbia County. About 1870,

\(^{84}\) She is said to have been an ordained Campbellite preacher. Her children almost certainly had no issue.

\(^{85}\) See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 11.
the Runyans moved north to the northern part of Clark County, Arkansas, near Amity. Wes, his father and brother made their first Clark County land purchase 1 March 1870 according to Mrs. Wright. Again, it is not known what their mode of travel was, but they surely would have been bringing farm animals; and it may have been advantageous to travel by wagon train. Wes and Minerva established their farmstead near the Caddo River at the site of the so-called Runyan Ford. When a bridge was built there it was called the Runyan Bridge; this place is where present-day (2002) Calvin Road meets the Caddo River. The bridge has been destroyed and the river can’t be forded there, but Clark County and the State of Arkansas have jointly announced their intention of building a new bridge at the site.

Wes and Minerva farmed and reared their family at this picturesque place, and lived out their lives there.

Wes died on 1 August 1893. He is buried at Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery near Amity in Clark County, Arkansas. His grave is beside that of his wife and near those of his parents in the ‘Runyan Row’.

Riley-Hickingbotham Library at Ouichita Baptist University Library in Arkadelphia, Arkansas has archived and created an index of Clark County estate papers, and Jefferson Wesley Runyan’s name is not found in the index.

Siblings, surname Runyan
[Jefferson Wesley “Wes”]
Elizabeth or Eliza, married David Lee Massey; issue
William J. married Paulina Boyd; issue
Virginia Caroline, married John Thompson; issue
Benjamin
Marion
Isaac Newton, married Rachel Elizabeth Robertson; issue
Thomas J., never married, died while at a prisoner at Camp Butler, Illinois during the Civil War
Franklin, never married; killed by lightening

See Illustration Number 22 and Illustration Numbers 22 and 23.

Parents are Numbers 44 and 45.

86 Lloyd D. Bockstruck, presenting a seminar sponsored by the McAllen (Texas) Genealogical Society on 9 February 2002 , pointed out that equine animals can be led, driven or ridden and while cattle can be herded, hogs and poultry cannot. Traveling with hogs or a flock of geese, ducks or chickens would have been difficult.

87 Settling near Amity in 1868, John Thompson established and built a Methodist church at the site about three miles north of Amity where Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery is located. The story of its founding can be found in Tracking Barefoot Runyan, see second footnote to the biography of Person Number 11. The church is gone but there is a structure where funerals or other services can be held, and the cemetery was being maintained (2004). The Methodist archives has a photo of the church but no records of genealogical value.
23 – **Minerva Hillsman HUSTON** was born 10 September 1828, probably in Lawrence County, but perhaps in Talladega County, Alabama to Archibald Huston and his wife Judith, née Borum.

Research overview: It is necessary to work backward one generation at a time, from the known to the unknown. Sometimes, after finding one generation further back, one can link to other research, and I was lucky enough to do so with this family. I knew nothing except that Mrs. Wright stated the name ‘Minervia Hillsman Houston or Houghston’, along with birth and death dates, for Jefferson Wesley Runyan’s wife.

I expected that Wes and Minerva had married before the census taker made his rounds in 1850, so they wouldn’t have been enumerated in their parents’ households. Mrs. Wynelle Lowrey Mitchell, a researcher of Runyan and Lowrey (all spellings), found that Wes Runyan was enumerated with his parents on the 1850 census of Talladega County, Alabama. This fact was the clue that led me to search for a Huston family, any spelling, with a daughter ‘Minervia Hillsman Huston’, Wes’ 1850 bride, who might have been enumerated with her parents as well.

When I found “Manervy H.” in a “Houston” family, the entry was hard to read and hard to interpret. Archibald “Houston” appears to be 24 years old, with a 30-year-old wife Matilda, some young adults whom I supposed to be siblings of Archibald, some teenagers and children, and two additional children whose surname I saw as Lawton.

If Mrs. Wright found this confusing census record, it may account for the fact that she didn’t attempt to follow the Huston family. In addition, she had indexed the name ‘Hillsman’ indicating to me that she had considered the possibility, which I was prepared to explore, that Minerva’s maiden name was Hillsman, and she was a widow when she married Runyan. I later found that in her mother’s family there is a tradition of naming females with family surnames as middle names.

After some study and input from others, I realized that I was misreading Archibald’s age, and he was 54 years old; I soon discovered through an Internet contact that Matilda was indeed his wife, but the young “Houston” adults (including “Manervy”) and the children were the issue from his two earlier known marriages. Learning that Matilda’s former name had been Lawson, I tried to rationalize that her maiden name had been Lawson, she had married a Lawton, and had Lawton children. This proved not to be the case. Matilda had been a Mrs. Lawson, and the two ‘Lawton’ children were not hers and were not Lawton but Lawler, the children of Archibald’s earliest known wife Judith Borum’s dead sister, Nancy Borum, who had married Robert Lawler.

I feel very thankful that the census taker, though he wrote ‘54’ so it looks like ‘24’, kept to the rule and enumerated “Manervy” in her father’s household where she was living on the census target date, even though by the time he actually made his rounds, she had already been married (and presumably living elsewhere) for more than three months. Thus was I able to link Minerva to her father, which opened the door to research already completed by

---

88 See second footnote to the biography of Person Number 11.
others.

After the link was made, following clues found on the Internet, I corresponded with Bernice Hughston Clayton and Patricia Steele Ryley, other Hughston/Huston and Adair researchers who were willing to share information they had gathered. Francis Gill, found through the Website maintained by the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints which led to his own Website and a book which he co-authored\(^89\), corresponded about his research and gave me the address of Rebecca Garrett Patterson, who possessed photocopies of the Borum bible and had done extensive Adair, Borum, Huston and antecedent research, about which she was willing to correspond and which she was willing to share. Mrs. Patterson had been supplied information by someone who had followed the family down to the generation of “Minerva J. Runyan”, born in 1855 at “Amitey”, Arkansas who married W. G. “Dofford”. These misspellings or misinterpretations of handwriting are two examples of the problems that lead genealogists astray.

I had early written to Tom Hillsman, who had published a book about the Hil(l)smans family. At that time, I had too little information and we were unable to make a connection. After the breakthrough link was made, his research results completed the Hillsman picture.

After finding that the Adair name came into the family, I corresponded with W. Lee Adair, Jr., Ph.D., who has ruled out some data that were earlier accepted as facts.

To Mrs. Mitchell, Mrs. Clayton, Mrs. Ryley, Mrs. Patterson, Mr. Gill, Mr. Hillsman, Mr. Leo Adair and Dr. Lee Adair, I am profoundly grateful.

Excursus: The name was originally Huston; Archibald’s brother, Dr. Joseph Hughston, changed the spelling to Hughston. It is not known whether any other family members changed. The name is usually spelled ‘Houston’ by census takers; I have chosen to use the ‘Huston’ spelling unless and until I learn that it is incorrect. I conjecture that Joseph changed the spelling partly because he was tired of his name being mispronounced ‘Husston’. One reason given for the change adding ‘gh’ is that the families of that name who lived in Virginia and Pennsylvania used the ‘Hughston’ spelling. I have found no basis in fact for Mrs. Wright’s\(^90\) statement that the name may have been ‘Houghston’.

This family does not come from the same roots as Sam Houston.

\* \* \*

The spelling ‘Minervia’ is from her gravestone, but her name was in all likelihood really Minerva, a name that is found in the Hillsman family. An Adair researcher has written her name Minerva; it is possible that he found her name in a family bible. The 1850 census listing spells her name “Manervy”, giving a clue to how the name was pronounced by her family.

\(^89\) *The Ancestors and Allied Families of Walter Lafayette Bell and Ruth Rankin* by Irma Bell Myers Willette and Francis Calvin Gill; Copyright 1994; LDS Film Number 1698812.

\(^90\) See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 11.
Her mother died when she was about ten years old, after which her father remarried, that lady died also, and he married again. His unmarried sister, Jane Huston, probably helped him manage his family while he was without a wife, but all the changes taking place may have made life difficult for the family. Minerva evidently lived at home until she married Wes Runyan.

The Runyans and some of their kin moved to Columbia County, Arkansas while the children were small. There were small children but some older ones to help with their care when the family moved on to Clark County. These moves, probably with wagons and oxen, must have been difficult for a young mother, but Minerva and her family survived and flourished in their new surroundings.

Her neck is quite large in her photo, and I wonder if she had a goiter. She has a sweet look in her eyes, and they are not bulging as goiter sufferers’ often do.

She died 20 December 1892, and is buried beside her husband at Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery near Amity in rural Clark County, Arkansas.

Siblings, surname Huston
- [Minerva]
  - Newton B[orum] or Kennebec or Renebee married Mrs. Mary Elizabeth Thurman
  - John Edmund, married first Helena Caruthers, married second Mrs. Gertrude Lockhart; issue
  - Permelia, never married

Half siblings, surname Huston, from her father’s marriage to Nancy Finley
- Thomas Finley, married Pernina Anne Beverly; issue
- Mary E., married Mr. Gunter; no issue

See Illustration Numbers 22 and 23.

Parents are Numbers 46 and 47.

24 – Johann Christoph NIEMANN was born 22 December 1793 to Frans Henrich Niemann né Frohne and his second wife, Anna Katrina née Keiser zu Dingerdissen at Währentrup, Lippe Detmold, Germany. He was baptized before the end of the year, but the date in December cannot be read on the church record. (Actually, his birth date cannot be read, either; but both his marriage and death records, found in the Oerlinghausen churchbooks, contain his birth date.) One sponsor (Godparent) is listed, Keiser zu Dingerdissen, likely the infant’s grandfather. He was called Christoph.

Due to the Lippisch custom of name changes on the part of men who married established farms—and the man did marry a farm and got a bride along with it—Christoph was the first of our ancestors born with the Niemann surname. Since it was my own maiden name, I was shocked when I found that the name came into the
bloodline at the relatively recent date of 1793.

On 11 November 1831, Christoph married his first cousin Friederike Henriette Florentine Liükìng; their mothers were sisters. The marriage is recorded at Oerlinghausen, both home villages belonging to that parish. Christoph’s occupation is given on the marriage document as a big half-farmer. Pieter Cramwinkel, who translated Christoph’s father’s marriage contract, writes,

“I don’t know whether “half-farmer” is the proper English expression for the German Halbmeier. This means a man who owns a little bit of land for himself and rents only the other part from the Count. Meier also tells us that he was breeding cattle.”

Pieter’s expertise in the German and English languages has been very helpful. He lives in France, however, and is not acquainted with the unique history and customs of Lippe.

**Excursus addressing Halbmeier and the Lippe Meier laws:**

Late in 2005, a query to the Internet mailing list Lippe Forum brought information from historian Wolfgang Bechtel, who explained the terminology used in Lippe for classifying its citizens. Halbmeier was a farmer who was responsible for sixteen to twenty-four hectares of land. Perhaps a big half-farmer’s land comprised closer to twenty-four than sixteen hectares.

Stefan Baumeier, G. Ulrich Großmann and Wolf-Dieter Könenkamp compiled a Guide to the Westphalian Open Air Museum in Detmold, a museum of rural history and culture. The Guide was published by order of the Landschaftsverband Westfalen-Lippe (Regional Federation of Westphalia Lippe), and I have the English version. While in some regions there may have been a provision in the contract for breeding cattle, this was not so in Lippe. The Guide explains the Meier Laws as they apply to Lippe better than I could begin to do it:

“Until well into the 19th century most country dwellers in the German Reich did not own the land they farmed. It belonged to the nobility or to the Church and was leased to the peasants in return for taxes and services, which were often very oppressive. One of the legal provisions was the so called ‘Meier-Law’ (Leasehold form common in Northern Germany). Such leasing arrangements had legal status, and although there were of course regional variations, farms were always handed on from father to son. In Lippe, farmers who entered into such a contract were known as ‘Meier’ and they constituted the most important section of the farming community.”

A number of our ancestors added the ‘meier’ designation to their names, while many others used ‘Meyer’ with a place name, e.g. ‘Meyer zu Sieker’.

***

Oerlinghausen marriage contract, LDS Film Number 1054237, page 675, translated by Dr. Don Watson:

---

91 This wonderful Guide was a gift from Uta Härtling, a descendant of Anna Maria Bering or Bärning, (Ancestor Number 97 in this book) and her first husband, Christian Wilhelm Frohne.

92 Don H. Watson, Ph.D. Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. “A big heart for Germany.”
“Done at Oerlinghausen the 21st October 1831

"Johann Christoph Niemann, the surviving legitimate son of the Half-Farmer Franz Heinrich Niemann, Nr. 3 farm at Wahrentrup, 37 years of age, [since he was] separated from the military on 10 April 1825, and is no longer subject thereto, desires to marry Hanna Friederike Lüking of the Lüking Colony [farm] Nr. 1 at Ubbedissen, the bride a ... legitimate daughter.

"The bride pledges, after agreement by her father therewith, [based upon a child’s part?] of the parental Colony, 1200 Reichtahler in cash, and a bridecart. The money [is to be paid by] Easter of this year, and the bridecart soon thereafter. The groom is the heir of and assumes, with his bride, the parental Colony. Since the mother of the groom is not in the office today, and is shown to be disabled since yesterday due to a fall wherein she broke her foot, the transfer of the lease is postponed until the bridegroom and the mother have opportunity to appear.

"Done in the presence of the bridegroom and the father of the bride."

The “signatures” that follow were apparently written by a court official, and do not appear, to me at least, to be actually those of the parties involved.

Excursus: Naturally, when I started to research my family, I started with my maiden name. I knew from conversations with my dad that Währtrup had belonged to the parish of Oerlinghausen, and I guess I caught on when Ben and I first visited Germany in 1959 that the Niemanns living in Wahrentrup were by that time in the Helpup parish. Later I was to discover that the Helpup parish was established about 1906.

It turns out that Oerlinghausen is one of the more difficult parishes in Germany to research, because the parish boundary straddled the international border between Lippe-Detmold and the Prussian Province of Westfalen; at some times the pastor kept two sets of church records, one for Lippe citizens and one for Prussians. When I began my research, I was using the resources of the LDS the Family History Library in Salt Lake City (and continue to do so where films are available). The Family History Library Catalog was not computerized at that time; promulgating changes and corrections took a long time. When the Oerlinghausen church records were catalogued, whoever did the cataloging did not realize that some records with the same dates were not duplicates and were in fact created to cover two different countries. My own ignorance about the geography of the region played into the mix, and I had a hard time, at first, figuring out just what I was looking at. Eventually I did figure out the scheme of things and got my research done. The Family History Library Catalog is now computerized and online and being constantly updated, and someone has reworked the catalog entries to reflect the Lippisch and Prussian division of Oerlinghausen parish.

In addition to this, while I had studied Old German Script and felt confident before the film arrived (the first one was the Johann Christoph Niemann-Friederike Lüking marriage

---

93 The woman with the broken foot is the step-mother of the bridegroom, Anna Elisabeth Niemann née Reue, who married Franz Niemann on 28 December 1801.
record—the one in the churchbook\(^94\) the pastor threw me a curve: Part of the time he wrote in Old German Script and part of the time in Latin letters—and sometimes he wrote a Latin capital and the remainder of the word in Old German Script. An experienced German researcher at the Family History Center set me straight, and I was able to go on from there.

* * *

While Christoph and Friederike Niemann had charge of the Niemann Hof in Wahrentrup, they built a structure that was called ‘the house in the woods’; it was taken down after it had deteriorated so as to be beyond repair, but the carving above the door was saved—it is in poor condition—and is in use in the Niemann home in Wahrentrup as a decoration below an ornamental shelf. I don’t mean to say that the couple personally built the house in the woods—Germans hire a trained craftsman for whatever job needs doing.

Christoph died on 20 May 1878, of the debility of old age; he was buried at Oerlinghausen on 23 May 1878.

Siblings, surname Niemann

[\textit{Johann Christoph “Christoph”}]

Florentine Wilhelmine, married Johann Friedrich Niebuhr; issue\(^95\)

Johann Bernhard Niemann, married Friederike Wilhelmine Kerchof; issue\(^96\)

Half-sibling, surname Niemann, from his father’s marriage to Anna Katharine Elisabeth Reue

\(^94\) “Churchbook” is not technically an English word. It is a literal translation of the German Kirchenbuch, and is used throughout this work without further explanation.

\(^95\) Fr. Niebuhr was the grandmother of at least two immigrants to America: Louis Niebur (he dropped the ‘h’), who married Anna Schroeder and settled at Seward, Nebraska and has descendants in Nebraska, California and elsewhere; and the Rev. Gustav Niebuhr, who married Lydia Hosto and had five children, among them the noted theologians the Rev. Reinhold Niebuhr and the Rev. H. Richard Niebuhr.

\(^96\) Bernhard Niemann and his wife had a daughter Hanne Florentine and a son Friedrich Wilhelm August, both baptized in Stapelage parish, Lippe-Detmold; Bernhard died when the son was about 6 weeks old. His widow remarried to an Austrian Army surgeon, Dr. Antonin Wolf, went to Austria, and converted to Catholicism—I can just imagine that when she announced her plans to marry a Catholic, Christoph let her know in no uncertain terms that if she did so, her children would be staying with him. It would be easy for him to justify this threat, because he and his wife had both vowed, at the children’s baptisms, that they would be reared according to the tenets of the Evangelisch Church. Christoph Niemann in Wahrentrup took charge of the children (he and his wife were each a Godparent to one of them), both of whom were confirmed in Oerlinghausen; I find no trace of Friedrich Wilhelm August Niemann after his confirmation. A Barta family in Austria believes that Dr. Wolf adopted his wife’s daughter Hanne Niemann before her marriage to Johann Barta in 1852; there certainly was a Fr. Barta who purported to be daughter of Fr. Wolf née Kerchof, widow Niemann. However, I found the death of Hanne Florentine Niemann in the Oerlinghausen church records, birth date matching that of Bernhard’s daughter in Stapelage parish. Some possibilities come to mind: 1. The Wolves became acquainted with a young woman who needed a home, and after Fr. Wolf was notified of her daughter’s death, they adopted the young woman and endowed her with the birth date, place and parents of the dead Hanne; or 2. The pastor in Oerlinghausen let his churchbook entries fall behind, and by the time he wrote them in, he forgot which of Bernhard Niemann’s children had died, and wrote in the daughter’s name instead of the son’s; or 3. The pastor in Oerlinghausen threatened a strong-willed Hanne that if she went to her mother and step-father Austria and became a Catholic, he would write her down dead in the Oerlinghausen churchbooks, and when she went anyway, he did so. The second theory would take care of the ‘lost’ Friedrich Wilhelm August, the only one of the Niemann name and bloodline that I haven’t been able to account for.
Hanna Friederike, married Conrad Philip Plöger; issue

See Illustration Number 24.

Parents are Numbers 48 and 49.

25 – Friederike Henriette Florentine LÜKING was born to Johann Christoph Lüking and his wife Hanna Catrina Elisabeth Keiser zu Dingerdissen at Ubbedissen, Westfalen, Preußen, on 24 January 1810. Her baptism date is so obscured in the tight binding of the churchbook that it cannot be read, but one can assume that she was baptized very soon after her birth. Her Godmothers were Catrina Dingerdissen and Laura Milsen; the latter is a feminine form of the surname Milse, which can be found in the Lüking ancestry. The family lived at Ubbedissen Number 1, the largest farm in the village. When her son Gottlieb Niemann applied for a marriage license in Seward County, Nebraska in 1891, he gave his mother’s name as Friderica; the spelling got Americanized, but one can assume from this that her ‘call name’ was Friederika.

It was exciting for me to find her maiden name in my own back yard, so to say, because she was never in America.

She married her first cousin, Johann Christoph Niemann, sixteen years her senior, on 11 November 1831, and bore him eight children; the couple reared his brother Bernhard’s two children as well. The marriage, like most at that time and place, was almost certainly arranged.

In the photo reproduced as Illustration 25, she is wearing a head covering, which at first glance may appear to be an elaborate hairdo. It was customary for a married woman to cover her hair.

Widowed in 1878, she remained at the Niemann farm where her eldest son, Christoph, was in charge. I believe she managed the household as long as she was able, and it was only after her death that her unmarried son let things run down so that Gottlieb and Jette found conditions chaotic, with chickens roosting in the kitchen. She died of the debility of old age during her youngest son Gottlieb’s sojourn in Nebraska, on 21 April 1894. She was buried at Oerlinghausen on 25 April 1894.

Siblings, surname Lüking (marriages and issue not researched)
Hanna Friederika Amalia
Johann Christoph
Johannes Hermann
Bernd Heinrich
Anne Marie Wilhelmine
Henriette Friederike
Wilhelmine Florentine A.
[Friederike Henriette Florentine “Friederike”]

See Illustration Number 25.
Parents are Numbers 50 and 51.

26 – Simon Heinrich Konrad LODEWIG, called GROLM, was born to Friedrich Simon Lodewig (otherwise, Lodwig, Loddwig etc.) and his first wife, Wilhelmine Catherine née Grolm, on 27 July 1834, at Langenholzhausen. Lippe-Detmold. I believe that the churchbook entry tells the date of his baptism, but I simply cannot read it. His Godfather was Friedrich Conrad Grolm né Sandmeyer, his mother’s step-father. His ‘call name’ was Heinrich.

He was confirmed on 24 April 1848 in Varenholz parish, listed among confirmands at the Stemmen school. Confirmation instruction had begun on 26 May 1847. The class first partook of Holy Communion on 30 April.

From this it is evident that he had already gone to Stemmen before he was confirmed to help with the work at his mother’s ancestral farm there.

On 18 April 1854, the pastor at Langenholzhausen began to take a census of the community. At its beginning he was very thorough, naming each person in the household; we are fortunate that the Lodewig family was one of the earlier ones enumerated, because the pastor wrote less and less about each family as he progressed. Heinrich was not present in the Lodewig household on that date, which further indicates that he had already moved to Stemmen in Varenholz parish, to take charge of the Grolm farmstead his mother inherited there; she was the eldest daughter and her brothers had all died young. He likely assumed the Grolm surname when he actually took charge of the farm operation.

On 6 December 1861, dwelling at Number 22 in Stemmen and titled ‘Colon’, (translates ‘settler’ or ‘colonist’; but it means he had charge of a farm) Heinrich married Johanna Henriette Luise Stullwold. The couple had five children. They lived at Number 22, descendants continuing to live there at times until the house burned beyond repair during the summer of 1994.

The people of Stemmen and Langenholzhausen evidently were seriously afflicted with wanderlust, because many emigrated, among them two Grolm daughters, Lina and Jette, who came to Nebraska. Heinrich’s sister, Wilhelmine Friederike Lodewig, had come to America in her youth. Germany was overpopulated, the main reason that emigration was encouraged. Johanna (Stullwold) Grolm also had three uncles and an aunt who had come to Nebraska and some Freitag cousins who went to Illinois; one of them came to Nebraska later.

Little is known about the Grolm family’s life, other than the fact that Jette said she had to work very hard. One letter written by Heinrich to his daughter Lina and her husband August Schmidt in Elm Creek, Nebraska in 1894 exists; it gives some details about life on the Grolm farm. The original is owned (2003) by his Great-great-granddaughter, Peggy Haskell née Streiff. It was one of a cache of letters Peggy found after the bulk had been translated, and I
prevailed upon English-speaking descendants in Germany to translate them, distributing
them among descendants of the writers. Heinrich’s Great-granddaughter, Ursula Heinemann
née Brandsmeier, translated this one; the bracketed annotations are mine.

“Stemmen, 3 February 1894

“Dear brother-in-law [he means son-in-law] and daughter!

“At the end of November we have received your dear letter. We regret, you will not visit us. Every
day we wait for you, but you didn’t come. I had hung with wall paper a sitting-room and a bedroom,
where you could dwell.

“Also we had killed a nice, fat cow. Because we are only a few persons, we have sold them. Already
in November we must kill a pig which had a defect in the legs. It had a weight of 478 pounds. It was a
male 15 months old. In some time we will kill two pigs. So we have enough to eat. Also with our
cows it is good. The autumn was good here. Our cows could graze until the 28th of December. We
can utilize all the turnips. But we have not so much of hay and summer grain, because it was too dry
too long. But rye and wheat are better. So we can give our beasts good feed. The price is not high.
One hundredweight of rye costs 6 Mark 56 Pfennig, wheat 7.40 M, oats 10 M. That I have written in
my last letter. Seed of cabbage we cannot have.

“How do you do, Anna? [Schmidts’ daughter, about 10 years old—later married Henry Streiff] We
hope, she will visit us. Now we have the little Carl Ottemeier [son of Heinrich’s daughter Auguste]
with us. But soon he must go home. We [should] like to have Anna here, when he is at home again.

“Now I will finish my letter. Many greetings from the parents and the parents-in-law and from
Heinrich [Jr., writer’s son].

“[signed] H. Grolm”

I wonder if Heinrich realized that he was almost reciting the parable of the prodigal son,
literally killing the fatted calf. I’m fairly sure that daughter Lina had not ever “wasted her
substance in riotous living”. The Schmidts didn’t make their visit as planned, but they did
eventually make a visit to Germany during Anna’s childhood.

Daughter Jette, who had married Gottlieb Niemann in Nebraska, went to visit with her
family in Stemmen during the summer of 1900; it was while the Niemanns were there that
Gottlieb’s Uncle Christoph sent his proposal to make Gottlieb his heir if he would remain in
Germany. Heinrich and Johanna must have been delighted to have this daughter, son-in-law
and grandchildren remain in Germany.

On one of the visits Ben and I made to Germany, my Aunt Edith Niemann rode with us from
Währentrup to visit the kinfolks in Stemmen. There is a steep hill along the route between
Lemgo and Langenholzhausen, and Edith pointed out that this was a difficult trip with horse
and wagon, a trip that Jette perhaps made a number of times with her young family.

After having been widowed in 1903, Heinrich died at Stemmen on 1 September 1909 of
gastric trouble. His funeral and burial took place on 5 September.
Siblings, surname Lodewig
[Simon Heinrich Konrad]
Johann Wilhelm Heinrich, married first Dorothe Karoline Amalia Liese; issue; married second her sister Charlotte Juliane Liese; issue
Friederike Wilhelmine, married Konrad Friedrich Dittes; issue in Minnesota and elsewhere
Friederike Caroline, died age 9
Sophie Henriette, married Simon Friedrich Boke; researched but no issue found

Halfsiblings, surname Lodewig, from his father’s marriage to Charlotte Sophie Dankwerth
Unnamed female twin, died the same day as her birth
Simon Heinrich Konrad, twin to above, died age one year
Marie Luise Charlotte, died age one year
Marie Luise Charlotte, married Herr Kixmuller or Kuxmuller in Winterberg; issue

Parents are Numbers 52 and 53.

See Illustration Numbers 26 and Number 26 and 27.

27 – Johanne Henriette Luise SÜLLWOLD, born on 9 January 1840 at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold, was ninth of the fourteen children born to Friedrich Arnold Christian Sullwold and his wife Conradine Florentine née Freitag. She was baptized by the pastor at Varenholz, to which parish Stemmen belongs, on 26 January. Her sponsors were Sophia Freitag of Rentrup and Johanna Depping of Holzhausen.

She was confirmed in 1854.

On 6 December 1861, Johanne married Simon Heinrich Konrad Grolm né Lodewig, whose family lived in nearby Langenholzhausen, but who had come to Stemmen as a young man to take charge of the Grolm Hof, his mother’s inheritance. The Grolm home was diagonally across the street from the Sullwold Hof, where Johanne grew up. Both farms have come into possession of Grolm descendants (2001).

Five children were born to the Grolms, including twins Henrietta “Jette” and Wilhelm. Wilhelm died when he was eleven-and-a-half years old, which must have brought great sorrow to the family. I cannot imagine how traumatic the death of her twin would have been for Jette. His death left the Grolms only one son who would carry on the name.

Miscellaneous Information and Lore: Johanne’s daughter Lina, who came to America as a young woman and married August Schmidt in Nebraska, had a birthday book in which her mother’s birthday was listed. Those of us working on our ancestry knew that Lina’s mother was our ancestor, and we knew when she was born, but we were a long time finding out her name. August and Lina Schmidt had a daughter Anna who married Henry Streiff. Their son John August Streiff is the progenitor of our Streiff cousins. It must have been a happy day for Lina’s parents in Stemmen when the Schmidts came from Nebraska to pay a visit sometime in the late 1890s.
We always knew that the Suellwolds in Seward County were related to us, but we didn’t know how the relationship worked. Lina’s marriage license in Seward County didn’t give the bride’s parents’ names, although there was a blank for them. Her own name looks to me like “Groller”, but maybe it’s only written with 2 ‘l’s: Grollm; that is what the indexer saw.

Another daughter, Jette, also came to Nebraska and married Gottlieb Niemann in 1891. The Niemanns visited Germany in 1900 and were persuaded to remain there; Jette’s parents were surely happy to have them nearby, although Jette herself was sorry that they didn’t return to Nebraska as planned.

Jette was also a Seward County bride; her mother’s maiden name is Lena Siebold on the marriage license. None of Johanne’s names seems to me like it would be nicknamed ‘Lena’.

When I was hot on the trail of the Grolm and Stullwold ancestry, having found the marriage of daughter Auguste to Carl Ottemeier on the International Genealogical Index, additional information came from cousin Corliss Stullwold in Elm Creek. She had hired a genealogist in Germany, and he provided a great deal of family information.

Lina Schmidt had a composite photo made of her parents; I can figure out what she did by the markings on the backs of the original photos. In the originals Johanna is a young woman, pictured with two of her sisters; Heinrich Grolm, however, is a mature man, seated at a table. I also have a photo of Johanna, contemporaneous with that of Heinrich, seated at the same table, in which she definitely looks her age. The photographer did a good job creating the composite, and Peggy Haskell née Streiff owns the original composite (2003). She generously let me make as many copies of it as I wanted. Sometimes when I look in the mirror, I see my Great-grandfather Heinrich Grolm.

Peggy has lent her encouragement and help to the research for this book, and was a rock for me in my grief after Ben died in 2002. There aren’t enough words to express my thanks adequately, both for her encouragement and support during my family research and for the consolation and help and companionship she lent as I recovered from my bereavement.

***

Widowed in 1901, Johanna died of a liver disorder on 22 December 1903 at Stemmen. Her funeral and burial were on 26 December.

siblings, surname Stullwold

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Details</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hermann Heinrich</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friedrich August, never married</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinrich Rudolf (twin), never married</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conrad Adolph (twin), also known as Adolph Gustav; married Henriette Brandt; lived in Nebraska; issue</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stillborn daughter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

97 The Suellwold, Ricnaw, Eickmeyer and Dohrmann relatives are descended from this couple.
Hermann Friedrich (twin), died age about 8 months
Wilhelm August (twin), married Wilhelmina Klötzke in Nebraska; issue
Conradine Luise Friederike Karoline, married a Herr Hagemeier or Hagemann, lived at Krankenhagen in Schaumburg-Lippe; issue
[Joanne Henriette Luise]
Amalie Wilhelmine Florentine “Minnie” (twin), married Georg Appenzeller in Nebraska; no issue
Marie Louise Auguste (twin), married Heinrich Conrad Bökemeier
Julie Amalie, married Heinrich Gustav Brinkbock; issue
Moritz Eduard; issue
Gustav Karl, married Rosa Hesley (Hösli) in Nebraska; issue

See Illustration Numbers 27 and Numbers 26 and 27.

Parents are Numbers 54 and 55.

28 – Ernst Heinrich Wilhelm GUMBEL was born at Niedermöllerich, Hessen, Germany on 2 January 1834 to Carl Gumbel and his wife Sabine, née Ritter. The family home there was destroyed in the chaos of World War II, but the barn belonging to the Gumbel family still stands (2000). There is an inscription over its door that contains the name ‘Gumbel’. The family lived on Strandweg, very near the River Eder. Perhaps there is something in their heritage that accounts for the fact that many of the Gumbel men I’ve known were avid fishermen.

Excursus: Before Ben and I went to Germany in 1993, I wrote to newspapers serving the regions whence my ancestors had emigrated, hoping that my letter would be published and would be answered by living relatives, descendants of siblings left behind.

The editor of the newspaper in Fritzlar published my letter, which was answered by three people: Mrs. Elisabeth Korell of Borken in Hessen, who spelled out her relationship in her first letter; Mrs. Jutta Wicke who actually lives in Niedermollrich, who is interested in local history and whose husband, Herbert, has Gumbel ancestors; and Mrs. Lieselotte “Lilo” Habenicht, a genealogist and researcher whose husband, Kurt Habenicht has Gumbel ancestors and who is herself connected on the Ritter line.

Lilo supplied the bulk of the Niedermöllerich information as the Gumbel line backs up to the

98 The Peterson relatives are descended from this couple. An article written by Eda Peterson in Seward County Nebraska 1982 published by the Seward County Historical Society states that Wilhelmine’s maiden name was Klötcke. I found the name spelled ‘Klötcke’ twice in the churchbook of Friedens Church in Seward.
99 Unmarried, she had a child with her future husband’s brother Friedrich Brinkbock, who secretly emigrated to America after he learned of her pregnancy. The child died young.
100 Unmarried, he had twin sons with Conradine Keiser; baptism was at St. Johann in Lemgo, Lippe-Detmold. Both twins died young. Later marriage and issue? He was the right age to have served in the Franco-Prussian War.
101 These are the Buffalo County, Nebraska relatives; they use the Sullwold spelling.
Fourteenth Generation in this book, including everything earlier than the Eighth Generation, and I express my sincere thanks to her. Words cannot convey the surprise and gratitude I felt when she presented me with the computerized genealogy of my family tree in 1993.

Jutta looked at and photocopied some Niedermöllrich church records, providing documentation.

Ben and I (and I alone in 2005) visited all these people in their homes. We were also privileged to entertain Lilo and her son Thomas’ wife Silke (Baier) Habenicht, Herbert and Jutta Wicke, and Elisabeth Korell’s son Walter and his wife Renate, in our home in Milford. The elder Korell Couple, Wilhelm and Elisabeth, both died in 1998.

* * *

Early information about the Niedermöllrich Gumbel family is included here, because Ernst is the last of our line to have lived there. Lilo Habenicht found the following\textsuperscript{102}, with translation below:

„Die Familien Gumbel sind ein altes Fritzlarer Geschlecht. Als Protestanten waren sie in Fritzlar der Verfolgung ausgesetzt und mussten sehr darunter leiden, sie zogen hinaus auf ihre Güter nach Niedermöllrich und blieben dort.

„Gumbel, Werner am 20.12.1535 erwähnt mit Niedermöllricher Abgaben (Steuern) doch vermutlich Bürger zu Fritzlar.

„Verzeichnis der dienstbaren Güter in Amt Felsberg, aus Niedermöllrich zinsen (Steuern) im Jahre 1584:

„Gumbel, Cunze zinst ½ Huebe den Meisebuigen
Gumbel, Henn zinst ½ Huebe dem Stift zu Fritzlar”

Translation to English by Veronika Timpe:

“The Gumbel families are an old house/lineage in Fritzlar. As Protestants they were persecuted in Fritzlar and suffered from this persecution so they moved to their estates in Niedermöllrich and stayed there.”

“Gumbel, Werner is mentioned on 20 December 1535 with taxes, in the tax index of Niedermöllrich but presumably a citizen of Fritzlar.

“Register of the estates that had to pay taxes (office of Felsberg= Amt Felsberg) to Niedermöllrich in the year 1584:

“Gumbel, Cunze has to pay ½ Huebe to Meisebuigen
Gumbel, Henn has to pay ½ Huebe to the Diocese of Fritzlar”

\textsuperscript{102} This information negates my long-held theory that the Gumbels were Huguenots, perhaps named ‘Combelle’, who fled from France when the Edict of Nantes was revoked in 1685.
I find the definition for ‘Huebe’ in an 1848 dictionary “a hide of land”. There is an identical
definition for ‘Huefe’. In a modern dictionary, with the same English definition it is ‘Hufe’. From
the American Heritage dictionary: “Hide. An old English measure of land, usually the
amount held adequate for one free family and its dependents.”

My sense of these definitions is that the family had more than enough land to support itself, and its
assessed taxes amounted to what ½ Hide of land produced.

***

The people of Niedermöllrich, many of whom revere history, are very proud of the restored
old school building there; the structure is no longer in use as a school. It was in use during
Ernst’s childhood and he and his siblings received their education there.

His mother died when he was thirteen years old, and his father married again the next year.
Two years later, in 1850, the family came to America, settling in Mason County, Illinois.
While I haven’t researched the educational system in Mason County, I don’t believe that
Ernst’s education continued after they arrived in Illinois. His descendants wrote his names in
English and transposed them a bit: Ernest William Henry Gumbel.

On 5 March 1857, in Mason County, Illinois, Ernst was granted a license to marry his
second cousin Angelica Nuhn—their grandmothers were Schafer sisters. The certificate
gives her name as Anna C. Nuhn. The Rev. George Ramige married them on 18 March 1857
at Pekin in Tazewell County, Illinois. The marriage certificate is on file in Mason County,
having been returned on 23 March 1857.

Ernst was employed by the T. P. & W. Railroad, as a carpenter. I have seen the railroad’s
official name given as ‘Topeka, Peoria and Western’, as well as ‘Topeka, Peoria and
Warsaw’, and I’m not sure which is correct officially. The railroad takes its name from
Topeka, Illinois, not the Kansas capital. At some time during his employment he received a
metal stamping device which was to be used to identify his tools. When placed on the
wooden handle of a carpentry tool and given a sound whack with a hammer, it leaves an
indentation that reads “E GUMBEL”, a little smaller than I was able to reproduce here. I have
the little stamp (2006).

Excursus: Evidently Ernst’s son George inherited the stamp, and this lore about its
disposition after his death came to me: two of George’s sons, Lester “Slim” and Fred, both
wanted it. Lester saw a way to alter it and use it for himself by removing the top two
horizontal elements of the ‘E’, making the ‘E’ into an ‘L’. Fred saw the possibility of
removing the lower horizontal element of the ‘E’, achieving his own initial, an ‘F’. Uncle
Slim evidently prevailed and inherited it, although he never did alter it. After his death, my
mother arranged to buy his tools from his widow so that they, and the toolbox he had
inherited from his father, would stay in the family, accounting for the fact that the stamp is
now in my possession.

***
The Ernst Gumbel family was living at Gilman or Gilman Prairie, Illinois when their third child, Frank, was born in 1862, but had moved to Peoria by the time son George was born in 1864. According to the 1865 city directory, Ernst Gumbel resided on Sixth Street, south side, first house east of Shipman Street. The family story relates that they saw the move in 1868 to Warsaw (the date stated in Ernst’s obituary) as an opportunity on the horizon for their sons to find employment when they grew old enough, because a bridge over the Mississippi River was going to be built near there.

A note in my mother’s handwriting states “Grandpa Earnest [sic] Gumbel was of large stature”. In his photo, he has a kind look in his eyes (my opinion), but he was said by some of his descendants to have been something of a tyrant at least where his adult sons were concerned, accounting for the fact that they didn’t remain in Warsaw. Ernst was no longer living when son George departed for Nebraska, however.

Nothing is known, at least by me, about Ernst’s last illness, but I found this in the Seward, Nebraska Independent-Democrat of Thursday, 15 March 1900, indicating that his death was not extremely sudden:

“A. [Adam] Gumbel returned Monday from Warsaw, Ill. where he had been called to the death bed of his father.”

I do not have the actual newspaper clipping containing Ernst’s obituary. The following is reproduced from a typed transcription, but I don’t know its source. Warsaw newspapers have not survived. I suspect that this was transcribed from a clipping in the possession of a family member, probably Florence Hovey whose mother was Angelica (Nuhn) Gumbel’s sister.

“DIED – At his home in this city Wednesday, March 7, 1900, at 9 o’clock p.m., Ernst William Henry Gumbel; aged 66 years, 2 months and 5 days.

“The deceased was born in Niedermoellrich, Kurhessen, Germany, January 2, 1834 and came to America with his parents in 1850, and located in Forest City, Ill. He was married to Angelica Nuhn March 16, 1857, moved to Peoria in 1864, thence to Warsaw April 16, 1868, and has since made this city his home. He was employed in the T. P. & W. shops until their removal elsewhere. To Mr. and Mrs. Gumbel ten children were born, one of whom, a daughter, died in infancy. The surviving children are: Charles, of Mulberry Grove, Ill.; Frank C. and Adam, of Bee, Nebr.; William, of Keokuk; George, Fred, Annie, Lillie and Katie of Warsaw.

“Mr. Gumbel was a devout member of the German M. E. church and was a zealous Odd Fellow, being a member of Hancock Lodge No. 71 of this city. He was a man of the strictest integrity, honorable in all his relations, and kindly in his intercourse with his fellow-man. He was modest and unassuming but nevertheless had a wide acquaintanceship in the community and was highly esteemed.

“The funeral will occur from the residence Sunday afternoon at 2 o’clock and from the German M. E. church at 2:30, and will be under the direction of Hancock Lodge No. 71, I. O. O. F.”

Minor errors can be found in his obituary. The marriage date should be 18 March; “Niedernoellrich” should be ‘Niedermoellrich; he came to America with his father and
stepmother, his mother having died in Germany.

I have checked the indexes of estate papers for Hancock County, and his name is not found there; presumably there was not enough estate to require settlement.

He is buried at Oakland Cemetery at Warsaw.

Siblings, surname Gumbel

Elisabeth, married first Henry Haas, issue; married second Rev. George A. Himmel, issue
[Ernst]
Johannes (John) married Leah Zaneis; issue
Wilhelm, married Mary Redinger or Reidinger; no issue
Adam, married first Christina Stein, issue; married second Matilda Bruning, issue
Catharina Elisabeth
Anna Elisabeth "Lizzie" married John Redinger or Reidinger; issue
Heinrich, died at birth

Half siblings, surname Gumbel, from his father’s marriage to Catharine Dreuscher
Maria, on emigration list, no further information
Margrethe, died young
Hannah (Anne E. per the 1850 census?)
Unknown

See Illustrations Number 28 and Illustrations Number 28 and 29.

Parents are Numbers 56 and 57.

29 – Angelica NUHN was born 27 January 1834 in Niederaula, Hessen, Germany. The region is sometimes called Kurhessen. She came with her mother, brother and sisters to Mason County, Illinois in 1856. The family can be found on the passenger list of the Ship Weiland which arrived in New York 12 May 1856, having sailed from Bremen. It seems likely that the family traveled by riverboat to Bremen, sailing down the nearby Fulda River to its confluence with the Werra near Kassel. After the Werra and the Fulda flow together, the river takes the name Weser, and it flows into the North Sea at Bremen’s port of Bremerhaven. One brother, Conrad Nuhn, was already in America in 1850, living with the Johannes Pfeil family and presumably having come to America with them. Mrs. Pfeil was his mother’s sister.

Excursus: It has been said that American football is a game of inches; genealogy, on the other hand, is a game of coincidences. I was at the Family History Center in Lincoln on 26 September 2000 and was visiting with patrons and staff about German research. A volunteer

103 Her stone in Zion Cemetery near Bishop in Mason County Illinois is engraved “Dau of C. & S. Gumbel”, but her name is not entirely legible and could be Marietta or Maryeda. She was born after the family immigrated, and “S.” (Sabine) had died in Germany so she was the daughter of Carl and Catharine. Problem.

104 Carl and Catharine are said to have had four children, none of whom survived to reach adulthood. Hannah is found on the 1860 census, age 13. Nothing is known about the fourth child.
new to the staff, Sue Ann Glabe, asked me about places in Germany from whence my ancestors had emigrated. I started to mention places, and when I said “Niederaula”, she commented that her husband, Larry Glabe’s people had come from there also. This led to a rather excited discussion, and Sue Ann mentioned that she had a book from Niederaula in which many citizens of Niederaula were mentioned. The Glabe surname was ‘Glebe’ in Niederaula, sometimes written ‘Klebe’ or ‘Clebe’. Information gleaned (with some difficulty, because it is entirely in German) from the book has been incorporated into my vignettes about several of Angelica Nuhn’s ancestors, and these facts have made my work considerably more interesting, at least to me. I soon discovered that Larry’s ancestor, Jacob Glebe, had, along with my ancestor Ernst Gumbel, signed the same document, found in Margarette Nuhn’s application for mother’s pension after her son Conrad was killed in the Civil War, mentioning an “intimate acquaintance with said Margarette Nuhn and her family of more than fifteen years”, part of which time would of course have been in Germany.

So many things had to fall into place for this coincidence to occur, that I have to believe that it was ‘supposed to be’.

Later, at the same place, I met Audrey Nitz, whose children’s ancestors are also from Niederaula. Unbelievable!

***

His mother’s application for Civil War pension makes it seem certain that Conrad, who worked as a farmer, contributed to the family’s support. The daughters would have been expected to do something to help the family survive, and Angelica no doubt engaged in whatever work would have been available to a young woman, until her marriage. Indeed, the pension application mentions that one of Margarethe’s daughters (I take this to mean Elisabeth) works as a ‘servant girl’.

Angelica married Ernst W. H. Gumbel on 18 March 1857. The Illinois civil marriage record—the couple obtained the license in Mason County but were married at Pekin in Tazewell County—gives Angelica’s name as “Anna C. Nuhn”, and I suspect that the clerk got confused, especially if he asked her to spell her name, which she may have done in German: ah-n-gay-ay-l-ee-kah (or maybe tsay) -ah. Her name is Angelika in the Niederaula church records, but spelled with ‘c’ instead of ‘k’ in this country. Inasmuch as she is listed on the ship list as ‘Gela’, that was probably the name she was called; to an English-speaker’s ear it would have sounded like ‘Gayla’.

Florence Hovey, whose grandmother Elisabeth Nuhn Heinhorst was Angelica’s sister, believed that after Angelica and Ernst Gumbel were married, they made a home for the entire Nuhn family. This is borne out to some degree by the fact that Ernst and Angelica’s

---

105 NIEDERAULA VON DER KAROLINGISCHEN SCHENKUNG ZUR GROSSGEMEINDE
Untersuchende Darstellung zur 1200-Jahrfeier von Traugott Classen; Herausgeber: Gemeinde Niederaula, Niederaula 1979; Gesamtherstellung: Hoehl-Druck, 6430 Bad Hersfeld [new (1993) postal code for Bad Hersfeld is 36251]
son Frank Conrad Gumbel was born at Gilman’s Prairie, Illinois in 1862; and Conrad Nuhn, Angelica’s brother, is listed in the Illinois Civil War Veterans Database as being from Gilman, Illinois (likely the same place) when he volunteered on 15 August 1862.

John Hartzell Munz, in his 1989 book *Heinhorst and Related Families*, writes that Angelica Nuhn had a child before she married Ernst Gumbel, and the child died. This information is unsourced, and I suspect it comes from family lore. No such child was found in the church records at Niederaula, and while it may be true, there is little time for such an occurrence between the family’s arrival in Illinois after departing from the ship in New York on 12 May 1856, and her marriage on 16 March 1857. This lore may have been somehow transferred to Angelica from her mother, who bore two children before her marriage.

In my mother’s handwritten notes I found this:

“Grandma Angelica Gumbel was small boned, rather heavy set, dark deep-set eyes, hair thin and gray.”

In 1899 and again in 1903 (perhaps in other years as well; these two years’ books are in my library) The Woman’s Club of Warsaw published recipe books entitled *Warsaw’s Choice Recipes*. “Mrs. E. Gumbel” contributed recipes to both, among them Orange Cake with Filling, Iced Apples, and Hickorynut Macaroons. Although she always lived among German-speaking people, she must have mastered the English language in order to make these contributions.

The *Seward [Nebraska] Independent-Democrat* printed the following on Thursday, 23 August 1900, under “County Happenings, Germantown Gleanings”:

“Mrs. E. Gumbel, mother of F. and A. Gumbel, left for her home at Warsaw, Ill., Tuesday.”

Also, the following appeared in the Warsaw newspaper106, but the date is not known. One can infer that it was after she was widowed on 7 March 1900:

**A Freak of Lightening**

“During the storm of Sunday evening there was a blinding flash of lightening and a sharp report of thunder, being neither preceded nor followed by any report indicating that an electrical storm was so near at hand. The bolt struck the chimney on Mrs. E. Gumbel’s residence, knocked plaster off the ceilings of the second and first stories, scorched a wooden partition, and split in twain the oil cloth under the stove but did not damage the stove. A musket hanging on the wall was hurled across the room, the screw on which it was hanging melted off, and the stock shattered into splinters. But the most remarkable thing was that it literally cut into shreds, as if done with a knife, a pair of shoes left beside a rocking chair and near the stove, tearing a hole through the heel where there was an iron nail. Just a few moments before Mrs. Gumbel, who was sitting in the rocking chair, took off the shoes, put on a pair of slippers and went to an adjoining room. There was no hole in the floor to indicate whether the bolt went and no fire

106 I have only the clipping, and copies of the Warsaw newspapers do not exist; I’m only assuming that this was printed in the Warsaw newspaper.
ensued."

From Florence Hovey comes the information that her Warsaw home was at 720 Clark Street. When I visited Warsaw in September, 2003, I found a vacant lot at what would have been that address. A postcard to Angelica’s son George Gumbel from his sister Kate and postmarked in 1909 reads,

"Dear George:- I am sending you a picture of the old home instead of Easter card, thought you would like it better. Kate."

In addition, in what is either my mother’s or Aunt Nellie’s writing, “Ernst Gumbel home Warsaw Ill” has been written on the postcard. The house pictured on the card does not appear to be a two-story house, and I cannot account for the first and second story reference in the lightening article.

Angelika/Angelica/Gela (Nuhn) Gumbel died on 29 October 1908 and was buried on 31 October at Oakland Cemetery at Warsaw. Her newspaper obituary follows, and although I believe it appeared in the Warsaw paper, I cannot be certain. It contains some errors; I have used brackets to note and correct those that I know about:

**Death of Mrs. Ernst Gumbel**

"DIED — Thursday, October 29, 1908 at 4 p. m. after a lingering illness; MRS. ANGELICA GUMBEL, widow of the late Ernst W. H. Gumbel; aged 74 years, 9 months and 2 days.

“Angelica Nuhn was born in Germany January 27, 1834, and came to this country with her parents [sic: father died in Germany] in 1856, locating in Forest City, Ill. In 1857 she was united in marriage to Ernst W. H. Gumbel, who preceded her in death some eight years, dying March 7, 1900, and only ten days later another heavy grief came to her in the death of her son Frederick.

“In 1865 [sic: son George was born in Peoria in 1864, and her husband’s obituary states that they moved to Peoria in 1864] Mr. and Mrs. Gumbel moved to Peoria, and thence to Warsaw in 1868, where their remaining days were spent. In 1876 they united with the German M.E. [Methodist Episcopal] church of this city, of which they remained steadfast members until the Lord called them to the church triumphant. As long as health would permit she was a regular attendant of the services, and at the time of her demise was vice president of the Ladies’ Aid society. She was domestic in her tastes, of an unassuming disposition, and charitable in her judgment of fellow creatures, never having an unkind word to say of any one. Above all she was a loving, self-sacrificing mother.

"Mrs. Gumbel was indisposed all summer, and twelve weeks ago her illness became serious. She lingered for days between life and death, suffering patiently until the end came.

"The deceased is survived by five sons and three daughters, namely: Charles, of San Jose, Ill; William, of Lincoln, Neb.; Adam J. of Bee, Neb.; George, of Seward, Neb.; Frank C., of Germantown, Neb.; Miss Anna, Mrs. Albert Ehlebe and Mrs. Edward Grimpe, of Warsaw. She is also survived by one sister, Mrs. Heinherst [sic: Heinhorst] of Topeka, Kan [sic: Illinois].

"The funeral occurred from the German M. E. church Sunday afternoon at 2 o’clock, Rev. H. Kasiski officiating. Interment in Oakland Cemetery.”
Her name is not found in the index to Hancock County estate papers.

Siblings, surname Nuhn

George Wilhelm born 4 Jan 1830 died age 10 days
Johannes born 30 November 1831 died 1843
[Angelika]
Jacob born 23 March 1836 married Sarah Ferner; issue
Conrad born 24 Aug 1838, killed at the Battle of Kennesaw Mountain; no issue
Anna Margareta born 15 February 1841, died 1860; no issue
Katharina Elisabeth born 17 May 1843, died 10 August 1843; no issue
Elisabeth born 23 September 1844 married Heinrich Friedrich Wilhelm Heinhorst; issue

See Illustration Number 29 and Illustrations Number 28 and 29.

Parents are Numbers 58 and 59.

30 – Carl August Hermann SCHILLING, called 'Herman' was born at 7 o'clock in the morning of 1 October 1834 at Osterburg, Province of Saxony, Prussia, to Johann (elsewhere Joachim) Gottfried Schilling and his wife Johanne Catherine Dorothee née Schulz. He was baptized at Osterburg on 21 November 1834. Names of his sponsors, all from Osterburg, are difficult to read. My interpretation: August Friedrich Bracht, Carl Pahn, August Niehage.

The 1900 U. S. Federal Census records show that Herman’s sister Ottielie and his brother Robert immigrated in 1847, about the time Herman would have been taking confirmation instruction. I found no trace of the family in the United States until the father’s naturalization in 1853, and do not know where, when or if Herman was confirmed. His father’s story, q.v., contains proof that he came to America in 1845, confirming family lore retold that he first came to America without his family.

I found no trace of the family in America until 1853, when the father was naturalized in St. Louis; no other family members are mentioned. Herman’s 1860 marriage record and the 1860 census contain the next documentation of the family.

Research overview: The Schilling and Krome family research is extensively explained in Appendix 10, a copy of my article (for which I hold the Copyright) entitled “Finding My German Ancestry”, that was published in Heritage Quest magazine, Issue Number 59, September-October 1995.

Herman married Conradine Krome on 1 March 1860, at St. Louis, Missouri, Henry McMeins, Justice of the Peace officiating. Her name is mistakenly written ‘Krone’ on the marriage document, which was not recorded until 18 October 1883. The couple had five known children, perhaps two others (see Conradine’s story).

On 23 August 1861, he mustered in to Company B, 2nd Regiment, U. S. Reserve Corps,
Missouri Volunteers, at St. Louis, for a term of 3 years, as a musician. He mustered out by September 1862 while the Company was at Benton Barracks, near St. Louis. This may be the date that the family moved to Quincy, Illinois.

On 7 February 1865 he mustered in as a 2nd Lieutenant, in (New) Company H, 43rd Illinois Infantry, for a period of one year, at Quincy.

He is described as having been born in Germany, age 30, a cooper by trade, with blue eyes, auburn hair and fair complexion. His height was 5 feet 5½ inches.

His military record contains the notation that he served with his regiment in Little Rock, Arkansas. The photo that is reproduced as Illustration 30 was taken there. He was discharged on 30 November 1865 at Little Rock.

**Excursus:** The story of the photograph represents a miracle, in my estimation. The Schilling home in Warsaw burned, and no family photographs were saved or at least none of the descendants of Herman and Conradine Schilling possessed them. I advertised in Everton’s Genealogical Helper, not yet seeking photos but hoping to find descendants of Herman’s brother Robert or sister Ottielie, at that time asking for some answers about their relationships and birthplaces. Long after I found answers to my questions from other sources, I received a call from Barbara Fitzpatrick, a descendant of Robert Schilling. She and her husband John, who live near Milwaukee, went to Missouri where John was involved with a Civil War reenactment. Barbara wanted to do some research in Iron County, where her Wehner ancestors had lived. While in the library, she was attempting to do Wehner research and John was looking through some old Genealogical Helper magazines and found my ad. He told Barbara that he found someone who was looking for her, she called me after they returned home, could relate a lot of Schilling lore, but didn’t know much about ancestry. She did mention the fact that she had a picture of Herman, a very exciting find for me, because I already possessed photos of all my great-grandparents except Herman. I could tell her that her Robert’s father had been born in 1798, the first ancestor she had found up to that time who had been born before 1800—an exciting fact for her.

Barbara immediately had the photo reproduced, and sent me a copy.

** ***

A document Herman signed on 18 December 1865 at Quincy states that he

“made oath in due form, that he has made all required returns and counts; that he has turned over and properly accounted for all Government and Captured property ever in his possession to the proper officers, and that he is in no way whatever indebted to the Government.”

His military career was at an end, but as a result of his military service, he was disabled by the aftereffects of malaria and perhaps amoebic dysentery. He applied for a pension due to his debilitating illness on 8 April 1882, stating that

“while on detached duty away from his Regt as Provost guard at Little Rock Ark from exposure he
contracted chronic Liver disease & Camp dysentery or diarrhoea with swelling up of his belly & limbs or dropsical condition... That he was treated in... Post Hospl at Little Rock Ark fall of 1865 only and not by Regt Surg or Asst as he was not with Regt.... That he is now totally disabled.”

He died on 22 July 1882 before any action was taken on his pension application, No. 446709. His widow continued to seek a pension, and the paperwork she was required to submit gives considerably more information than would otherwise be available about him, but I find it deplorable that she and her children were nearly destitute for a long time because of the delays incurred before her pension was granted.

She had to swear that she was married to Herman, and the document doesn't ask for her maiden name, but "married under the name ____________." Since the marriage license, which she was required to supply and which became a part of the pension file, states that her name was 'Krone', that is what is supplied in the blank. Her maiden name really was Krome. She also gave the names of her minor children, and swore that neither she nor Herman had ever been previously married. (This becomes important as we try to sort out the number and names of their children.) Many of the documents she was required to supply were executed at Keokuk, Lee County, Iowa, although the family lived at Warsaw, Hancock County, Illinois. I believe that it was easier for her to get to Keokuk, by water, than it was to travel overland to the Hancock County Seat at Carthage.

On 10 November 1883, Conradine made the following statement:

“Says in answer calls for proofs that there is no record of the Baptism of her children & that Dr. Hoffman who attended her & the Midwife who attended her during her confinement & at the birth of Said children are both dead & left no record or memorandum of the Same & she cannot get record evidence of their births or proof by the affidavit of the Physician or Midwife for the reason they are dead.”

On 25 September 1884, Conradine signed the following:

“Says as a witness in her own case under a late decision of the Hon Secretary of the Interior says her husband Herman Schilling who died 22 July 1882 was sound and in good health when he entered the United States Service 1st June 1861 at St. Louis Mo & had lived in the city of St. Louis Mo 5 years previous to his enlistment in the 3 months service Co. H. 2 Mo USRC from June 1861 to Sept 1861 and was put in Co. B. 2 Mo USRC 3 years service till discharged Viz from 23 Aug 1861 till 3 Sept 1862 by SO 98 War Dept [illegible] & 2 Lt Co H 43rd Regt III Inft 1 year Regt from 17 Feb 1865 till Nov 30 1865 and was by occupation a cooper & after discharge in 1865 he lived in Quincy III till the spring of 1866 when he moved to St. Louis Mo & remained there till from April 1866 to May 1868 where he was treated by Dr. Van Sant who is dead & no other Physician treated him & removed to Warsaw III where he remained from 1868 till his death July 22 1882 & was treated by Dr. Hoffman now dead who left no book or record of his treatment & by Dr. T. B. Hunt & Dr. Warner of Warsaw III now living. He contracted chronic dysentery or Diarrhoea & she was advised by him with resulting disease of liver & dyspsy with Malorial fever in July 1865 while at Little Rock Ark while on detached service or duty away from his Regt with swelling up of belly & legs & was not treated by any surg asst or Hospl Steward of his Regt as they were not present. There is no public record of his death & no public, private or Baptismal record of the births of her children by him & No Physician was present at the birth of Robert but a Mrs. Reed Midwife now dead & Dr. Hoffman dead was her Physician at the birth of Alvin & Oscar her other children.”
On 14 October 1885, Robert, Alvin and Oscar Schilling swear that they consider that they were born on the dates their mother has stated: Robert on 22 December 1867, Alvin on 3 September 1869, and Oscar on 11 March 1872.

Fredrick Eickenauer made the following statement on 13 February 1886:

"I knew Herman Schilling & was a fellow workman at the cooper trade & knew him in Warsaw Illinois from 1868 till his death in 1882 worked with him except the last two years & know he was sick & had to go home often I don't. what his illness was but understood it was Dropsy. The reason he did [illegible] work much the last two years was he was too sick & never was well enough to work [illegible] that this as I understood & believe."

Aunt Fannie (Gumbel) Sanders, his granddaughter, obtained Herman's military and pension records in 1977, and received documents that I did not get when I ordered them later. She found affidavits similar to Eickenauer's, signed by Henry Hammel on 15 February 1886 and August Weimbach on 12 May 1886. Each of these men described himself as a 'friend' of Herman.

On 16 February 1886, Ottielie Christ, J. Schilling and Adam Christ signed an affidavit. Ottielie was Herman's sister, J. Schilling was his mother, and Adam was Ottielie's husband, although they describe themselves only as 'relatives' in the document. At the time I received Herman's records, I didn't know what the relationships were.

"The State of Illinois – County of Adams City of Quincy In the matter of Conradine Schilling widow of Herman Schilling No. of Soldier 446-709 and of Widow No. 390-185

"On the 16th day of February A.D. 1886 personally appeared before me a Notary Public within and for said County duly authorized to Administer oaths

"Adam Christ age 53 years a resident of Quincy in the County of Adams and State of Illinois

"Also Ottilia Christ age 49 years a resident of Quincy Adams County Illinois and Johanna Schilling age 75 years a resident of Quincy Adams County Illinois well known to be respectable & entitled to credit and who being severally duly sworn upon their oaths say they are relations of Herman Schilling Lieutenant in Co H. 43. Ill. Inf. & knew him well and intimately Knew his condition & State of health know that Dr. Van Sandt of St. Louis Mo. now dead. treated him there & we saw him sick when he came there from Quincy Ill. & we lived near the [illegible] hospital & this was in April 1866 & from this time on continuously till he moved to Warsaw Ill. in the Spring of 1868 & know that during this time from April 1866 till the spring of 1868 he had yellow or sickly colored skin & suffered from & complained of pains in his right side & up his back at times had chronic diarrhea & pains in his bowels & running off from the bowels & swelled belly & swelled legs; we have seen him when his belly & legs were swelled & know he had at times fever & took medicine such as quinine & pills for his liver & we understood and it is our opinion he had chronic diarrhea liver disease & we have no interest whatever in this claim for pension nor concerned in its prosecution."

Dr. Thomas B. Hunt, “Late Asst Surg 54 Reg Ky [illegible] Infty” made the following statement on 14 May 1886:
"That Hydrops Hepaticus or Anasarca was the immediate cause of the death of the soldier Herman Schilling; and from the history of his case obtained from him during his life-time, I am of the opinion his disease was the result of Malarial poisoning and Hepatitis contracted on the Lower Mississippi river during his service in the Army."

A Department of the Interior official wrote to Dr. Hunt on 17 June 1887, asking for more circumstantial history of the soldier’s disability, and asking the date of Dr. Hunt’s first treatment, and how long he was, in the doctor’s judgment, incapacitated for the performance of manual labor, etc. Dr. Hunt’s reply follows, under date of June 31st [sic] 1887:

"Commissioner of Pensions

"Sir. Refering to within claim of Herman Schilling – Will say that in the summer of 1880 I treated claimant for about two weeks – was again called to see him Nov 17 1881. My books show that I visited him 12 times in that month, 11 times in Dec - 5 times in Jan 1882 - 7 times in Feb - 9 times in March - 17 times in April - 6 times in May - 4 times in June and 10 times in July at which time he died.

"Will state that the Soldier was never able to perform manual labor from my first acquaintance with him in 1880 although he did try to work up to the time I visited him on Nov 17 1881. Was never out of bed after that time – these facts were stated in my first affidavit in the case.

"I firmly believe that this mans disability began while in the service. He stated to me that he was sent to the hospital on account of ‘dropsy of feet and belly’ while his Regiment was stationed at Pine Bluff or Little Rock Ark.

"Will further state that this statement was made long before he even contemplated applying for Pension.

"And, if not assuming more than I am asked for, I as a Pension Examining surgeon recommend that a pension be allowed in this case.

"Very Resp T. B. Hunt"

I found among my mother’s papers the original document granting the pension, dated 17 September 1887. The pension was to commence on 17 October 1882, so Conradine probably received some kind of lump sum. The amount stated was $15 per month, plus an additional $2 per month for each of her minor children until they reached the age of 16. By the time the pension was actually approved, Oscar was the only one under 16 years of age.

According to his Hancock County, Illinois death certificate, Herman died at 10:30 a.m. on 22 July 1882 at the age of 47 years, 9 months and 21 days. This calculates perfectly to his birth on 1 October 1834. Dr. Hunt signed the death certificate, naming “Chronic disease of the liver and Valvalor insufficiency of the heart producing general Dropsy with abdominal & thoracic dropsy, [duration of] several yrs”. Place of burial is “German Cem., Warsaw, Ills.” and Peter Smidt of Warsaw is listed as undertaker.
Occupation given is “cooper”, nationality “German” and where born “Germany.”

His gravestone and his newspaper obituary differ from each other and are both incorrect as to his age in years, months and days. The obituary, probably from the Warsaw Bulletin, reads as follows:

“Died, Saturday, July 22. Herman Schilling, aged 47 years, 8 months and 21 days. He entered the federal army at the beginning of the war of the rebellion, served the first three months enlistment as a drummer boy, re enlisted for three years was elected second lieutenant, and at the end of the term veteranized and served to the close of the war.”

His gravestone, shaped like a tree trunk, in the Lutheran Cemetery at Warsaw, reads,

“Herman Schilling died July 22, 1882 aged 47 Y 9 M 9 D.
2ND LIEUT B CO
ILLS VOL INF”

I read this as carefully as possible, and I’m convinced that “B CO” is what it says, but all of his military papers indicate that he served in H Company.

Siblings, surname Schilling
[Herman]
Ottielie, married Adam Christ; issue
Robert, married Christine Clara Wehner; issue
Possibly additional siblings

Parents are Numbers 60 and 61.

See Illustration Numbers 30.

31 – Johanne Henriette Konradine KROME was born at 11 o’clock on the morning of 31 August 1836 at Gross Stockheim, Duchy of Braunschweig, now Germany, to Andreas Heinrich Ludwig Krome and his wife Elisabeth Marie Sophie née Deipenau. She was baptized on 4 September at Gross Stockheim. Her sponsors, all unmarried, lived there: Heinrich Behrens, Henriette Lehmberg and Konradine Körner. Her call name was Konradine, which was shortened to Dena. When she signed her name after she came to America, she wrote ‘Conradine’.

Research: My article in Heritage Quest magazine, Issue Number 59, contains some details about my Krome research—see Appendix 10. In it, I failed to translate the name of the book that lead me to find the Krome family in Germany, Auswandererlisten des ehemaligen Herzogtums Braunschweig ohne Stadt Braunschweig und Landkreis Holzminden 1846-1871 by Fritz Gruhne. Translation: “List of Emigrants from the Former Duchy of Braunschweig, except the City of Braunschweig and Holzminden County 1846-1871”.

107 The family cannot be found on the 1850 U. S. Census. The births of Herman and Robert are found in Osterburg, but Ottielie’s birth is not found there, leading me to think that there may be other children born elsewhere. See Conradine Krome’s biography and Gottfried and Johanna Schillings’ biographies.
As the article states, after I found the family in Germany, Ben and I visited some archives in Braunschweig and Wolfenbüttel and found as much information as I believe can be found in church records. All of it is incorporated into the biographies in this book.

In addition, I did further research after the article was written, so some questions I describe in the article as still needing answers have been satisfied, the solutions found in Conradine’s other Krome family members’ biographies.

***

According to Conradine’s obituary, the Krome family came to America when Konradine was 10 years old, landing in New Orleans and settling in St. Louis, but I have been unable to find them on a passenger list. Family lore says that the voyage was made by sailboat and took five weeks. The book about emigrants from Braunschweig agrees with the year, listing an 1846 departure (or the granting of permission to depart) after the youngest child, Marie Sophie Elisabeth, was born on 26 June 1846. After I pinned down ‘Krome’ as the correct spelling of the name and found out that one other mother’s names was ‘Sophie’, I found them on the 1850 census of St. Louis. Sophie was the head of household, implying that she was a widow, and I later found her husband’s 1849 death in St. Louis. The experience of coming from Germany, having to deal with a new language and new customs, then losing one’s father to death which surely would have left the family in dire straits, must have been traumatic for Conradine. The youngest Krome child died about the same time. Sophie married again in 1852, when Conradine was sixteen.

Conradine married Herman Schilling on 1 March 1860 in St. Louis. The couple had five known children.

As the Heritage Quest article states, there are some things found in official documents that cannot be explained. Conradine had been in America almost fourteen years by the time she married, and a document among Herman’s military papers states that he lived in St. Louis five years before he enlisted in the U. S. Army in 1861. Another document states that neither Herman nor Conradine had been married before. When 1860 census was taken, there were two boys, Louy Schilling, age 5, and John Schilling, age 2, both born in Prussia, living with this newly-married couple. This is what led me to believe that a clan of Schilling relatives settled in St. Louis. If these children were really born in Prussia, they could not have been the children of Herman or Conradine.

On the other hand, when the 1910 census was taken, it asked the number of children born to a mother, and the number of those children that were living. The answer muddies the waters further: Conradine’s answer was that she had borne seven children, five of whom were living. Did she give birth to Louy and John, and ‘Prussia’ being stated as their birthplace is simply an error? If so, were they Conradine’s children and only ‘going by’ the Schilling name? Were they Herman Schilling’s children, born to Herman and Conradine before their marriage? Were they Herman’s children, born to him and another woman he had never married? Were they the children of some Schilling relative, a recent immigrant? If these
were Herman’s children or otherwise connected to the Schillings but not Conradine, did he and Conradine have two other children who had died before the 1910 census was taken? What happened to Louy and John?

I find it hard to imagine that either Herman or Conradine had trouble understanding the census taker’s questions, because they had both come to America as children and surely spoke and understood English well enough to communicate with him. So far, I haven’t figured out a way to solve the mystery of Louy and John Schilling.

Herman’s Civil War military and pension records fill in some blanks about the family’s moves, but no mention is made of their two daughters, Alice and Millie, who were older than sixteen when the pension papers were filed. Alice’s obituary states that she was born in St. Louis 14 February 1861, and Millie was born 8 June 1864 in Quincy, Illinois (although the 1900 census states that she was born in Missouri). It is my opinion that the Schillings moved away from Missouri when war clouds began to appear on the horizon, because they didn’t know which side Missouri was going to choose. The family’s later moves are documented in the pension papers (see Herman’s biography).

The United States of America, Department of the Interior, Bureau of Pensions, finally approved a widow’s pension for Conradine and her children on 17 September 1887. The document, No. 237163 with the notation ‘Original’ written on it, was among my mothers papers, but she didn’t remember to give it to me. It was not in the genealogy box that she gave me when I expressed interest in doing research. The document reads,

“It is hereby certified That in conformity with the laws of the United States Conradine Schilling Widow of Herman Schilling who was a 2 Lieutenant Co. B [sic] 43 Regt Ills. Vol Inf is entitled to a pension at the rate of Fifteen dollars per month to commence on the Seventeenth day of October 1882 and to continue during her widowhood unless she shall forfeit her right thereto. And she is also entitled to two dollars per month additional for each of the following named children while living and under the age of sixteen years, to wit

"Robert Commencing 17 October 1882 Sixteen 21 December 1883
Alvin “ “ “ “ 2 September 1885
Oskar “ “ “ “ 10 March 1888

"Given at the Department of the Interior this Seventeenth day of September on thousand eight hundred and eighty seven and of the Independence of the United States of America the one hundred and twelfth."

It is signed by H. L. Muldrow, Acting Secretary of the Interior and John C. Black, Commissioner of Pensions. The pension was to be paid quarterly.

Another original document dated 17 September 1887, reads,

“We are here certified That in conformity with the laws of the United States Conradine Schilling Widow of Herman Schilling who was a 2 Lieutenant Co. B [sic] 43 Regt Ills. Vol Inf is entitled to a pension at the rate of Fifteen dollars per month to commence on the Seventeenth day of October 1882 and to continue during her widowhood unless she shall forfeit her right thereto. And she is also entitled to two dollars per month additional for each of the following named children while living and under the age of sixteen years, to wit

"Robert Commencing 17 October 1882 Sixteen 21 December 1883
Alvin “ “ “ “ 2 September 1885
Oskar “ “ “ “ 10 March 1888

"Given at the Department of the Interior this Seventeenth day of September on thousand eight hundred and eighty seven and of the Independence of the United States of America the one hundred and twelfth."

It is signed by H. L. Muldrow, Acting Secretary of the Interior and John C. Black, Commissioner of Pensions. The pension was to be paid quarterly.

Another original document dated 17 September 1887, reads,

"Madam"

108 Women were not employed as enumerators until the 1920 census.
“Inclosed herewith is a Certificate, No. 237163, for Origl. pension, this day issued in your favor.

“The Pension Agent at Chicago, upon whose rolls your name is to be inscribed, will forward to you properly prepared vouchers, and, when these shall have been duly executed and returned to him, will transmit directly to your address a check for the pension then due.

“Your recognized attorney is John W. Mockey of Keokuk, Iowa, whose fee is 25 dollars, which is payable by the Pension Agent.”

It is signed “Very Respectfully” by John C. Black, Commissioner.

Still another document, dated 10 November 1888, tells about vouchers that Conradine will receive, and when they have been “duly executed and returned to him he will transmit directly to your address a check for the pension due”.

After I had pinned down Conradine’s birthplace in Germany with the Gruhne book, I found a postcard depicting Gross Stöckheim scenes among my mother’s possessions, that would have given me the clue I needed. Postmarked at Cassel, Hessen, Germany 12 June 1910, it is dated June 11th 1910, “June 11th” written in English. It is addressed to Mrs. C. Schilling, Warsaw III. North America. The remainder is in German, but at least one word is misspelled, leading me to think that the writer was not a native speaker of German. The gist of the message is, ‘Dear Aunt, Today I visited the place where you were born. It is about the same as when you left. Your Niece, Henrietta Koch’.

It may have been during the 1890s or shortly after the turn of the century that the Schilling home in Warsaw burned. Photographs didn’t survive, or if they did their whereabouts are unknown to anyone I have questioned. I conjecture that the wedding picture of a Krome niece belonged to Millie Gumbel at the time. It is miraculous that the documents associated with Conradine’s widow’s pension survived the fire.

About 1911, Conradine went live with her daughter Millie Gumbel and her family in Seward, Nebraska. Her granddaughter Mildred (Gumbel) Niemann remembered her as “cranky”, probably because she was in pain—she was suffering from rheumatoid arthritis. Her fingers are said to have been curled back so that she was unable to hold a fork. On some occasion during her sojourn in Seward, she is said to have chased her grandson Fred Gumbel with a butcher knife. He is known to have been a mischievous boy, and may have deserved punishment for tormenting her. She was so crippled up that she couldn’t be moved to the cellar when the tornado struck Seward on 14 May 1913, and her daughter made the decision that since she couldn’t get to the cellar, none of the family would take shelter there. They all survived the tornado.

Conradine died at 7 p.m. on Friday, 12 March 1915 at Seward, “Lagripp” being stated as the cause of death by her physician, Dr. B. E. Morrow. Her age is stated on the death certificate as 78 years, 6 months and 20 or 21 days (written over but not legible); my computerized genealogy program calculates her age as 78 years, 6 months and 9 days. Other details about her death and funeral are found in several newspaper accounts, transcribed below as written, some spellings and dates being wrong:
From an unknown newspaper, probably Warsaw, Illinois, with date of 19 March handwritten on it:

“Death of Mrs. Kornadine Schilling

“Mrs. Kornadine Schilling, widow of the late Herman Schilling, died at the home of her daughter, Mrs. George Gumbel, in Seward, Neb., Friday, March 12, in the 78th year of her age.

The deceased was born August 31st, 1837, in Germany, and came to America in 1847, landing in New Orleans. The family located in St. Louis, where she was married to Herman Schilling in 1860. They resided for a time in Quincy and then took up their home in Warsaw, where Mr. Schilling died in 1882. Mr. Schilling served in the Union army through the war of the rebellion, raising to the rank of second lieutenant. Several years ago she went to Seward to make her home with her daughter. She is survived by two daughters and three sons, namely, Mrs. Alice Gross, of St. James, Mo.; Mrs. Millie Gumbel, of Seward, Neb.; Robert Schilling of Rock Island; Alvin Schilling, of Davenport, Iowa and Oscar Schilling, of Warsaw. She is also survived by ten grandchildren. Mrs. Schilling was for many years a faithful member of the Evangelical congregation and likewise of the ladies’ aid. She was esteemed by those who know her as a most excellent woman, kindly and charitable in all her relations.

The funeral services were held Sunday at the residence of Oscar Schilling, Rev. E. H. Jagdstein officiating. Interment in the Lutheran cemetery.”

From one of the Seward newspapers, dated 18 March 1915; her birth date of 1836 is correct in the paper, but someone has written a ‘7’ over it on the original clipping that I possess:

“Obituary

“Mrs. Conradine Schilling was born in Germany Aug. 31, 1836, and died March 12, 1915, aged 78 years, 6 months and 14 days.

“At the age of ten years she came with her parents to the United States and while her old home was at Warsaw, Illinois, she for the past four years has made her home with her daughter, Mrs. George A. Gumbel, of this city.

“She leaves to survive her three sons, two daughters and ten grandchildren, her husband having preceded her several years.

“Mr. and Mrs. Gumbel accompanied the remains to Warsaw, Illinois, for interment.”

No estate papers are on file in the Seward County Courthouse. The Civil War Pension file contains a “Pensioner Dropped” form, stating that she was “dropped from the rolls because of death Mar. 12, 1915.”

Siblings, surname Krome
- Friedrich August Theodore, married Matilda perhaps Helling; issue
- Henriette Elisabeth Konradine, perhaps married Ludwig Altendorf, issue unknown
- [Johanne Henriette Konradine]
Johann Heinrich Julius, no further information
Marie Sophie Elisabeth, died young without issue

Parents are Numbers 62 and 63:

See Illustration Numbers 31.
Notes:
Illustration Number 16: Gravestone of Peter Garner at Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine, Clark County, Arkansas.

Illustration Number 17: Gravestone of Susan (Jackson) Garner at Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine, Clark County, Arkansas.

Illustrations Number 18: Signatures (upper) of John B. Robinson from document accepting his appointment to West Point; (lower) from his father’s estate papers.
Illustration Numbers 22 and 23: Jefferson Wesley and Minerva Hillsman (Huston) Runyan. This is believed to be correct (the clothing buttons correctly) although the original image, owned by Mrs. Marie Runyan Wright, is reversed.

Illustration Number 22 and 23: Jefferson Wesley and Minerva Hillsman (Huston) Runyan. Negative supplied by Mrs. Marie Runyan Wright, who owns the original photograph. Clothing buttons the wrong way, and the image at the top of the page is believed to be correct.
Illustration Number 22: Signature of Jefferson Wesley Runyan, from his father’s Clark County, Arkansas estate papers, dated 20 January 1875.

Illustration Number 22: Gravestone of Jefferson Wesley Runyan at Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery near Amity, Clark County, Arkansas

Illustration Number 23: Gravestone of Minervia Hillsman (Huston) Runyan at Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery near Amity, Clark County, Arkansas
Illustration Number 24: Johann Christoph Niemann.

Reproduction of a large framed portrait hanging in the Niemann home in Wahrentrup.

Note: These two portraits, hanging in the ancestral Niemann home in Wahrentrup, are the same size. They are not, however, contemporaneous; the picture of Johann Christoph Niemann is isolated from an early photo, his clothing touched up by an artist. Friederike's picture comes from another source. His picture is more faint and did not reproduce well, hence I have printed it quite small so the detail is not so thin.

Illustration Number 25: Friederike Henrietta Florentine Niemann née Lüking.

Reproduction of a large, framed portrait hanging in the Niemann home in Wahrentrup. Note that she is wearing a traditional headdress and that little of her hair can be seen.
Illustration Numbers 26 and 27: Johanna Henriette Luise (Süllwold) Grolm and her husband, Simon Heinrich Conrad Grolm né Lodewig. Photos are believed to be contemporaneous. His photo is also part of the composite photo on page 175, but her head and shoulders, at a much younger age, from the picture below, was used in the composite.

Illustration Number 27: Johanne Henriette Luise (Süllwold) Grolm is on the left (used in composite). Other ladies are believed to be her sisters, but we don’t know which ones.
Illustration Numbers 26 and 27: Simon Heinrich Konrad Grolm and his wife Johanna Henriette Luise nee Sullwold. Composite photo using separate pictures found on page 173. Their daughter Lina (Grolm) Schmidt had this composite made, probably by a Kearney, Nebraska photographer.
Illustration Number 28: Signature from an affidavit dated 9 September 1865 and found in his mother-in-law's application for Mother's Pension on the Civil War service of her son Conrad Nuhn, who was killed in action at the battle of Kennesaw Mountain.

Illustration Number 28:
Ernst W. H. Gumbel; detail from a family photo ca1884.

Illustration Number 29:
Angelica (Nuhn) Gumbel; detail from a family photo ca1884.

Illustration Numbers 28 and 29: Ernst W. H. and Angelica (Nuhn) Gumbel, composite created by Lila Niemann Garner from family picture ca. 1884.
Illustration Number 30: Herman Schilling’s signature from a document connected with his release from the Union Army, dated 18 December 1865.

Illustration Number 31: Conradine (Krome) Schilling’s signature from a document regarding her widow’s pension, dated 25 September 1884.

Illustration Number 31: Conradine “Dena” (Krome) Schilling, from a family picture ca 1865.
Illustration Numbers 30 and 31: Second Lieutenant Herman Schilling, Union Army, photo taken at Little Rock, Arkansas 1865; and his wife Conradine (Krome) Schilling, from a photo taken about the same time. Children removed from photo and skirt length added by Lila Niemann Garner.
Illustration Number 31: Conradine "Dena" (Krome) Schilling, ca 1913.

Illustration Number 30: Gravestone of Herman Schilling at Lutheran Cemetery, Warsaw, Hancock County, Illinois.

Illustration Number 31: Gravestone of Conradine (Krome) Schilling at Lutheran Cemetery, Warsaw, Hancock County, Illinois.
SIXTH GENERATION

32 - John GARNER was born in North Carolina, probably in Moore County and probably between 1781 and 1787. He married there by 1806 or 1807 based on his oldest known child’s birth about 1807 or 1808. He was living with his wife in the home of their son Jesse when the 1850 census of Taney County, Missouri was taken, but had died before the 1860 enumeration of Clark County, Arkansas, where his family had moved. It is not known whether he died in Missouri or Arkansas, and there is a possibility that he died during the journey, in which case his grave may be along the trail. If he survived long enough to get to Clark County, he likely lies under one of many unmarked stones at Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine.

Research: Several descendants, among them Wilma Garner Gonzales and Carole Catton Mayfield, have attempted to research the Garner family; the Moore County Courthouse burned and many records were lost, making research difficult and proof next to impossible. Wilma checked records of the counties from which Moore evolved. She found that the deed index for Cumberland County shows several entries for John and William but none for Peter. Carole writes,

“I believe Peter was in Rowan County with his brother Henry before settling in Moore. He (or his father) is listed next to Henry on the 1778 Rowan tax list. I believe they settled in Moore/Randolph (right on the county line) on Meadow Branch in the early 1780’s. Peter is also listed in the Rowan [court] minutes in 1778 as one of the men who took the oath109.”

I observed that,

109 This was a sort of naturalization procedure, in which a man abjured his previous allegiance and swore loyalty to the King of England.
"Surely few immigrants were doing that during the Revolutionary War, unless they were Tories. Do you know any more about this, and which Peter Garner it was?"

to which Carole replied that she believes this was probably Peter’s father. She goes on to say that Peter was born about 1758 and was probably still under 21 at that time (so his father’s oath would include him). Both Peters were listed on the 1790 Moore County, North Carolina census. Mrs. Mayfield:

"In 1996, I talked by phone with David Gamer who at that time was the Mayor of Seagrove, North Carolina, and he told me that his grandfather left a letter dated 1941. In it he stated that Peter came to North Carolina from Germany with two brothers, unnamed. One brother went to Davidson County, North Carolina and one to eastern North Carolina. I believe the brother who went to Davidson County was Henry Gamer who settled on Abbott’s Creek in present day Davidson County (then Rowan County). He further stated that Peter had two sons, Peter and William, and a daughter named Annie who married a Rogers. I believe William was the Tory Captain who was captured at Moore’s Creek Bridge. Below is what I have in my notes on William:

"I believe this is the William Garner “Dutchman” who was a Tory and fought in the battle of Moore’s Creek Bridge. He is listed as “Dutch”\footnote{“Dutch” is very likely is a corruption of the word ‘Deutsch’ which means German.} on the 1790 Moore County jury list. He was among those who escaped the guard on the trek from Halifax to Philadelphia and returned home. Source: A History of Moore County by Blackwell Robinson. William Garner, Captain: This man lived on the west side of Deep River, north of Robbins, near the Randolph County line. He filed no claim, and it is presumed, took the oath and returned home. He has many descendants living in Moore County. The Garners are of German descent.’

“David was not interested in genealogy but I did send him what I had and asked for a copy of the 1941 letter, but never heard from him. He is also a potter and a descendant of William. Several of his ancestors were potters and as you probably know, Seagrove is famous for North Carolina pottery.”

Mrs. Mayfield believes the following is the correct ancestry of John Gamer, but it seems to be unprovable:

Seventh Gamer Generation

64 – Peter Gamer was born about 1758, married about 1780, and died in April, 1842 in Randolph County, North Carolina.

65 – Susannah __________, died after 1842 in North Carolina.

Eighth Gamer Generation

128 – Peter Gamer was born about 1725 in Germany, married about 1745, and died before 1800 in North Carolina.

Unproven parentage is shown above.

33 – **Elizabeth** __________, the wife of John Garner, was born in North Carolina. Her age
is given as 60 on the 1850 census of Taney County, Missouri, where she and her husband were enumerated in the home of their son Jesse. In 1860, her age was given as 65 and she was living with her son Peter Gamer and his wife Susan in Clark County, Arkansas. Since Peter, her oldest known child was born about 1810, and Stephen, her youngest known child was born about 1829, a 1790 birthdate for her would be a good fit.

From Deborah Patt through her Grandmother Emma Lou Russom Naylor, a descendant of Elizabeth’s daughter Sarah Jane (Gamer) Wilson, comes the family lore that Elizabeth’s maiden name was Ream or Reams or Reamey, but no proof has been found. While the names Reames and Reams are found in Northampton County, North Carolina on early censuses, neither is found near Moore. Other similar names found in North Carolina before 1820: Reaman, Reamer, Reaney, Reamy, Reen, Reines, Remer and Remor. No name beginning “Rie” was found. Taking into account the formation of new counties, many of these North Carolinians could have been dwelling quite near Moore about the time Elizabeth married John Garner.

No personal details of her life can be uncovered. She evidently married in North Carolina where the older children were born, and the younger ones were born after the move to Tennessee. The journeys could not have been easy, but the family kept on moving west to Missouri, then south to Clark County, Arkansas when she was a fairly old lady. Perhaps she had to leave her husband’s grave behind when they left Missouri, or even had to abandon his grave along the trail, if he lived to begin the trip.

There are several flat stones without engraving at Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine where Peter and his wife are buried, and I’m almost certain that she lies in a grave marked by one of them, but I don’t believe there is any way this can be proved.

Parents have not been identified.

34 – Mr. JACKSON cannot be found. He has to be counted among my total failures; a number of other serious genealogists have tried to find the Jacksons, and no one has met with success. According to his daughter Susan’s answer to the question “Birthplace of Father?” on the 1880 Census, he was born in North Carolina. At some time either before or after his marriage, he went to Georgia, and he probably died there. He was not enumerated in Clark County Arkansas, where his wife (widow) was living, in 1860, and my personal belief is that he died quite young and the family did not remain together. Daughters Susan (Jackson) Gamer and Lucinda (Jackson) Deaton were married in Tennessee, while Elisabeth (Jackson) Case was married in southern Mississippi. Since we don’t know his first name, we have been unable to find him in the 1850 census, and of course he may not have been living then.

Mrs. Susan Young researches Jacksons and believes that this Jackson family was originally in Orange, Wake or the surrounding areas in North Carolina, and migrated first through South Carolina to Georgia, with family branches then going to Mississippi, Tennessee, Missouri and Arkansas.

Parents have not been identified.
35 – Barbara _________ was probably born in North Carolina, and married Mr. Jackson about 1804, either in North Carolina or Georgia, where her known children were born. She was living with her daughter Lucinda Deaton when the Clark County, Arkansas census was taken in 1860. Her birthplace is given as Mississippi and her age is given as 82. Nearby, in the Peter Gamer household, were two of her grandsons, Jesse and Thomas Case; I believe that they, along with some other family members (surely at least one woman), had accompanied her from Mississippi, and these two young men stayed on to get better acquainted with their Gamer and Deaton cousins.

A Furr family seems to be somehow connected to the Case family in Mississippi, and I have wondered if Barbara’s maiden name was Furr. Furr appears to be a German name, and the given name Barbara suggests German roots.

By 1870, Lucinda (Jackson) Deaton had died and her husband had married again. Quite understandably it would have been awkward for Barbara, Lucinda’s mother, to remain in the Deaton household, and she is enumerated with Peter and Susan Gamer. Her age is given as 96, and North Carolina is stated as her birthplace.

Ages are very inclined to fluctuate on census records, and by the time a woman is over 90, old age might be considered an honor, so perhaps a few years were added here. Also, when the birthplace is given as Mississippi in 1860, one has to consider just how the census taker posed the question. Suppose, instead of asking, “Where were you born?” he asked, “Where did y’all come from, Miz Jackson?” The answer could be quite different. It is reasonably certain that she had come from Mississippi with her grandsons, but I regard that it is likely she was born in North Carolina. Her daughter Susan stated in 1880 that her mother’s birthplace was North Carolina.

The 1850 census of Mississippi has been searched, and an appropriate Barbara Jackson was not found. There are a John and Barbara Jackson in Tippah County in 1850; he is 65 and she is 64. They are still there in 1860, however, ages 75 and 74, when Barbara was enumerated in Arkansas. Perhaps some convolutions can be made with dates and a case made that they are our Barbara and her husband: If the enumerator in Tippah lived by the census rules and enumerated them on the census date of June 1, even though they were gone by the time he made the count, and if the enumerator in Clark did not abide by the rules and enumerated Barbara even though she had not been in Clark on June 1, there is the possibility that they are ours and the ages are simply wrong. All the different ages postulated for Barbara are possible for her childbearing years: First known child born about 1805 and last known child born about 1815. Inasmuch as her Case grandsons were still there, one might at least conjecture that the group accompanying her had arrived in Clark not long before the census was taken.

No gravestone is found for her in Clark County, and I believe that she lies buried near her daughter Susan Garner at Pea Ridge Cemetery near Alpine, where many flat fieldstones without engraving, or whose engraving has worn away, were placed as grave markers.

Parents have not been identified.
36 – John ROBINSON was born 26 April 1792 in Fauquier County, Virginia to John Robinson and his wife Elizabeth née Benson. His birthdate is stated in his widow’s application for a pension based on his War of 1812 service. John’s mother died probably about 1800 and his father married again, probably in Fauquier, to Sarah, daughter of Joseph Smith. Some time between 1810 and 1813, the family moved to Nelson County, Kentucky.

On 26 August 1813, at Bloomfield, Nelson County, John enlisted in the United States Army for service in the War of 1812. He was a surgeon, indicating that he had received some medical training, but nothing has been found to indicate that he attended a medical school. His rank was Ensign, and he served in the Company commanded by Capt. James McCluskey or McCloskey, in the Regiment commanded by Lt. Col. Phillip Barbour. He was discharged about 10 November 1813.

Mrs. Bogle found some family information contained in papers on file in Nelson County. The courthouse there burned, and while some papers were rescued, others are missing. There was a ‘friendly’ lawsuit filed in an attempt to sort out and make an equitable division of the estate of John Robinson, the husband of Elizabeth Benson and Sarah Smith. The following is contained in the Nelson County papers, quoting from Mrs. Bogle’s transcription:

"The Deposition of Wm Ferguson taken at the Tavern of Thos. R. Elder in Bardstown on Saturday the 28th day of August 1830 to be read as Evidence in a suit in Chancery now depending in the Nelson Circuit Court Wherein Sarah Robinson is Complainant and the heirs of John Robinson is defendent. This deponent being of lawfull age and first duly sworn deposeth & saith

"Question by complainant Were you or not acquainted with John Robinson decd and also his son John who now resides in South Carolina?

"Answer I was acquainted with John Robinson decd and also with his son John Robinson who I have understood and believe now lives in South Carolina

"By same do you or not know of John Robinson now decd giving his son John Robinson some property and if he did please State what that property was, and the value in Your Estimation?

"Answer I was at John Robinsons now decd in his lifetime and when his son John Started to South Carolina, he took with him a negro boy [slave] and the horse the boy rode How old the boy was I cant say he was large enough to catch horses & ride well, after John had started and got some little distance the old man said he had given John the boy and horse, and it was as much as he Expected he should ever give him I would suppose the boy and horse was worth three hundred & fifty or three hundred & sixty Dollars

"By same what year was it that John started to South Carolina?

"Answer in 1815 or 1816 as near as I can recollect …”

We are indeed fortunate to have this information available concerning John’s departure from Kentucky on his journey to South Carolina. It is probably safe to assume that the

111 See the biography of Person Number 18.
horse John himself rode when he departed was already his own.

The Pendleton (South Carolina) Messenger of Wednesday, 9 September 1818 printed this notice:

"Married on Thursday last by the Rev. Lewis Rector Dr. John Robertson [sic] to Miss Eliza Blassingame, daughter of Gen. John Blassingame all of Greenville District."

"Thursday last" would have been 3 September, the date also stated in Eliza's pension application. Family lore says that the wedding took place at Tanglewood Plantation, the Blassingame home. Lewis Rector was a Baptist and was related in some degree to the Robinson family, I believe through Catherine Taylor Robinson Rector.

Some newspapers in the region have reprinted articles containing historical facts. The Pickens Sentinel of 20 September 1951 mentions that in 1884, Easley had its own newspaper, The Easley Messenger, and on 12 September 1884 printed this letter, from W. H. D. Gaillard of Pendleton, evidently written at an earlier date to the editor of the Keowee Courier:

"Editor of the Keowee Courier, Dear Sirs: In your issue of August the 28th giving the early history of Oconee County, you say that the first licensed physician who settled in Pickens District was Dr. Robert Maxwell, who...commenced practicing...in the Fall of 1841, but he was not the first licensed physician who lived, and practiced in Pickens District.

"Dr. John Robinson moved from Greenville and settled at old Pickensville in 1823, before the old Pendleton District (the present Anderson, Pickens and Oconee Counties) was divided. He moved to Pendleton in 1823 where he lived a few years, and then moved back to Pickensville where he lived, and practiced in 1835. I know that to be a fact, having stayed at his house that year...."

"A sketch of Dr. John Robinson’s life follows: ‘Dr. John Robinson was a native of Virginia. His mother was buried at Sudley Church (near where the first and second battles of Manassas were later fought). Dr. Robinson was a surgeon in the War of 1812. Sometime after that war he moved to the then small village of Greenville, S.C., and continued the practice of his profession in which he was successful. He moved to Pickensville about 1823 and bought 3,600 acres of land from a man named Jack Archer, which included much of the present town of Easley.... He has many prominent descendants in this section of South Carolina."

"In the famous Perry and Bynum duel fought on an island in Tugalco River, and said to be the last duel fought in South Carolina, Dr. Robinson attended Bynum and assisted in burying him at the Old Stone Church....""

In History of Easley as told by John R. McCravy, the following (unsourced) appears under “Interesting Events in Pickensville”:

"Dr. John Robinson of Pickensville performed the first tonsil operation on record at Pickensville."

During the summer of 1825, Caroline Olivia (Mrs. John Ball) Laurens traveled with her family to the South Carolina up-country to escape the heat of Charleston. She kept a diary in which members of the Robinson family were mentioned; her comments about Dr. John Robinson follow:

"[June] 25th. Left Greenville after breakfast and had a very pleasant ride over to Pickensville about 13 miles. The scenery was pretty, and the fields by far the best cultivated we have as yet seen. We crossed the Saluda river over a well built toll bridge, which has been lately put up. In some places the river may be forded, but the water is extremely muddy and is so thick that the bottom can not be seen. Pickensville is a pretty little spot, and has a fine view of Paris and Piney Mountains. It is the property of Dr. John Roberson [Robinson-LCK] who has a house in it where he with his family reside. There is a shop & one or two small dwelling houses also, and an orchard a half a mile square, which extends from the main str. to the Pendleton road. The Dr. offered Mr. Laurens a fine lot, if he would build upon it."

The following two mentions of Dr. John Robinson are found in A Collection of Upper South Carolina Genealogical and Family Records, Vol. II: Editor - James E. Wooley, Southern Historical Press, 1981.


"ROBINSON, JOHN DOCTR. Pack 75 (Basement). Clerk of Court Office. Pickens, S.C. I John Robinson of Pickens Dist. in consideration of the sum of $175/00 to me paid by Lewis Mauldin of the same Dist. have bargain, sold, and release a tract of land containing 50 acres, lying of West side of Bresah Creek, waters of Saluda River adj. land of Rucker Mauldins, John Robinson. dated this 30 March 1835. Wit: Wm. Hunter, R. Mauldin. Signed: John Robinson. this day came Eliza Robinson the wife of John Robinson and renounced, released and relinquished all rights and interest in the above land. 24 Dec. 1836"

John and Eliza Robinson had ten living children, ranging in age from 22 to infancy, when he died on 4 September 1841. The Pendleton Messenger of Friday, 17 September 1841 printed his obituary:

"Departed this life, Dr. John Robinson, of Pendleton Village in the 49th year of his age, on the 4th inst. [4 September], of an illness of 12 days supposed to be Billous Intermitten fever contracted by exposure in the performance of his professional duties. The deceased has been long and well known in this community as a gentleman of intelligence, and in his profession deservedly ranked high for his skill and tenderness in the practice of medicine.

113 South Carolina Historical Magazine, a publication of the South Carolina Historical Society, beginning with the July 1971 issue; "Journal of a Visit to Greenville from Charleston in the Summer of 1825" by Caroline Olivia Laurens, annotated by Mrs. Louise C. King, (then) assistant director of the Pendleton District Historical and Recreational Commission, Pendleton, South Carolina; Mrs. King’s annotations are in brackets followed by her initials LCK; the author’s comments are bracketed. The original diary was in the possession of Daniel Huger of Charleston, South Carolina at the time of the 1971 article."
"Thus he has been cut off from an affectionate companion and ten children and numerous friends who will mourn his loss. But, it is gratifying, that previous to his illness, he expressed to a friend his concern about a preparation for death, and a regret that he had not given the subject his attention earlier, this impression was certainly deeply made upon his mind; when he was spoken to by his friends he would say, 'all that I can do, is to throw myself upon the mercy of the Saviour' and the day before his death, said he felt perfectly resigned to the will of his maker."

He is buried at the Old Stone Church (Presbyterian) Cemetery, near Pendleton, a military stone marking his grave.

He did not leave a will. His widow declined to serve as Administratrix, and his half-brother, Dr. Willis Robinson was appointed to administer the estate. The estate papers have been microfilmed, and the film can be found at the South Carolina State Archives in Columbia.

Inventory of the estate includes twelve slaves (plus two that had been given to his son-in-law Earle Holcomb at the time of his marriage to John’s daughter “but inventoried with the Estate for the purpose of settlement”); 3 horses; 9 head of cattle; 19 head of hogs; 2 waggons; 1 carryall; 1 sulkey; plantation tools and gear; quantities of corn, fodder, pea vines, sweet potatoes, shucks; and furniture, household items and books. More than 100 people owed for medical services, one as little as 12½¢, many in the 5- to 30-dollar range, the highest amount being $87.87½. Dr. Robinson also owed some money to others.

A great many of the people owing money paid their bills, and many of the inventoried personal possessions were sold at auction, including the slaves, who fetched more than $4,400. At final settlement on 22 July 1844, the widow, Eliza received $283.25, $56.65, $207.19 in different categories, and received $415.36 as the 9 minor children’s share (the children are named), $41.53 each; but the math is faulty. I am unable to understand all the intricacies of the estate and cannot understand where some of the money went. The estate papers are all hand-written, of course, and perhaps I’m misreading some of their contents.

It is almost certain that Erasmus B. Robinson who was born 14 June 1821 and died 8 November 1821 belongs in this family. He is buried near Greenville, near the grave of Gen. John Blassingame. The name Erasmus was found by Mrs. Bogle among relatives of the Kentucky Robinsons.

Siblings, surname Robinson (named in Nelson County, Kentucky court documents) Joseph married perhaps Christine ________, went to Indiana¹¹⁴

¹¹⁴ I looked at the 6 Joseph Robinsons enumerated in Indiana in 1830. I did not look for Robison/Robertson or just initial ‘J’. If the name was written correctly, and if the age I calculated (born 1788-89) for Joseph is correct, and if the census taker placed him in the right age group, and if the index is correct and complete, all except one found in Parke County can be ruled out. Each of the 6 Joseph Robinson households in Indiana included children.
[John]
William married Marie E. Earle; issue
Elizabeth never married (some question here; she could be from second marriage); signs “Eliza” for her inheritance

Halfsiblings, surname Robinson (from his father’s marriage to Sarah Smith):
Knox married Maria F. Nall, issue; married second Adaline Ross, issue
Willis married Sarah Ann Griffin, issue without issue; married
Rebecca W. Griffin, issue
Margaret
Mildred died young without issue
Catharine married Wm. H. Taylor
Smith married Edna C. E. Meriweather
Adaline

See Illustrations Number 36.

Parents are Numbers 72 and 73.

37 – Eliza BLASSINGAME was born 15 January 1800 at or near Greenville, South Carolina. Her parents were Gen. John Blassingame and his wife, Elizabeth Smith Easley. I have seen Eliza’s name stated as Elizabeth Smith Blassingame, but documentation is lacking as far as I know, and she was called Eliza. She married Dr. John Robinson on 3 September 1818 at her parents’ Tanglewood Plantation near Greenville, and died 13 January 1886 at Anderson, South Carolina.

Little is known about her early life; the first real information about her comes in Mrs. Laurens’ diary115; I found the diary entry of 1 July 1825 so interesting that I have copied it in its entirety, although only the latter part concerns Eliza:

“July 1st. Early this morning we were awoke by the bustling noises of the neighbouring people who were getting ready to go to Greenville where a Negro was to be burned alive for stabbing a white man. This fellow had made an attempt to kill his master, but not succeeding, he ran away and lodged in the barn of an old farmer, who having occasion for some grain, went thither at night; not knowing anyone was there, upon his entrance (the Negro who had just awoke out of a sound sleep and thinking he was pursued by his master) instantly jumped up killed the old man and made his escape, but after a few weeks was caught and sentenced to be burned.116 This morning Mrs. Robinson hearing me say how very fond I was of green cheese immediately set

115 South Carolina Historical Magazine, a publication of the South Carolina Historical Society, beginning with the July 1971 issue; “Journal of a Visit to Greenville from Charleston in the Summer of 1825” by Caroline Olivia Laurens, annotated by Mrs. Louise C. King, (then) assistant director of the Pendleton District Historical and Recreational Commission, Pendleton, South Carolina; Mrs. King’s annotations are in brackets followed by her initials LCK; the author’s comments are bracketed with her initials Ig in brackets. Original diary in possession [ca 1971] of Daniel Huger of Charleston, South Carolina.
116 Mrs. King annotates “Jack Kenny Williams, Vouges in Villany [sic], pg. 104 states that a Negro man was burned at the stake in Greenville in 1825 for rape. My sense is that young Mrs. Laurens may have been purposely misled about the nature of the crime because no one wanted to mention the word ‘rape’ to her.
about making one, which she did by first pouring boiling water over a small bit of calf's rennet, then strained it off, and after straining the milk, warm from the cow, threw in the water from the rennet, which turned [curdled] it immediately, then she dipped off all the whey [clear liquid], and picked out the specks and hairs, after which it was put into a cheese hoop and pressed."

Green cheese is, of course not green in color, but uncured. Rennet is the milk-curdling enzyme found in the stomach of an unweaned calf.

The fact that Eliza was making green cheese on the date I settled on for her son John Blassingame Robinson's birth probably means that he was not born on that date, although Mrs. Laurens certainly would not have mentioned Eliza's advanced pregnancy; she could have given birth later that same day. It does seem as though Mrs. Laurens would have mentioned the fact that there was a new baby at the Robinson home, if he had been born a few days earlier.

After the death of her husband, Eliza had to make a living for herself and her children; in 1850 she was still living in Pickens District, presumably in Pendleton village, where her real estate was valued at $500. Her son William, a farmer, and five of her daughters were at home. Three daughters were married and lived nearby, and of course John B. had gone to Arkansas by then.

On the second day of June 1853, Eliza made application for Bounty Land, based on her husband's War of 1812 service. I have not searched for a deed for the forty acres she received. She made further application for Bounty Land on 18 June 1855, stating that she previously applied for “…and received a Bounty Land warrant for 40 acres but does not recollect the number of said warrant which she has since legally disposed of....” This time she apparently received 120 acres; it is mentioned in her War of 1812 widow's pension application. Perhaps the sale of this land provided enough income for the family to subsist upon, or possibly she was able to trade it for the home in Anderson. A search of deeds might provide an answer.

By 1860 she had moved to Anderson and was keeping a boarding house. At least some, perhaps all of the boarders seem to have been roomers also. The 1860 census reported that she possessed $2,000 worth of real estate and $5,000 in personal estate; the latter probably consisted largely of slaves. Among her boarders was one John Wallace, whose occupation is listed as “Photographic Artist”. Mrs. Bogle has seen a photograph of Eliza, and it seems very likely that Mr. Wallace would have taken a photo of her while he was conveniently present. She is described as “demure, and wearing a white cap” by Mrs. Bogle, who believes that the photograph is owned [1999] by John Nance of Vieques, an island lying off the shore of Puerto Rico. He has some of possessions stored in South Carolina or nearby, but has not been able to put his hands on the picture, although I have concluded that he has not made a thorough search, not being much interested in family history.

Eliza must have passed through an extremely trying time during and after the Civil War, although Anderson was not on the path of Sherman’s March to the Sea. The 1870 Census indicates that she continued to keep a boarding house in Anderson; several
grandchildren are in the home, several boarders are living there, and she seems to have some black servants, in all likelihood former slaves. The value of her real estate is given as $2,250; her personal estate is valued at $450.

On 2 April 1878, Eliza filled out a “Claim of Widow for Service Pension”, based upon her late husband’s service in the War of 1812. A pension was granted, but no dollar amount can be found. Among the supporting documents is a certified true copy abstracted “from the family record”, making me believe there is somewhere a family bible or other family record that would give birth dates for the children, in addition to the birth and death dates of John, Eliza’s birthdate, and their marriage date found in this abstract.

The 1880 census finds Eliza at age 80 continuing to run the boarding house, with five boarders in residence as well as her granddaughter Mamie Craig with husband Sam and two children, and granddaughter Pet Partlow. Charlot Hillhouse and Mariah Hillhouse are servant and cook respectively, and two-year-old Clarence Hillhouse is listed as a shoemaker. I have an idea that at least one more male, an adult and a shoemaker, was missed when the census form was copied, and somehow his occupation was attributed to Clarence.

In March of 1874, Eliza made her will; there is a blank where the day of the month was to be inserted:

“The Last Will and Testament of
Mrs Eliza Robinson

In the name of God amen

“I Eliza Robinson of the Town and county of Anderson and State of South Carolina being of sound and disposing mind and memory but aware of the uncertainty of life do make publish and declare this to be my last will and testament.

“Item 1 I will and direct that all my just debts, including funeral Expenses be paid.

“Item 2 The rest and residue of my Estate both real and personal of whatsoever Kind that I may possess at the time of my death I will, devise and bequeath to my well beloved daughter Mary A. Robinson in fee simple.

“Item 3 I hereby revoke all former wills by me made.

“Item 4 I appoint my said daughter Mary A. Robinson Executrix of this my last will and Testament.

“In Testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and Seal Mar AD 1874

“Signed Sealed and acknowledged In Presence of us } E Robinson SEAL
W. W. Humphreys } J.C.C. Featherston
J.C.C. Featherston } M.A. Partlow
M.A. Partlow }"
Eliza’s signature on her will was really shaky compared with her earlier handwriting, although deterioration is evident with each successive signature found during her later years.

It should be noted here that Eliza did not remarry to a Mr. Edinger, as stated in the W. Doak Blassingame books. At each documentable event in her life after her husband’s death, she was Eliza Robinson, a widow.

Eliza died on 13 January 1886. Her obituary appeared in the *Anderson Intelligencer* of 14 January 1886:

“Mrs. Eliza Robinson, relict of the late Dr. John Robinson, who was the oldest lady in Anderson, died at her residence in this city on Wednesday night, the 13th inst, at 11 o’clock, having reached the advanced age of eighty-six years, lacking two days. Dr. Robinson was a prominent physician in Anderson and Pickens counties, having resided at old Pickens Court House and at Pendleton. He died at the latter place about forty years ago, after which Mrs. Robinson moved to Anderson, where she kept a boarding house, maintaining and raising her own family and a family of grand children [sic]. She was an intelligent, kind and estimable lady, who had hosts of friends wherever she was known. Mrs. Robinson leaves a very large number of descendants, who are scattered over the upper portion of this and surrounding States. Her remains were interred in the Presbyterian cemetery on last Friday morning, after appropriate funeral services, conducted by Rev. D. E. Frierson, D.D., in the presence of a large congregation of the friends of the deceased.”

Mrs. Bogle searched the Presbyterian Cemetery in Anderson, but she found no grave marker; she concluded that if a stone had been placed, it had deteriorated so that it could no longer be read.

Inasmuch as Mary A. Robinson, the Executrix appointed by Eliza, had predeceased her mother, a grandson-in-law, Samuel T. Craig applied for and was granted Letters of Administration, so that her estate could be settled. The record shows that on 28 August 1886, an inventory of Eliza’s property was ordered; although no one was appointed to do it, the inventory was to be presented to the court on or before 18 November 1886. This is the last document found in the file. No settlement of the estate can be found. I had been hoping at this point that Eliza’s granddaughter, Mary Jane Gamer, would be mentioned as an heir. It was not to be. Perhaps remaining estate papers have been misfiled and will someday be discovered.

Siblings, surname Blassingame

Esther married Enoch Berry Benson; issue
Mary married Jesse Cleveland; issue
William Easley married Eliza Paul Townes; issue
[Eliza]
Caroline married William E. Wickliffe
Ann (Nancy Ann Easley?) married Thomas M. Sloan; issue

---

117 The newspaper must have been dated well before its publication, because “last Friday morning”, making it before the 14th, would have been on the 7th, before Eliza died.
John W. M. married Sarah M. Sloan; issue

See Illustrations Number 37.

Parents are Numbers 74 and 75.

38 - Alexander Brandon CLINGMAN was born 22 or 23 November 1806 at Huntsville, Yadkin County, North Carolina (North Carolina counties have been realigned, and the now almost-extinct village of Huntsville is presently in Surry County) to Peter Clingman and his wife Ann née Poindexter. He may have been baptized the next day, accounting for the different dates that are given for his birth. Huntsville was only a stone’s throw from the ‘Shallow Ford’, not only a place to ford the Yadkin safely, but a landmark in the region. He was eight years old when his mother died. He was educated by a tutor, Francis Alexander Poindexter, his uncle. His cousins, and probably everyone else, called him Sandy. There has been some effort to account for his middle name ‘Brandon’ among the ancestors. While there were neighbors with the surname Brandon, no relationship can be found.

His father’s brother Jacob Clingman died about 1816; after that, Jacob’s widow Jane (Poindexter) Clingman, the sister of Sandy’s mother, took charge of the children of both households, and some believe (perhaps documentation can be found) that Jane moved her family to Peter’s home.

The court minutes of Surry County, North Carolina record on 13 February 1827 that Peter Clingman was appointed guardian to the four oldest children of his brother Michael Clingman, late of Orangeburg District of South Carolina. One of these children, of course, was Ann Martha Clingman. Jane apparently continued to help Peter Clingman rear his now-enlarged family. Sandy and Ann Martha must have admired her greatly: they named their third daughter Jane Poindexter Clingman in her honor. Jane later reared a family of Puryear grandchildren.

We don’t know whether it was ‘love at first sight’, but we do know that Sandy and Ann Martha developed an attachment for each other, and when they announced their intention to marry, Peter was violently opposed to the match and forbid them to marry because they were first cousins. Probably because he lacked a way to save face, he carried out his threat to disown his son Sandy when they married in spite of his opposition.

Frances White Speer, a descendant of Sandy and Ann Martha, believed that if Sandy had wanted to marry one of the rich Poindexter cousins, Peter wouldn’t have objected. My own belief is that he may have been genuinely distressed at this proposed cousin-marriage, because there had been an earlier marriage between cousins among their ancestors. I believe that Alexander Clingman and his wife Elisabeth Keiser were related by blood. This is only a theory, but I believe that if and when we ever find the Clingmans in Germany, we will find the Keisers in the same or a neighboring village. Another possibility of an earlier blood relationship is between Frances Anderson Poindexter and his wife’s mother, Mary Pattillo née Anderson.

In any case, Sandy did demand his share of his inheritance from his mother, now in Peter’s
hands, and acknowledged its receipt as follows:

"State of North Carolina

"Surry County

Know all men by these presents that I Alexander B. Clingman of the County and State aforesaid have demanded of my Father Peter Clingman my distributive share of the following Negroes now in his possession (to wit) Sally and her four children Sook Alce Mary and Jane, one third of the value of which negroes I claim in the following manner, the property being the one fifth part of the Estate of Jane Poindexter Deceased which was valued to Four Hundred and two Dollars & fifty cents my third part being One Hundred and fifty Dollars and Eighty three cents, which third I claim having descended to my mother Ann Clingman from the Estate of her mother Jane Poindexter, and having this day received from Peter Clingman One Hundred and fifty Dollars and Eighty three cents I therefore relinquish all my right title and interest which I had or may have had to the above negroes, and if at any time there should be a claim set up to said property and a suit instituted and recovery made I bind myself and my heirs to refund to the said Peter Clingman the above sum of One Hundred & fifty Dollars and Eighty three cents with lawful interest from this day. also all cost which may accrue on any suit for the recovery of said property in witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & seal this day of August 1829.

"Witness

"R. C. Puryear A. B. Clingman (seal)

"T.W.P. Poindexter"

It occurs to me that Peter could have won if he had fought this in court, but he doesn’t seem to have done so. Perhaps he saw it as a way, without backing down from his threat, to provide Sandy with at least a small fund for starting out in life.

Mrs. Melinda Ann (Jones) Cubage, a daughter of Sandy and Ann Martha’s daughter Jane Poindexter Clingman and her husband, Dr. Alfred Jones, wrote a sketch about Sandy called *Early Arkansas Individualist* which appeared in the [Little Rock] Arkansas Gazette on 2 January 1944. Much of the family lore that I repeat here comes from that source.

Melinda says that the young Clingman family lived at White Sulphur Springs, Tennessee, not far from Memphis. White Sulphur Springs is not on a modern map. The census lists them as living in Hardin County, and Sandy in one of his letters mentions going back to Hardin.

Sandy is said to have attended a medical college in Georgia, studying under a Dr. Clayton, but I have been unable to document this. He did ride a horse to Georgia according to one letter.

Some time after their marriage on 22 September 1829 (the marriage bond is dated 8 September) in Surry County, they began their journey west. They intended to go to Texas, but stayed for at least a couple of years in Hardin County, Tennessee, where their first two children were born. It was there that they made the acquaintance of a Church of Christ evangelist named Allen Kendrick, who baptized both of them. This was certainly a
rebaptism for Sandy, perhaps for Ann Martha also.

They first settled at a place on the Military Road now called Hollywood, where he got into some kind of difficulty—Lewis Brumfield thinks his acquaintances were counterfeiters. The papers of his cousin Isaac Jarratt, including letters Sandy wrote to him, are preserved in The Special Collections Department of William R. Perkins Library at Duke University in Durham, North Carolina. Frances Speer believed that the Clingmans just got so taken up with church work that they didn’t move on, and when they did move, it was only as far as Arkansas. Sandy himself seems to view the situation in another light, giving as a reason for remaining in Arkansas, the beginning of the War (The Texas War of Independence). The Jarratt letters that I copied are transcribed below:

(Ann’s brother Arthur A. Clingman, who obviously hadn’t enjoyed the advantage of Francis Poindexter’s tutoring, began the earliest letter, and Sandy finished it):

Clark CO Arkansas Territory Feb 19th 1836

Dear Sur I received your letter and I should of anserd it before this time if I had of leeft Tennessee I am living with Sandy, we started for Texas last Nov but times was rather warm for us an we concluded to stop in the Territory we are all well! I stated in my letter to you tat I thought I had the liver complaint and the dispespy but I think I am int of both. I intind farming this season as it is the best business for me at present. I will not say anything about the country! Sandy will ad Something to this letter and it is quite probable that he may say some thing about the Terrtory! Cosin Isaac I have some business unsettled in NC and I would be glad to get you to attend to it for me if you can I hold a recit against John Clingman for the amount of $75 dollars for a note on Stephen H. Hobson als Puryear and Francis has a note against me for $28 dollas which amount is to be paid out of the money that John collects[?] from Hobson and the business between ____ ______and myself I want it attended to also I dont know what is coming I shal inclose Johns receit in this letter and if thare is enought to lift the note that you hold against Sandy I want you to inclose it in a letter and send it to me also the note that Puryear holds against me Sandy will add what is neccessary and by so doing oblige a friend——A. A. Clingman

NB Apply to Uncle Peter for the money, If he refuses on account of a Power Attomey take the Money on your own responsibility as I will furnish one. AAC

Clark County Arkansas Territory
Feby. 17th 1836

Cousin Isaac

With pleasure I subjoin a few remarks. I must be brief as there is but little space. I must beg to be excused for retaining the Money and also for not writing sooner. When I was at Uncle TWP’s the latter part of last summer he informed me that had agreeably to my request sent the note out by him and that you wanted the money. I fully intended to pay it last fall and told him that this was my intention, at that time I was determined to return to Hardin to live as I was tired of the more Sickly section in which I was living for the purpose of practising physic. Nevertheless Texas had born with great weight upon my mind, and in consequence of hearing so much flat news both from the
papers and travelers, I determined to go, the War broke out and I stoped in Arkansas. A Country in which it is easy to live splended for the merchant, Course Calico. 50 cts per yd. course domestic cloth 37½ Cents. As I concluded to go to Texas I wished to Carry what money I had collected and write to Uncle Thomas and convey him a note on a very good man for collection out of which I wished him to pay you, since which I have sold Arthur a fine horse to pay you. If it be necessary for you to have a power of Attorney to settle the business Arthur wishes to know it by letter and how to proceed. I wish a settlement with Pa. know of him (If you please) If he will settle please write. A.B.C.

1836 August 15th Clark County State of Arkansas

Dear Cousin

About six months ago I wrote you a letter mostly on business about which I have heard nothing since. I am therfore induced to believe that you never received my letter. I will therefore address a few lines to you at this time in conjunction with Arthur. We are well and in an excellent country, and I am doing well. This will no doubt be gratifying to my friends, among whom you have always been found. I must be brief as I am writing on a small sheet. I fully intended to write to lift the note you hold on me but fin to move to Texas for the purpose of I thought obtaining a fortune in land. I wanted to carry what money I had collected with me leaving S__ behind a good due me for collection out of which by means of a trust agent I intended to have you paid. This all transpired after I saw Uncle Thomas and told him I would pay him the money. In the mean time I sold Arthur a fine horse for $15. which with a little more he owed me we desired you to collect from Father out of Arthurs money to the amount of the $159. We inquired to know if a power of Atomey would be necessary for you to have in order to collect it. We still wish to know. If so and Father will not let you have it without, and you need the money take the responsability on yourself and receive the money and Arthur will engage in any process to secure him in the payment of the money and release you. If anything of this kind be necessary, you can inform him how to proceed. We write with full assurence of your getting the money as Arthur says his Uncle Peter assured him that he could have it by letting him know when he wanted it. I also enclosed a receipt in the letter we wrote you in February on John P. Clingman for for a Note of hand on Steven Hobson for that amount or rather a receipt for a Note of that amount Arthur wished you if you please to give John this receipt and secure the money out of which he wants you to pay a note which Puryear and Frank have against him, and retain the balance in your own hands towards the $159. note you have on me when you receive it write to Uncle Thomas the date of its reception instruct him to calculate the interest up to that time and I will send it in my next letter. Arthur wishes you to ascertain the amount to come to him from his Uncle that a Settlement may be made in full. I have owed My friend Col. R. Puryear $40, with interest untill I am ashamed of it. I have been thinking that I would have a settlement with Father and have a balance in my favor large enough to settle but I cannot catch the first bounce from that quarter. I think Uncle Thomas told me that my Father was telling him something about a note he had on me and also an Account he had against Ann that note he holds against me was given for a note of Sixty Dollars, which he bought of George H. Kimbrough on me which was given him for the horse I wrote to Georgia and Ann's Account was added to it which raised it to $11 or a little the rise so that Ann's acct is embraced in the note. If you call on Col. Puryear he will tell you the same and if her account has not been credited I want it done. Will you attend to this for me. You cannot imagine how ___ it is to have these old matters _______ want you if you please to know of Father If he will settle with me not for any great amount concern [?] but that I may know that my business is closed. request him to pay Col. Puryear if there is enough coming if not let me know it and I will send the money. If you _____ the money Arther wants you to write Uncle Thomas to send him my note he lives with me. Write soon and let us know the result. Direct
your letter to Greenville Clark County Arkansas Yours with affection A. B. Clingman

[Arthur writes]:

Cousin Isaac all that Sandy has stated above is so and I request and authorize you to act accordingly. Arthur A. Clingman

NB You will confer a favor by complying.

Nov. 4th 1837
Greenville Clark County Arkansas

Dear Cousin

You may have arrived at the conclusion in consequence of my delay, that I have forgotten you, a very wrong conclusion, if you have. It is true that I have had 2 letters from you since I reply'd; ought to have answered the first but had nothing of much consequence or interest. I was however about to answer the first when I received the second. We are at this time in good health, but this summer we have had more sickness than usual, nothing worse than chill and fever. You inquire in your first letter the number of our children and their names: 1st Alexander Michael 2d Elizabeth Ann 3d Mary Catharine 4th Jane Poindexter. Ann is one of the best women in the world. You request a general description of this country. The soil is various a great deal of it the very best. We have many kinds of water; freestone limestone Slate, Shell, a great variety of mineral and medicinal, I live in about 30 m. of the celebrated Hot Springs of this State, I have visited them twice; they constitute one of the greatest wonders of this wonderful World here I first saw water gushing from the earth boiling hot. We have in many places an inexhaustable range, a very pleasant climate, so much so that we have salet growing all Winter. On Red River and other water courses sickly just as in other Countries, but to take it in the aggregate I believe this to be as healthy as any Country I ever lived in. I live about 75 m. from Little Rock, and I think am seteled for life. The production of our country is various. Fine Cotton and com. tolerable wheat here and farther north first rate. Rye and Oats do finely. Potatoes grow finely and garden vegetables generally. Peaches arrive at great perfection here and scarcely ever missbearing. Apples not so good. One of the best Stock countries in the world. We have wild deer, Turkeys, fish and fowl in abundance. Face of the Country. Very diversified. Large portions of the most beautiful and fertile land separated by broken country even mountainous very often. I Saw Major Paup some time Since and he informed me that he was better pleased with Arkansas than any part of the U.S. He and family I suppose have enjoy health this season and he has a great Crop of Cotton. As respects disadvantages I know of none peculiar to this Country. There is no comparison scarcely between this country & yours for business and money making. I am now about to make a request of you Which I want attended to with accuracy & promptitude. I am a long ways from where I was raised and some incline in this country to Slander and persecute me without Cause. I am now in gaged in a process to Stop it, this need not make you uneasy for I am Still endeavouring as usual to pursue a correct course and I have done so and will come out more than conquerer and establish a reputation which cannot be shaken. I want you to draw up an instrument Stating my character for morality truth and honesty. I want Col. Puryear to assist you and I want as Strong a recommendation as you can give me and get the best men in your country to assign it and a number of them your Congress member &c however he I suppose is at Washington. Get the clerk of the Court to testify to the respectability of the assigners and his seal or it may be disputed send it on immediately. I can get highly recommended in Tennessee. Pleas tell John & Stephen Kennedy that if they will come to this country I will give them for work $200 per year each board them &c. and sell them clothing as cheap
as they can buy in N.C. If you will get a large Sheet of paper it will be sufficient to contain a few lines to me and the instrument I have requested. Arthur lives about 20 miles from me now. Please attend Speedily to what is herin requested and you will lay me under additional obligations. I wrote to you when I just moved to Tenn. concerning twenty odd dollars worth of _____ tools, &c. which I got in that little trunk I brought off with me, and do not know whether you ever mentioned it to Father or not if you did not tell him to take it out of what [is] coming to Ann, if anything I would be glad to know how he and myself stand I am willing to say $25 as I do not remember exactly. If there is nothing more coming I will send him a receipt in full with both our names as this business ought to be settled. Arthur and myself wish to know if you have collected his money & if you are paid what I owed you if so send an exact account of the transaction. Give my respects to all my friends

Your Sincere friend & relative

ABCling[signature unfinished]

NB direct to Clark Court house or Clark County Arkansas

[Isaac Jarratt makes a note on the envelope “attended to & answered 15 Jany 1838”]

Clark County Arkansas
Feb_y. 18th 1838118

Cousin Isaac

I have been for some time thinking of writing you a few lines, but have neglected it until the present time. The last letter you wrote me, (or at least that I have received) was in reply to mine requesting a recommendation. Which request was very obligingly & efficiently attended to by you. You Stated in your letter that were about going to Alabama to make some collections, and requested me to direct you a letter to Some place in Alabama which I failed to do you also Stated that you would write me again from that place, but a [sic] received no letter. When I thought you had had time to get back to Huntsville I addressed you a letter but have never received your response. Perhaps you did not get mine. for fear you failed to receive it, I will answer your questions in relation to the difficulty that I had been in for a time. I am now in no difficulty, and am as generally esteemed I expect as an honest man as any in our Country, it was brought upon me by or through a lieing rumour arising entirely out of the dirt, and I have run it back there and entirely disproven it, in an irresistible and over whelming testimony.

In my next I will give you a Copy of the proceedings. It has eventuated in fully establishing my Character, as a conscieintious honourable & highminded man. And there is not a blemish against me. I present you my Sincere thanks for your Kindness in this affair, and I wish you to acquaint my friends generally and those in particular who placed their names to the document, that I am completely triumphant. When I send you on a Copy of the result I want you to present _____ it to them severly.

---

118 This letter was certainly written in 1839; he probably didn’t write the date often and was not yet used to the new year. He writes in this letter of Mary Catherine’s death, which occurred on 31 July 1837, but he had written on 4 November 1837 and listed Mary Catherine among his living children. Melinda Cubage gives Mary Catherine’s death date as 31 July 1838, and to jibe with her birthdate as given by Cubage, and for her to be 3 years and a few days old at her death, everything fits except the date on this letter.
Myself and family are at this time well. My little daughter Mary Catharine (on the last day of July last) left this troublesome world (very Suddenly) for the heavenly Canaan. She was 3 years and a few days old. her disease was very Acute terminating in the most powerful convulsions. I think that taking into view my opportunity I am getting along well and If I can now surmount a few obstacles I Shall be independent. I have one of the best and most industrious wives in the world. We have now 3 children. I believe I have no news I believe worth your attention, This is the best Country I ever saw.

I want you if you please to write immediately and let me know if you have collected Arthur's Money (he is in Texas) and if you are paid the $150 out of it, and how much is Coming to him out of it (Of what was Collected from Hobson and Father). If you have received your money, I presume you have destroyed the note. I am Authorized by Arthur to attend to this business, and it is his request as well as mine that you Should attend to it for us. I want you if you please to ascertain if Father will come to settlement with me. In relation to Ann's part of the estate I received $318. and I Suppose he paid Clayton about 49 Dollars and Said he would. There was $417 agreeably to what he Said himself Comeing to each that was sure after all Pauldings (? hypocrasy and theft besides interest for a long time on it. If it is not agreeable to you to hold a Settlement with him for me, you Can get a Suitable person to do so, and let me know the results. I want Col. Puryear paid the $40 (& interest) which he paid for me and I think there is more than enough coming to me to do it. I have requested this several times you will Confer a great favour on my by attending to this business for me. I also Wish you to attend to a little business for me with Mr. Stephen Hobson. Please Ascertain what he has collected of the estate and what is coming to Ann after proportion of the necessary expense is paid. Mary wrote that it would be collected last fall or this Coming Spring. You are hereby fully Authorized to collect or receive from our friend Stephen Hobson our part; and remit it by the first Safe Opportunity or by letter if you think it safe to send it in that way by Cutting the money in two & sending part at a time--Tennessee Money or the State money of Alabama is good here and Some of the NCarolina money.

I want you if you please to know by some Suitable means, if my Father does not intend to give me Something for my third of the 7 or 8 hundred [acre] tract of land which he sold Lundy. he got my two negroes for about $140 and the younger one was worth more than that. and I have never received a cent for my part of the land & other property. I believe he sold the land for about $3 per Acre—what a pity: Worth at least $25. I would be however perfectly Satisfied to get in proportion to the way he Sold it. It is a very handsome and beautiful tract of land Situated to great advantage. I am perfectly Steady and make no use of Spirits. I want you if you please to answer this and give me Satisfaction on those various points. the news &c. Ann joins me in presenting you the best wishes for your present and future happiness &c &c.

Give my love to all of my friends who would accept it. I hope I have no enemies.

A.B.Clingman

---

Clark County Arkansas
Sept 19th 1840

Cousin Isaac

A short time Since I received your favour of the 5th of July last and was pleased to hear from my old Country and friends. I was also much gratified to hear that General [William Henry] Harrison was laying little Van [Buren] in the Shade in Old N.C. and those other States through which you passed. I
am very much in hopes that After the 4th of March next Van will have ample leisure to attend to his large investment in farms and Sheep. I am however of the belief that Arkansas will give him a Small majority. I Bought Goods last winter, and expect to Continue the mercantile business until I make what money I want. I am now worth about Four Thousand Dollars clear of debt, and am getting into a condition to make money. I have lately bought and nearly paid for another valuable farm on the Caddo river. One Thousand Dollars was refused for it ready in hand just before I bought [something missing here] times improve they will be very valuable. I do not tell you of those things for the Sake of boasting, but to acquaint you without exaggeration with the manner in which we are getting along, finding that you inquire to know. I make no use of Spirits, and have not for years, and I am Strengthened daily in the demination [sic: determination?] never again to use them.

I fell into this country a Stranger, not a friend acquaintance or connection in the State and unfortunately bought land and located in a settlement of people of bad character and hence the difficulty into which I for a short time fell. This is now all blown over, and instead of operating eventually to my disparagement, has resulted much to my credit, and I can inform you of a truth that I am held as one of the most Steady, truthful and honorable men in this country. The next time I write to you I will send you a document which will give you much Satisfaction on the subject.

My three principal reasons for writing to you and Cousin John upon the subject of purchasing me a few goods where these 1st I knew that your judgment was good 2 that you would defraud me in the [something missing here] The reason you give for not complying is entirely Satisfactory to me. I regret to learn that the money, which I owe you and Col. R. C. Puryear is mostly unpaid. I am confident that Arthur and myself understood by letter that Father would require no other power or Authority than Arthur’s written instruction or request. I had sold Arthur a very valuable horse and we had made the arrangement (of which we informed you) for you to collect the money from your Uncle Peter and credit my note. I also knew that there was enough coming on Ann’s part if Father collected what he said was safe when we left N.C to pay Col. Puryear. I still hear however that he is not paid notwithstanding I wrote particularly upon the subject repeatedly. The presumption then must be that he did not collect all that he considered safe (say) 417 each exclusive of those last collections made by Mr. Hobson. You did not inform me in your last whether he requires of Power of Attorney or not. If he collects enough I want you and Col. Puryear paid. I will send a receipt with my name and Ann’s or if required a power. I am in a Splendid Country we are all well, and highly pleased. My oldest son can read and write and just turned of Ten, and never went to School over 3 months. [something missing; probably Arthur] gone to Texas better than 2 years now... [remainder of letter missing]

Russell P. Baker, writing in the Old Time Chronicle, 119 quotes Publications of the Arkansas Historical Association, volume 2, pages 253 and 578:

"Dr. A. B. Clingman ‘built the finest school house in all this area, and furnished it with the best seats to be had. The house was built of logs...Captain Robert Burke was the first teacher.’"

This school was probably built about 1845, but Baker believes that Burke didn’t arrive in the area until 1848, so he was not the first teacher. Sandy owned a sawmill on Caney Creek. Baker, in the same article, describes a Browning family who chose to buy land "located on high ground near a spring of good water, just north of the mouth of Caney Creek and near

119 October/November 1998, Volume 11, Number 5, published bimonthly by May Enterprises, Amity AR 71921. ISSN 1043-2876.
the mill site of Dr. Alexander B. Clingman”.

Sandy seems to have had a finger in every local pie, and I mean this in no disparaging way, because as the frontier began to be settled, someone with education and initiative was needed to assume a leadership role in carving civilization out of the wilderness. He was a justice of the peace; he was a member of a committee that identified and appraised stray domestic animals; he was selling goods, according to his letters, and Mrs. Cubage mentions account books in existence in her time; he was preaching, and although Mrs. Cubage says he was not called a preacher, she says he baptized several people. She writes,

“Dr. Clingman moved on up the country from Hollywood [Greenville?] and finally settled five\textsuperscript{120} miles north of Amity about 1846 [probably before that, if he had established a school in 1845]. Here he built a water mill and sawed lumber and built a two-story frame house which was all planned [sic: planed] by hand. At each end of the house there was a stone chimney, and a fireplace was built above and below. There was a long porch on the south side.”

Mrs. Cubage tells about a Fourth of July celebration that lasted three days and three nights and reports that Dr. Clingman was the orator of the day and beat the drum for the parade and the dance. It rained so much that the celebrators couldn’t depart because the creeks were all overflowing, so the men cut down a pine tree, made a dugout, and ferried people across. She describes Sandy as six feet two inches tall with a “straight and fine build, traceable perhaps to some Cherokee blood on his mother’s side…”

Sandy was elected to the state legislature from northern Clark County in 1852. After the Whig movement faded, he probably became a Democrat although taking little interest in politics, and when asked about his politics he would say, “I was a Whig”.

Mrs. Cubage recalls some anecdotes that give insights into Sandy’s character:

The family was a large one, and the washpan often couldn’t be found when it was needed. Apparently deciding that the situation couldn’t be tolerated any longer, Sandy, who did nothing by halves, determined that the first time he went to the store he would buy six washpans, and did so. “On his return with great gusto”, she writes, “he selected one for himself. With a small nail he nailed it securely to the washstand. He then filled the pan with water and bathed his face and hands with satisfaction. Then standing there with water dripping from his face and hands, how was he to throw out the water? Mrs. Clingman still laughed heartily when she referred to it as the time Dr. Clingman nailed down the washpan.”

She also writes about him going to Arkadelphia, and coming back with hats, one for his daughter Mattie and one for each of his three Jones granddaughters, each apparently chosen with thought as to suitability to its wearer. One of the recipients remarked that, “To me it was lovely not alone for its beauty and durability, but because my dignified old grandfather had selected and given it to me.” It must have been Mrs. Cubage herself, walking from the woods with a bouquet of wild flowers for her grandmother, who overheard Sandy call out to his wife “Ann, Melinda has a beautiful carriage!” and grandmother’s reply was characteristic

\textsuperscript{120} Others have written about the Clingman residence being four miles north of Amity; inasmuch as the site of Amity was moved, both descriptions may be correct.
of her, “Yes, yes, Mr. Clingman she has.”

A neighbor told the following, Mrs. Cubage reports:

“I met Dr. Clingman walking, leading his horse. On inquiry he said ‘I saw a Betsy bug on its back, it seemed not to be able to get up. I got off my horse to turn it over and just haven’t found a stump to get back on again’. At that time the doctor weighed 240 pounds.”

Frances Speer related nearly the same story, but the horse was a blind mule, probably all that was left to him after the Civil War.

The War took a severe toll on the family. Sandy believed that he could do more good at home than in going off to war, put ‘non-combatant’ on his door and did medical service for both sides. Mrs. Cubage reports that five of his six sons lost their lives in the Southern cause, and while essentially correct, this is imprecise: There were eight sons, two of whom died in infancy. Three others actually died during the Civil War, one died in 1870 and one in 1871, the latter two from the war’s effects. They all had aspired to professional careers in medicine, the law or the ministry. Only Arthur lived on until 1919.

The following appears in the church record at Antioch Church of Christ in Delight, Pike County, Arkansas:

“Antioch Congregation, the Church of Christ, first Lord’s day in February, 1868. This day the congregation being in session, Bro. A. B. Clingman, being presented to the official station of Evangelist (or minister of the gospel) by the imposition of hands, whereupon, pursuant the aforesaid appointment and presentation, ordination in due form was administered to A. B. Clingman by Elder William Kelley, a regular ordained Evangelist chosen for that purpose. Assisted by Wesley Kelley, Evangelist.”

Frances Speer remarked that of course he had no training for the ministry. He went away by himself to think, then preached a sermon. The old account books that Mrs. Cubage saw contained, written in every available place, passages of scripture; she writes, “...on the rounds [i.e., rungs] of his great chair there was a place for his Bible, tablet and pencil.”

Mrs Cubage:

“After the Civil War Dr. Clingman was all broken up. His family was all gone. He had spent money and gone in debt to the limit for the medicine to alleviate the suffering of friend and foe. He was collecting practically nothing from his practice. In his long practice he had accumulated a number of prescriptions which he called Specifics. He got these together on three large sheets of paper and called them ‘My Practice’. He traveled over Clark, Pike and Montgomery counties on horseback and sold enough of them at $12.50 to settle all his indebtedness. This was in 1878-79. By this time he had become too large and heavy to travel on horseback and practice medicine regularly...”

These Specifics eventually were printed, and Mr. Allen Syler of Arkadelphia found a copy
that he copied for me. There are more than twenty recipes, one of which I have copied below:

FOR FLUX, CHOLERA, CHOLERA INFANTUM AND DIARRHEA. ALSO CHOLERA MORBUS

Worth One Thousand Dollars. If confided in and used faithfully, many lives will be saved.

-----:o:-----

Take of best Rheubarb, 1 drachm; Pulverized Cloves, ½ drachm; Pulverized Cinnamon, 1 drachm; Sulphate of Potash, 1 drachm; Pulverized Doctorine Aloes, 1 drachm; Bicarbonate of Soda, 1 drachm; Gum Guiacum, pulverized fine, 1 drachm. Mix.

DIRECTIONS

Dose for an adult—One teaspoon even full of the powder, and a dose every hour until it acts well upon the bowels. Put the dose into a teacup and pour on it four tablespoonfuls of boiling water, and stir well; then take it as warm as you can without scalding the mouth. A young person about ten years old will take half as much; one about five years old one-fourth as much; one about three years old, one-sixth as much; one two years old, one-eighth [sic] as much; one a year old, one-twelfth as much, and some less for six months old. Add less and less water according to the size of the dose. After it acts well, discontinue until the action is over twelve hours, and repeat, if not relieved, until a bright healthy bile appears. If dose is thrown up, wait a little and repeat.

A. B. CLINGMAN, M. D.

The remaining Specifics (spelled here as in the originals) are the treatments for Scarlet Fever and Diptheria; The Great Zeopoten\(^\text{121}\), Biliary Remittent Fever, commonly called Biliary Fever; Pneumonia, including Influenza, Catarrh, and all Colds and Inflammation of the Lungs; General Fever; Typhoid Fever; Dropsy; Croup; Rheumatism; Neuralgia; Erysipelas; Convulsions, or Fits; Biliary Cholic, or Cramp Cholic, or any severe pain in the stomach or bowels; Vermifuge (worm medicine); Disease of the Liver, and Biliousness, Torpor of the Liver and Want of Healthy Secretion; Sick Headache; Bloody, or Serous Cholera; Diarrhea, or Looseness of the Bowels. There is also a liniment recipe; Clingman’s Magic Electric Painkiller (I don’t understand its electric quality—it contains acetic acid, turpentine, eggs, kerosene, opium and chloroform); cough and cold pills; The Mother’s Joy, for cholera infantum or summer complaint of children; and Flux Specific or Powerful Remedy for Dysentery.

During his old age, Sandy, always a lover of nature, sat on the west end of his long porch watching the birds, bees, cloud formations and stars. He is said to have had a fine singing voice, and often sang his beloved old hymns such as *How Firm a Foundation* and *Onward Christian Soldiers*.

Mrs. Cubage wrote in conclusion,

\(^{121}\) A search of the Internet and a modern dictionary for the word ‘zeopoten’ brings no definition, but the directions for the compound indicate that it should be both taken by mouth and rubbed on a pained part.
"These memories of Alexander B. Clingman have been written that his descendants might know something of his life and character."

Her article has been extremely helpful to me, and all his descendants should be grateful to her for putting her memories on paper.

By about 1881, Arkansas physicians and surgeons were required to register in order to be permitted to prescribe narcotic medications. Dr. Clingman registered in Clark County on 10 June 1881 as a physician (the choice was Physician or Surgeon or Both), as a resident. Those newly-arrived in the county seem to have been examined for proficiency, but those already resident in the county were simply registered.

Alexander Brandon ‘Sandy’ Clingman died 17 or 18 September 1881, (newspaper and gravestone dates). The Southern Standard, published at Arkadelphia, Arkansas on Saturday, 24 September 1881 contained the following:

"Dr. A. B. Clingman, of Amity, is Dead"

"Died, at his residence near Amity, Dr. A. B. Clingman on Sept 17, 1881. He was sick but a short time.

"Dr. Clingman was an old and highly respected citizen of Clark County for many years, and everybody who knew him will regret to learn of his death. His bereaved family have our deepest sympathies."

The following was also published (presumably in the Little Rock paper), but since several known errors are contained in it, one has to take it with a grain of salt:

"TO HIS REWARD.

"The Life and Death of Dr. Alexander Brandon Clingman, a Prominent Arkansian.


"Editor Arkansas Democrat:

"We have again the solemn task to record the death of one of the ‘old land marks’ of Arkansas, and I may add, one of our best citizens. Dr. Alex. B. Clingman, who died after a short illness at his late residence near Amity, in his seventy-fifth year, lacking from September 17, to November [sic] 22, of being seventy-five years old. He was born in Surry county, North Carolina, November 22, 1806. His father (Jacob [sic] Clingman) was a great German merchant of Huntsville, that county. His mother’s maiden name was Ann Poindexter. He was double cousin to Hon. Thos. L. Clingman, of that state. He was educated in the rudiments of English under Andrew [sic] Poindexter, his uncle; studied medicine under the late celebrated Dr. Clayton, of Georgia; was married to his cousin, Ann M. Clingman, Sept. 8th, 1829; moved to Hardin county, West Tennessee, the same year, where he began the practice of his profession. He subsequently moved first to Madison county and then to Gipson [?] county, Tennessee; from thence to Arkansas. He landed in Clark county Dec. 31st, 1835, near where Clear Spring now is. After having lived in several places he finally settled down four miles north of
Amity in 1850, where he died.

"In politics he was a whig, but when that party was dissolved he attached himself to the Democratic party and remained with it through all its vicissitudes. But it was as a Christian that his good qualities and giant intellect shown out most brilliantly.

"He was immersed by Elder Allen Hindrick [sic], of Tennessee, in the year 1833, and joined the Church of Christ there, since which time he lived the life of a sincere, devoted Christian, always consistent, of the most childlike, profound faith in his attachment to his church, unwavering to the hour of his death.

"He represented Clark county in the lower house of the legislature in 1852-3 with Col. Jas. L. Witherspoon. He was a member of the masonic order for over thirty years.

"He was a man of the largest ability mentally, when exerted; was of the greatest benevolence, consequently never accumulated any great amount of property. His wife, with whom he had lived fifty-two years, survives him. He raised a large family, but all have gone before him except three. Arthur K., his only son, lives near Homer, Louisiana; Jane Poindexter Jones, wife of Dr. A. Jones, and Mattie A. Stridland [sic: Strickland], living with her mother.

"He will be greatly missed by a large circle of friends, perhaps more so that any man in this part of the state.

"[signed] A FRIEND."

He did not make a will. Some of Clark County’s estate papers were not in good order when I began to collect documents; later, some papers were scooped out of a basement room in the courthouse and sent to the library at Ouachita Baptist University for sorting and safekeeping. The estate papers I found mention real estate worth $2,630 and some additional real estate. Son Arthur and daughters Jane and Mattie, the living children, received shares. Son A. M.’s children Joseph Clingman and Ida Clingman Wooten divided their father’s portion; and daughter Elizabeth Ann’s daughters M. J. Garner, A. M. Harris and Susan E. Parrish divided their mother’s share. It is possible that more estate papers have been or will be unearthed; I’m sure I don’t have the complete picture, especially because the widow is not mentioned.

Alexander Brandon Clingman has two gravestones at Jones Valley Cemetery near Caddo Gap, on land belonging at one time to his daughter Jane and son-in-law Dr. Alfred Jones. The one stone, which is probably the original, lies flat on the ground. Surmounted by a Masonic emblem, it gives his name as Rev. A. B. Clingman, then states his birth and death dates. The engraving appears primitive. The second stone, which matches that of his wife and is decorated with an open Bible, reads,

"Dr. A. B. Clingman born in Surry Co, N.C. Nov. 22, 1806. Married in 1829, and moved to Tennessee thence to Arkansas in 1835. Joined the church of Christ in 1833. died a consistent member thereof on Sept. 18, 1881."

Directions for finding the cemetery: From the Indian monument in Caddo Gap, driving to Arkansas Highway 8 and driving southeast toward Glenwood, it is .9 of a mile to the left turn onto Jones Valley Road. Once on Jones Valley Road, take the right fork and you will
pass the cemetery, which is on the left and uphill from the road.

The Clingmans are not buried in the cemetery where their gravestones have been installed. Arkansas had, at least until 1999, no law protecting cemeteries. If one owns or buys land on which an old cemetery is located, one may bulldoze or otherwise destroy it. Some descendants, fearing this would happen to the old Old Bethel Cemetery near Glenwood where the Clingmans are buried, moved Sandy’s two stones and his wife’s stone to Jones Valley, the cemetery and land around it being owned by family members.

The actual burial place is on land owned (1997) by Mrs. Polly Sorrels of Amity, in the Northeast ¼ of the Northeast ¼ of Section 17, Township 5 south, Range 23 West in Pike County, an area that was once part of Clark County. Across the road is land owned (1997) by a couple named Sloan. Although it is overgrown and its old woven-wire fence has fallen down, one can see that there are depressions where graves are located and some plants that are obviously not native. A couple of large fieldstones remain, and I wonder whose graves they mark. (In addition to this old Old Bethel Cemetery there is an Old Bethel Cemetery, and a Bethel Cemetery that is called ‘new’.)

Siblings, surname Clingman
  [Dr. Alexander Brandon]
  Elizabeth Lanier; died at about five years of age
  Francis Poindexter, married Affia Rose, went to Burnt Corn, Alabama; issue unknown
  Dr. Henry Pattillo married Emily Meer Magee, widow of Samuel Nixon; issue

See Illustrations Number 38.

Parents are Numbers 76 and 77.

39 – Ann Martha CLINGMAN was born on 10 December 1810 or perhaps 25 December 1810, probably at or near Columbia, South Carolina to Michael Clingman and his first wife, whose surname has been guessed at as Kizzee, Kizzie or Casey.

The 10 December date is found in a family bible owned by Ann Martha’s sister Mary Louise Clingman Hobson until her death in 1885. It then went to her grandson William Alexander Hobson of Pueblo, Colorado. Its present whereabouts are unknown to me. The contents of the family pages were copied at the time of Mary Louise’s death and the copy made its way to the South Caroliniana Library at Columbia, South Carolina.

The birthdate of 25 December (the year is consistently 1810) is found on Ann Martha’s gravestone at Jones Valley Cemetery. (See her husband’s story for cemetery information.)

Ann Martha’s mother died some time after Mary Louise’s birth in 1814, and her father remarried about 1817 (his wife’s name is unknown) and had two more daughters, then he died. My understanding is that her step-mother remarried possibly to a Mr. Johnson and perhaps had more children (but I haven’t seen names), then after the step-mother’s death, the four Clingman children from Michael’s first marriage went to his brother Peter Clingman in
Surry County, North Carolina, and lived under his guardianship.

Losing her mother, adjusting to a new home situation with a step-mother, losing her father: these experiences must have been really difficult for children like Ann Martha and her siblings to endure. She probably looked forward to living in the relatively stable atmosphere of Peter Clingman and his sister-in-law Jane Clingman’s household, yet must have missed her two young half-sisters.

Lewis Brumfield\textsuperscript{122} found Ann Martha’s name on the Clingman store ledger in Huntsville, Surry County on 11 December 1826, the earliest indication that Michael’s children had gone to live with Peter. The legal action on the guardianship did not occur until 13 February 1827, when the Surry County Court minutes contain this entry (original spelling retained):

“Order by the court that Peter Clingman be appointed Guardian to Catherine C. Clingman, An M. Clingman, Arther A. Clingman and May [Mary] L. Clingman of Surry County children of Michael Clingman deceased late of Orangeburg District of South Carolina and execute bond put at the sum of [?] $5000 with George J. Holcomb and Henry P. Poindexter his security. The Testio ex _______ approving said securities was Elijah Thompson, William Mackie and Alfred Martin Esq.”

It was here that Ann Martha Clingman and Alexander Brandon “Sandy” Clingman fell in love. Perhaps it was love at first sight; Ann Martha was already 16, and Alexander was a couple of years older. If Peter or his sister-in-law Jane Poindexter Clingman had seen it coming, they might have warned the young people that cousins shouldn’t marry, thus averting the crisis brought about by the two strong-willed cousins who would marry in spite of everything. As it was, the family must have been in turmoil, because Peter threatened to disinherit Sandy, then did so when Sandy and Ann Martha refused to obey his ultimatum and married anyway.

Sandy seems to have gone to Georgia to take his medical training before they were married in Surry County, North Carolina on 22 September 1829. The marriage bond is dated 8 September, and the bondsman is William C. Mosby. They must have departed for the west soon after, because they were living in Hardin County, Tennessee by May of 1830.

During their sojourn in Tennessee, they met an evangelist named Kendrick who baptized both of them, and they joined the Church of Christ, becoming charter members of the Antioch Church of Christ in Delight, Arkansas after settling near there.

The trek west must have been difficult for a young mother, but the Clingmans went to Arkansas in 1835; whether it was before or after Mary Catherine’s birth in June of that year is not known. Nine more children were born to the Clingmans in Arkansas, including one pair of twins. Sandy and Ann Martha honored their aunt, Jane Poindexter Clingman, by naming their third daughter ‘Jane Poindexter’.

\textsuperscript{122} See footnote with the biography of person Number 38.
It is not known whether Ann Martha grew up in a slave-owning family, but there were slaves in the Peter Clingman-Jane Poindexter Clingman establishment, so she was no doubt used to personal service. Doing all the physical work of a large household would have been difficult without the additional burden of getting used to lack of help, for the Arkansas Clingmans possessed no slaves.

Deep sadness came to Ann Martha in the loss of many of her children. Mary Catherine died in 1838 of convulsions. One of the twins, Thomas Lanier died in 1847. William Wycliffe Robinson died in 1851. Elizabeth Ann died in 1861, leaving a family. Three sons died in the Civil War and two more died young because of illness or injury sustained during their Confederate Army service.

By 1860, nine-year-old granddaughter Mary Jane Robinson, daughter of the Clingmans’ daughter Elizabeth Ann, was living with the Clingmans, so she enjoyed the advantage of some of the most gracious living to be found on the Arkansas frontier.

Mrs. Cubage reports that Ann Martha observed the conventions of the time, referring to her husband as “Mr. Clingman”; she noticed and called her husband’s attention to the fact that one of the granddaughters “carried herself well”. She is said to have laughed heartily when recalling the day Dr. Clingman nailed the washpan down. Frances Speer, however, remembered being told by someone who had known her, that Ann Martha was “rather cold”.

During Dr. Clingman’s old age, Ann Martha did some doctoring in his stead. Arkansas began to require physicians to register as a condition for prescribing narcotic medications, and she registered in Montgomery County as a physician (but not as a surgeon) on 17 November 1881, shortly after his death. Interestingly enough, her sex is stated on the form: “Female”. The registrations are written in a ledger and do not contain the doctors’ signatures.

Ann Martha Clingman died 19 September 1884. Her unmarked grave is near that of her husband in old Old Bethel Cemetery, but her stone has been moved, as his was, to Jones Valley. Her stone is decorated with an open Bible, and inscribed, “Ann M. Clingman Consort of Dr. A. B. Clingman born Dec. 25, 1810 died Sept 19, 1884” followed by a beautiful tribute in verse:

\[
\text{Pause not to mourn for her;}
\text{up, and be doing.}
\text{Follow the path she tread before}
\text{Hourly and daily her life-work renewing.}
\text{Speak peace to the troubled,}
\text{give bread to the poor;}
\]

The Southern Standard published at Arkadelphia, Arkansas published the following among the Amity items on Saturday, 27 September 1884:

“The King of Shadows has taken from us many of our loved ones recently. Among whom was our old friend Col. P. Curtis, and good old mother Clingman, wife of Dr. A. B. Clingman, lately deceased.”
From Clark County obituary abstracts, Book A 1869-1900, dated 4 October 1884:

“Ann Martha relict of the late Dr. A. B. Clingman died at Amity on the 19th of September after a short illness of abscess of the left lung. She leaves 3 children – had lived in this county for more than 50 years.”

When Ann Martha’s son-in-law Dr. Alfred Jones applied to the Clark County court for letters of administration on her estate, he set forth that the value of the estate was about three hundred dollars. However, before the estate was settled, her half-sister, Mrs. Sarah F. A. Hutchinson’s estate was being settled in Linn County, Oregon, and Ann’s estate received a one-third share of that estate, amounting to $500. Ann’s heirs were listed: Her daughters Jane P. Jones and Mattie A. Strickland, her son A. K. Clingman; and M. J. Garner, Ann Harris and Susan Parish children of Elizabeth Cross who was daughter and heir of Ann M. Clingman; and Joseph I. Clingman and Ida C. Wooten heirs of A. M. Clingman who was son of Ann M. Clingman. Correctly, of course, M. J. Garner was Mary Jane (Robinson) Garner (I’ve always thought that stating initials for Mary Jane made it seem like she was a male); Elizabeth’s Cross daughters were Ann Martha (Cross) Harris and Susan Elizabeth (Cross) Parrish.

I found it surprising that these half-sisters, Ann Martha Clingman and Sarah Hutchinson, had kept in touch, taking into account that they had been separated when they were very young.

Siblings, surname Clingman
  John Alexander, died young
  Catherine E.
  [Ann Martha]
  Arthur A.
  Mary Louise, married Stephen F. Hobson; issue

Halfsiblings, surname Clingman, from her father’s marriage to Miss
  Sarah A. (or F. A.) married Mr. Hutchinson; no issue
  Dorcas

See Illustration Numbers 39.

Parents are Numbers 78 and 79.

44 – Isaac RUNYAN II was born 17 March 1793 to Isaac Barefoot Runyan and his wife Margaret née Rambo. He was likely born in Jefferson County, Tennessee, in the part that was cut off to form Sevier County in 1794. No document has been found indicating that Isaac called himself Isaac Runyan II, but it is necessary to somehow distinguish him from his father, who didn’t always use ‘Barefoot’ as part of his name.

---

123 Clark County, Arkansas Probate Book H, Page 506.
124 No explanation is given to account for the fact that Elizabeth Ann Clingman was the widow of Dr. John B. Robinson when she married Dr. Joshua H. Cross.
Mrs. Wright found a muster roll stating that during the War of 1812, Isaac II served in Captain Christian's Company of Militia, in the Infantry Regiment commanded by John Brown. He was discharged in 1814 in Bledsoe County, Tennessee.

Mrs. Wright believes that the Runyan clan including the patriarch Isaac Barefoot, moved west about the time of the War of 1812, branches of the family settling in the counties of Meigs, Rhea and Bledsoe.

The Runyans were in Bledsoe County in October, 1817, when Isaac and his father signed a petition. No marriage record has been found, but Isaac probably married Mary Lowery in Bledsoe County, whose marriage records do not survive, or a nearby place about 1821. The Runyans must have been in Tennessee in 1820; they cannot be found anywhere in a census index, which can be accounted for by the fact that almost all of the 1820 census schedules for eastern Tennessee are lost. Wear Runyan, Isaac's brother, was already in Shelby County, Alabama in 1820; the Alabama schedules seem to be complete and Isaac is not there.

If the birthplace—Alabama—stated on later census schedules for Isaac and Mary's eldest son Jefferson Wesley Runyan is correct, they were already living in Alabama by 1822.

Central Alabama lands were ceded to the United States by the Treaty of Fort Jackson in 1814. War of 1812 soldiers living in Tennessee had had an opportunity to see this territory on their way home from their war service, and the grass there apparently looked greener, so many of them, including the Runyans, began to move there as soon as the land was offered for sale.

In 1832, the Runyans moved from their Shelby County homes to Talladega County, which had just opened for settlement. Isaac's 400 acres of land lay along the Coosa River.

Isaac was appointed Administrator of the estate of his brother Ware Runyan in Talladega County in 1837. At an auction of Ware's property, Isaac bought seed cotton for $42.56% and a saddle for $1.50. The estate information was written into a book by a clerk, so Isaac's signature was not found there.

By 1840, Isaac Runyan was enumerated on the federal census in Talladega County. Mentioning only the head of household's name and sorted by age categories and sex, it appears that the family consisted of Isaac, his wife Mary, five male children, one female child, and one male between 80 and 90 years old. The elderly male was almost certainly Isaac's father, Isaac Barefoot Runyan, because people with a different surname were supposed to be listed separately. The census takers didn't always abide by the rules, however.

125 See second footnote to the biography of Person Number 11.
The family was still in Talladega County in 1850, where Isaac’s occupation is listed on the census as farmer and blacksmith.

**Excursus:** Blacksmithing was a very important occupation in that time and earlier, when horses, mules and oxen had to be shod. The blacksmiths were essential to the prosecution of wars during the time draft animals were employed in war efforts. Pointing up their importance, they adopted the name of their profession in each language, e.g. Smith in English, Schmied or Schmidt in German, Herrera in Spanish and Ferrari in Italian; these surnames are among the most common in their respective languages.

***

The Slave Schedule of the 1850 Census for Talladega County does not contain Isaac’s name as a slave owner. The names of some of the Runyans’ known relatives can be found there, however.

It has been said that some pioneers, when their frontier settlement became so populated that they could see the smoke from a neighbor’s chimney, moved west. This may have been the case with the Runyans, because they were on the move again by about 1858, when they moved to Columbia County, Arkansas. Isaac and Mary must have remained vigorous, although Isaac was already about 65 years old. On 8 December 1858, Isaac bought 240 acres of land near McNeil, and later bought two more tracts of land nearby.

It was while living there that they experienced the loss of two of their sons as a consequence of the War Between the States, although neither was killed in action. Isaac made a claim for his son Thomas’ back pay and a rifle that he had carried with him when he enlisted. It is not known whether Isaac ever received anything as a result of his claim, because of course the Confederacy was bankrupt.

The following, found at the Tennessee State Archives in Nashville on Microfilm Roll 280, part of the series “Compiled Service Records of Confederate Soldiers who served in Organizations from Tennessee, 40th Infantry (5th Confederate Infantry, Walker’s Regiment, Volunteers) [surnames beginning with] J-Y”, contains Isaac Runyan’s signature.

```
"State of Arkansas  
County of Columbia  

"Before me Dave Dixon Clerk of the County Court in & for the County and State aforesaid personally came Isaac Runyan and made oath in due form of law that he is the father of Thomas J. Runyan late a private 4th Corporal of Capt John Aaron’s Company G, Walker’s 40 Tennessee Regiment volunteers (Now Capt Robt. M. Walker’s Company D, 15th Arkansas Regiment volunteers) and that the said Thomas J. Runyan died about the 27th day of April 1862 without leaving widow or child or children and that he mustered into the Confederate service about the 23rd day of September 1861 and that therefore he is entitled to receive all arrears of pay due his deceased son from the Confederate States and at the same time also appeared before me W. J. Cross and J. W. Hartsfield who make oath as aforesaid and say that they knew the deceased and know Isaac Runyan his father and that the facts sworn to are true and that they are disinterested therein.
```
"Sworn to subscribed } } Isaac Runyan
before me this 19th day of } November A.D. 1862 }"

This additional document was found in Thomas J. Runyan's file, containing another example of Isaac’s signature:

"State of Arkansas } }  
County of Columbia } 

"Know all men by these Presents that I, Isaac Runyan do hereby appoint and empower William J. Cross as my true and lawful agent and attorney in fact to draw and receipt for all pay in the written [?] or within?] application due my deceased son named within And generally to do all I could do in recovering the same were I personally present—Witness my hand and seal this 19th day of November 1862."

"Teste  
Z. C. Ross Isaac Runyan  
Daniel D. Smith"

"N.B. I would suggest that I am entitled to $50.00 Bounty for my son.  
"I. R."

Well into their old age, the Runyans made their last move, a shorter one, about 1870. With their sons Wes and Isaac Newton Runyan, they traveled north to Clark County, Arkansas. Isaac purchased land in 1870 and 1871, and disposed of at least a portion of it in 1872 by selling some and deeding some to his children.

Isaac died on 13 August 1873. He possessed enough property that it was necessary to settle his estate, and his son Isaac Newton Runyan was Administrator. The documents that I found interesting among those in his Clark County estate papers are transcribed below. They are archived (2003) at Riley-Hickingbotham Library at Ouachita Baptist University in Arkadelphia, Arkansas.  

The estate was appraised on 26 December 1873 by F. M. Anderson, G. B. Jackson and S. F. Cook”

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item</th>
<th>Value (in dollars)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>9 stock Hogs</td>
<td>$22.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 gray Mare</td>
<td>$100.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Horse</td>
<td>$75.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Mule</td>
<td>$40.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 Pork Hogs</td>
<td>$36.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 head Cattle</td>
<td>$50.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

126 One document among the estate papers indicate that Witherspoon and Pattillo, Attorneys, were engaged to settle the estate. The Pattillo name is in another branch of the family, of course, and there are Witherspoons related to the Crawfords, and I believe to the Runyans as well. I do not know if the attorneys are related to either of those families.
On 10 January 1874, Isaac’s property was sold at auction. Many of the buyers are family members. It is interesting to compare the articles’ appraised valuations with the amounts actually realized from their sale.

"Bill of sale of the property of Isaac Runyan Deceased.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item Description</th>
<th>Valuation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 hand ax auger &amp; hammer</td>
<td>2.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 plow &amp; shovel</td>
<td>.80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 ppr hames</td>
<td>.45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 Chairs</td>
<td>2.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 lard stand</td>
<td>.65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 churn</td>
<td>.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 pans</td>
<td>.80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Water bucket</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Dishes &amp; Castor</td>
<td>1.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 set plates &amp; butter dish</td>
<td>1.30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 lot cups &amp; saucers molasses stand</td>
<td>.45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 crock shugar and spoons</td>
<td>1.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 pp. cords [cards?]</td>
<td>.65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 pp. Tongs &amp; shovel</td>
<td>.90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Kettle skillet &amp; smooth iron</td>
<td>.75</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total Amount $402.25

127 "Stand" is in question. The ‘d’ is not clear, appears more like an ‘a’; could this be a bad misspelling due to mispronunciation of ‘strainer’? The word also appears after the word ‘lard’ and after the word ‘molasses’ in the list of items sold.

128 I did not check the accuracy of the addition.
"I H. C. McCarral do certify that the above is a correct Statement of the property sold on the 10th day of Jan. 1874 belonging to the estate of Isaac Runyan deceased; and that the prices was paid as shown annex to each name.

"H. C. McCarrall" clerk

"Sworn to before me this 10th day of Jan. 1874

"John A. Campbell J. P."

The total value of the estate was $3,171.75, including $165.00 cash (Specie) on hand. Value of land distributed during Isaac’s lifetime to his sons I. N. Runyan and J. W. Runyan may be included in this amount. Several people, including Wm. Thompson,

129 “P. Garner” is doubtless Peter Garner, whose grandson, Jessie Claude Garner would later marry Isaac Runyan’s great-granddaughter, Neva Ann Dafford.

130 I did not check the accuracy of the addition.

131 This is apparently McCarroll’s signature. The certification paragraph appears to be in the handwriting of Campbell.
Joseph Holcomb, W. A. Chamberlin, W. C. Adams, John Thompson, J. P. Jones, Wm. Hall, Daniel Triplett and Dennis Griffin owed money to Isaac. Martin Hilton and Geo. Cook are described as “1 Account” but the meaning isn’t clear.

The estate was eventually distributed to Isaac’s heirs. His son J. W. Runyan signed two receipts:

“Received $35.00 Received February 25 A D 1874 of I. N. Runyan Administrator of the Estate of Isaac Runyan Deceased thirty five Dollars in gold as in part of my Share of Said Est the above receit is baring 10 per cent intrest from date.

“J. W. Runyan”

“Received of the Estate of Isaac Runyan, deceased, Three Hundred and fifty dollars, the same being the amount of the account of said estate against me for lands had and conveyed to me by said Isaac Runyan during his life time, as an advancement on my distributive share in said estate.

“January 20, 1875.

“J. W. Runyan”

Isaac is buried in the “Runyan Row” in Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery (Methodist) about three miles north of Amity in Clark County.

Siblings, surname Runyan

John Wesley, married Nancy Mullendore; issue
Aaron Alexander, married Esther Porter; issue
Tavenor, sometimes called Marcus; killed by Indians about age 15
Ware, married Mary ___________ ; issue
[Isaac II]
Margaret132, married James Holland
Loami Wesley, married first ___________ , issue; married second Nancy White

See Illustrations Number 44

Parents are Numbers 88 and 89.

45 – Mary LOWERY or LOWREY was born 19 May 1801 according to her gravestone. I do not know how or if Mrs. Wright133 found proof that Mary’s maiden name was Lowery. According to census records, she was born in Tennessee, and since

132 Researcher Bill Kerr believes, and I concur, that this Margaret “Runyon”, born about 1799 in Sevier County, Tennessee, found in Internet databases, is likely the child of Barefoot and Margaret (Rambo) Runyan. She may have lived in the home of Aaron and Esther Porter Runyan, accounting for the fact that they named their first daughter ‘Deborah’ so that they wouldn’t have another Margaret in the house. The Hollands named children Wesley, Aaron, Esther, Margaret and Deborah, all Runyan or Rambo names; they also had a John, and several more children who must have been given names from the Holland family. The evidence is circumstantial and we can offer no real proof that Margaret belongs in the family.
133 See second footnote to the biography of Person Number 11.
she married Isaac Runyan who had lived in Bledsoe County at least from the time of the War of 1812 until he moved to Alabama, she probably lived in the same neighborhood.

Excursus: The Lowery surname (Lowry, Lowery, Lawrey Lowrie, Lawry etc.) is often found among the so-called Melungeons, a group of people who are described as dark skinned but with light-colored eyes, and who traditionally keep to themselves and have little to do with their neighbors, purportedly because they were subjected to persecution in the past. Eastern Tennessee is one Melungeon stronghold. Although DNA investigation may have eliminated or diminished the possibility, there has been conjecture that these people may be descended from Sephardic Jews and/or Moors who fled from the Iberian peninsula and arrived in the Americas from the mid-1500's onward, forming the first non-indigenous communities in what was to become the southern United States, from Florida to Virginia, West to Missouri and Oklahoma, and south to Texas. Whatever their ancestry, these early immigrants are believed to have first formed trading alliances with the Native Americans, then began to intermarry and to intermingle their traditions and cultures. Native American nations mentioned are Cherokee, Choctaw, Creek and Chickasaw.

There is a family tradition among the descendants of Isaac Runyan that there was an 'Indian Grandma' in the family. Inasmuch as I have found the ancestry of both Minerva Hillsman Huston Runyan and Margaret Rambo Runyan, and there is no indication of a Native American element, Mary Lowery is a likely candidate for the 'Indian Grandma'. It should be remembered, of course, that no ancestry has been proven for Isaac Barefoot Runyan (see his biography, Person Number 88).

* * *

Two men named Robert Lowery or Lowery—there are too many characters for the name to be 'Lowry'—signed a petition in Bledsoe County, Tennessee in 1817, asking the state legislature to consider building a prison. Also signing were two Isaac Runyans, presumed to be Isaac II and his father, Isaac Barefoot Runyan. The petition on file in Nashville appears to be a hand-copied document because all the 'signatures' are in the same handwriting; we really do not know how much attention the copyist paid to the spellings of the names.

Few Bledsoe County records, such as a possible will for Mary's father, are available due to the destruction of the courthouse in 1908. However, there is a list of War of 1812 Veterans living in Bledsoe County, and Robert Lowery, Jr. is among them. This seems to make Robert, Jr. a contemporary of Isaac Runyan who is known to have served in the War of 1812, suggesting that Robert's sister, if he had one, might also fit into the same age bracket and be a suitable age to marry Isaac, in turn suggesting that Mary might be the daughter of Robert Lowery, Sr. This is pure conjecture. Unless Isaac and Mary Runyan lost a child that we do not know about, they did not name a son 'Robert'.

One William Lowry is enumerated in the 1840 census of Talladega County, Alabama, living very near Mary and her husband Isaac Runyan. An older couple is with them,
suitable in age to be Mary’s parents. When I broached the subject with a descendant of William, I was told that the older people were William’s parents-in-law. However, the census taker was supposed to enumerate separately anyone in the household who bore a different surname from the head (although he didn’t always do so), and I believe it is possible that these people were William’s own parents and perhaps also Mary’s. There doesn’t seem to be a way to prove any of the possibilities. Mary and Isaac did name a son ‘William’.

When her brother-in-law Ware Runyan’s estate was sold at auction in Talladega County in 1837, Mary bought a red heifer for $17.00 and a white heifer for $17.50.

One wonders whether Mary was as much afflicted with wanderlust as her husband, or whether it was she who sought adventure, and how difficult she found the moves they made.

She only lived on only three months after her husband’s death, dying on 14 November 1873. She is buried beside him in the Runyan Row at Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery in Clark County, Arkansas.

See Illustration Number 45.

Parents have not been identified.

46 – Archibald HUSTON was born 13 July 1795 in Laurens County, South Carolina to John Huston and his wife Elizabeth née Adair.

Much of the information on this line was provided by Mrs. Patterson, Mrs. Clayton and Mrs. Ryley.

Archibald’s age makes him a fringe possibility for military service in the War of 1812, but I deem it not likely that he served. Three men with approximately the right name were found, but none seems to be our Archibald. The Virginia man can probably be eliminated because of the geography; while I’ve seen no mention of our Archibald ever going to Mississippi, the two who served in Mississippi units have not been ruled out:

Archibald Huston, Major Smoot’s Battalion, Mississippi Militia
Archibald Huston, Capt. Snapp’s and Capt. Loftus’ Company, Virginia Militia
Archible Huston, Batt’n 7 Reg’t (Perkins) Mississippi Militia

Archibald married Judith P. Borum on 26 October 1826, as stated in the family bible. The marriage probably took place in or near Lawrence County, Alabama; the marriage records found at a Website for Lawrence County do not mention the marriage, nor does a book published about early marriages in Lawrence; neither source claims to be complete. While Judith is his first known wife, his age of about 31 when he married her

---

134 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
135 See the biography of Person Number 47.
makes it seem possible that he had an earlier wife. Mrs. Clayton writes,

"Going back to 1950, my father's brother, Dr. George Hughston who lived in Spartanburg [South Carolina] all his life, became interested in our family history and began corresponding with Tom L. Hughston of Crowell, Texas, son of Newton K. Hughston and grandson of Archibald. I have his letters to my uncle in which he said, 'Grandfather Hughston [referring to Archibald] was married 3 or 4 different times and my father and Edmond Hughston was by his second wife'."

The 'Edmund' mentioned above was John Edmund, and both he and Newton were Judith's sons. Both Mrs. Clayton's and Mrs. Ryley's records, apparently gleaned from the same 1901 family record compiled by Dr. Walter Hughston with the help of John M. Hughston, and copied and circulated around the family, give Archibald's wife's name as Elizabeth. The last names of Bonum, Brown and Borum are mentioned. I believe that Archibald had a first wife Elizabeth with whom he had no children (or none known to me), and her last name could have been any of the above or another name altogether. In the Borum genealogies that I have seen, there is no Elizabeth Borum who could have been his first wife.

Still in Lawrence County in 1830, the family seems to have left there about 1835 when many of Judith's relatives departed; Archibald and Judith had four children before her death in 1838.

In 1840, there is an Archibald Huston in Autauga County and another in Talladega. I believe our Archibald was in Talladega by that date. (It is possible that they are one and the same, that the census taker came around early in Autauga, Archibald then moved to Talladega where the enumerator came around late, was thus counted both places. The rule about taking the count as of a target date was not strictly observed.)

About 1840, he married Nancy Finley with whom he had two more children. She died in 1848.

Archibald married Mrs. Matilda Lawson between 1 June 1849 and 31 May 1850. There is no known issue from the last marriage. They were living in Talladega County in 1850.

His occupation is given as farmer on the 1850 census, and at that time he owned $110. worth of real estate (I have guessed at the figure because the film is so hard to read). The Slave Schedule of the 1850 Census of Talladega County does not include Archibald's name as a slave owner, although some known relatives of the Hustons are listed there.

Mrs. Patterson's family group sheet mentions that the family may have been Presbyterian or Baptist.

Archibald died on 17 April 1872 in Talladega County, Alabama, perhaps at Childersburg. I searched the index of the Probate Court Minutes and the Wills and Inventories for Talladega County, but his name does not appear. No marked grave has been found.
Half siblings, surname Davis, from his mother’s marriage to George Davis
Polly
Hannah
George, Jr.

Siblings, surname Huston
Joseph Hughston\(^{136}\), physician, married Mary V. Martin; issue
Agnes, married Mr. Wilson; no known issue
Jane\(^{137}\), never married
John Farmer, married Elizabeth Moore Mauldin; issue
[Archibald]
Cassy (otherwise Cassie), never married
Leroy, married Mary Ann McCord; issue
Elizabeth, married first Blake Mauldin, issue; married second Rev. William Mitchell

Parents are Numbers 92 and 93.

47 – Judith P. BORUM was born on 17 August 1807 in Prince Edward County, Virginia, to Edmund Borum and his wife Nancy Penick née McGehee (Penick was her middle name). Judith was named for her father’s mother, Judith née Penick, the wife of Abraham McGehee.

Excursus: There is a Boreham parish four miles from Chelsford in Essex, England, and the name Thomas de Borham was recorded there in 1273. Family memoirs suggest the Borums came from England\(^{138}\), but research so far has not confirmed this nor ruled it out. One branch of the family believes that the Borums are of Welsh origin, the name having been apOrum, meaning son of Orum. These ‘ap’ names are pronounced in such a way that apHowell has become Powell, for example. One researcher asserts that the Borum name is German, also spelled Boorem.

***

Judith’s birth date is found in the Edmund Borum family bible owned (1999) by Borum Bishop of Montgomery, Alabama, a descendant of Mary Bishop née Borum. Mrs. Patterson\(^{139}\) believes the entries were written in the bible by Nancy McGehee Borum up to the time of her death. Some later entries are written by various different hands.

\(^{136}\) Changed surname spelling to Hughston, presumably because that spelling was used by Virginia and Pennsylvania families. I suspect that he didn’t like being called HUSSton. He is the ancestor of both Mrs. Clayton and Mrs. Ryley (see the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23).

\(^{137}\) A woman named Jane ‘Houston’, age 58, is living at the home of Archibald’s sister Elizabeth Huston Mauldin Mitchell in Talladega County in 1850. I suspect that she is Archibald’s sister Jane, born in 1791. She probably lived with and helped those of her siblings who needed help; for example, she probably helped Archibald manage his household during the times he was a widower. Mrs. Patterson states that Jane died in South Carolina in 1874, but train service would have been reliable by then, so it is certainly possible for her to have traveled to Alabama and back, perhaps many times. I mention her because her niece, Minerva Hillsman Huston, named a daughter Minerva Jane Elizabeth.

\(^{138}\) Richard Borum, Jr.’s grandson, about 1855, wrote that the Borums came from England; he may have meant that they came from Great Britain, however.

\(^{139}\) See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
The family moved to Wilson County, Tennessee during Judith’s early childhood. Francis Gill writes,

“These folks moved from Virginia to Wilson County, Tennessee about 1806 stopping for ‘one crop’ in Knoxville, Tennessee. Then Edmund took his family to Alabama. The Borums and Hilsmans were staunch Baptists and helped in organizing Baptist congregations, thus the movement of the family.”

Francis’ record shows the 1807 birth of Judith as being in Virginia, so the “about 1806” move to Tennessee must have come a little later than 1806.

They moved on to Lawrence County, Alabama perhaps as early as 1824 but certainly by 1826, and lived near the present town of Hillsboro, near Mallard Creek.

It was in Lawrence County that Judith probably married Archibald Huston, and if not there, in a nearby county. Their marriage is recorded in the family bible mentioned above.

Judith bore four known children to Archibald before her death on 3 May 1838. The bible entry is faded, so the date is not quite certain. It reads, “Judith P. Hughston d’d May 3d 1838”. Between the two letters ‘d’ should be ‘ie’ making the word ‘died’. Mrs. Patterson questioned, considering some space after the 3, whether this date could have been May 30 or 31. My analysis: If the date had been May 30, the superscript would have been th, and if it had been May 31, the superscript would have been st. I have concluded to my own satisfaction, at least, that it has to be May 3d. The surname spelling changed from ‘Hustin’ to ‘Hughston’ between the marriage entry in 1826 and her death entry in 1838. The family had not gone to Talladega County by the time she died, so she is probably buried in Lawrence County, Alabama, although her husband may have lived in Autauga County by 1840.

**Siblings, surname Borum**

- Permelia H. married Alfred Andrew Tisdale; issue
- Sally Cave, married first George D. Patterson; issue; married second Lazarus Drinkard
- Richard McGehee, married Sarah H. Walker; issue
- William Penick, married Rosina Holland; issue
- James Carroll
- John Hilsman, married first Evaline Wright, issue; perhaps married second Sarah Huey
- Nancy Walker, married Robert W. Lawler; issue
- Elizabeth F., married James Newton Gill

---

140 Patterson: “Her middle name was almost certainly Hilsman for her paternal grandmother Sarah Hilsman Borum.”
141 Patterson: “Her middle name is from her great-great-great grandmother Mary Sarah Cave Echols and is the third independent confirmation of this line (Cave) which was in some dispute.”
142 Patterson: “Her middle name is not known by descendants; Forrest is believed to be one of the family names.”
Mary P.\textsuperscript{143}, married Matthew Bishop
Rebecca Gillington\textsuperscript{144}
Verlinda P.\textsuperscript{145}

Parents are Numbers 94 and 95.

48 – Franz Henrich FROHNE was born at Ehrdissen in Schötmar parish, Lippe-Detmold, on 26 September 1748 to Johann Henrich Frohne né Meise and his wife, Anna Maria, whose maiden name is in question; it may have been Bäring, Berning, Branding, Beerman or Ellerkamp, possibly none of those. He was baptized on 27 September; his Godparents were Franz Henrich Meise and Hans Henrich Hunnertage. Franz’ mother was the widow of Christian Wilhelm Frohne, and Meise assumed the Frohne farm name when he married her.

Franz (otherwise Frans) was confirmed in Schötmar in 1762; I cannot decipher the date.

On 28 June 1783, at age 34, he agreed to a marriage contract with Anna Elisabeth Niemann née Krawinkel, the 64-year-old, childless widow of Johann Tons Niemann. He was, of course, marrying the Niemann farm, and he assumed the surname Niemann at the time of his marriage.

Dr. Stephan Barta, who lives at Laa An Der Thaya, about 35 miles north of Vienna, Austria, and who is trying to prove whether or not he descends from Franz (the question arose after he wrote this), translated the marriage contract. He writes,

“It was a pleasure for me to read and to translate this document, but although iuridical \[sic: he must mean judicial\] Latin texts belong to my profession it was not easy for me to put the old German technical terms into proper English. I try to contemplate about our clever ancestor...was he a cool calculator or was this usual in those times? How would I have been in his situation?...”

There are a couple of problems with this contract. It definitely gives Anna’s name as Elisabeth, which must have been her call name; and it consistently states that the Niemann farm is Number 8 in Wahrentrup, when every other place that I find it mentioned, it is Number 3. Stephan’s translation (I have smoothed out his English a little) follows:

“Done at Oerlinghausen on the 28\textsuperscript{th} of June 1783

“Frans Henrich, the legitimate surviving son of the dead Johann Henrich Frohne of Ehrdissen, goes to marry Elisabeth, the surviving widow of the dead Johann Tons Niemann of Number 8 a farm in Wahrentrup. The groom is free, the bride in opposite is in bondage with life and possession to his

\textsuperscript{143} Patterson: “Descendants use Penick for her middle name although it does not appear on the family bible record.”

\textsuperscript{144} Patterson: “Her middle name confirms again the Gillentine ancestor as the spelling became after several generations. Rebecca is from her father’s sister and it is possible that some of the other daughters of Edmund and Nancy were named for his unknown sisters. Some of the girls are named for Nancy’s sisters.”

\textsuperscript{145} Patterson: “No marriage is recorded for her but there is an entry that seems to be for an infant of hers.... If she did have a surviving child it is not with Edmund in the 1850 census.”
gracious lordship. The first [the first-named=he] insists on his freedom, but now is likewise in
bondage and comes to the first named (her) on the possession and brings her with the allowance
[permission?] of his brother\footnote{Half-brother; the heir to the Frohne Hof in Ehrdissen.} Johann Wilhelm Frohne as a gift.

```
1.) 150 Reichsthaler in cash, which is to be paid at the moment for the wine bill and the named debts
2.) 3 cows and 3 other cattle
3.) 3 big and 3 little pigs
4.) a horse and
5.) a bride carriage\footnote{The bride carriage or bride cart is equivalent to a dowry.} which is adequate to her social standard
```

"The last two items (horse and bride carriage) and half of the above-named animals are due in the
moment of the consummation of the marriage; the other animals within three years.

"Taken down in presence of the groom, his [half] brother Johann Wilhelm Frohne and the brother of
the bride Johann Christoph Krawinkel.

As above."

Excursus: Because Anna Elisabeth Niemann’s maiden name was Krawinkel, I also sent
this to Pieter Cramwinkel, who researches all the variations of his surname for his files. I
didn’t expect a translation but he translated it, and takes issue with Stephan’s
interpretation, saying that the sentence above that starts, “The groom is free...” should
read:

"The former [the Sponsum=Groom-to-be] renounces ["re-nuncieret"] his freedom [and] gives
himself in Bondage."

This throws the family’s status—free or in bondage—into question, and I can express no
opinion on which situation is the real one. Pieter is a native of the Netherlands living in
France, and I have smoothed out his English as well. He writes,

"This is very interesting because here we have a (rare?) case of a free person who gives himself freely
into bondage.

"My explanation for this act is\textbf{either} that to buy the bride-to-be free would have been too expensive,
or his lordship did not allow the bride-to-be to be bought out. So there remained only one solution for
the groom: to renounce to his own freedom and become a serf also. And even then he still had to pay,
even for a widowed bride and even in 1783.

"It reminds me of a case, much earlier in 1313, where a Heinrich and his sister Hadewich v.
Crawinckel were called upon to provide services to a certain lord. However, they refused as they
claimed that they were of ‘Free descent’, and that their ancestors had always been free vassals of the
Cleve Count, and therefore did not have to provide these services (in order to claim this they had to
submit four quarters of proven freedom in their maternal line (!), which brings their line back to 1200 or so, which they did. Unfortunately, the charter of this declaration has survived but not the names and dates of the four generations they submitted!

“For quite some time historians believed that Functionaries (called Ministerialen) were originally of unfree descent (Ministerialen are the High Functionaries occupying important positions for Abbots, counts, dukes, etc.). This social class of Ministerialen moved up into the lower nobility rank over time, mixing with Knights and becoming Knights themselves. This case was used by Prof. Dr. Karl Weimann, in his book Die Ministerialität im späten Mittelalter, [Leipzig, 1924], to demonstrate that also some Free men went willingly into Ministerialen status, presumably because the pickings (i.e. jobs with privileges and income or land) were so much better, and presumably because their new bosses would provide them with better (armed) protection than they could do on their own.”

More than we wanted to know?

I admit that I always want to get right down to the nitty-gritty, so I’ve always wondered if the horse, the bride carriage, and the first half of the animals ever changed hands. I was shocked when I found this December-May marriage when I was in my early fifties, and I recall thinking, “That poor old lady”. Widowed at sixty-four myself, after I had a little time to recover I began to think, “Hmmm...that lucky old gal!”

* * *

Anna Elisabeth Niemann died on 12 July 1792 and presumably was buried at Oerlinghausen. Franz didn’t waste any time finding a new bride. Inasmuch as marriages were arranged, and his situation must have been well known in the community, it seems reasonable to think that some preliminaries were already in the works before Anna died. To think that his second marriage was planned before his first is cold-blooded, but it certainly seems possible to me.

The contract for Franz’ second marriage, translated by Pieter Cramwinkel with help from a friend whose name he didn’t tell me:

“Done at Oerlinghausen on the 24th of November 1792.

“The widower and big half-farer148 Frans Henrich Niemann, Number 3 in Wärentrup, is going to the second marriage with Anna Catharina, the legitimate daughter of the settler Johann Jost Kaiser zu Dingerdissen of the Heepen Administrative District.

“The bridegroom has freed (enfranchised) himself out of the bondage and property, with which he was indebted to the most merciful sovereign authority, and the bride, who comes to the groom on the farm of the Niemann family has shown a certificate from the 22nd of this month about the freeing from the bondage of his excellency the Count of Hartsfeld to the treasurer Zegler in Wether (?)

“From the bridegroom’s first marriage there are no children.


---

148 Pieter writes, “I don’t know whether ‘half-farer’ is the proper English expression for the German Halbmeier. This means a man who owns a little bit of land for himself and rents only the other part from the count. Meier also tells us that he was breeding cattle.” For an explanation of the Lippe Meier Laws, see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 24; breeding cattle was not part of the Lippe Meier scheme.
“Done in presence of the bridegroom and the brother\textsuperscript{149} of the bride, Johann Christoph Kaiser zu Dingerdissen.”

The couple was married 21 December 1792, as recorded in the Oerlinghausen church record.

Two sons and a daughter were born to the couple before Anna Katrina’s untimely death on 26 March 1801 at the age of 35.

On 28 December 1801, Franz entered into his third marriage, with Anna Katharina Elisabeth Reue; the couple had one daughter.

Franz died of pneumonia on 8 June 1824 at Wahrenheit, and was buried 11 June 1824 at Oerlinghausen.

His widow was living in Lage with her daughter, who died of typhus on 20 December 1842, and the mother died of ‘old age’ (was it a broken heart?) the following day, 21 December 1842. Both were buried on 23 December 1742 in Lage.

**Half siblings, surname Frohne, from his mother’s marriage to Christian Wilhelm Frohne**
- Anna Ilsabey
- Margreth Ilsabey
- Johann Berend
- Agneta Anna
- Johann Wilhelm

**Siblings, surname Frohne because of their father’s name change from Meise**
- [Franz]
- Tonnies Christoffel

Parents are Numbers 96 and 97.

\textbf{49 – Anna Katrina KEISER ZU DINGERDISSEN} was born at Ubbedissen, Westfalen, Preußen to Johann Jost Keiser zu Dingerdissen and his wife, Anna Catharina née Evert. She was baptized in Oerlinghausen, Lippe, Ubbedissen’s parish seat; the date entered in the church record is 29 October 1765, which seems to be the baptism date. If it is, she was probably born a day or two earlier. Her Godmother was Anna Catharina Schemel. The names ‘Katrina’ and ‘Keiser’ are spelled a number of ways in different documents, and I have chosen to use the spelling (unless quoting) that is carved on a bed owned (2001) by the Niemann family in Wahrenheit.

Anna Katrina was confirmed at Oerlinghausen on 27 September 1778.

**Excursus:** When I began to talk about our ancestress, Anna Katrina Keiser zu Dingerdissen, one of the Wahrenheit Niemanns remarked that they had a bed (actually it is a headboard) in

\textsuperscript{149} He is her half-brother.
the attic, with the word ‘Dingerdissen’ on it; but they didn’t know its significance. We all trooped up to the attic, and there it was, “Anna Katrina Keisers zu Dingerdissen Anno 1792”. The ‘s’ on the name Keiser indicates by use of the German genitive case (possessive case in English) that she is her father’s daughter—a woman belonged to her father until she married, then to her husband. Since 1792 is the year that she married Franz Henrich Niemann, I am making an educated guess that the bed came to the Niemann Hof in her bride carriage, which contained her dowry: housekeeping necessities, and if her family was able to provide them, some luxuries. The bed fits into the latter category. A sum of money might also be part of her dowry, spelled out in the marriage contract. The required contents of the bride carriage were apparently quite standard, and extras might be added according to the family’s wealth.

The camera’s flash made the bed photograph so the wood looks quite a lot lighter than it really is. The bed is very large and extremely heavy. It was all I could do to help its present owner, my cousin Hans-Hugo Niemann, drag it into a better position for taking a picture.

***

After agreeing to a marriage contract on 24 November 1792, Franz Henrich Niemann and Anna Katrina Keiser zu Dingerdissen were married on 21 December 1792. The couple had three children.

Anna Katrina died of pneumonia on 26 March 1801 at Währertrup, and was buried at Oerlinghausen.

Halfsiblings, surname Keiser zu Dingerdissen, from her father’s marriage to Catrina Ilsabein Lücking

- Johann Christoph Keiser
- Johann Henrich Keiser, called Dingerdissen

Siblings, surname Keiser zu Dingerdissen

- [Anna Katrina]
- Hanna Catharine Elisabeth

See Illustration 49.

Parents are Numbers 98 and 99.

50 – Johann Christoph LÜKING’s baptism was recorded on 11 February 1770 in the churchbook of Oerlinghausen, Lippe-Detmold. Oerlinghausen, although it was at that time in a different country, was the parish seat of Ubedissen, Westfalen, Preussen. He was born, probably on that date or a short time earlier, to Johann Christoph Lüking né Hachmeister and his third wife, Ammalia Margareta née Pahmeyer. Ammalia came from another parish, so the pastor at Oerlinghausen didn’t have a birth or confirmation entry to refer to; he records her name differently each time he writes it (her marriage, the births of five children, and her death). Johann Christoph’s Godfathers were Johan...
Henrich Detmar and Johann Joachim Speckman.

He was surely confirmed, but his name cannot be found among those of Oerlinghausen confirmants.

He married Hanne Cathrina Elisabeth Keiser zu Dingerdissen on 5 December 1794, the marriage recorded in Oerlinghausen. He was a bachelor and his bride was a maiden.

The couple lived at the Lüking farm, Number 1 in Ubbedissen, and had eight children.

He was a widower when he died of the debility of old age on 2 July 1853 at Ubbedissen. His funeral and burial on 6 July were recorded in the Oerlinghausen churchbook.

Siblings, surname Lüking
   Johann Hermann
   Anna Maria Elisabeth
   Clara Ilsabein
   Anna Catrina Louisa
   [Johann Christoph]

Halfsiblings, surname Lüking, from his father’s marriage to Anna Christina Ilsabein
   Lüking née Niedermeier
   Johann Christoph (twin), died age nine weeks
   Johann Philip (twin), died age eight days

Parents are Numbers 100 and 101.

51 – Hanne Kathrina Elisabeth KEISER ZU DINGERDISSEN’s baptism was recorded 28 February 1770 at Oerlinghausen, Lippe-Detmold. She was born, probably on that date or a day or two before, to Johan Jost Keiser zu Dingerdissen and his wife, Anna Cathrina née Evert, who lived at Ubbedissen, Westfalen, Preussen. The pastor who recorded the birth didn’t keep the columns on the page lined up very well, and her name appears beside 11 March, which records the next (and last) entry on the page. Consequently, when the pastors looked back to find her birth date when they recorded her marriage and death, they wrote 11 March 1770 as her birth date.

Hanne Kathrina must be the Catharina Dingerdissen who was confirmed at Oerlinghausen on 17 October 1784. No other reasonable possibility can be found in the lists of confirmants.

150 Inasmuch as his younger brother was the heir, either Johann Hermann died young, or did not marry, or married a bigger farm and went there to live.

151 The death of this Johann Christoph Lüking is not recorded in Oerlinghausen, although his twin’s death and that of their mother can be found there. Seeking to solve the puzzle of why the next Johann Christoph, the subject of this biography, was given the same name and was obviously his father’s heir, I looked in his Godparents’ parish of Heepen and found his death recorded there.
Hanne married Johann Christoph Lüking, also of Ubbedissen, on 5 December 1794. She bore eight children to him, and the couple was living in retirement at the *Leibsucht* (dower house) at Number 1 in Ubbedissen when she died of the debility of old age on 16 September 1842. Her funeral and burial were on 19 September.

Halfsiblings, from her father’s marriage to Catrina Ilsabein Lücking

Johann Christoph Keiser

Johann Henrich Keiser called Dingerdissen, married Anna Margarethe Dingerdissen née Brune; issue

Siblings, surname Keiser zu Dingerdissen

Anna Katrina, married Franz Henrich Niemann né Frohne

[Anna Catharine Elisabeth]

Parents are Numbers 102 and 103; their biographies are printed as Numbers 98 and 99 because their daughters’ children married each other.

52 – Friedrich Simon LODEWIG was born on 1 May 1805 at Langenholzhausen Number 65, to Johann Friedrich Bernhard Ludowig (elsewhere Lodwig, Lodewig etc.) and his wife Amalia Charlotte née Depping. He was baptized by the pastor of the Reformed Church at Langenholzhausen on 5 May, his Godfather listed as Simon Heinrich Krüger from Calldorf, a nearby village. His ‘call name’ was ‘Simon’.

He was one of 22 boys and 11 girls confirmed at Langenholzhausen on 26 March 1820.

On 5 May 1833, Simon married Wilhelmine Catherine Grolm from the nearby village of Stemmen. Two sons and four daughters were born to the couple; sometimes the pastor got the names of the parents wrong in the churchbook entries, once writing ‘Simon August’ for the father and ‘Wilhelmine Caroline’ for the mother. Wilhelmine died on 6 December 1851.

The widower Friedrich Simon Lodwig, married Charlotte Sophie Dankworth, also a resident of Langenholzhausen, on 12 April 1852. He had been granted a dispensation from the mourning period, by the Consistory, on 8 March 1852. Twins were born to the couple on 28 December 1852; the girl died shortly after her birth and the boy lived for about a month. Another daughter died in infancy, and one daughter from the marriage grew to adulthood.

The family can be found on an 1854 census of Langenholzhausen: Simon Lodwig, wife Charlotte née Dankwerth, son Wilhelm, and daughters Wilhelmine, Friederike and Henriette. The pastor uses their ‘call names’. Son Heinrich had apparently already gone to Stemmen to manage the Grolm farm, his mother’s inheritance, there.

Wilhelmine, Simon’s eldest daughter with his first wife, came to America, sailing from

---

52 Consistory: Body that oversees churches in its region; the Langenholzhausen churchbook does not name the seat of the Consistory, but I would guess that it was in Varenholz. It might be interesting to search the consistory’s proceedings, if they exist, to find out what facts were mentioned in the dispensation.
Bremen on 20 April 1857 and landing in New York on 1 June. After reaching her destination of Waukon, Allamakee County, Iowa, she wrote to her father and stepmother, telling about the trip and thanking them “a thousand times” for providing things she needed—she mentions Zweibach, butter and a woolen shawl and says she had plenty to eat and drink. She sends greetings from Langenholzhausen emigrants already living in Allamakee, and urges her parents and her brother Wilhelm to come there, too. She later married Friedrich Dittes and has descendants living in Minnesota and elsewhere.

Simon died of pneumonia at eleven o’clock at night on 7 March 1860. His funeral and burial took place on 11 March.

Siblings, surname Lodewig
[Friedrich Simon]
Charlotte Florentine
Sophia Catharine, married August Carl Friedrich Wilhelm Saak; issue

Halflsiblings, surname Lodewig, from his father’s marriage to Florentine Henriette Kiesau
Friedrich Wilhelm, died age about four months
Marie Christine Friederike, married Johann Heinrich Wilhelm Berg; issue

Parents are Numbers 104 and 105.

53 – Wilhelmine Catherine GROLM was born on 5 September 1810 at Number 22 in Stemmen, Lippe-Detmold, to Johann Konrad Grolm (who had also been known by the surnames Kiel and Drekker) and his wife Wilhelmine Katharina nee Rosemeier. She was baptized on 8 September by the pastor at Varenholz, to which parish Stemmen belongs. Her only sponsor was Maria Rosemeier from Almena.

Wilhelmine was confirmed on 24 April 1825 at Varenholz.

Wilhelmine married Friedrich Simon Lodewig of nearby Langenholzhausen, on 5 May 1833. The marriage is recorded in the Langenholzhausen churchbook, and the family lived at Farm Number 65 in Langenholzhausen. They had two sons and four daughters.

She died of dropsy on 5 December 1851 at Langenholzhausen, and her funeral and burial took place on 9 December.

As the eldest daughter, Wilhelmine inherited control of the Grolm property in Stemmen because her brothers had all died young. Her son Heinrich seems to have taken over its management upon the retirement of Wilhelmine’s stepfather, Konrad Sandmeier.

Siblings, surname Grolm
Friedrich Anton, died age 5
Carl Ludwig, died age 4
August Ferdinand (twin), died age 1
Henriette Friederike (twin), never married
[Wilhelmine Catherine]
Friederike Florentine Henriette, married Adolph Christian Hermann Vietmeier; issue
Parents are Numbers 106 and 107.

54 – Friedrich Arnold Christian SÜLLWOLD was born at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold on 24 April 1796 to Friedrich Wilhelm Süllwold and his wife, Wilhelmine Louise Flörke, otherwise Flörke[153]. He was baptized on 1 May by the pastor at Varenholz; his sponsors were Christian Stock and Friedrich Arnold Vorhaar (?). His ‘call name’ was Friedrich.

Listed as Arnold Friedrich Christian Süllwold, he was confirmed on 7 April 1811 at Varenholz; his age was stated as fourteen years and six months. The pastor must have made a guess at his age, because he was really only days short of his fifteenth birthday.

According to the Varenholz parish record, Friedrich Arnold Süllwold of Number 5 in Stemmen married Conradine Florentine Freitag of Number 46 in Rentorf, on 9 August 1829. The couple had fourteen children including three sets of twins, born between 1830 and 1862.

In 1832 the couple built a house on the Süllwold Hof in Stemmen; it was still standing when Ben and I were there at Easter, 2001[154], the original writing over its door kept in good condition by the Groß family, its present owners. In 1858, Friedrich and Conradine built another house, and it too has original writing over the door, stating Friedrich’s name as “Friedrich Süllwold VIII”. Perhaps the family had some kind of farm lore to support that statement; but the name, like many in Lippe-Detmold, comes down through the female line.

Although the eldest Süllwold son was confirmed in Stemmen in 1845, nothing further about him can be found, not even his death in Varenholz parish. He is the only one of the fourteen children for whom I found nothing after his confirmation. The Süllwold farm was inherited by the second son, who never married, and descendants in Germany shared the inheritance when he died. An old letter tells about his will; there was some family envy and pettiness, but all those I know about seem to have been on speaking terms when Ben and I have visited between 1959 and 2005.

Friedrich died of a stroke at the age of 83 on 6 May 1878 in Stemmen. His funeral and burial were on 10 May. It appears from the church record of his death that he was a Leibpächter, leaseholder, at the time of his death. It is possible that the word is instead Leibsuchter, which means ‘retiree’ and makes more sense.

A notation at the end of the death entry was studied by Dr. Don Watson, and he believes that it has something to do with burial in accordance with the wishes of the deceased.

[153] For an explanation of the Lippe Meier Laws, see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 24.
[154] And when I was there during the summer of 2005.
Siblings were not researched.

Parents are Numbers 108 and 109.

55 – Conradine Florentine FREITAG was born at Rentrup, Talle parish, Lippe-Detmold on 21 June 1808 to Hans Friedrich Freitag and his wife Anna Louise Henriette nee Meinolf. The Freitag family dwelt at Number 46 in Rentrup. She was baptized by the pastor at Talle on 26 June; her only sponsor was Maria Elisabet Kleinmann of Rentrup.

Many spellings of the Freitag name were in use, including Freitag, Freytag, Freijtag, and Freydag. Sometimes several spellings were used for the same person as different events in his life were recorded. I am using the ‘Freitag’ spelling consistently unless quoting.

Excursus: Wayne V. Jones hired a noted Austrian genealogist, Karl Friedrich von Frank, to do a great deal of research on his forebears, including the Freitag family in Lippe-Detmold. The research took a long time because of von Frank’s illness, and after his death, Jones hired someone else to finish the work. In 1979, Jones published a book about his findings, The Rieke Family of Bavenhausen and America.

The book contains chapters about a number of families with Lippe-Detmold roots; it has been photographed and is available on microfiche from the Family History Library in Salt Lake City. I found a few statements to challenge, but the research seems to be fairly solid. Without the book, I would not have been able to include the information that it contains about the marriage contracts, because at the time I was researching this line, I didn’t know that I should look for them.

***

In 1816, when Conradine was eight years old, her mother died. Her father remarried in 1818, and his marriage contract appointed guardians for his minor children: Johan Herman Depping or Hans Meyer, Number 8 Hohenhausen, and Ernst Dietrich Freytag called Korf in Malmershaupt. “They made solemn affirmation to the agreement (they were sworn in as guardians).” The contract also stipulated that each of Hans’ children (other than the heir to the farm) “must receive 350 Reichsthalers in large convention Thalers upon getting married,” but excepted (not counting?) the lawful dowry due to each of them from the farm.

The girls, Conradine and her sisters, were to receive their mother’s clothing, and the siblings (the heir excluded) were to divide the linenware and beds.

Conradine was one of twenty girls confirmed at Talle in 1822.

She married Friedrich Arnold Christian Sullwold of Stemmen on 9 August 1829, according to the Varenholz parish record. She bore fourteen children to him, including

155 5672 Longmont Drive, Houston Texas 77056.
156 Printed by D. Armstrong Company, Inc., Houston, Texas.
three sets of twins, between 1830 and 1862.

Lore: John A. Streiff, Conradine’s great-great-grandson, related the family lore that his grandmother’s grandmother had three sets of twins. He did not know her name. When we actually found the German records, the lore proved to be exactly true: John’s mother was Anna Schmidt Streiff and his grandmother was Lina Grolm Schmidt; Lina’s mother was Johanne Süßwold Grolm, whose grandmother was Conradsine Florentine Freitag Süßwold.

***

When the Süßwolds built houses on the farm at Stemmen, her name was inscribed above the doors “Conradine,” implying that that was her ‘call name’.

A Website maintained (2004) by a Lippe family historian and researcher displays transcriptions of several Lippe “house writings”, among them the following, spellings from the Website:


King James Version of the Holy Bible, Psalm 4, Verse 8. “I will both lay me down in peace, and sleep; for thou, Lord, only makest me dwell in safety.” My translation of the last sentence: “Friedrich Süßwold and Conradine had this house built. M. S. 1832.”

Sorrow came to the family when a daughter was stillborn in 1835, and one twin of the second set died at the age of six months in 1836.

Three sons and one daughter immigrated to America; one son settled in Buffalo County, Nebraska, the others in Seward County.

Widowed more than eight years earlier, Conradine died at Stemmen of the debilities of old age on 2 September 1886. Her funeral was on 5 September, recorded at Varenholz.

Siblings, surname Freitag

Sophia Louisa
Anna Dorothea Sophia, married Hans Herman Johanningsmeyer
Hans Henrich, married first Anna Marie Sophia Schnuermeyer, issue in U.S.A;
made second Conradine Louisa Nieweg

While Psalm 4 does not contain a Verse 9 in English versions, a modern German bible does contain a Verse 9: „In Frieden leg’ ich mich nieder und schlafe ein; denn du allein, Herr, läß mich sorglos ruhen.“ My German is sufficient to be sure that Verse 8 in English is a translation of Verse 9 in German.

Hans Friedrich Freitag’s marriage contract with second wife Anna Maria Sophie Siekhans states that he has six children from his first marriage, and names these children, but the names do not jibe with the ones I found in the Talle birth registers. Names in the marriage contract: Wilhelmine Conradine, Sophie Dorothea, Hans Henrich, Conradine Florentine, Herman Friedrich, Caroline Florentine. Their ages are given, and the official drawing up the contract estimated birth years for them.

The heir.
Herman Friedrich, perhaps married a Fraulein Kuhmann
Caroline Florentina
Unnamed infant

Parents are Numbers 110 and 111.

56 – Carl GUMBEL was born between five and six o’clock p.m. on 31 August 1808 in Niedermöllrich, Hessen to Hans Curt Gumbel and his wife Elisabeth née Schäfer. I have not seen the church record of his Christening; no filming of the church records of that area has been done by the LDS, and I didn’t feel the necessity for seeking them in Germany because the civil record seemed to be sufficient documentation. The very structured civil record, a requirement during Napoleon’s rule of the region, was created on 1 September 1808, and the pastor of the church in Niedermöllrich, Friedrich Josias Geiss, is mentioned; this may mean that Carl’s baptism was on that date but if that is stated, I failed to decipher it. The handwriting is hard to read.

Pastor Geiss signed the document, along with Hans Kurt Gumbel, Johannes Schäfer, and Hans Kurt Pippert.

Carl was literate, so one can safely assume that he went to school in Niedermöllrich. While the birth record spells his name with ‘C’, he signed his will ‘Karl’.

His father was a master blacksmith, according to Carl’s birth record, and Carl followed that profession; at the time of his first marriage, his occupation was listed as farrier (translation from the German Hufschmied); by the time he emigrated, his profession was listed as master blacksmith. The 1850 Illinois census gives his name as ‘Charles’ and his occupation as ‘Laborer’.

While many Germans were given a number of names, Carl got only one, or at least only one is mentioned in the civil record. A number of family records have perpetuated the ‘fact’ that his name was Verden Carl Gumbel. I had a theory for a while, that the family may have stayed at the town of Verden, near Hamburg, for a time as they made their way toward that port city, and perhaps he talked enough about their stay there that people began to call him ‘Verden’.

A much more likely explanation has come from Silke Habenicht. She lived in the United States for several years and her English is extremely good. Taking into account Carl’s profession, shoeing horses, she theorizes that he might have been called “Pferden (horses) Carl”, and Pferden was misunderstood by Americans as ‘Verden’.

Carl was confirmed at Niedermöllrich in 1823.

He married Sabina Ritter in 1831; the marriage date in the family record is 26 November.

See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
Jutta Wicke made a photocopy of the church record for me, and if a marriage date is given, it is on a part of the page that is cut off. The banns were proclaimed on 27 November and 4 December and 11 December 1831. Lilo Habenicht states the marriage date as 26 December 1831, and I regard this as most likely correct, as she researches with professional expertise. The marriage record is written in a rather shaky hand, making me wonder about the mental acuity of the pastor; perhaps his brain was also a bit shaky. Sabina’s mother’s maiden name is given as Pippert, when in reality she was a Vollmar as stated in Sabina’s civil birth record. It is possible that some of the dates given are also in error.

The couple had eight children, and Sabina died soon after the birth of the last, in the spring of 1847.

On 13 August 1848, Carl married Anna Catharina Dreuscher. Her name is mistakenly given as Deischer in Illinois records. There has been speculation among family members in Germany that she was somehow related to Carl’s first wife, perhaps even a sister—possible if she was a widow whose married name was Dreuscher. Before the German relatives stated that theory, I noticed that in her photo, Catherine looked a lot like Aunt Fannie Sanders née Gumbel, my mother’s sister (see Person Number 7), which tends to give further credence to the theory that she and Sabina were related. Family records state that the couple had four children, none of whom lived to reach adulthood. I have been able to document only three.

Carl Gumbel’s application to emigrate from Hessen with his eight children and depart for America was approved on 23 April 1850. His wife is not mentioned on the transcription that Lilo Habenicht provided to me, but she certainly was a part of the group. The eighth child, of course, is from the second marriage. Also in the party were Adam and Heinrich Wenderoth of Niedermöllrich, who already had relatives in Illinois. The release date, on which it was legal for them to depart, was 1 June 1850. Carl had in his possession 500 Thalers in gold.

When I found “Jolly Gumbel” in an Illinois state census index, I was very puzzled about him or her, because I thought I knew the names of the Gumbels there. Eventually I was able to figure out that he had translated his name and was calling himself “Charlie” which came out “Cholly” in his German accent, and which in turn the enumerator heard as “Jolly”. On another census, he was Charles Gumbal.

*The Portrait and Biographical Record of Mason and Tazewell Counties in Illinois*, which was published about 1890, in an article about “Charles” Gumbel’s son Adam, contains this:

“...They came to America in 1850 and located on a farm, where our subject [Adam] is at present making his home. There the father [Carl] built a log house, in which the family lived until 1863, when he erected a commodious frame structure, which his son is now occupying. His first purchase of land in the New World included forty acres, which was the largest amount he could pay for, as there had been much sickness in his family. He left at his death, in 1884, however, an estate of one hundred and twenty acres of finely improved land. Religiously, he was a member of the Evangelical Church, in

---

161 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
162 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
which he was Class-leader, and in politics he was a staunch Republican...."

Widowed for the second time in 1879, Carl Gumbel died on 23 November 1884 in Mason County, Illinois, where he is buried in Zion Cemetery near Bishop, sometimes called Bishop's Junction, which is no longer a town but only a landmark. He has a marble gravestone that is somewhat hard to read, and doubtless will erode away further.

His will was written in German, and a transcription of its translation (spelling retained) by an unknown person, which is part of the Mason County court record, follows:

"In the name of the Lord Jesus, Amen!

"I the undersigned Karl Gumbel, residing near Forest City, in Forest City Township, Mason County, Illinois, being of sound mind and memory, realizing the uncertainty of human life, make this my last will and testament, hereby revoking all my former wills and testaments; and in as much as God has blessed me with temporary [tempory] goods, I hereby determine how the same are to be disposed of after my decease.

"1. In as much as I have sold to my son Adam Gumbel all my immovable (Real Estate) as: S¼ S W¼ of the SE¼ of Lot No. 11 containing 40 acres, more or less, also the N¼ of Sect 24 containing 80 acres more or less, also the SW¼ of Section 13, 40 acres more or less, all of said lands is in Township No. 22, Range No. 7, Mason County, Illinois, for the sum of Three Thousand Thaler. I hereby provide that he pay the sum of Fifteen Hundred Thalers to my surviving children as heirs on the 1st day of March 1880 each his share (Share 250) without Interest.


"I appoint my son Adam Gumbel as Guardian of the 3 surviving children of my deceased daughter Elizabeth Redinger (née Gumbel). He is to safely keep their share ($250 for the three) from the 1st day of March 1880, he is to pay them five per cent from March 1st 1880 until their majority. As soon as Emma Katharina Redinger is of age, my son Adam Gumbel is to pay her her share of the $250. (share $83.33 1/3) with five percent Interest from March 1st 1880. The Interest is however at no time to be added to the principal so as to draw interest again, but is only payable upon the heirs arriving at majority. The same way it is my will that Ernst Otto and John Franklin Redinger, after they have arrived at maturity, be paid their share with five per cent Interest from March 1st 1880, under the same conditions as their sister Emma Kath. Redinger.

"2. In as much as I hold a note of $1,500. with 6 per cent interest against my son Adam Gumbel, I do hereby require the executor of my last will and testament to pay the remainder of said $1,500.00, after all costs, such as there may be for Doctor, funeral expenses, monument and the like, to my lawful heirs as noted above in equal shares and in the following manner:

"One year after my decease my son Adam Gumbel is to pay my above named heirs and children each one third of their shares in the remainder of said said $1,500, two years after my decease the next one third, and in three years after my decease the last one third with 6 per cent interest.

"3. I hereby appoint my son Adam Gumbel the Executor of this my last Will and Testament."
"In witness whereof I have affixed my name with seal this fifth day of June in the year of our Lord One Thousand Eight Hundred Seventy nine.

"[signed] Karl Gumbel  {seal}

[this part in English] "The above instrument consisting of 3 pages was now here subscribed by Carl Gumbel, and was at the same time declared by him his last will and testament, and we at his request and the presents of each other have set our names hereto as attesting witnesses.

"[signed] John W. Himmel  {seal}  [signed] Adam Himmel  {seal}"

I hoped there would be something in the estate papers to tell what his monument cost, but I didn’t find that. Emma Katharine Redinger’s name is later stated in the estate papers as Emma Owen. The Executor was finally released from his duties in 1893.

Siblings, surname Gumbel
   Johannes, married Anna Marie Sauer; issue
      [Carl]
   Wilhelm
   Elisabeth, married Conrad Ellenberger; issue
      (Likely additional siblings)

See Illustration Numbers 56.

Parents are Numbers 112 and 113.

57 – Sabina RITTER was born to Johannes Ritter and his wife Anna Elisabeth nee Vollmar on 8 November 1810 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen. She was baptized there on 10 November. There is something in the civil birth record about 8 o’clock p.m.; I believe it is her birth hour. I was able to read the name of one godmother, Sabina nee Bergmann, wife of Johannes Vollmar of Niedermöllrich. Witnesses to the document are Johannes Ritter, Johannes Vollmar, and Johannes Schäfer, and it is signed by Friedrich Jos. Geiss, the pastor at Niedermöllrich.

She was confirmed at Niedermöllrich in 1824.

She married Carl Gumbel on 26 December 1831 according to Mrs. Habenicht. Her mother’s maiden name is wrong in the church record of the marriage (see Carl Gumbel’s biography). Family records state that the marriage was on 26 November.

Sabine bore eight children to Gumbel before she died from complications of childbirth. Mrs.

---

163 This couple immigrated to Mason County, Illinois and has many descendants in Illinois, Texas, Mississippi and elsewhere.
164 He writes it himself with only one ‘l’. Where others write his name, it is spelled with double ‘l’.
165 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
Wicke researched the Niedermöllrich church records and found that the last child, Heinrich, was born on 30 April and died the same day, and Sabine died on 5 May.

According to the family record, Sabina died on 16 May 1847, about 3 weeks after Heinrich was born. The information Mrs. Wicke found in the church record is certainly more reliable than what was written much later by a family member who either remembered wrong or wrote what someone else remembered wrong.

Sabina Gumbel was buried in Niedermöllrich on 8 May 1847.

Parents are Numbers 114 and 115

58 – Wilhelm NUHN was born 29 February 1808 in Niederaula, Kurhessen, now Hessen, Germany, to Johann Bartol (elsewhere Barthold Valentin) Nuhn and his wife Angelika nee Thamer. He was confirmed in 1822 at Niederaula. After signing a marriage contract dated 17 May 1833, on 20 May 1833 he married Anna Margaretha Bätz, who had already borne two sons to him. These sons are listed in a Niederaula church record as voreheliche, not illegitimate which is unehlliche, but prelegitimate, to coin an English word. Wilhelm’s occupation is given as shoemaker.

Excursus: Someone made a guess to me, that Wilhelm had been a soldier and Margarethe’s parents would not let her marry a soldier, no matter what the circumstances. After I discovered that Margarethe’s father was a soldier, I came to believe that the Nuhns would not let their son marry the daughter of a soldier, no matter what the circumstances. The young couple must have been persistent, in that era of marriages by arrangement, because of course they did marry later.

To illustrate the very low regard in which people held soldiers, The Rev. Dr. Alfred Hans Kuby of Edenkoben, Germany, wrote the following:

“There is an old verse [it lends itself to chanting in German] which defined the descending worldly hierarchy: ‘Kaiser – König – Kurfürst – Graf’ (Emperor – King – Prince Elector – Count); ‘Edelmann – Bettelmann – Bauer – Soldat’ (Nobleman – Beggar – Peasant – Soldier). This verse was routinely recited by the Peasants. In context, it meant: (a) ‘Noblemen’ were the Knights and Free Barons; (b) ‘beggars’ seemed to be free when compared with the Peasants since Beggars had no taxes to pay and no compulsory labor to perform; (c) but the last and lowest to be despised by the Peasants were the ‘Soldiers’ who lived and benefited from the taxes and meager resources of the Peasants.”

According to family lore, migration to America was under discussion and is supposed to have reached the planning stage, when Wilhelm was taken ill with typhoid pneumonia. He asked his wife to promise that if he died, she would take the children to America. He did die on 19 February 1845 and was buried 22 February, in Niederaula. Son Conrad apparently

---

166 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
came to America with the Johannes Pfeil family (Mrs. Pfeil was Margarethe Nuhn’s sister) because he was living in their household in Illinois when the 1850 census was taken. An unaccounted-for Conrad, age ten (the transcription of the list makes it seem like his name is Pfeil, but I haven’t seen the original) is with the Pfeil family on the passenger list of the Ship Lessing, which sailed from Bremen and arrived in New York 10 April 1849; this is believed to be Conrad Nuhn. The Nuhn family (except Conrad) did not emigrate until 1856. Incidentally, after Conrad’s death in the Civil War, when Margarethe applied for a pension, both Jacob Glebe and Philipp Wohlgemuth depose about their knowledge of Wilhelm’s death (to help Margarethe prove she was married to Wilhelm Nuhn, that she was Conrad’s mother, and was widowed and had not remarried) by stating that their “knowledge of this fact is derived from seeing said William nearly every day for years previous to his death and from seeing him in his coffin after his death”.

**Siblings, surname Nuhn**

- Johann Valentin born 1805; married 1830
- Elisabeth born 1810 married Adam Möller, perhaps lived at Mengshausen
- Katharina Elisabeth born 1813, died 1814
- Jacob born 1813, married Christina Schade; immigrated to USA; issue

See Illustration Number 58.

Parents are Numbers 116 and 117.

**59 – Anna Margareta BÄTZ** was born 19 June 1807 at Niederaula to Johann Georg Bätz and his wife Anna Margarethe Schäfer. She was confirmed at Niederaula in 1822.

Asked to prove her marriage and widowhood in order to obtain a pension based upon her son Conrad’s Civil War service, she remembered her marriage date as 20 May 1830, or at least that is what the clerk understood; the officiant is listed as Rev. Walbert. The actual marriage date as found in the Niederaula church records is 20 May 1833; the Niederaula book gives the pastor’s name as Justus Daniel Walper. He served the parish from 1830 to 1852.

Throughout the papers compiled about her application for a mother’s pension, her name is spelled Margaret, Margarett and Margrett. When she signed the application she signed with ‘X’, but among the supporting information is a statement that she was nearly blind. She was granted a pension of $8.00 per month, commencing on 27 June 1864. After her death, a ‘Pensioner Dropped’ form appears in the record, reporting that she was last paid $12.00, for the period up to 4 September 1886. Evidently there had been a raise in the pension rate some time while she was on the roll.

The passenger list of the Ship Wieland, sailing from Bremen and arriving in New York on 12 May 1886 contains the following family, all from Hessen and bound for Illinois:

---

167 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 29.
“Nuhn, Jacob, 21, tailor; Anna-Margarethe 46, mother; Anna, 15 daughter; Gela 22, daughter; Elisabeth 12 daughter.”

Florence Hovey, in response to some questions I asked, wrote on 26 July 1989:

“...[Anna Margarethe] and her daughter Angelica, Margaret and Elisabeth and I think one son came to America in 1856. Angelica married the next year then provided a home apparently for the others.... My grandparents [Fred and Elisabeth (Nuhn) Heinhorst] were married [in 1871] at her home in Warsaw [Illinois], then ‘Grandma Nuhn’ made her home with Elisabeth.”

This information is borne out, to some degree, in the city directory of Peoria, where Margaretha was found living with the Ernst Gumbel family in the early 1860s; she evidently moved with them to Warsaw in 1868 (date from Ernst Gumbel’s obituary).

Margaretha died on 28 October 1886, and is buried at Zion Cemetery near Bishop in Mason County, Illinois. Her name as spelled on her gravestone is Anna Margretta, with the German legend “Gattin von Wm. Nuhn geboren 9 Jun 1807 gestorben 28 Oct 1886” (wife of Wm. Nuhn born 9 June 1807 died 28 October 1886). The following verse appears on her stone; in 1989 Florence Hovey made the translation which appears on the right:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Original Text</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>O ruhe sanfte der</td>
<td>Repose softly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pilgereis mude</td>
<td>Tired pilgrim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dein sterben</td>
<td>Your death</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Was der Weg</td>
<td>Was the way</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zur seligkeit</td>
<td>To blessedness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dein</td>
<td>Your</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lebins Freund</td>
<td>Lifelong friend</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der reine</td>
<td>The pure soul’s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seelenf riede</td>
<td>Peaceful spirit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nahm lachelt</td>
<td>Took you smiling</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dich zur frohen</td>
<td>To joyous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Einigkeit.</td>
<td>Harmony.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

No newspapers can be found (at least by me) for Mason County, Illinois for the time of Margarethe’s death, so I am unable to quote an obituary.

Siblings, surname Bätz
Katharina Elisabeth born 1800, married Johannes Pfeil; immigrated to USA; issue
Johann Konrad, born 1802, married 1833
[Anna Margarethe]
Johannes born 1810 died 1871, apparently unmarried
Johannes born 1813, died 1814

See Illustration Number 59.

Parents are Numbers 118 and 119.

60 – Johann (elsewhere Joachim) Gottfried SCHILLING was born on 14 November
1798 to Gottfried Erdmann Schilling and his wife Anne Dorothee née Jacobs. The information comes from his marriage record; he was possibly born in Osterburg but probably was born at the Schilling farm at Schartau\(^{168}\) in the Prussian Province of Saxony; his father was a citizen of Osterburg, Province of Saxony at the time of Gottfried’s marriage. No LDS films are available for the time of Gottfried’s birth, and I didn’t research it in Germany, so I know nothing about his baptism date or sponsors’ names. Nothing is known about his confirmation, which would have occurred when he was about fourteen years old.

Gottfried married Johanna Catharine Dorothee Schulz on 10 February 1833 at Osterburg. The marriage document states that he is a citizen and glazier at Arendsee, a small city nearby. The marriage was also registered there, presumably because that was where the couple was going to be living at least part of the time. Another document calls him a glazier and brickmaker.

Note: My findings about Gottfried and his wife Johanna (Schulz) Schilling are so intermingled that their biographies cannot be entirely separated.

* * *

Two sons were born to the couple at Osterburg, Herman on 1 October 1834, and Robert on 17 October 1843. A known daughter, Ottielie, was born 10 November 1836 according to her descendants, but her birth and baptism are not recorded at Osterburg or Arendsee. This situation begs the question, ‘Did Gottfried and Johanna Schilling have other children, born either at the same place as Ottielie, or other places?’ Incidentally, the LDS microfilms are “Churchbook Duplicates”, i.e., they are handwritten copies and thus subject to transcription error. I looked for Ottielie’s birth in the original records at Osterburg, and her baptism is not found in the original either.

Gottfried traveled on the ship Johann Dethard, Captain Ludering, Master, which arrived in Galveston, Texas on 12 September 1845. The passenger list was copied by Mrs. R. B. Battaglia, who comments, “These lists are primarily of German immigrants who settled in and around New Braunfels [Texas]”. Since Gottfried is from Osterburg, he has to be ours. Others from Osterburg are Carl Bokus, Ludwig Studemann, and Heinrich Sonnschein, and there is a Friedrich Zuch from Arendsee (Mrs. Battaglia saw ‘Orendsee’) and a Ludwig Schilling from Hallerstadt, which I believe should be ‘Halberstadt’. It is puzzling that none of these men can be found on the 1850 census.

There is an immigration source in Galveston where the computer lists Gottfried Schilling from Osterburg arriving on the Brig Johann Dethardt on 23 November 1846, having departed from Bremen on 18 September 1846.

The same source lists one Joh. Gottf. Schilling arriving in Galveston, on the Brig Johann Dethardt from Bremen, on 2 January 1848. He was a farmer from Saxony. Destination: Texas.

\(^{168}\) This Schartau is northwest of Stendal and southwest of Osterburg, not the Schartau, Kreis Jerichow, that is between Magdeburg and Tangerhütte.
None of the three mentions his family, but I believe that they had to be with him on the third voyage, if the man is indeed our Gottfried (although our man was never a farmer as far as we know), because both Robert and Ottielie state on census records that they immigrated in 1847. They may not have distinguished between ‘immigration’ and ‘emigration’, may not have realized that their arrival was in 1848 since it was so early in the year and they were both very young.

At the Sophienburg Archives in New Braunfels, Texas, there is an indexed compilation of transcribed copies of letters and documents that were generated by the scheme for Texas settlement by Prince Carl of Solms-Braunfels. Among them is a transcription of a letter that Gottfried Schilling wrote from Osterburg on 4 August 1846 to his friend Christoph Meder in Arendsee. One word in the original letter was illegible to the ‘experts’ who made the typed transcription.

The originals of the documents were purchased for $6 million by Yale University in New Haven, Connecticut, and are stored in the Beinecke Rare Book Library there. Ben and I went to New Haven and I actually held Gottfried’s letter in my hands, a thrilling and touching experience for me. Its call number is WA MSS S 1291, Box 7, Folder 47, Page 71 aV. Since the ‘S’ file was lost before Yale got the collection, we’re lucky that Gottfried’s letter was filed under ‘M’.

Veronika Timpe made the translation below in 2003. She comments, “There are a lot of mistakes in the language of this letter. I don’t know if they are due to the typing. Maybe the letter was typed by an American who was not perfect in German and had problems to read the handwriting (especially the old script).”

“Osterburg, August, 4th 1846

“Dear Meder,

“You have to write to Mainz yourself because I don’t [didn’t] get an answer from the club [organization] in your case.

“You can’t (or “shouldn’t”) travel to Bremen with your family in good faith, and then stay there.

“It’s the same with Graf so you have to talk to him and write together quickly, but it has to be today.

“It’s different with Beker. He has an acceptance sheet [maybe visa?], and [illegible word] besides Lud.[wig] Schilling belong[s] to my sheet [certificate/document].

“So big hurry.

“Your friend

169 This is not the same Solms in Germany that is near Niederaula, the home village of the Nuhn family of this book.
170 I happen to be writing about Gottfried 157 years later, on 4 August 2003.
171 a Verso: the reverse side.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

"G. Schilling

"Address of Mr. Dr. Hill
General Agent of the Club for the Protection of
German Immigrants in Mainz, Texas"

I corresponded with Mrs. Lavina Christ Dodegge, the granddaughter of Ottielie Schilling Christ, and she related the story below. She believed that Johanna Schilling's husband's name was Robert; and from Thomas Moore, another of Ottielie's descendants, comes the lore that the father of Adam Christ, Ottielie's husband, was also named Robert. Neither proved to be correct. Lavina believed that there were two children of the immigrant couple: Ottielie and Robert. Our branch of the family also believed that there were two children: Herman and Robert. Actually, I finally was able to prove that there were at least three children, Herman, Ottielie and Robert.

The pertinent portion of Mrs. Dodegge's letter:

“Our great grandfather Robert [Gottfried] Schilling came to this country the first time with a group of mechanics from Germany and many tools in order to build a city in Texas. He was an engineer and very excited about the possibility of Texas expansion. He left the men here and all the equipment and went back to Germany to pick up his wife and family. He ran into a little trouble there because his wife was a member of the Queen's Court in Berlin and not at all interested in leaving for the wild West of this country. So Robert [Gottfried] took her all over Europe and showed her the wonderful sights to try to convince her that things were even more wonderful in America. This took a great deal of time but she finally gave in and came with him. When they landed in Texas, he found that all of his crew had left for the West and there was nothing here to show her. She became indignant and demanded that the captain of the sailing vessel take her back to Germany immediately. The boat left without her, however, and Robert [Gottfried] finally got her to take a boat to St. Louis where he promised she would be happy. She never spoke to her husband again, although they had two children. Robert [Gottfried] was penniless but he assured the children that when they were broke Mother would go out on the streets and find some money. The witch had brought a small fortune with her and this is what they existed on. Soon he tired of the strain of the marriage and left and has never been heard from since. When our grandmother [Ottielie] married they left for Quincy taking her mother along and not much later she lost her mind and tried to commit suicide by lying on the railroad tracks. She never spoke after coming to Quincy so it was hard on Grandma Christ and the whole family....”

Analysis: I've already explored the fact that his name was not Robert, but Gottfried.

He was a skilled craftsman, not an engineer.

The passenger list bears out the statement that he was with a group of men, since several of those found on the passenger list are from Osterburg and Arendsee; Ludwig Schilling was from Halberstadt, not too far away, and Gottfried mentions him in his letter to Meder. One Texas document indicates, incidentally, that Ludwig Schilling went to Austin. I have no opinion about whether Ludwig was related or if it is simply a coincidence that he had the same name.
I seriously doubt that Johanna was a member of the Queen’s court in Berlin, because a) her father was a craftsman, not a nobleman, and b) most stories that connect Germans to the nobility are simply fabrications.

The Meder letter provides irrefutable evidence that Gottfried planned to settle in Texas but did go to St. Louis. I expected to find a clan of relatives there, but found no evidence to support that theory.

The ‘small fortune’ is doubtful because the families of German craftsmen were in comfortable but modest circumstances. If she’d been doing something we don’t know about while she was at the Queen’s court, and if Gottfried really told the children that Mother would go out on the street and find money, maybe he believed she had been promiscuous; perhaps that would have been a way for her to have accumulated a small fortune.

I found proof in city directories that Johanna was living in St. Louis with her son Robert approximately up to the time of his marriage in 1867, so she didn’t go to Quincy immediately after Ottielie’s marriage in 1860.

There may be something in the Quincy newspaper about a suicide attempt, but scanning the newspaper would take more time than I have been willing to devote to it. I did write to the state mental hospital at Jacksonville, Illinois, and received the reply that they had no clinical records of former patients.

Johanna may never have spoken, but she was cooperative about signing a document in 1886, attesting to her son Herman’s state of health when he entered the Union Army. All those who signed it, Johanna her daughter Ottielie, and Ottielie’s husband Adam Christ, were described as “well known to be respectable & entitled to credit”.

***

I tried to research St. Louis court records for a divorce, but was not permitted to look in the index. The clerk who did so wasn’t able to find anything, but I’m sure he didn’t look at all possible misspellings of the Schilling name (Shilling, Schelling, Shelling, etc.). I suspect that there was not a divorce, only a permanent separation.

Gottfried was already approaching 55 years old when he was naturalized in St. Louis on 28 July 1853. Little information can be gleaned from the record; he was listed among a group of men whose origin was ‘Saxony’. His naturalization would have included his entire family.

Mrs. Dodegge’s report that he had never been heard from after leaving Johanna in St. Louis is the only thing we have to go on, and I have been unsuccessful in finding his death date or burial place. I simply don’t know where to look for Gottfried. I thought he might have gone to Texas, where he originally intended to settle, maybe looking up the people that he came from Germany with, but I cannot find any of them by 1860. I suspect that they were among many German immigrants to Texas who didn’t survive the climate, insects and disease.
Most puzzling are the marriage records of Gottfried and Johanna Schillings' children: When daughter Ottilie was married, in 1860 Gottfried is listed in the churchbooks as "dead", but when son Robert was married in 1867, Gottfried was a "laborer in St. Louis". Both Ottilie and Robert were married at St. John Nepomuk Catholic Church in St. Louis. I think something could be lost in the translation. Perhaps there is a German verb tense that I didn't catch onto, and the intended meaning is that he had been, while he was living, a laborer in St. Louis. Son Herman was married by a justice of the peace, so there is no church record of his marriage.

I feel fairly certain that Gottfried isn't buried near his wife in Quincy; I have looked around Woodland Cemetery and checked the index cards, but found nothing.

It is possible that Gottfried went to California, as so many did, but I have checked several indexes of early settlers and didn't find him there. If he went with a wagon train on the Oregon Trail and died along the way, there simply wouldn't be a record. The diaries of some of the Oregon Trail travelers are indexed, and his name doesn't appear in those I've searched.

The following ditty, sung by Californians who had gone there during the Gold Rush era and later, may apply to Gottfried if he wanted to disguise himself, especially if he wanted to marry again:

"Oh, what was your name in the States?\textsuperscript{172}
Was it Thompson, or Johnson or Bates?
Did you murder your wife
And fly for your life?
Say, what was your name in the States?"

One of my early goals, as I began to pursue genealogical research, was to visit the graves of all my ancestors who are buried on this continent; my inability to find Gottfried's burial place has contributed to my failure. As cemeteries are indexed and the results become available on the Internet, perhaps he will be found. I don't have great hope for that, however, because it is entirely possible, indeed probable, that his grave is unmarked.

**Siblings, surname Schilling**

[Johann (or Joachim) Gottfried]
Anne Elisabeth, married Carl Friedrich Christoph Görn
Sophie Friederike Caroline
One more sibling, name unknown

See Illustration Number 60.

Parents are Numbers 120 and 121.

\textsuperscript{172} Quoted in *The Proud Breed* by Celeste De Blasis, ©1978, Coward, McCann & Geoghegan, Inc., New York.
Johanna Catherine Dorothee SCHULZ was born in Osterburg, Province of Saxony, Prussia (now Germany) on 10 May 1810 to Christian Schulz and his wife Sophie Charlotte, née Loudon. This information comes from the record of her marriage to Johann (elsewhere Joachim) Gottfried Schilling on 10 February 1833 at Osterburg. The LDS has not microfilmed Osterburg church records for the time frames of her birth, baptism and confirmation.

She bore three known children, perhaps more, to Schilling, before the family departed for Texas in 1847. A great deal of information about her can be found in her husband’s biography, q.v.; their stories are so intertwined that it was impossible for me to separate them completely.

While her father’s 1850 death entry in the Osterburg church records lists his daughter Johanna as married to Schilling and “in Amerika”, the first actual documentation of her presence in the United States is found on the 1860 census of St. Louis, Missouri, enumeration occurring on 24 July 1860. She is listed in Ward 2 as Johanna Schilling, widowed head of household, age 50, occupation ‘sewing’, owning no real estate, and with personal estate worth $150. Living with her are “Othilie”, age 23, also doing sewing, and Robert, age 17, a laborer in a brickyard. All were born “near Magdeburg, Prussia”.

It is entirely possible, since Ottielie’s granddaughter Lavina Christ Dodegge retold family lore that Gottfried had left his wife in St. Louis, that Johanna presented herself as a widow even though her husband was living. He must have left between 1853 when he was naturalized, and 1860, when the census was taken. I think it is possible that he stayed away for a while so that his status is “dead” when Ottielie got married in 1860, and perhaps came back before Robert got married in 1867. It is almost certain that both sons knew of their father’s naturalization, because they both report at various times that they are naturalized citizens. The father’s naturalization would have included his entire family.

Lavina believed that Johanna went to Quincy to live with Ottielie and her husband soon after their marriage. I found Johanna and Robert in St. Louis city directories up to the time of his 1867 marriage, and have come to believe that it was at the time of his marriage that she went to Quincy. They lived at 1111 Julia Street, near the Soulard Market and St. John Nepomuk Catholic Church.

My opinion is that Johanna made a ruckus when Robert announced his plans to marry and in effect abandon her, he washed his hands of her, and she went to live with Ottielie. It is even possible that Gottfried reappeared on the scene about that same time and Johanna could no longer claim widowhood, which would have represented loss of face. These possibilities or something similar could have contributed to her losing her mind and attempting suicide.

Johanna was living in the Adam Christ home at 515 Payson Avenue in Quincy in a 1898-99 Quincy City Directory, although her name is given as ‘Joanna’ and she is “wid[ow of] Godfrey”.

If Robert sent his mother to Ottielie and refused to take any further responsibility for her, that
would explain why he is not named as Johanna’s child, although the form asks for the names of other children, when Ottielie found it necessary to commit her mother to the Adams County Almshouse.

I extracted an entry from the Adams County Almshouse Register for 1873-1898, found on LDS microfilm:

On 1 March 1897, Johanna Schilling was listed under “Sane Women”. She was Female, age 87, born Germany, parentage German/German, a resident of Quincy, health poor, habits poor\(^{173}\), admitted on 14 August 1897. She owned no property. Her admittance was authorized by W. H. Doran, she was described as “weak-minded”, and she was discharged 11 August 1897. The number ‘7’ appears under ‘remarks’, and I took that to mean that she had been there seven days.

The above record was on an LDS microfilm, and while it appears that the register goes through 1898, it actually only goes to 1898. More recent registers were not available on film, at least at the time I was doing this research.

Johanna’s gravestone in Woodland Cemetery in Quincy only tells her name and the years of her birth and death. I wanted to find Johanna’s exact death date and tie her to my family with something as concrete as her birth date or list of surviving children and grandchildren, including the children of Herman, whom I believed was her son. While I was explaining my problem to a volunteer for the Great River Genealogical Society at the library in Quincy, Ben was scanning newspaper microfilm, hoping to find an obituary. About the time the volunteer was shaking her head, discouraging me from hoping to find anything in the newspaper or anywhere else, Ben was reporting, “I found it”. The following is from the Quincy Daily Herald of Friday Evening, 24 February 1899, page 1:

“Mrs. Johanna Schilling died last night at the county farm, to which place she was taken some time ago on account of being a sufferer from dementia. She was the widow of Gottlieb [sic] Schilling and formerly resided at 515 Payson Avenue.”

The newspaper mention of the county farm sent me to the courthouse, where I found what I needed—but it had not been filmed. On 4 October 1898, she was again admitted to the Adams County Poorhouse. The form gave her birth date, 1 May 1810, which confirmed for me that she was the mother of my Herman Schilling, because I had found the same date given for her birth on her marriage record in Osterburg. Other information included on the form is that her age was 88 years, she had resided at 515 Payson Avenue in Quincy, she had been a house wife. She had previously spent one week at the Adams County Poor Farm. Many of the blanks are not filled in. She was a widow. The blank asking for name and address of each child living contains only the name of Mrs. Adam Christ of Quincy, although her son Robert was living in Milwaukee at the time. Dismissal is not mentioned.

\(^{173}\) The person who filled in the form did not read the directions in the front of the book. “Habits” was intended to be filled in naming the habit(s) a person was addicted to: tobacco, alcohol etc.
The Superintendent recorded another admission on 2 January 1899. Her physical condition is described as “very poor” and her mental condition is “feeble minded”. Mrs. Adam Christ agreed to pay $1.00 per week for her care. She died on 23 February 1889, and Mrs. Christ was notified by telegram. The remains were delivered to Daugherty and Co., a mortuary in Quincy, and receipt of the body was acknowledged by Daugherty and Co. on 24 February 1899.

She is buried in Woodland Cemetery in Quincy, in Block 12, Lot 84. Her daughter and son-in-law, Ottiegie and Adam Christ, are buried nearby.

Siblings, surname Schulz
   Dorothee, married Bachmann
   Charlotte, married Kahle
   [Johanna]

See Illustrations Number 61.

Parents are Numbers 122 and 123.

62 - Andreas Heinrich Ludwig KROME was born on 18 August 1808 at Gross Stöckheim, Duchy of Braunschweig, to Hennig Wilhelm Krome and his wife Dorothee Friederike Elisabeth née Weferling. He was baptized there on 21 August; the churchbook entry is hard to read, but the sponsors’ names appear to me to be Friedrich Andreas Müller, Heinrich Ludewig Friedrichs, and Sophia Louisa Henriette Haustling. I did not document his confirmation.

He married Elisabeth Marie Sophie Deipenau on 24 November 1833, after she had already born a son to him. The couple had four additional children.

His occupation was carpenter and cottager or day laborer.

The family received permission to emigrate in 1846. They had a daughter born on 26 June 1846 in Germany, so it was after that date that they departed. Daughter Conradine’s obituary states that she came to America when she was ten years old, and she would have reached her eleventh birthday on 31 August 1847. I have not been able to find the family on a passenger list, but Conradine’s obituary states that they landed in New Orleans after a sailboat journey of five weeks. Research tells me that eight weeks would have been normal. The family settled in St. Louis, Missouri. The eldest son did not come with the family; he arrived in New Orleans on the Ship Ernestine on 11 August 1851:

I believe that Andreas’ call name was Ludwig or perhaps ‘Louie’, although his granddaughter Millie Schilling Gumbel thought her mother’s father’s name was Henry Krome when she supplied death certificate information for her mother.

I’m almost absolutely certain that the Ludwig Krohme that I found in the death records of
Holy Ghost Evangelical Church in St. Louis and buried in the middle of the cemetery, in Plot 845, is our ancestor, because the buyer of burial lot 845 in Holy Ghost Cemetery (later called Picker's Cemetery) was Sophie “Krohme”. He died on 12 July 1849 of cholera, during the cholera epidemic. His age is given as 44, off by about three years, but it is easy to imagine that the pastor was overwhelmed with funerals and careless about record keeping when there were as many as eighteen deaths per day in his congregation. The cemetery was bulldozed to make room for something, and while some remains were removed to other cemeteries, record-keeping was slipshod and there doesn’t seem to be any way to find out what ultimately happened to his remains and his gravestone, if there was one.

His widow was the head of household on the 1850 census, and she remarried in 1852.

siblings, surname Krome
Johanne Louisa Christine
Anna Dorothea Henriette
Augustine Christine Louisa
Johanne Christine Henriette
[Andreas Heinrich Ludewig]
Johann Heinrich Julius
Christiane Friederike Henriette
Stillborn child

Parents are Numbers 124 and 125.

63 - Elisabeth Marie Sophie DEIPENAU was born at 11 o’clock on the morning of 18 January 1806 at Klein Mahner, Duchy of Braunschweig, now Niedersachsen, Germany to Heinrich Jürgen Deipenau and his wife, Marie Christine née Strübig. She was baptized on 21 January. Her sponsors’ names are hard to read, and what I think I saw were the names Klinge and Büttstein.

Excursus: Correspondence with Detlev Emil Deipenau in Germany brings some Deipenau facts into my research, but not specific names and dates. Detlev found the family’s origin about 1655 at a little village called Heißum in Orthfresen. At least one member of the family moved north to Klein Mahner, thence to Gross Stöckheim, from whence our branch emigrated.

Another branch of the Klein Mahner Deipenau family moved to Kniestedt about 1830, and descendants migrated to other places in Germany as well as to Buenos Aires, Argentina and Cape Town, South Africa.

Still another family branch moved from Heißum to Dömten and Hannover, then to Australia and to Buenos Aires.

Detlev reports that there are only twenty-three Deipenau entries in the German telephone directory today (2005), and he has personal knowledge that several of those are Deipenaus by adoption and not by blood-line.
Sophie bore a son to Andreas Heinrich Ludwig Krome before they were married on 24 November 1833 at Gross Stöckheim, Braunschweig, now Niedersachsen, Germany; four additional children were born to the marriage.

See the biography of Andreas Heinrich Ludwig Krome for information about the family's move from Germany to St. Louis, Missouri. Krome died in 1849.

Sophie "Krom" is found as head of household on the 1850 census of St. Louis, with her known children, the eldest not yet having immigrated, the youngest already dead.

On 26 December 1852, the widow Krome—both the St. Louis civil marriage record and the churchbook entry at Holy Ghost Evangelical Church state that her maiden name was Deipenau—married "Loudew."

Henne. (Indexers saw his name as Henne Londer.) By 1860, the couple was living in Belleville, St. Clair County, Illinois, where Henne was a teamster.

I have been unable to find the couple enumerated on the 1870 census.

By the time the 1880 census was taken, Louis Henne was living in Warren County, Missouri with a wife Anna (whose birthplace incidentally is stated as Braunschweig), leading me to look for Sophie's death.

Sophie Henne's death is found on page 354 of the church records of St. John's Evangelical church in Pinckney, Warren County, Missouri. It is supposed to have occurred at Warrenton Berg (Warrenton Hill). I believe her entry is an afterthought; it appears that the pastor somehow failed to make the entry at the time of her death and entered it at the end of the year. The previous entry is for a death of 6 December 1874 and the next entry is 25 August 1875. Other entries in these church records contain both death and burial dates. The death age may be 66 or 60, the second digit being so unclear that it could be almost anything.

I believe she was already dead, however, before Louis Henne bought land in Warren County on 13 October 1874, because a wife is not mentioned in the Deed. If Louis' marriage to his next wife Anna could be found, especially if there is a church record, it might contain Sophie's death date. I looked in Warren, Franklin and Gasconade Counties, but found nothing.

Louis was married to "Hannah" by 25 February 1877, when they sold land in Warren County. His wife's name is Anna on another deed in Warren County, dated 3 January 1878. There are a number of other deeds, some of which use the "Hannah" spelling. I looked through his estate papers, hoping that a stepdaughter would be found, but nothing absolutely ties this Louis Henne to our Sophie Krome née Deipenau.

\[174\] The names Ludwig, Loudewig, Louis are all nicknamed 'Louie', and an official might well have written 'Louis' when the name 'Louie' was stated.
Nevertheless, I believe he is the same man our Sophie married in 1852.

When Louis sold the north half of the southwest quarter in Section 11, Township 46, Range 3 West in Warren county, Missouri, a tract containing 80 acres more or less, two acres were excepted, “on which there is a graveyard reserved as such”.

Sophie may be buried there, Miller-Baurichter Cemetery, established 1856, which can be found west of Lost Creek Road where a grassy trail (November 2001) leaves the road on the west side and meanders in a northwesterly direction to the cemetery gate. Some gravestones that cannot be read, and there are doubtless some unmarked graves.

The other likely place for Sophie’s burial is at the cemetery at St. John’s Evangelical church on Smith Creek Road in the old Pinckney community. The cemetery was established in 1870, and there are also unmarked graves and illegible gravestones there.

Siblings, surname Deipenau
   [Elisabeth Marie Sophie]
   One sibling surviving at parents’ deaths

Parents are Numbers 126 and 127.
Notes:
Illustration Number 36: Dr. John Robinson’s gravestone in the Old Stone Church Cemetery (Presbyterian) near Pendleton, South Carolina. “John Robinson, Ensign KY. Mil. War of 1812, Surgeon. 1792-1841. Married Eliza Blasingham 1818.”

Illustration Number 36: Signature of Dr. John Robinson found in the estate papers of his father-in-law, Gen. John Blassingame; 1826.

Illustrations Number 37: Eliza (Blassingame) Robinson’s signatures, (upper) from her son John Blassingame Robinson’s 1842 application for appointment to the United States Military Academy at West Point; (lower) from her 1874 will.
Illustrations Numbers 38 and 39: Dr. Alexander Brandon Clingman and his wife, Ann Martha (Clingman) Clingman
Illustration Number 38: Original gravestone of Dr. Clingman. Note Masonic emblem. The stone lies flat on the ground at Jones Valley.

Illustration Number 38: Dr. Alexander Brandon's second gravestone, doubtless ordered to match the stone of his wife. Complete legend can be found on page 211.

Illustration Number 39: Ann Martha (Clingman) Clingman's gravestone. Complete legend can be found on page 214.

Illustration 38: Signature of Dr. Alexander Brandon Clingman, from an August, 1829 document.

It should be noted that the Clingman gravestones were moved from Old Old Bethel Cemetery in Pike County, to Jones Valley Cemetery in Montgomery County. The Clingmans are not buried in Jones Valley Cemetery. Explanation is found on page 212.
Illustration Number 44: Isaac Runyan’s signature from a document dated 19 November 1862.

Illustration Number 44: Gravestone of Isaac Runyan in Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery near Amity, Clark County, Arkansas.

Illustration Number 45: Gravestone of Mary (Lowery) Runyan in Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery near Amity, Clark County, Arkansas.
Illustration Number 49: The “Dingerdissen Bed” that is stored (1995) in the attic of the Niemann home in Wahrentrup. Its date, 1792, indicates that it was part of the bride cart (dowry) of Anna Katrina Keiser zu Dingerdissen when she married Franz Niemann né Frohne in on 21 December 1792. The date visible at the lower right, 15 May 1995, is the date I took the photo.

Illustration Number 56: Karl Gumbel’s signature, from his Last Will and Testament, dated 5 June 1879.

Illustration Number 56: Carl Gumbel (he also wrote his name with K) from a carte de visite, undated, taken in Peoria, Illinois.
Illustration Number 58: Wilhelm Nuhn’s signature from his marriage contract dated 17 May 1833. His bride signed with three X’s.

Illustration Number 56: Gravestone of Carl Gumbel in Zion Cemetery, Bishop’s Junction, Mason County, Illinois. Translation of the engraving: ‘Karl Gumbel, born 31 August 1808, died 23 November 1884 at the age of 76 years, 2 months and 23 days.’ I have been unable to decipher the words at the foot of the stone.

Illustration Number 59: Gravestone of Anna Margaretta (Bätz) Nuhn in Zion Cemetery, Bishop’s Junction, Mason County, Illinois. Translation of engraving: ‘Anna Margaretta, wife of Wilhelm Nuhn, born 9 June 1807, died 28 October 1886.’

Illustration Number 59: Back of Anna Margaretta (Bätz) Nuhn’s gravestone. Translation of the poem is found on page 244.
Illustration Number 60: Gottfried Schilling’s signature from a letter dated at Osterburg 4 August 1846, regarding emigration. Typed transcription found in Vol. 18, Solms-Braunfels Collection, Sophienburg Archives, New Braunfels, Texas. Original on file at Beinecke Rare Book and Manuscript Library, Yale University, New Haven, Connecticut: Call No. WA MSS S 1291, Box 7, Folder 47, Page 71aV

Illustration Number 61: Johanna Schilling’s signature from a document dated 16 February 1886 contained in her son Herman Schilling’s widow’s Civil War pension application.

Illustration Number 61: Gravestone of Johanna Schilling, before its disappearance. Woodland Cemetery at Quincy, Adams County, Illinois.

Illustration Number 61: Site of Johanna’s missing gravestone, about 2003. Family (and other) gravestones shown for perspective.

Illustration Number 61: Johanna’s gravestone reset; photo October 2005. Chalked to enhance legibility of lettering. Woodland Cemetery at Quincy, Adams County, Illinois.
SEVENTH GENERATION

72 – John ROBINSON was researched by Mrs. Ayliffe Jacobs Bogle. He was born about 1761 in Virginia, probably in Fauquier County, to Joseph Robinson and his wife Martha. While absolute proof of John’s parentage is lacking, three separate things tie John to Joseph and Martha: 1) Joseph named a son John Executor of his will; 2) when John married Elizabeth Benson on 8 September 1787 in Fauquier, Enoch Withers was bondsman, and Enoch’s brother Benjamin was married to Joseph and Martha’s daughter Nancy Robinson, making for a family connection; and 3) John and Elizabeth named their first son Joseph.

It is likely that he served in the Revolutionary War, but as far as I know, this has not been researched.

John and Elizabeth had at least three children, perhaps four or more, before Elizabeth died about 1800-1802. A question remains about whether daughter Elizabeth was from John’s first or second marriage; she is likely from the first wife, but there was a custom about that time in history of naming a daughter for a recently-deceased relative—especially a deceased wife—so no real weight can attach to Elizabeth’s name.

About 1803, John remarried to Sarah, the daughter of Joseph Smith of Fauquier. The family went to Nelson County, Kentucky some time between 1810175 and 1813, when son John entered the United States Army at Bloomfield, to serve in the War of 1812. Several children

175 In a Nelson County, Kentucky deposition, the deponent, Wm. Ferguson states that, “Some time in the year 1810 I took a Drove of horses to Virginia and sold one a chesnut sorrel to Mr John Robinson who bought the said horse with him to this country when he came...”
were born there (named as halvesiblings of Person Number 36). Bloomfield is famous today for its Tobacco Festival, held each year in October. Since John was a farmer, it is very likely that his money crop was tobacco.

John died intestate on 19 July 1818 in Nelson County. Inventory of his personal property lists six slaves, 10 horses, 50 head of sheep, 75 head of hogs and 16 head of cattle. He also owned various farming tools and equipment. Every item of household goods seems to be listed in the inventory, which Mrs. Bogle transcribed from papers in Nelson County, many of them damaged by fire. Included are dishes, crocks, furniture, bedding and a broken looking glass. Some of the items were sold at auction on 30 October 1818, and Joseph’s widow, Sarah (Smith) Robinson, purchased many of them.

Included among the Nelson County papers is this statement dated 14 January 1828 (Mrs. Bogle’s transcription):

“...Sarah Robinson would shew unto your Honor that in the year 1818 her husband John Robinson departed this life intestate seized & possessed of considerable personal estate & leaving at his death eleven lawful children part of whom he had by a former marriage wife... some of the heirs were of age but the greater part were infants & at this time there are still some of them infants & that one child an infant [Mildred] departed this life since the death of the decedent...”.

Probable halvesibling, surname Robinson, believed to be from his father’s earlier

marriage to Miss ________
Maximillian, married Lucinda Cundiff Gundy

Siblings, surname Robinson
Benjamin (not sure, could be from father’s first wife) married; issue named in father’s will
[John]
William
Dorcas, married John Murry; issue
Hannah, married Thomas Kincheloe
Nancy, married Benjamin Withers
Catharine, married Thomas Jenkins
Peggy, married William Rector
Molly, married Dale Carter

Parents are Numbers 144 and 145.

73 – Elizabeth BENSON married John Robinson 8 September 1787 in Fauquier County, Virginia. She is believed to have borne at least three sons to him, perhaps also a daughter, before she died about 1800-1802.

An article about her son John states that she is buried “at Sudley Church (near where the first and second Battles of Manassas were later fought)”. Mrs. Bogle visited Fauquier County to do research and to look for Elizabeth’s grave. She reports, “...I found that Elizabeth could not have been buried at the Sudley Church, since it was not built before 1822 and Manassas
park rangers stated there were no burials there until the Civil War." There is a Sudley
Springs, also a Sudley Plantation nearby. It was owned by an Amos Benson during the Civil
War; he was later buried at Sudley Church, making it seem unlikely that there was a family
cemetery on his plantation. It seems certain that Elizabeth’s grave is not marked.

There are Bensons found in Fauquier County records, but no document has been found that
connects Elizabeth to her parents or to Amos Benson, the Sudley Plantation owner. A Prou
Benson moved from Stafford and Fauquier Counties in Virginia to Greenville District, South
Carolina, but his daughter Elizabeth has been found in South Carolina records, so she is not
John Robinson’s wife.

At present it seems most likely that Enoch Benson and his wife Mary D’Oial (probably
pronounced ‘Doyle’ but frequently written ‘O’Dial’ by the uninformed) are Elizabeth’s parents.
They married 15 February 1756 in Stafford County, Virginia, later settling in South Carolina. Their
presence would seem to be a good reason for young Dr. John Robinson and his brother William
to leave their home in Kentucky and take up residence in South Carolina.

Another couple who are candidates for Elizabeth’s parents are Charles and Judith Benson of Culpeper
County, Virginia.

Parents have not been identified.

74 – John BLASSINGAME’s vital records were all found in one place, the Lyman
Copeland Draper papers, microfilm reference #5DD40, letter dated 24 July 1873 from John
B. Cleveland of Spartenburg, South Carolina, to Lyman C. Draper who was preparing to
write a book about the Battle of Kings Mountain, fought in the Revolutionary War in 1780:

“From the family Bible now in the possession of his daughter my grandmother, I learn the following
facts: John Blassingame was born May 19, 1769. Was married to Elizabeth Easley March 23, 1794;
died Nov 29, 1823. Gen. Blassingame was a native of Greenville Co and died in that county. He has
numerous descendants in this section of the state, among whom are 2 daughters one of them my
grandmother now 76 years old lives at this place. She married Jesse Cleveland a nephew of Ben
Cleveland of Revolutionary fame. My grandmother has some curiosity to know what your purpose is
in gathering these facts.”

Many statements have been made about John Blassingame’s parents. There were
several Johns and Williams, and considerable confusion reigned, much of which has
made its way into print and into compiled databases. I’m afraid I’m guilty of accepting
these ‘facts’ and propagating them in some county histories for which I wrote family
articles.

Mrs. Susan Stillwell Lafo of Spring Valley, California; Mrs. Phyllis H. Harrison of
Bradley, South Carolina; Mrs. Barbara L. Eades of Redding, California; and Mr. Larry
Tyner of Glendale, Arizona contributed to an article entitled “BLASSINGAME
MYTHS AND FACTS” which was published in The South Carolina Magazine of
Ancestral Research, Volume XXVI, Number 2, Spring 1998. Pertinent portions are
quoted below; I have placed the article’s footnotes in braces {}, and have bracketed [] my own comments:

“Myth #4. General John Blassingame was the son of John d[ied] 1809 and Obedience, and he served in the Revolutionary War.

“FACT: We have already proved [earlier in article] that John (d[ied] 1809) was not married to Obedience but to Rachel... The signatures on the various Revolutionary War papers for John Blassingame match the signature on the will of the John who died in 1809. In Indent #N.2337X, he signed ‘for my son’, John Jr. {Revolutionary War Files, John Blassingame File 549 frame 190-198 roll #10 South Carolina Archives, Columbia, S.C. Indent N. 2337 Book X, Received 7th April 1786.} These documents prove that the John Jr. in the Revolutionary War was the son of John (d[ied] 1809).

“General John Blassingame of Greenville County, a planter, served in the South Carolina Militia during the War of 1812 and never lived in Union County, South Carolina. He married Elizabeth Easley, daughter of Robert Easley, whose will was recorded in Anderson County, South Carolina. {Anderson County Probate roll #196, original at South Carolina Archives, Columbia, S.C.} From the Easley estate papers a signature of then major John Blassingame was obtained. His signature does not end with a ‘Jr.’ Major John’s signature does not match the signature of John. Jr. who witnessed the will of John d[ied] 1809. These two, different, recorded signatures were filed only two years apart [actually, ‘Major’ John’s signature as found in his father-in-law Robert Easley’s estate papers was probably written almost three years earlier than that of John Blassingame Jr, the witness to his father’s will, his father being John who died in 1809. The time difference has little significance, but I like to dot every i and cross every t.]

“General John died intestate in 1823 in Greenville County, South Carolina. His grave has been marked by the Daughters of the American Revolution: BRANDON'S REG., SC TROOPS, REVOLUTIONARY WAR, AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY BOY SOLDIER; GENERAL IN S C MILITIA; b. 1769: d. 11-12-1823 [Actual text from grave marker: ‘JOHN BLASINGHAM JR. PVT. BRANDON’S REGT S.C. TROOPS REV WAR 1825 AMERICAN REV.BOY SOLDIER GEN. S.C. MILITIA 1769-1823 MARRIED ELIZABETH EASLEY 1818’. I have no idea what the ‘1825’ means, and he married Elizabeth Easley in 1794.] A signature comparison proves that he was not the John Blassingame Jr. who was in Brandon’s Regiment. We have not found any proof that General John served in the Revolutionary War....

“Who were the parents of General John Blassingame of Greenville County, Thomas of Pickens County, and James of Greenville County?

“During our research we discovered various Johns [sic], Thomas, Williams [sic] and Phillip Blassingames. From the many documents that were studied we were able to determine which of them died in South Carolina and which removed from the state. By doing this we believe that we have proved that the only place General John and his brother Thomas could fit into the Blassingame Family line is as children of William of Cheraw District who died ca. 1782. William was a planter in Cheraw District, South Carolina, a member of the St. David’s Society {Brent H. Holcomb, St. David’s Parish, South Carolina minutes of the Vestry 1768-1832 Parish Register 1819-1924, p. 22 (Greenville, SC: Southern Historical Press)}, and served as overseer of the poor for St. David’s Parish in 1778. His land grants were on the south side of the Pee Dee River {Royal Land Grants, S.C. Archives, Columbia, S.C.}. He served in the Revolutionary War {William Blassingame RW File #550 A, frame 218-222, roll #10, S.C. Archives,
Columbia, S.C.) under General Francis Marion {Marion’s Men: A list of twenty-five hundred, compiled by William Willis Boddie, 1938, Charleston, S.C.} as a private. He had died by 1782 and John Westfield {John Westfield, RW Files #8378, frame 20-23, roll 156, S.C. Archives, Columbia, S.C.} was named executor of the estate [i.e., he is proven to be executor because there is a document in his Revolutionary War record stating that he is the executor of the estates of William Blassingame and Robert Westfield] since he signed for the Indents due William for service in the Revolutionary War in 1785 [i.e., he signed in 1785]. In 1806 a fire in the Darlington Court house destroyed all of the records for the area. Therefore, the will of William Blassingame has not survived. William’s wife might have been a Westfield; however, we have no proof. The Westfield name was carried down by his descendents [sic].

“In 1821 in Greenville County, South Carolina, a Bill of Sale {Greenville County, Deed Book L p. 308, microfilm at SC Archives, Columbia, S.C.} for a slave named Dill was recorded. According to the data on the Bill of Sale, William Easley Blassingame, son of General John Blassingame of Greenville County, South Carolina, witnessed this document in 1810 [it is not terribly usual for a deed to be recorded long after its signing]. From this document we learned, ‘agreeable to the last will and testament of William Blassingame deceased of Cheraw Dis...left a certain negro woman named Dill to son William Blassingame and in the case of his death before he becomes of age the value of said negro woman was to [be] equally divided between the surviving legatees viz: John Blassingame, Thomas Blassingame and Mary Blassingame now wife of Prue Benson.’ [James Blassingame is also named as a legatee in the original, but his name was somehow omitted from the article.] In the Bill of Sale, James Blassingame is paying $50 each to his brothers, John and Thomas and his sister, Mary, for their interest in a slave named Dill, since the heir, William, died before the age of twenty-one. James Blassingame’s will was dated 3 Feb 1820 and probated 23 June 1821. There is a reference to a slave Dill in the will. This James is the one in Greenville County, South Carolina married to Mary Gowen...

“...We have found many more mistakes on the various family lines; this article discusses only the largest myths. Local libraries contain books on Blassingame genealogies. Readers are warned to be wary of these genealogies (or those on any family) not based on primary source material.”

Proof having been established that Gen. John’s father was William Blassingame, we can move on to other events in his life. He married Elizabeth Smith Easley on 23 March 1794. They made their home and reared their family at Tanglewood Plantation near Greenville; its very name conjures up, at least to me, an image of the gracious living typical of antebellum South Carolina.

He was a member of the South Carolina Militia, evidently rising to the rank of General while serving with that body during the War of 1812. He was still ‘Major’ John Blassingame when he was appointed Executor of his father-in-law Robert Easley’s 1806 will. The signature of John Blassingame reproduced as Illustration 74 was found among Easley’s estate papers, on the receipt John signed for his wife’s inheritance.

*Miller’s Weekly Messinger*, a newspaper published at Pendleton South Carolina, printed an article on 5 August 1807 telling about a meeting to be held at Pendleton Courthouse on 12 August related to “outrage committed by the British ship of war *Leopard* on the United States frigate *Cheaspeake*”. On 20 August 1807, the paper also
reported a meeting and resolution passed at Greenville, South Carolina on 3 August 1807 concerning "British aggression". Major Blassingame was among those mentioned as having participated.

By the time John died in 1823, he owned 38 slaves. Documents in his estate papers indicate that he had already made a partial distribution of his property to his children during his lifetime, including nineteen additional slaves, a considerable quantity of livestock, furniture and plantation items. The advertisement of the auction disposing of additional property (to settle his estate) is reconstructed as Appendix 5.

Gen. John Blassingame died on 29 November 1823 and is buried near Greenville, South Carolina. Directions for finding the cemetery are contained in Dr. W. Doak Blassingame’s book *The Blassingame Families*, Volume Two, page 436. The John Blasingame, Jr. signature found on page 439 is attributed to him, but it is not that of our John.

Siblings, **Blassingame**; birth order probable but not confirmed

- [John]
  - Thomas married Nancy Easley, issue; married Sarah Edmonson, issue
  - James married Mary Gowan; issue
  - Mary married Prue Benson
  - William died before reaching majority

See Illustrations Number 74.

Father is Number 148.

**75 – Elizabeth Smith EASLEY** was born 21 March (or May) 1774 in Virginia to Robert “Robin” Easley and his first wife, Elizabeth Coleman; she married John Blassingame 23 March 1794 at Greenville, South Carolina, and bore him seven known children. She died there on 26 April 1834. The Easley family has been researched in depth by Dr. Virginia Easley DeMarce. Personal facts about the Easley ancestors (numbers 150, 300, 600 and 1200) and some of their wives, plus proofs of relationships, come largely from that source.

Her middle name of Smith is puzzling; it may have been the maiden name of her mother's mother, but that is only a guess. Little is known about Elizabeth's personal life, but Mrs. Laurens’ diary contains this tidbit, written on 21 July 1825:

---

176 *A Tentative Outline of U.S. Easley Lines, Primarily to the year 1800* by Virginia Easley DeMarce. This work, along with its updates, should be consulted.

177 *South Carolina Historical Magazine*, a publication of the South Carolina Historical Society, beginning with the July 1971 issue; “Journal of a Visit to Greenville from Charleston in the Summer of 1825” by Caroline Olivia Laurens, annotated by Mrs. Louise C. King, (then) assistant director of the Pendleton District Historical and Recreational Commission, Pendleton, South Carolina; Mrs. King’s annotations are in brackets followed by her initials LCK. The original diary was in the possession of Daniel Huger of Charleston, South Carolina at the time the article was written.
“Drank tea at Mrs. Whitner’s and returned home by moon light. After we got home we called to see Mrs. Benson, [Mrs. Enoch Berry Benson, wife of a leading merchant and one of the founders of Pendleton Factory LCK] who lives opposite to Mrs. Lorton. Her mother, old Mrs. Blassingame [Blassingame; Wife of Col. Blassingame and sister of Col. John Easley LCK] was there, whom we found a very agreeable woman.”

Her obituary appeared in the Greenville Mountaineer, published at Greenville, South Carolina, on 10 May 1834:

“Died, on the 26th ult. at her late residence in this District, Mrs. Elizabeth Blasingame, relict of General John Blasingame, aged 60 years. Of the virtues and worth of the deceased, unbiased truth can speak in those terms of praise, which partial affection alone so often bestows upon the dead. She was truly exemplary in the discharge of all the duties of a wife, a mother, a friend, and charitable neighbor.—Blessed with good sense, a cheerful spirit and kind heart, her loss is proportionately afflicting to her friends and to her bereaved family, for whom she entertained in a very high degree, all a mother’s unchanging love and devoted affection. But to the friends and relations of the deceased, the history of her life affords circumstances of consolation seldom combined. She descended to the grave in peace, at an age advanced, after seeing children and grand-children grow up around her: and her declining years were cheered by the confident hopes and faith of a christian—so she could well approach death without terror, and realize the words of the Poet, that

“To die is but landing on some peaceful shore,
Where billows never break nor tempests roar—
Ere well we feel the friendly stroke, ‘tis o’er.”

In the same issue of the Mountaineer, the following legal notice appeared:

“Administrators Sale:

“Will be sold at the late residence of Mrs. Elizabeth Blasingame, deceased, on Friday and Saturday, the 30th and 31st instant, Fifteen Negroes, all the stock of Horses, Cattle, Sheep, Hogs and other property belonging to her Estate, on a credit until the first day of February next.

“E. B. BENSON
W. E. WICKLIFFE,
Administrators”

Siblings, surname Easley, any others unknown
[Elizabeth Smith]

Halvesiblings, surname Easley, from her father’s marriage to Mary Allen
Ann “Nancy”, married Thomas Blasingame
John Allen
Samuel Allen

See Illustration Number 75.

Parents are Numbers 150 and 151.
76 – Peter CLINGMAN was born in 1780 in Rowan County, North Carolina to Alexander Clingman and his wife Elisabeth née Keiser; Lewis Shore Brumfield\textsuperscript{178} gives that date and states that it is found in a Clingman family bible but present ownership of the bible is not stated. No facts about Peter’s childhood have come to light. He was not a twin to his brother Jacob as is stated in \textit{The Heritage of Yadkin County}\textsuperscript{179}, Jacob having been singled out as the youngest son in his father’s will.

Among the Isaac Jarratt\textsuperscript{180} papers, 1832-1849, archived at Wilson Library at the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill (Folder 3514), is an indenture into apprenticeship document signed by Peter Clingman. Unfortunately, the paper is in very poor condition, and the date is unclear, although it is likely that no word is missing and the date is 10 April 1800. There is no indication about what kind of skill Peter was to learn. It appears that the paper was folded and tore along the fold. The right side of the piece that was originally the left side of the paper has crumbled away. The right side of that original paper is intact. The library staff refused to photocopy the paper so I could have Peter’s signature—they had already copied some of the papers in the file and asked that photocopies be made from the photocopies rather than the original, and I thought it would have been a good idea to do that with Peter’s indenture, but it was not to be. His signature, as a youth, was straightforward and very literate, but without the confident-looking flourishes he exhibited as a mature man. (Illustration 76). My transcription follows (line by line):

\begin{verbatim}
“This Indenture made the 10\textsuperscript{th} Day of Apr
our Lord one thousand Eight hundred and in
Year of America Independence Between p
of the County of Rowan and State of No
the one part and Michael McCleary of the Cou
and State aforesaid of the other part, Witn
peeter Clingerman hath p[hole in paper] himself And
Doth voluntarily and of his own free will
Himself apprentice to Sd Michael McCleary to Lea
Mystery and after the manner of an apprentice
from the day of the Date [hole in paper] for and Duri
one year and eleven Month[hole in paper]in the Date
term the Sd apprentice [hole in paper] Master faithful
His Secrets keep his Lawfull Command [spot obliterates possible word] E
And in all things behave himself as a faith
[next page]
ought to do during the said term and for the due performance
of all and Every the Sd Covenants and Agreements In Witness
whereof the Sd peter Clingerman have interchangeably Set his
Hand and Seal the Day and Year first above Written
Signed Sealed and Delivered
in presence of_

\end{verbatim}

\textsuperscript{178} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 38.
\textsuperscript{179} \textit{The Heritage of Yadkin County}, see footnote to the biography of Person Number 76.
\textsuperscript{180} Jarratt, a slave trader who became wealthy, was Peter’s nephew, the son of his sister Esther who married Killian Jarratt.
This apprenticeship may have been how Peter came about his blacksmithing skills, although it has been thought that he learned the family trade of blacksmithing from his father, from whom he also acquired some farming skills during his youth. His father kept an ordinary (inn), and the Clingman children must have helped with whatever work that enterprise entailed. Perhaps it was there that he realized he had an ability to deal with the public, leading him to pursue storekeeping as a livelihood. Brumfield states that Peter and his brother Jacob were partners in the Clingman store at Huntsville, a village on the west side of the Shallow Ford of the Yadkin River, north of their childhood home in Rowan County. Some of the store's ledgers still exist, providing small insights into daily life in the community, also providing date parameters for some of its customers. Daniel Boone bought provisions there when the store was owned by the Clingmans' predecessor, Joseph Williams. There was probably a trading establishment at that location two generations before the Clingmans assumed ownership.

In May, 1791, Alexander Clingman took into his home a bond servant, Elizabeth, the six-year-old orphan of Solomon Davis. Frances Speer found documents in North Carolina court records proving this. She found further information about Betsy Davis in court records created soon after Alexander's ca1803 death; Betsy was pregnant and accused Peter Clingman of responsibility. He apparently admitted his involvement, because Elisabeth Clingman paid £50 to the court for Betsy, and she was sent away from the family. I have not tried to find out what happened to Betsy and her child. Due to this incident and perhaps others, Frances Speer said to me, “Peter is not my favorite ancestor”.

After moving up the valley to Huntsville, perhaps in attempt to leave scandal behind, Peter married Ann Poindexter on 14 January 1806, probably in Surry County. Brumfield believes that Peter and his siblings were all trying to get away from their Germanness when they chose marriage partners. The couple became the parents of a daughter who died in childhood, and three sons, before Ann's untimely death in 1815. His brother Jacob had died young (there is some conjecture that he died from mercury poisoning, that element being used extensively in his trade of hatter, the making of hats from animal skins). After Ann’s death Jacob’s widow Jane, who was Ann’s sister, helped Peter rear his family. Some researchers have tried to make it seem that Peter and Jane engaged in a conjugal relationship, which I don’t believe. There may have been some talk, because “Lady” is written after Jane’s name in some document, according to Brumfield. The writer may have been sending the message that he didn’t believe the gossip.

I have not searched for evidence that Peter served in the War of 1812, but he was certainly of an age to have done so, and it is possible that he either was a soldier or contributed to the war effort in some way. Other men with wives and families did serve in the war.

After his wife’s death, Peter bought a dwelling in Huntsville which has come to be known as “The White House” and which is on the National Register of Historic Places. Its architecture is described in detail in Historical Architecture of Yadkin County, North Carolina, edited by
Lewis Shore Brumfield. William Seabrook also wrote about it in *The Heritage of Yadkin County*. He states that it was built about 1800 by Henry Young, who sold it to Peter Eaton. After Eaton’s death in 1818, his executor sold it to Peter Clingman. Seabrook found references among Clingman’s papers indicating that he owned a stable, a storehouse (this evidently means the Clingman Store, although that word in the modern vernacular would mean a place for storage), a shed, a blacksmith shop, a mill and a still. Seabrook writes, “He also operated a small tavern, and likely boarded stagecoach travelers in the White House”. There was a stagecoach trail which ran from Wilkesboro to Fayetteville, entering Huntsville from the only nearby safe crossing of the Yadkin, the Shallow Ford, and running down the main street.

Peter assumed legal responsibility for the four children of his brother Michael Clingman in 1827; they had come to live with him by 11 December 1826, the date that Ann Martha’s name first appears in the Clingman store ledger. Frances Speer believed that they may have come to him as early as about 1820, but gave no reason for that conjecture. His sister-in-law Jane continued to help him rear this enlarged family.

While Peter owned slaves who did the physical blacksmith work, he continued to manage a large blacksmith shop, and in 1834, in partnership with Thomas D. Kelly, bought an iron works. This establishment had been owned by Jonathan Haines, and Peter had been purchasing raw iron from him for his blacksmithing venture.

There is evidence in the store ledger that Peter was operating a tanyard by 1837. Apparently the leather and leather goods he supplied to the store had to be credited to him, then their sale recorded on the store ledger for bookkeeping purposes, thus leaving a paper trail.

Joyce Hammett née Self, a descendant of Peter through his son Alexander Brandon’s daughter Elizabeth Ann’s daughter Ann Martha Harris née Cross, sent the following transcription of his will, found in Surry County North Carolina Will Book 4, page 237:

“Peter Clingman last Will proven May 5 1845 [the 5 at first glance looks like a 0, but it is a 5]

“In the name of God amen I Peter Clingman being in possession of sound mind and judgment do this 20th day of October 1835 make this my last will and testament in manner and form following to wit, I constitute my son Francis P. Clingman my sole heir In the first place I devise and bequeath to the said Francis P. Clingman and his Heirs forever all my lands wheresoever located the principal tracts of which are the following First one tract of land lying partly in this County of Surry and partly in the County of Rowan formerly the property of Jonathan Dalton and sold after the death of said Dalton by a decree of the Courts which land lies on the Yadkin River adjoining the lands which now belong to Joseph Gray Sarah Dalton Elisha Stonestreet and others one Tract purchased from William Ashley adjoining the former tract containing forty acres more or less one Tract lying on the Yadkin River below the Tract first discribed I purchased from John Baileys heir in right of his wife of Edward Stonestreet deceased adjoining the lands of Sevin [Simon?] Ward and others containing forty acres more or less One improved lot in the Town of Huntsville on which stands my dwelling house Kitchen and various other improvements Known and generally called by the name of the White House also the lot and improvements on which my stable stands also the lots on which my red store House stands blacksmith shop stands with all their improvements also twelve other lots and five fractions of lotts
with their improvements if any there be on them One Tract of land near Huntsville containing thirteen
and one fourth acres One Tract containing one hundred acres also near Huntsville One Tract
containing one hundred and ninety acres called Rameys old place One Tract containing forty eight
acres on Deep Creek on which tract stands my mill & still House bought from Elkanah Hulching
One Tract adjoining the lands of Benjamin Nailor containing two hundred acres formerly belonging
to Rinegar. one lott in the Town of Rockford One Tract of land bought of Ethelred Wall containing
sixty two acres also all my interest in sundry Tracts of land sold as the property of Jonathan Haines to
satisfie an Execution in favor of Chambers against said Haines which lands were bought by
Kelly and myself jointly also my interest in the tract formaly the property of Jonathan
Haines on which the forge and Mill stand sold under a deed of Trust as the property of Chambers
Poltman and bought by Thomas D Kelly and myself and also my interest in all the other lands bought
by said Kelly and myself under said Deed of Trust some of which contain valuable ore Banks, also
all my lands which lie in the County of Thompkins and State of New York bought from Dctr William
Pattillo of the county of Mecklingburg and State of Virginia. Also my interest in a Tract of land
belonging to the Heirs of Zachary the clerk and Master of Equity in favor of a decree of the
Court and purchased by Danniel W. Comte & myself jointly Also my interest in one improved lott in
the town of Rockford on which stands a House and other improvements owned jointly by John
Wright & myself And if I do or should own any other lands or Town lotts not herein mentioned and
described I do hereby give and bequeath the same to my said son Francis P. Clingman. Lastly I give
and bequeath to my said son Francis P. Clingman all my personal property of whatever discription
among which are the following slaves To Wit, Elick Stephen Don Jacob Priss Sarah Sam Drew Siley
Sall and all her children and all the

Increase of said negroes all my goods Debts due me money Horses Cattle hogs all
my Beds household and Kitchen furniture farming and blacksmith Tools and all and _____
other species of property both personal and Real which I do now possess or may acquire
hereafter all the aforesaid property with all its increase and all the property of _____ species and
description with its increase forever which may be mine at the time of my death I give and bequeath to my said son Francis P. Clingman out of which my will and desire is that my said
son Francis P. Clingman pay all my just debts I devise that if at any time after my death suit
should be brought against any of my securities and they should be likely to be compeled to pay
any sum or sums for which they are bound for me that my Executors shall dispose of so much
of my personal property as will ______ the said securities and prevent them from paying any
thing for me. My further Will and desire is that my negro woman Sall and her children now
living or which may be born hereafter shall not be sold or _______ with in any way by my
Executors I desire that after my death my woman Sall and her children shall immediately go
into the possession of my son Francis P. Clingman Lastly I appoint my son Francis P. Clingman
Richard C. Puryear and Henry Pattillo Poindexter Executors to this my last Will and testament
In testimony Whereof I hereunto set my hand and seal the day and date before written
Signed sealed and delivered in
presence of
Jno P Clingman
F.S. Rose
Thomas L. Clingman

Peter's will as transcribed above has been written by a clerk into the court minutes, thus
does not contain his actual signature. The document is misleading, because Peter had
living children other than Francis when he made his will. He had disowned his son
Alexander Brandon Clingman at the time of his marriage, forbidden by Peter, to his first
cousin Ann Martha Clingman; he had disowned his son Dr. Henry Pattillo Clingman on
grounds that some descendants have described as 'flimsy'; but Brumfield "heard that
Henry and his father quarreled over such an ugly incident that it was considered unmentionable in the family”.

Peter certainly had acquired a great deal of property by the time he made his will some ten years before his death; the will makes it seems like he was an astute businessman. His wife’s inheritance may have given him the boost he needed to begin accumulating his wealth. Frances Speer asserted that he was inclined to “fritter away” Ann’s inheritance, and he had accumulated a lot of debts by the time he died so that the will doesn’t tell the entire story. Brumfield writes,

“He was so personable and well-liked that he could easily borrow money, which led to his ruin.”

Peter’s will makes special provision for his “Negro woman Sall and her children” but in another place calls her “my woman Sall”, leading me to wonder if her children were also his. This may have been one of the things Frances Speer found that made her regard Peter as ‘not her favourite’. If my conjecture proves true (and DNA proof of descent is beginning to come into its own), perhaps it would qualify as an “ugly incident” causing Peter’s quarrel with his son Henry.

Brumfield states that Peter died at Huntsville, North Carolina on 16 February 1845, according to the Raleigh (North Carolina) Register. A gravestone with illegible markings can be found under a boxwood at the family cemetery where Peter’s wife is buried, and Brumfield believes it might be Peter’s. Frances Speer learned that Peter’s son and sole heir Francis A. Clingman became a member of a religious sect that did not believe in the erection of gravestones, so it is certainly possible that Peter’s grave is unmarked.

Siblings, surname Clingman; birth order uncertain

Esther (Ester/Easter) married Killian Jarratt, issue; married second Mr. Mitchell, issue without issue
Michael married Miss Kizzie/ Kizzie/Casey etc., issue; married second Miss
George married Amy/Amiah Joyner; issue [Peter]
Catherine married Abraham Arrey/Area etc.; issue
Henry married Sarah Dustonbury
Jacob married Jane Poindexter; issue

See Illustration Number 76.

Parents are Numbers 151 and 152.

---

181 A marriage bond for Henry Alexander Clingman and Sally Sloane is dated 11 November 1826 with H. R. Dusenbury and B. D. Rounsaville bondsmen. I suspect that the bride is Sarah née Dusenbury or Dustonbury, and she was a widow Sloane when she married Clingman.
182 Thomas Lanier Clingman, United States Senator, General in the Confederate Army, the man for whom Clingman’s Dome, the highest point in Tennessee is named, is the son of this couple.
Ann POINDEXTER was born on 9 November 1787 in Surry County, North Carolina to Francis Poindexter and his wife Jane nee Pattillo. County boundaries have been realigned and her actual birthplace is now (2002) in Forsyth County. She married Peter Clingman on 14 January 1806, probably in Surry County. *The Heritage of Yadkin County* relates that she was a twin to her sister Jane, but that has been disproved by gravestone dates of both. The dates are similar but about 2 years apart. According to her gravestone, she died on 15 January 1815.

Excursus: The surname Poindexter is an Anglicized version of the French name Poingdestre. The first Poindexter found in North America seems to be George, and he is credited with bringing the first Jersey cattle to this continent.

In 1980, Dr. John B. Poindexter published a family history which contains a reference to a Poindexter presence in Normandy in 1180 AD. The source cited by Dr. Poindexter is *Bulletin of the Society Jersiaise*. This is the earliest reference that has been found.

When John Poindexter Landers, S.T.B., M.A., wrote a book on Poindexter history, he named it *Poingdestre-Poindexter, a Norman Family Through the Ages 1250-1977*. The book was published by Robert Downs Poindexter, who wrote the final chapter. I read some of it at the Evans Memorial Library in Aberdeen, Mississippi, but didn’t photocopy the portion dealing with history before the family arrived on the North American continent.

Although the progression of descent has been given as George (immigrant), Thomas, Thomas, Thomas and Francis (father of Ann of this biography), there is no firm proof that the earliest Thomas (called Thomas I by the Poindexter EPARC) is the son of George, and latest indications are that he is not. There is, however, evidence that Thomas is a blood relation to George; he may be George’s nephew or cousin in some degree.

The Poingdestre family lived in St. Saviour's Parish on the Isle of Jersey. There is lore that they dwelt at Swan Farm, but this has somehow become confused, because there is not now nor never was a farm on the Isle of Jersey called Swan Farm. Swans are not indigenous to that island. The French language was spoken there at the time the Poingdestre family was supposed to have departed for North America, and ‘Swan Farm’ is definitely not French. Researchers have translated ‘Swan Farm’ to French, and again, no farm by that name was ever known to be on Jersey. This was stated to me at the Family History Room in St. Helier, Isle of Jersey in May, 1996.

I believe, but have no proof, that George the immigrant lived in England at Swan Farm (no one knows where in England Swan Farm might be located), having gone there from Jersey, but the family lore got scrambled and the immigrant was said to have come from Swan Farm on Jersey. There is some hint of a connection to Barbados, and I don’t know if anyone has searched for a Swan Farm there.

---

83 Early-Poindexters-in-America Research-Committee, Edward Haviland Poindexter, Ph.D., Chairman (2002)
Little is known of Ann’s childhood. Their mother wrote to Ann’s sister Jane and referred to Ann as ‘Nancy’, a nickname for ‘Ann’ common at that time. Some family researchers have spelled her name ‘Anne’, and I have seen a middle name for her but without documentation. Her mother’s letter relates one event during Peter and Ann’s young married life, a trip climbing up Pilot Mountain, a local landmark then as it is now.

The children came along quickly, four during the approximately nine years of her marriage. Her only daughter’s death in 1814 must have been devastating to her. As far as I know, the cause of Ann’s death was not recorded anywhere.

She is buried in the Poindexter family cemetery; her mother’s first husband Robert Lanier is said to have been the first person buried there, the land afterward being owned by the Poindexters. Brumfield relates that Jane Poindexter Clingman, Jacob’s widow, sold the land after the Civil War, but the graveyard plot was bought back from the purchaser by Dr. John P. Clingman. Brumfield writes, “The deed described the graveyard as ‘...Burying Ground 70 yards square, said burying ground to be held in common [with] the Jarrett [family].’ The deed specified that none of the ‘descendants of Francis and Jane Poindexter and their heirs...should be prohibited from the rights of burial or the right of entry.’” The cemetery is located a scant two-tenths mile east of the east end of the bridge at the Shallow Ford. Two cemeteries are to be found there, and this is the more easterly of the two.

Halsiblings, surname Lanier
   Elizabeth, died in childhood
   Thomas, died age 24 without issue

Siblings, surname Poindexter
   [Ann]
   Jane, married Jacob Clingman; issue
   Francis Anderson, married Rosannah Ferrier; issue
   Henry Pattillo, married Sarah Paup

See Illustration Number 77.

Parents are Numbers 154 and 155.

78 – Michael CLINGMAN was born to Alexander Clingman and his wife Elisabeth née Kaiser (various spellings) about 1785 in Rowan County, North Carolina. The Heritage Yadkin County states that he was born in Cabarrus County but no documentation is offered. No facts about his early life have been uncovered. He was likely literate, because his brother

---

184 It seems to me as logical a nickname as Polly is for Mary, Patsy for Martha, Peggy for Margaret and Sally for Sarah; all of these were common at one time and the last two continue in general use.
185 Transcription of the letter is found in the biography of Person Number 155, Jane Pattillo (Lanier) Poindexter.
186 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 76.
Peter was known to be.

For some reason, Brumfield consistently calls Michael Clingman “Alexander Michael”, as does Melinda Jones Cubage in some of her writings. I find no document naming him other than Michael. Alexander Brandon and Ann Martha Clingman named a son Alexander Michael which may have influenced Mrs. Cubage; her papers are archived in the Davie County Library in Mocksville, North Carolina, and Brumfield, who lives nearby, may have in turn come under her influence.

Michael’s brother George, according to Brumfield, went to Charleston, South Carolina and engaged in ship building. Michael went there also, but there is evidence that he moved to Columbia (some people believe his daughter Ann Martha was born there), thence to Orangeburg District. Brumfield states that he was living in Old Columbia District in 1810, but in Orangeburg district by 1815 when he sold the land in Rowan County, North Carolina, that he had inherited from his father.

_The Heritage of Yadkin County_ states, and I believe it was Frances Speer who found, that Michael had voted in the parish of St. Matthews in Orangeburg District, South Carolina, in 1811. I haven’t redone any of her research because it seemed to me that nothing was to be gained; she was thorough, and if she found nothing, there is nothing to be found. It is possible, of course, that at some later time additional old records will be uncovered.

He married probably about 1806, because his first known child, John Alexander Clingman, was born 22 August 1807; John died on 16 December 1808. This information is found in a family bible once owned by Mary Louise Clingman Hobson, Michael’s youngest daughter with his first wife. After Mary Louise Hobson’s death in 1885, her grandson, William Alexander Hobson of Pueblo, Colorado, assumed possession of the bible. Its whereabouts at the present time are unknown. The information from the bible has been hand-copied, and can be found in The South Caroliniana Library at Columbia, South Carolina.

His wife’s maiden name has been given as Kizzee because his daughter Ann Martha named a son Arthur Kizzee Clingman. No documentation has been found. Taking extrapolation a step further, one can guess that since the first son was given the names John and Alexander, and Alexander was Michael’s father’s name, John may have been the name of his wife’s father.

After his first wife’s death sometime after Mary Louise’s birth in June, 1814, Michael remarried to a lady whose name has not even been guessed at, as far as I know. Two daughters were born to the second wife, the last on 13 February 1820. It seems likely that if she had been a posthumous child, there would be some family lore to that effect, so it is probably safe to assume that Michael died after her birth. Frances Speer believed that it was after the second wife’s remarriage (possibly to a Mr. Johnson) and subsequent death, that the children from Michael’s first marriage went to North Carolina to live under the guardianship of Peter Clingman, Michael’s brother. Frances must have been unsure about this, because she also believed that it was possible that the four

---

187 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 38.
188 Information about Mrs. Cubage can be found in the biography of Person Number 38.
surviving children from his first marriage could have gone to Peter as early as 1820.

In any case, Michael was certainly dead before 13 February 1827, when the Surry County Court minutes contain this entry (original spelling retained):

“Order by the court that Peter Clingman be appointed Guardian to Catherine C. Clingman, An M. Clingman, Arther A. Clingman and May [Mary] L. Clingman of Surry County children of Michael Clingman deceased late of Orangeburg District of South Carolina and execute bond put at the sum of $5000 with George J. Holcomb and Henry P. Poindexter his security. The Testio ex approving said securees was Eltjah Thompson, William Mackie and Alfred Martin Esq.”

(Brumfield didn’t find this document, and in early editions of his book he states in error that Michael, widowed, had returned with his family to Surry County and married Lottie Winningham. I believe he corrected later editions.)

Since Michael was “late of Orangeburg District” one can assume that he was buried there, but nothing further is known.

Siblings, surname Clingman; birth order uncertain

- Esther (Ester/Easter) married Killian Jarrett, issue; married second Mr. Mitchell, issue without issue
- [Michael]
- George married Amy/Amiah Joyner; issue
- Peter married Ann Poindexter; issue
- Catherine married Abraham Arrey/Area etc.; issue
- Henry married Sarah Dustonbury
- Jacob married Jane Poindexter; issue

Parents are Numbers 156 and 157.

79 – Miss KIZZIE is a name that has been latched onto as a maiden name for Michael Clingman’s first wife, because her daughter Ann Martha Clingman named a son Arthur Kizzie Clingman. I have seen various spellings including Kizzie, Kissee and Casey.

A Thomas Kizzie was enumerated on the South Carolina census, but there is nothing to connect him to our ancestress, although a connection has not been ruled out. There has been speculation that since her first son was given the names John and Alexander, and Alexander was Michael’s father’s name, John may have been the name of her father. The name Arthur probably came into the family from her line, because that name was not used by either the Clingman or Poindexter families, the other ancestors of her daughter Ann Martha Clingmans’ children.

A clue to her given name might be found among those chosen for her daughters: Catherine E., Ann Martha, Mary Louise, Sarah and Dorcas.

She must have married Michael Clingman about 1806, because their first child was born in
1807. Four more children were born to the couple, and she died some time after the last child’s birth in June 1814. Her husband’s second wife gave birth on 18 March 1818, and one can probably make a safe assumption that she was dead at least a year before that.

The family lived in Orangeburg District, South Carolina, and she probably died and was buried there. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

88 – Isaac Barefoot RUNYAN was born between 1850 and 1860, either in New Jersey where many Runyans (various spellings) lived; or in Virginia’s Shenandoah Valley, where he is first found in the records; or perhaps somewhere between those places. Some published genealogies name parents for Barefoot, but do not offer proof. Norman Runyon calls Mrs. Wright’s story fiction, and identifies himself as the source: he was creating a possible scenario and she apparently did not or chose not to understand that, so, he writes, “she turned my speculation into fact”. See Norm’s disclaimer, Appendix 6.

Excursus: There is ample evidence that a young man named Vincent Rongnion immigrated to New Jersey about 1666. A marriage license was issued by Gov. Philip Carteret on 28 June 1668, and on 17 July 1668, Vincent married Ann Martha Boucher. Most if not all those bearing the names Runyan, Runyon, Runion, Runnion etc., in North America, are descended from that couple, who became the parents of twelve known children, eight sons and four daughters. There is simply a lack of records, and researchers have been unable, up to now, to make a link between one of their descendants and our Barefoot.

***

Mrs. Wright states that the Rev. John Alderson, Jr. married Barefoot and Margaret Rambo on 19 May 1777 at Brock’s Gap Baptist Church. The record page is reproduced in Up the Runyon/Runion Runyan Tree. Rev. Alderson numbered the marriages, and the Runyan marriage is number 28; he used the character that makes the word ‘the’ look like ‘ye’. The record reads, “May the 19th 1777 Barefoot Runyan with Margret Rambo”. There is no statement contained in the record about where the marriage took place. This is also addressed in Appendix 6.

During the Revolutionary War, Barefoot was recorded as collecting cattle for the Shenandoah County Militia; on 27 November 1783, he was paid 13 shillings and 6 pence for driving ‘beesves’ for the Patriotic cause. An Elisha Runyan is found in these same records; his relationship to Barefoot, if any, is unknown.

---

189 See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 11.
190 Ibid.
191 Mrs. Wright references Public Service Claims Booklet, Shenandoah County, Virginia. Book 5, Reel 6, page 159. I have not seen the Booklet myself.
Henry Haymond wrote in *History of Harrison County, West Virginia*:

"After Barefoot Runyon's marriage he lived in Shenandoah County, Virginia, where he was listed in the 1785 Census with four white souls, one dwelling and two other buildings. He was a member of Captain Abraham Bird's Company...[Bird] lived somewhere between Edinburg and Mount Jackson. During that period, taxes were collected in districts. The Captain was the tax collector and the tax payers were members of the company."

Some time shortly after the end of the Revolutionary War, Barefoot moved south into Tennessee with his family. In 1789, Barefoot signed a petition requesting that the lands "south of the French Broad [River]" be extended protection of government and to provide for recognized titles to the occupied lands.

Barefoot witnessed the will of Marshal Lovelady in Jefferson County, Tennessee on 10 April 1792.

By 1802 or thereabouts, the family was in Sevier County, Tennessee, where they experienced tragedy. Barefoot was involved in an incident which accidentally led to the death of the Indian Sassa who was also called Sammy; probably in retribution the Indians killed Barefoot and Margaret's son Tavenor; and Margaret died at the birth of a son.

*East Tennessee Roots* published an article entitled "Account of the Death of Cherokee, Sassa, near Col. Samuel Wear's House in Sevier County, Tennessee, in July 1802". A few words were illegible and represented by a blank. This is an eyewitness account by Wear himself. Notice that Barefoot is described as "a Small man", the only information we have about Barefoot's physical characteristics.

"Severe County July the 28th 1802

Dr. Sir, These may Inform you Respecting the Circumstance of a Cherokee who lately Died In this part Viz-

Two Cherokee men one who called himself Johny, the other Samy or Sassa a Cherokee name, Who say they both Lived in a Town named Equoneetle, they came to my house on the Night of the 15th Instant on the business I understand to bring In a horse belonging to a certain Captain McLaughlin. Which horse had been in the Nation for Sometime and in their performing So friendly an act to the Whites I Got Some Whiskey and treated them the Same night of Which they Drank Very freely Almost all night In friendship and Good Humour, and on the next Morning the aforesaid Mclaughlin the Owner of the Said horse came to my house and Informed me that he wished to pay and Satisfy the Said Indians for bringing in his Said horse. After Some time a number more white people came In and they all Drank Whiskey pretty freely and the Indian Man named Sammy or Sassa Soon became Very Drunk and Lay almost all day on the Floor Asleep; the Other Indian named Johney kept himself Sober. Every person appeared friendly and In Good Humour, Untile the Evening when a Small man by the Name of Barefoot Runions Whom I took to be Very Much Intoxicated with Liquor

---

193 Volume VII, Number 1, Spring 1992. The transcription here is from *Up the Runyon/Runion Runyan Tree*, and has undergone slight editing for clarity.
194 Col. Wear was sometimes referred to as Captain.
began as I though in play or Diversion with the Cherokee named Johny. The Said Johny had a Sword hanging around his Neck and made an attempt as if he intended to draw the Said Sword to the White man aforesaid, which I observed and spoke to the Indian and told him not to do so. The Indian Johny then asked me if the Said White man was not angry, and a bad man, on which I answered him that he was but a small man and that he had got too much whiskey and that he was no ways dangerous on which Johny then delivered me his sword and knife and I laid them away.

In a short time afterward the said white man and the said Indian Johny joined to restle or scuffle through the floor, when the said white man sometimes flung the Indian and sometimes the said Indian flung the said white man and during that time they frequently went to the table and would drink whiskey together, still in friendship and diversion as appeared to me. No neither did I in the least expect any mischief, and after they began to strike pretty hard and rough which then appeared to me that it came to a fight in earnest between them and the said Indian Johny and the said white man runions began thus engaged I immediately interfered and laid hold of the white man and drew him away or apart in order to put a stop to it going any further. In this time the other Indian who had been lying as appeared asleep, on hearing the noise, jumped up, and the white man got loose from me, and immediately him and the other Indian Samy or Sassa Inclosed. I then laid hold of Johny and held him still with an intention of getting them all apart in a short time and put a stop to the _______ quarrel. But someway in the scuffle Sassa or Sammy they said fell on the short posts of a chair at which the ended [sic]. I could not nor did I see how it happened as I was engaged holding the other off. But I was informed by others who were in the house and present at the time, that he fell on the short posts of a chair with his belly on which he immediately slpt out of the house into the porch and lay down and complained of his belly. The said Indians still continued to stay with me all night afterwards in my house and the next day morning they started to go home, but the said Indian Samy seemed to complain much of his belly being hurt. I examined him all over but could not discover any breach or mark on him or hurt whatsoever outwardly. Notwithstanding, they traveled but a little more than three miles from my house where they encamped and remained untill Thursday the 22nd instant when I was informed that he died and some of the whites assisted in burying him. I myself was not at home the time when he died or I would have wrote sooner.

Sir I have been this lengthy and particular as it is a matter in which I have been much troubled about and have reason to be sorry and much lament that too much whiskey was amongst the people that day. What oversight [?] this was _______ and if you have it in your power I would _______ particular favor if you on seeing his friends _______ and loss of my friend and brother Sassa or Sammy. Too _______ for the death of my name sake whom I believe _______ that name out of friendship to me, he has been _______ acquaintance of mine and he hath been often in the _______ inhabitants of this part and I know never heard of _______ against him or of any this behavior and there _______ to my knowledge why any person should _______ injure his person, let alone to take his life _______. I also join with his friends in mourning for _______. I could not persuade myself that it was possible he could die as the affair appeared to be so simple and _______. There was no weapons of any kind made use of neither did I believe that any intention was about the company by any person either white or red of taking life at that time nor do I wish by this letter to screen [?] any person from being punished if they had any intention of taking life neither do I desire the friends of the person to be reprieved of their right by law or justice if they should consider any due to them on this account. I am Dr. Sir your obedient + Humb. Servt.

[signed] Sam Wear

To Mr. Carry195 Interpreter

---

195 This is James Carey, interpreter and assistant at the Tellico Block House.
Retribution was important to the Cherokee, and on Wednesday, 8 September 1802, they murdered Barefoot Runyan’s son Tavenor (sometimes called Marcus).

Mrs. Wright, in *Up the Runyon/Runion Runyan Tree*, also transcribed three letters pertaining to Tavenor’s murder, written by Tennessee Governor Archibald Roane:

“September 11th 1802

“Sir

“On Wednesday evening last a young man named Tavenor Runnion was murdered by the Indians on the West fork of the Little Pigeon in Sevier County. From every circumstance I have reason to believe that the perpetrators of the murder live in Chilhowee. The young man had three bullets shot thro’ his body, and a cut with a tomahawk in his head. The people in that quarter are much exasperated, and threaten immediate retaliation. I am just setting out to that neighborhood to prevent any such rash conduct and prevail on them to wait for that mode of satisfaction stipulated by treaty. In the absence of Colonel Meigs I think proper to address you, and suppose that in the present state of irritation it would be proper to caution the Indians (as far as it can be done without alarm) not to come among the frontier settlers, particularly on Pigeon lest some person actuated by resentment should be disposed to do them injury.

“I am Sir

“Yours respectfully

“Archibald Roane

[to] Major William Macrea”

“Boyd’s Creek September 14th 1802

“Sir

“I am now on my return from Little Pigeon. The people there are much irritated at the death of a lad about fifteen years of age who was murdered by the Indians on Wednesday evening last. I have however prevailed on them not to pursue any rash measures but to wait for that mode of satisfaction stipulated by the treaty. I have full confidence that retaliation will not be attempted unless the regular measures to obtain Justice in conformity with the treaty should fail. But if the Indians by their conduct should make it appear to be a national act I cannot say what may be the consequence. In the mean time to prevent any farther interruption to peace it would be well that the Indians should stay at home for some time and not go among the frontier settlers particularly on Little Pigeon and that those who are now out on that quarter may be called away.

“I trust that you will see the necessity of attention to this business and inform them that the nation have nothing to fear at present from an armed force going against them as we are determined to pursue the regular means to obtain redress and have confidence that they also will remember the obligations of the treaty. Any information you can convey to me of the intention or present disposition of the indians will be thankfully received.”
"I am Sir with respect
Your Obedient Servant
/signed/ Archibald Roane

"[to] John W Hooker Esquire
Tellico."

"Knoxville 4th October 1802.

"Dear Sir

While you were employed in running the line a lad named Tavenor Runnion said to be between fifteen and sixteen years of age was murdered by the Indians on the West fork of Little Pigeon in Sevier County.

The people in that quarter were much exasperated at so daring an act and meditated immediate retaliation supposing from the number of the Indians that their conduct was authorised by some of the chiefs of the nation. This intention on more calm reflection and by the exertions of Officers of the State was abandoned. The murderers are supposed to be Cherokees from Chilhowee, or some of the Towns on Tennessee river above Chilhowee. We could without much difficulty have destroyed those towns, but we know that the treaty forbids retaliation or reprizal and to that stipulation we wish to conform. It appears from the inquisition taken and from the depositions of several witnesses (copies of which I herewith transmit) that on the evening of the eighth of September last near sunsetting, four Indians (who had previously placed themselves in Barefoot Runnion’s field not far from his house) wantonly murdered the before named Tavenor Runnion; that they shot three balls through his body, and gave him a large cut with a tomahawk on the back part of his head and made their escape. I have taken this earliest opportunity since your return to South West Point to state to you this fact, and On behalf of the State of Tennessee over which I have the honor to preside I call on you to aid in procuring justice to be speedily done for the Outrage Commited, and request you to demand that the Cherokee Nation pursuant to the tenth article of the Treaty of Holston do deliver up the perpetrators of said murder to be punished according to the laws of the United States.

"I am Sir, with sincere regards
Your Most Obedient Servant
/signed/ Archibald Roane.

"[to] Colonel Return J. Meigs
Agent of War in Tennessee."

Although the Cherokee Chiefs questioned Barefoot and accepted his explanation that it was an accident, then forbid Sammy’s clan to take revenge, his Uncle Ca-tah-coo-kee “Dirt Bottle” along with some kinsmen, killed Tavenor, believing that Sammy’s spirit required revenge. Other Cherokee delivered Dirt Bottle to the white authorities, and after a trial, Ca-tah-coo-kee was hanged for Tavenor’s murder.

Barefoot and Margaret had six known children, all sons. There may have been more children, but any names have not found their way into the record. The eldest son, John
Wesley, was a young man already married or soon to be married when the last child was born, so it would seem likely that the couple had more children during that long time span. The fact that John and his wife reared the baby, however, makes it seem likely that no sisters old enough to take charge of the household were living in the home (or were married and living nearby) when Margaret died. One Margaret “Runyon”196 born in Sevier County in 1799 is found married to James Holland—it is very likely that she is the daughter of Barefoot and Margaret. The Hollands reared a large family in Missouri.

Apparently undeterred by the unrest on the frontier, the Runyan family remained. On 27 July 1808, Barefoot was granted a tract of land containing 168 acres and 70 poles along the Little Pigeon River in Sevier County. According to researcher Bill Kerr,

“Those who occupied the land south of the French Broad lived as squatters or preemptors until 1808 when they were permitted to buy the land, some of which was classified as Academy land at a price of $1.00 per acre. This was 10 times what the preemptors expected to pay.”

Kerr states that Barefoot owed $151.60 after he made an initial payment of $16.85 on his 168 acre, 70 pole grant. It was classified as Academy land, and in 1821, apparently having made no further payments, he was informed it was to be sold for “interest and costs due”.

Evidently the property was not foreclosed, because after people had petitioned for relief for 23 years, the legislature finally agreed in 1829 to release the residents south of the French Broad from all debts related to these lands. Barefoot’s son Aaron probably lived on these lands and remained there, while Barefoot and much of his family moved to Bledsoe County about the time son Isaac entered the U. S. Army for service in the War of 1812.

Mrs. Wright states that an additional land purchase was made in 1809. She has been accused of not finding the correct place when she took the pictures of the chimney found in Tracking Barefoot Runyan197, supposedly all that remains of the Runyan house. I am unable to address the questions that surround this controversy. The Runyans remained in Sevier County probably until about the time of the War of 1812, when they moved on, some to Meigs County, some to Roane County, and Barefoot to Bledsoe County. They may have left Sevier because of the high price of land there.

Mrs. Wright did do some fine analytic research, in my opinion, on a deed of gift found in the records of Bledsoe County, Tennessee.

“This Indenture made this tenth day of May 1817, between Isaac Runyan of the County of Bledsoe and State of Tennessee, of the one part and William Runyan of the County and State aforesaid, of the other part witnesseth: the said Isaac Runyans as Will [sic:?] for and in consideration of the natural love and affection which he hath and bareth unto the said William Runyan, his grandson as for the sum of one dollar to me in hand paid by this William Runyan, have given and granted and by these present do give and grant unto the said William Runyan...And I, the said Isaac Runyan, all singular the aforesaid cattle to the said William Runyan, his heirs, Executors and administrators and assigns do warrent and forever defend from me, my heirs and assigns forever and from all manner of persons

196 I have placed her name among the siblings of Person Number 44; see footnote at her name in that list.
197 See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 11.
carrying any lawful claims thereunto by forever ordered. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my 
hand and affixed my Seal the day and year above written...

“(signed) Isaac Runyan (Seal)

“State of Tennessee
County of Bledsoe

“May Session 1817, Deed of Gift from Isaac Runyan to William Runyan there [sic: the heir?] and son 
of John Runyan was Duly acknowledged[d] in open Court and ordered to be Registered.

“June 21, 1817 (signed) Samuel Terry, Clerk”

Mrs. Wright reasons that since William was known to be Barefoot’s grandson (the son of 
John Wesley), this document seems to be sufficient proof that Isaac was the same man as 
Barefoot; he seems to use the names interchangeably.

A good many theories have emerged about whether Isaac and Barefoot are the same man,
and why he started calling himself Isaac. My own favorite is that Barefoot was only a nickname 
anyway, and after the Sassa incident he didn’t want anything to do with the name Barefoot and began 
to use his real name, Isaac.

In October 1817, the two Isaac Runyans signed a petition in Bledsoe County, asking that the 
state consider building a prison. The paper that survives seems to be a copy, because the 
‘signatures’ are all in the same handwriting.

Isaac apparently remained behind when his son Ware made the move to Shelby County, 
Alabama before the 1820 census was taken, but is believed to have gone there with son Isaac 
and his wife before their eldest son was born there in 1822. He left his youngest son in the 
care of the eldest, John Wesley and his wife, who went to Meigs County, Tennessee; if 
Margaret who married James Holland is his daughter, she seems to have been left with 
Aaron and his wife.

Barefoot is certainly the male between 80 and 89 years old who was enumerated with Isaac’s 
family. He was still living in their home in 1840, again between 80 and 90 years old. There 
is an elaborate scheme for determining birth year with these census ages, hinging on the fact 
of different census dates. However, since the census target date was June 1 in both 1830 and 
1840, no manipulation is possible, and it has to be assumed that his age was stated in error 
on one or the other.

A story was printed in some Alabama newspapers, apparently long after his death, about 
Isaac Runyan, Sr. living to the age of 117 years and being able to “…walk about with a staff 
until after he was 110 years old”. My personal opinion is that someone’s tongue got carried away; I 
believe he lived to a ripe old age, perhaps more than 90. But I don’t believe he was living in 1850, 
because he cannot be found on the census. Age as advanced as his is made out to be would have 
brought the census taker out, just to see such an aged man, even if he wasn’t otherwise doing a very 
complete job of enumeration.
The same article states that others mentioned in the article, who also lived to be aged, were “buried near the entrance to our old burying ground”\textsuperscript{198}. Mrs. Wright searched almost every cemetery in Talladega County and many in surrounding counties, and didn’t find a marked grave for Barefoot. She did find many gravestones with illegible markings. His may be one of them, or may be unmarked; he is almost certainly buried in Talladega County in the neighborhood of Talladega or Alpine.

Parents have not been identified.

89 – Margaret RAMBO was the daughter of Jacob Rambo and his first wife, Deborah Allen. She was born after 1755, probably in Augusta County, Virginia. The Allens were Quakers, but the Rambos came from a Swedish Lutheran tradition.

Excursus: Commander Beverly Nelson Rambo compiled \textit{The Rambo Family Tree}\textsuperscript{199} in which she details the founding of the Rambo family in America. Her work will be referred to throughout the Rambo line. When she began, there were a number of theories about the immigrant’s native land. She writes,

“"The belief persists among members of the Rambo family that they were of French origin, while others believe Rambos are of Scotch [sic], English, or Wendish origin. Family names spelled the same as Rambo, or a recognizable similar form, have been found in these cultures leading to a number of theories concerning the original ‘roots’ of the family.”

She wrote a few paragraphs about these theories, but offered proof that Peter Gunnarson Rambo the immigrant spoke Swedish and followed Swedish ways. Before the book was printed, a letter that offers irrefutable proof of his Swedish origin was found in an archive in Sweden\textsuperscript{200}.

In addition, Dr. Peter Stebbins Craig published an article about the Rambo family in \textit{Swedish Colonial News}\textsuperscript{201}. Dr. Craig writes about the Rambo surname,

“Peter Gunnarson Rambo [the immigrant from Sweden] chose the distinctive surname of Rambo from his place of origin, Hisingen, the northwestern section of Gothenburg, which is dominated by Ramberget (meaning, raven’s mountain) with its enchanting view of the Gothenburg harbor.”

German Rambos: On 24 September 2002, I was researching at the Family History Center in Lincoln when another patron asked for some help with what she was reading, German church records from the parish of Marne in Schleswig-Holstein. What she had found was a marriage record from 15 October 1820. Johann Christian Adam Rambo,

---

\textsuperscript{198} Oak Hill Cemetery in the city of Talladega, Alabama.


\textsuperscript{200} See the biography of Person Number 1424.

\textsuperscript{201} Swedish Colonial News, Volume 1, Number 2 (Fall 1990); article by Dr. Peter Stebbins Craig, Fellow, American Society of Genealogists; Fellow, Genealogical Society of Pennsylvania; Historian, Swedish Colonial Society.
son of Johann Rambo, came from Brenz, Amts Neustadt, in the Grand Duchy of Mecklenburg-Schwerin and married a Mame woman. Brenz is not terribly far from the North Sea, which separates Sweden and Germany, making me wonder if Peter’s brother or nephew also used the Rambo name and migrated to Germany.

***

On 19 May 1777, Margaret married Isaac Barefoot Runyan somewhere in the neighborhood of Brock’s Gap, Virginia. Wedding ceremonies were often conducted at the home of the bride, but there is nothing in the record to indicate where the marriage took place. Since her parents were Quakers (her father had embraced her mother’s religion by then) and the marriage service was read by a Baptist preacher, it is not possible to make a guess about the site of the wedding.

Barefoot and Margaret had together six known sons; if there were more children their identities are unknown, but a Margaret Runyon found in Internet databases seems to be a likely candidate.

The Runyans lived in Virginia during the Revolutionary War, and afterward moved to Tennessee.

Toward the end of July 1802, her husband was involved in an incident with the Indian Sassa (otherwise Sammy); Sassa died soon after. Barefoot was blamed by the Indians for Sassa’s death, and in September, Barefoot and Margaret’s son Tavenor was killed by the Indians, an act of retribution. Margaret died at the birth of a son that same year, but the date is not known. If it was after the deaths of Sassa and Tavenor, all the resultant upheaval may have contributed to her death shortly after giving birth. If she died before the incident with Sassa, despair over loss of his wife may have contributed to her husband’s being “Very Much Intoxicated with Liquor” at the time of the Sassa incident.

Mrs. Wright writes about Margaret’s death:

“Several members of the family over the years, have related the story of the mother, Margaret’s death when this child [Loami] was born. After the birth of the child, Margaret’s oldest son [John Wesley] came into the room and asked how she felt. Her reply was, ‘Low am I, Wesley’ and she died. It is said that was how the name Loami Wesley came about.”

Mrs. Wright found a rock engraved “M R” in the Shiloh Memorial Cemetery at Pigeon Forge, Tennessee, near the graves of Margaret’s son Aaron Runyan and his wife Esther. She believes that it marks Margaret’s burial place. The spelling ‘Runyon’ is used on Aaron’s stone.

---

202 See Person Number 22, sibling list.
203 A similar story is told about the naming of the village of Loami, Illinois: A mill burned, and its owner was sitting near the rubble. Someone asked him how he felt about the situation, and he is supposed to have said, “Low am I”; thus, the town was named.
Siblings, surname Rambo, from CDR Rambo’s list
   Joseph
   [Margaret]
   Jackson
   Johnson “Sol”\textsuperscript{204}
   Rebecca
   Jacob, Jr.
   Barbara
   Isaac
   Lydia

See Illustration 89.

Parents are Numbers 178 and 179.

\textbf{92 – John HUSTON} was probably born about 1750-1758. The family may have been Irish.

He married Elizabeth née Adair, the widow of George Davis, before 1784. The family lived in Spartanburg, South Carolina when the oldest son Joseph\textsuperscript{205} was born in 1784. All of the children went west to Alabama and Texas except for the third son, Elisha, who remained in South Carolina.

No information has been uncovered birthplace, death date and place, nor burial place.

Parents have not been identified.

\textbf{93 – Elizabeth ADAIR} was born about 1763, probably Laurens District, South Carolina, the daughter of Joseph Adair, Jr., and most likely his first wife, whose name is unknown.

\textbf{Excursus}: The Adair name may be English, Irish or Scottish, and is found in \textit{The Encyclopedia of American Family Names}\textsuperscript{206} which is quoted below:

“English: Derived from the Old English first name Eadgar, which is derived from words meaning prosperity and spear.

“Irish, Scottish:
  1) Derived from the Gaelic words ‘ath’ and ‘dare’ meaning a shallow place in a river and oaks. The name was given to those who lived near such places.
  2) Trans-formation of the Scottish first name Eadzear, which is the equivalent to the English first name Edgar.”

I was in attendance at a seminar in McAllen, Texas in 2002, and met there a woman who

\textsuperscript{204} Some descendants researching the family believe that Jackson and Johnson “Sol” are the same man.

\textsuperscript{205} It was this Joseph Huston who changed the spelling of his name to ‘Hughston’.

\textsuperscript{206} H. Amanda Robb & Andrew Chesler, 1995.
was researching her Adair ancestry. We didn’t find relatives in common, but she did tell me that in Oklahoma where she grew up, the name was pronounced A’dare, the first syllable heavily accented.

As far as I know, these famous Adairs are not related to our Adair family:

James Adair the Indian trader and author of The History of American Indians.

John Adair, a South Carolina soldier in the Revolutionary War who was later Governor of Kentucky and represented Kentucky in the United States House of Representatives.

William P. Adair, who was assistant chief of the Cherokee nation, and during the Civil war led a band of Native Americans in the Confederate Army and fought at the Battle of Pea Ridge in northwest Arkansas. He later represented his tribe in Washington, D.C.

Paul N. “Red” Adair, a professional firefighter who specialized in extinguishing oil-well fires. Red Adair gained global fame in 1962 when he tackled a fire at a gas field in the Sahara, a feat later retold in the John Wayne film Hellfighters.

* * *

Elizabeth was apparently very young when she married her first husband, George Davis, a Revolutionary soldier, with whom she had two daughters and a son.

After Davis’ death in the Revolutionary War, she married John Huston before 1784; the couple had nine known children.

Transcribers of her father’s 1812 will have written, “...my daughter Elizabeth and her husband John hutron one Negro girl Named Claris...” and “...among all Elizabeth hutrons children of her natural body...”, but the name looks like ‘huston’ (not capitalized) to me.

Mrs. Patterson states that she died at Spartanburg, South Carolina on 12 November 1822, the date found in The Hughston Legacy, A Family History by Patricia Steele Ryley, but no source mentioned.

Siblings, surname Adair

John (Farmer?), married Jane Jones, perhaps a cousin
[Elizabeth]
James, married Eleanor Campbell
Cassandra “Cassy”, married Thomas McCrary
Charity, married David Little
Robert, married Babsy Reid
Elisha, married Elizabeth Reese

Parents are Numbers 186 and 187.
94 – Edmund BORUM was born 13 (or 15) January 1778 in Nottoway Parish, Amelia County, Virginia to Richard Borum, Jr. and his wife Sarah Hilsman (otherwise Hillsman). His birth date is found in the Borum family bible owned (1999) by Borum Bishop of Montgomery, Alabama. The entry is hard to read on the photocopy I possess.

In 1804, Edmund was in Prince Edward County, Virginia, where he married Nancy Penick McGehee on 6 December. Two children were born to the couple there.

By 1807, the family had made a move to Tennessee. Francis Gill\(^207\) states that they stayed in Knoxville long enough to make one crop, then went on to Wilson County. A number of relatives also made this move. Francis found that they were organizing Baptist churches wherever they established homes. Nine more children were born to the couple in Tennessee.

Mrs. Patterson\(^208\) sent a manuscript that she wrote about Edmund, from which I quote:

“Edmund served in the War of 1812 in the Second Regiment of Mounted Gunners, enlisting in Tennessee and he was among the group of untrained soldier/volunteers who arrived in Alabama just in time for the Battle of Horseshoe Bend commanded by Andrew Jackson against hostile Indians. He was wounded on the first day of battle at Emauckfau\(^209\) (the actual site is not known today) and received a pension for this wound for the remainder of his life except when it was suspended during the Civil War.”

The pension application, dated 21 August 1815, states

“...that s\^d Edmund Borum in consequence of a ball passing through his chest is disabled from obtaining a livelihood by manual labor entirely\(^210\).”

A War Department document dated the 6\(^{th}\) day of (month not legible) 1817, states that,

“Edmund Borum late a private in the Army is inscribed on the Pension List, Roll of the Tennessee Agency, at the rate of Eight dollars and no cents per month, to commence on the 21\(^{st}\) day of August one thousand eight hundred and fifteen.”

A note on the document says “as of 30\(^{th}\) of April 1816”.

Mrs. Patterson states that the family was still in Wilson County when the 1820 census was taken, but relatives, including his father-in-law, had already gone to Limestone County, Alabama. Edmund and his family moved to Lawrence County, Alabama by 1826 and possibly as early as 1824, although he did not have his pension transferred

---

\(^{207}\) See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.

\(^{208}\) See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.

\(^{209}\) Emuckfaw seems to be the accepted spelling today (2006). Mrs. Patterson inquired of a park ranger, who told her that they do not know exactly where this battle was fought; he admitted that he had ‘a good idea’ but it was infested with snakes and covered with poison ivy, and there would be nothing there now, any metal long since rusted away.

\(^{210}\) One James Jackson, whose wound is described in the same paragraph, “is prevented from obtaining a livelihood by manual labor in the degree of one half”; “entirely”, as it applies to Edmund, evidently means that he is totally disabled.
until 1827. They lived at rural Hillsboro, near Mallard Creek, where their twelfth child was born.

He was enumerated on the 1830 Lawrence County census, and his name is also mentioned in a newspaper article about appraisal of a lost horse about that time, according to Mrs. Patterson. She writes,

"About 1835 he and a number of others from Lawrence County, many his own family or related by marriage, went to Talladega County when it opened to settlers; he may have claimed bounty land but this has not been determined. He lived near Mardisville and was a member of the Alpine Baptist Church in that area. Edmund was also a minister. On this move he was not accompanied by his sons Richard and William or if they did go they did not remain long. All of his daughters, married and unmarried, but one made the move. It is also quite likely his mother-in-law made the trip also but proof of this is not certain. A Judith McGehee is found in church records with the Borums and Abraham [her husband] was dead by this time."

His wife died in Talladega County in 1847, and it was after that he went to live with his son. Mrs. Patterson:

"Edmund remained in Talladega County till 1848 when he returned to Lawrence County where he is found in the 1850 census with his son William Penick. Listed also in this household are two young girls with the surname of Lawler assumed to be his grandchildren.

"By 1855 he had gone to near present-day Van Buren in Itawamba County, Mississippi where his son Richard McGehee Borum had gone from Lawrence County ca. 1839/40...."

It was on the 23rd day of February 1867 that Edmund, his handwriting shaky, signed the oath of allegiance to the United States, required because he was living in a state that had seceded from the Union.

By taking the oath, he could have his pension restored. He stated that during the period while his pension was suspended,

"his means of subsistence have been by the labor of one Negro man until the close of the war, since which he has rented out his little farm but mostly supported by the charity of his friends and that he has not borne arms against the Government of the United states, or he has not in any manner encouraged the rebels, or manifested a sympathy with their cause; and that he was last paid his pension on the fourth day of March, A.D. 1860."

Mrs. Patterson says that Edmund died in 1868 according to the family bible; the copy I have cannot be read. His son Richard McGehee Borum is buried in Key Cemetery at Van Buren, Itawamba County, Mississippi; Edmund is thought to buried there also, but no stone has been found.

**Siblings, surname Borum**

Richard III

---

211 These Lawler girls are sisters to the two Lawler boys found in the Archibald Huston home in 1850. See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
John\(^{212}\), married Elizabeth Bratton; issue
[Edmund]
Rebecca, married Jonas Bradley; issue
Sister, name not found\(^{213}\), married David Bradley
Sarah, married David Barton; issue
Sister, name not found, married John Walker; issue
Elizabeth, married Gideon Alexander; issue

See Illustration Number 94.

Parents are Numbers 188 and 189.

95 – Nancy Penick McGEHEE, whose name is sometimes given as Virginia Nancy Penick McGehee, was born about 1788 in Prince Edward, County, Virginia to Abraham McGehee and his wife Judith, née Penick.

Excursus: Great controversy surrounds the McGehee surname and its origin. The earliest McGehee ancestor is believed to have been in Virginia by 1660, perhaps having emigrated from Scotland. See early McGehee information and conjectures within the biography of Thomas McGehee, Person Number 1520.

***

She married Edmund Borum in Prince Edward County on 6 December 1804 according to the family bible owned by Borum Bishop. Mrs. Patterson\(^{214}\) believes that Nancy herself made most of the entries that were made during her lifetime, and recognizes at least one handwriting in a later entry. Neither Nancy’s birth date nor death is found in the bible record; her birth date is estimated from her parents’ marriage in 1787. She was between 50 and 60 years old when the 1840 census was taken.

Two children were born to Nancy and Edmund before they moved west from Virginia. Nine more were born in Tennessee, and one was born after they moved south into Alabama.

Sturdy women like Nancy surely deserve great credit for enduring and conquering the difficulties of pioneer life, yet maintaining some of the finer things like keeping the bible record of her family.

Nancy is believed to have died at Mardisville in Talladega County, Alabama in 1847, where she can be found in deed records up to that date. She is surely buried there, but no gravestone has been found.

\(^{212}\) John was a Baptist preacher and is described in *History of Middle Tennessee Baptists* as eloquent, and short, stocky and bald-headed. The physical traits may be familial.

\(^{213}\) Descendants believe her name may have been Nancy. Her husband was a brother to Jonas Bradley who married her sister Rebecca.

\(^{214}\) See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
Siblings, surname McGehee (the first four children are certain; the remainder are believed to belong in this family)
[Nancy (otherwise Virginia Nancy)]
Frances "Fanny", married Richard Ligon
Josiah P. (Penick or Pate), married Scoty Mitchell
Judith Walker, married A.F.P. Pool
Abraham F.
Edmund
Richard B.
John C.
Martha Jane
James Forrest

Parents are Numbers 190 and 191.

96 – Johann Henrich MEISE was born at Hovedissen, Schötnar parish, Lippe-Detmold on 3 November 1711, to Johann Friederich Meise né Bekker and his wife, Anna Catharine née Altrogge. His baptism date is not given in the church records; Godparents were Altrogge’s wife (perhaps née Milse) in Oerlinghausen, Bekker in Nienhagen and Lampracht (?) in a place whose name I can’t read.

After agreeing to a marriage contract on 29 March 1748, he married Anna Maria, the widow of Christian Wilhelm Frohne of Ehrdissen, on 30 March 1748. The marriage was officiated by the pastor at Schötnar and recorded in the Schötnar churchbook. I am unable to read the entire marriage contract, but can decipher enough to notice the usual cows, steers, hogs and horses, as well as some cash, changed hands. He became the “Interimswirt”, temporary leaseholder, of the Frohne farm. Christian Wilhelm Frohne’s eldest son would have become the leaseholder if he would have been old enough when his father died, and very likely did so when he reached his majority.

I suspect that the bridegroom was on the giving end of most of the material things mentioned in the marriage contract, because he was getting control of the management of the Frohne Hof at Ehrdissen. However, since Anna Maria had Frohne children from her first marriage—her husband had died the previous May—control would not have been inheritable by Meise’s future children.

Meise must have felt the need to assure progeny, however, because Anna’s pregnancy was well along at the time of their marriage. He was known as Johann Henrich Frohne after his marriage.

Johann Henrich and Anna Maria had two sons who used the surname Frohne—the elder was later to marry the widow Niemann and assume the Niemann farm name. She died in 1767.

He agreed to a marriage contract on 17 January 1769 with the widow of Johann Henrich Mencken of Schildische. The bride was not important enough in those times for her own
name to be included in the document. I did not find the church record of their marriage, but it unquestionably did take place.

I went through the Schötmar parish records a number of times before I found his death; the records are hard to read, but the death record gives his birth name as Bekker, which was actually his father’s birth name, causing me to overlook it. He died in January 1779 at Ehrdissen, of debility. The date in the churchbook is 9 January, but I’m not sure if it is his death date or burial date.

Siblings not researched.

Half-brother, surname Meisse or Meise from his mother’s marriage to Johann Meisse, Johann Berend, died age 26, unmarried

Parents are Numbers 192 and 193.

97 – Anna Maria Lisabeth BERNING was probably born about 1709, calculated from her death age of 58 in 1767. Her maiden name is given a number of ways at her marriages, the births of her children, and her death. Her birthplace is also garbled where it is written in the Schötmar church records, but I have come to believe that Eckendorf is the correct village. It is in Heepen parish, and the gap in the records of that parish includes the probable time of Anna’s birth; therefore, there is little hope of finding her ancestry unless a farm history can be found.

When she married her first husband, Christian Wilhelm Frohne on 10 March (?) 1730, she was identified as the daughter of the late Johann Henrich Bering in Eckntrup (the ‘dorf’ and ‘trup’ suffixes were used interchangeably before standards were adopted during the Nineteenth Century). At the birth of her first child, she was again Anna Maria Bering; when the next three children were born, the mother’s maiden name was Anna Maria Ellerkamp; at the birth of the fifth child, her name was given as Anna Maria Bahrning. When her first husband died on 15 May 1747, his widow’s name was given as Anna Maria Baring.

No maiden name was written into the churchbook at her second marriage on 30 March 1748, and when the first child of that marriage was baptized in 1748, she was Anna Maria Frohne. At the birth of her next child in 1754, her name is given as Anna Maria Lisabeth Berning, and when she died her maiden name was given as Anna Maria Beerman.

The names Ellerkamp, Beerman, Biermann and Berning can be found in extant Heepen parish records.

Anna Maria was almost forty years old when she married Meise, and had been widowed the previous May. Meise, of course, wanted to get control of farm land, but marrying a woman as old as forty made it risky to count on producing an heir of his own. As one woman at the Family History Center in Lincoln remarked when I found this March marriage with a child born the following September, “He got to try her out first.” I believe my genealogist friend hit the nail on the head—he would not marry her unless he was sure she was still fertile, and he did not marry her as soon as they realized she was pregnant, waiting instead to make sure she didn’t miscarry early.
Anna’s death at age 58 is recorded in the Schötmar churchbook on 20 November 1767, but whether this is her death date or burial date is not stated. The cause of death was pneumonia.

Father is Number 194.

98 – Johann Jost KEISER ZU DINGERDISSEN was likely born a day or two before his baptism on 1 July 1725, to Joost Henrich Keiser zu Dingerdissen and his wife Anna Maria Ilsabein née Schlichting, in Ubbedissen, Amt Sparenberg, in the Prussian part of the parish of Oerlinghausen, Lippe-Detmold.

He married first, on 25 November 1753, Catrina Ilsabein Lücking, who bore him two known sons. She died on 5 February 1760. From this marriage descends the family who uses Dingerdissen as their surname, and whose family chart Stammbaum der Familie Dingerdissen was given to me in Germany in 1993 by the family who lives at the Dingerdissen Hof near Heepen.

He married our ancestress, Anna Cathrina Evert, on 15 November 1760; his dwelling place is listed as Ubbedissen. The couple had two known daughters, perhaps other children; both of these daughters are our ancestors because the son of one married the daughter of the other.

I was unable to find a record Johann Jost’s death. Sven Högermann, a family researcher living in Oerlinghausen (2004) who corresponded after finding my genealogical database on the Internet, believes that he died on 3 July 1772. He may be correct; I question that, because the Johann Jost Keiser who died on that date was ‘of Oerlinghausen’, and our man should have been living (and dying) at Ubbedissen. “Oerlinghausen” may simply be an error, however.

Half-siblings, surname Keiser, if his father was indeed the Kaiser who was married to Catrina aus dem Linenhaus (Linnemann):
- Child, name and gender not entered, born 1691
- Anna Cathrina

Siblings, surname Keiser, from his father’s marriage to Anna Maria Ilsabein Schlichting:
- Catrina Margreta
- Anna Ilsabein
- Johan Berned
- Catrina Lisabeth
  [Johann Jost]

Parents are Numbers 196 and 197.

99 – Anna Cathrina EVERT was born at Lämershagen, Westfalen, Preussen to Heinrich

---

215 When his widow died at Ubbedissen, the Oerlinghausen church record entry states that she had been a widow since 3 January 1796. A Johann Jobst Keiser’s death is recorded on that date, but he is a 3-year-old child.
Hermann Evert and his wife, Anna Ilsabein née Meyer zu Sieker. Her baptism was recorded on 18 November 1735 at Oerlinghausen, Lippe-Detmold, the parish seat of the parish that served Lämershagen. I suspect from reading her death record that her birth was on 15 November, but the ink is very blurred and what looks like the figure 5 might be an 8. Her age at death on 11 February 1820 is given as 84 years, two months and 24 days; my computer’s genealogy program, which calculates such things automatically, says that she was born on 17 November 1735.

She married the widower Johann Joost Keiser zu Dingerdissen on 15 November 1760; his first wife had died a little more than nine months earlier. She bore two known children, both daughters, to him.

Anna, whose middle name was spelled ‘Kathrine’ when her death entry was written, died on 11 February 1820 at Ubbedissen, with funeral and burial on 16 February. Her death was caused by the debility of old age.

Siblings, surname Evert
Margarete Ilsabein
Johan Henrich
[Anna Cathrina]
Johann J.
Jobst Henrich

Parents are Numbers 198 and 199.

100 – Johann Christoph HACHMEISTER was born about 1718 at Hillegossen, Heepen parish, Westfalen, Preussen to Berend Peter Hachmeister and his second wife, Anna Magdalena née Meyer zu Elentrup. A gap in the Heepen church records complicates research on the family.

Background: Michael Ortmann, a genealogist living in Münster, Germany, had given me the clue that led me to look in Heepen for Hachmeister’s family when he sent the genealogy of Hachmeister’s Pahlmeyer wife—his third—from whom we descend. Before Heepen came into my scheme, I was looking at Hagemeisters in Detmold—the pastor in Oerlinghausen had spelled the name ‘Hagmeister’.

Michael was familiar with the gaps in the Heepen church records, and stated that much of his information was found in the Staatsarchiv in Münster, where many farm histories are on file.

Heepen churchbooks record banns being published for Johann Christoph Hachmeister and Anna Ilsabein Lüking, although the entry doesn’t state she was Anna Ilsabein née Niedermeier, the widow of Johann Christoph Lüking. No date is stated, but the entry comes next after another couple’s marriage is recorded on 11 December 1750. No actual marriage entry could be found.
Marriage to the Lüking farm was a real step up in the world for Hachmeister. Michael:

"With Lüking, #1 Ubbedissen, you came in the very upper class of farms. You can find many files concerning these big farms in the Staatsarchiv Münster (County of Ravensberg, Amt [Administrative District] Sparrenberg, Vogtei [Bailiwick, District, ‘Shire’] Heepen) and in the Staatsarchiv Detmold (Principality Lippe, Amt Oerlinghausen)."

Anna Ilsabein, from Billinghausen in Stapelage parish, Lippe-Detmold, had married Johann Christoffel Lüking on 12 March 1736, the marriage recorded both in Stapelage and Oerlinghausen. She bore three sons and two daughters to him before he died on 24 April 1749 at the age of 46.

On 4 April 1751, the Oerlinghausen churchbook records the baptism of twins, Johann Christoph Lüking and Johann Phillip Lüking to the "Lüking wife of Johann Christoph Hagmeister". Johann Phillip died at the age of eight days, and the mother died on 16 April 1751, two weeks after the twins’ birth. When I couldn’t find Johann Christoph’s death, but knew he was not the same Johann Christoph who married Hanne Kathrina Elisabeth Keiser zu Dingerdissen (yet they were sons of the same father) I concluded that perhaps one of the Godparents had taken charge of him. Clues about relatives as Godparents led me to Heepen, where I thought I might find his confirmation, but I found his death, at the age of nine weeks, recorded in the Heepen churchbook.

On 5 November 1752, Lüking married Anna Maria Ilsabein Homann or Hohmann who was born about 1730. By this time, the widower bridegroom was Johann Christoph Lüking, and nothing was mentioned about his name having been changed from Hachmeister when this marriage was recorded. No children were found for the couple, and she died at Ubbedissen, age 25, a day or two before her funeral and burial on 5 June 1755, which is recorded in the Oerlinghausen churchbooks.

Hachmeister, having married the big, important farm at Ubbedissen and assumed the Lüking surname, was still without an heir.

On 18 November 1755, Johann Christoph Lüking, né Hachmeister, married as his third wife our ancestor, Ammalia Margareta Pahmeyer, at Oerlinghausen. The Oerlinghausen pastor recorded her name differently each time she was mentioned in the churchbooks; for a time I thought Johann Christoph had married two or more Pahmeyer sisters in succession, but the farm history extracted by Michael Ortmann clearly indicates that her name was Ammalia Margareta. Knowing that, I concluded that all five of his children borne by a Pahmeyer wife had the same mother although the pastor never got her name exactly right.

Two sons and three daughters were born to the couple.

He died of dropsy on 2 November 1793 at Ubbedissen, Westfalen, Preussen, at the age of 75 years and three months, which works out to a birth date in July, 1718. The Oerlinghausen church record doesn’t say whether 2 November is the burial date or the death date; if it is the burial date, he died a day or two earlier.
Siblings, surname **Hachmeister**

Marie Ilsabein

[Johann Christoph]

Johan, the heir (because his elder brother married a bigger farm)

Anne Ilsabein

Parents are Numbers 200 and 201.

101 – **Ammalia Margarete PAHMeyer** was born 8 August 1731 to Johann Dietrich Meyer zu Heepen (known as Colon Pahmeyer) and his wife Anna Ilsabein nee Meyer zu Jerrendorf, at the Pahmeyer farm, Brake Number 1, at Brake, Westfalen. Her birth and baptism were recorded at the Münster Church in Herford, Westfalen.

I was very stymied trying to find her, because I knew that I really didn’t know her name; so many names were given for her that for a time I thought Lüking né Hachmeister had married two or more Pahmeyer sisters, although I couldn’t find any suitable wives in the death records nor could I find additional marriages for him. In the Oerlinghausen churchbooks, she is Anna Dorothea Loise (this on the marriage entry, where the date matches Michael’s\(^\text{216}\) data), Anna Malia, Loisa, Amalia, Anna Maria Margarethe. Record of the last child and her death entry come closest: “Amalia Margret.” and “Amalia Marg.” Sometimes the pastor leaves the ‘h’ out of Pahmeyer, and once wrote “Pameijer”. The ‘ij’ looks like ‘y’ when written by hand.

The Internet solved my problem. I posted a question on a Rootsweb message board, asking about her ancestry, and Michael answered. I infer from his E-mail address that he is affiliated with the University in Münster. He wrote,

“I have the lineage of the Pahmeyer farm in Brake #1 (parish Herford - Münster church). There is a Amalia Margarethe Pahmyer, born 1731 Aug. 8, who married 1755 Nov. 18 Johann Christoph Lücking. Is this person your ancestor, although the different first names?”

I suppose he didn’t have his books at hand because even he didn’t spell her name exactly as he had typed it into his genealogy program; he did send the entire lineage. The Lücking name is often spelled with a ‘c’, ‘Lücking’. The marriage date is the clincher here, because it is a perfect match.

Ammalia bore two sons and three daughters to Lücking between 1757 and 1770.

She died at Ubbedissen on 18 June 1793 (or that may be her funeral and burial date). The cause of death is stated but it is abbreviated so that I’m uncertain, but it may be dropsy.

Parents are Numbers 202 and 203.

\(^{216}\) See the ancestry of her husband, Number 100, Johann Christoph Hachmeister, for the explanation of Michael Ortmann’s part in this research.
102 – Johann Jost KEISER ZU DINGERDISSEN’s biography is printed as Person Number 98 above.

103 – Anna Catharina EVERT’s biography is printed as Person Number 99 above.

104 – Johann Friedrich Bernhard LODEWIG was the elder of twin sons born on 11 April 1779 at Langenholzhausen, Lippe-Detmold to Herm Ludwig Ludowig (spelling was not standard, but in this case I have to accept what I found in the church records and assume that ‘Ludwig’ was the father’s middle name and ‘Ludowig’ his surname) and his wife Anna Catherine, whose surname is unknown. The churchbook doesn’t make it clear whether 11 April is the birth or baptism date. I cannot read with any confidence the names of his Godparents—each twin had four, and they do not appear to be the same four.

Named Friedrich Bernhard Lodewig on the list of confirmands, he was confirmed on 14 April 1793, having attended the school at Langenholzhausen.

On 4 September 1798, at Langenholzhausen, he married our ancestor Amalia Charlotte Depping from Laßbruch, Amt Sternberg, Lippe-Detmold. A son and two daughters were born to the couple before her premature death on 25 January 1810.

On 6 May 1810, he married Florentine Henriette née Kiesau, the widow of a Herr Nielle or Steille; this marriage produced a son and a daughter.

Johann Friedrich Bernhard Lodewig died of a stroke at two o’clock in the afternoon 26 February 1824. His funeral and burial were on 29 February.

His widow died 21 April 1841.

Sibling, surname Lodewig
[Johann Friedrich Bernhard, twin]
Simon Heinrich Adolph, twin
Johan Herm.
Amalie Sophia Maria
Hans Henrich

Parents are Numbers 208 and 209.

105 – Amalia Charlotte DEPPING was of “Laßbruch, Amt Sternberg” when her marriage to Johann Friedrich Bernhard Lodewig was recorded on 4 September 1798 in Langenholzhausen.

Research Overview: After I researched Laßbruch, trying to find a suitable birth—the Langenholzhausen pastor had written her death age as 30 years and 3 months—I came to the conclusion that the pastor had made a 10-year mathematical error, and she was 40 years and

217 A coincidence: I am writing his biography on 26 February 2003, exactly 179 years after his death.
three months old when she died. No other Amalia Charlotte Depping is found in Laßbruch, Amt Sternberg, Silixen parish [there is another Laßbruch in Lippe, as well as a Loßbruch]. This Amalia Charlotte’s father was already dead when she was confirmed—indeed, he was already dead when her brother was confirmed on 14 May 1780. Further, Florentine Wilhelmine Depping of Laßbruch is named Amalia Charlotte Lodewig’s sister-in-law when daughter Charlotte Florentine Lodewig was Christened 10 January 1799 in Langenholzhausen. Amalia Charlotte Depping of Laßbruch had a half-brother Carl Ludwig Depping born 18 December 1762. He married Florentine Künne of Talle on 14 December 1791 in Talle. That makes a Florentine Depping a sister-in-law to Amalia Charlotte, and places her in Laßbruch. This couple lost a child 27 December 1793 in Laßbruch; Carl Ludwig died 30 March 1835 and Florentine died 14 December 1843, address given as Number 9 in Laßbruch. I ferreted out all these facts, making sure that each person I was naming a relative was living and living at the proper place when the events tying them to ‘my’ Amalia Charlotte Lodewig nee Depping occurred. Documentation is in my files and can be found in the Langenholzhausen and Silixen church records.

***

All the above made me conclude that Amalia Charlotte Depping’s parents were Herman Conrad Dietrich Depping and his second wife, Catharine Dorothee Wolff, and that she was born to the couple on 26 August 1770 at Laßbruch, Silixen parish, Lippe-Detmold. She was baptized on 7 September, and one Godmother from Bösingfeld is mentioned—the entry is very hard to read but I believe she is a Wolff widow, probably Lucie Elisabeth Gruppen, the second wife of Amalia’s grandfather, Johann Conrad Wolff.

Amalia Charlotte Depping, surviving daughter of Hermann Diedrich Conrad Depping, was confirmed at the age of 14½ years, in 1784. The school was at Laßbruch and the record is in the Silixen parish churchbook.

On 11 July 1790, she gave birth to illegitimate twin sons at Laßbruch, recorded in the Silixen churchbook. The father was Arend Fredrichs, a married man and Leibsuchter, a retiree. The babies were baptized on 16 July 1790, her brother Carl Friedrich Heinrich Depping serving as Godfather.

Amalia Charlotte bore two daughters and a son to Johann Friedrich Bernhard Lodewig after their marriage on 4 September 1798.

She died of tuberculosis at one o’clock in the morning on 23 January 1810, with funeral and burial in the evening on 26 January in Langenholzhausen.

Siblings, surname Depping, issue not researched

218 Carl Ludwig Depping was a child of Hermann Conrad Dietrich Depping’s first marriage to Anna Maria Catharine Wolff; Amalia Charlotte and Carl Ludwig Depping were also first cousins, since Hermann Conrad Dietrich Depping’s second wife Catharine Dorothee Wolff was a sister to his first wife. I recently (2003) saw an article on the Internet in which someone had named this kind of relationship “brother-cousin”.

219 I seem not to have copied this record, and as I copyread before printing, I wonder if I could have mistaken the word and it is Leibpächter, a leaseholder instead of Leibsuchter, a retiree.
Herman Conrad
Carl Friedrich Heinrich
Dorothee, mentally handicapped, died age 40 without issue
Perhaps others
Half-brother, surname Depping, from her father’s marriage to Anna Marie Catherine Wolff
Carl Ludwig, married Florentine Künne; issue (probably without issue)
Perhaps others

Parents are Numbers 210 and 211.

106 – Johann Konrad KIEL also called DREKKER and GROLM was born at Stemmen, Lippe-Detmold to Jobst Henrich Kiel and his wife Anna Sophia Elisabeth née Depping (otherwise Deppingsmeyer) or Kiel on 23 February 1772; the date stated in the church record may be the baptism date, however. He was baptized by the pastor at Varenholz, to which parish Stemmen belongs, and his sponsor was Johann Conrad Wilkening, his mother’s half-brother.

Using the Kiel name, he was confirmed at age 14 in Varenholz on 30 March 1787.

His father had married a widow Drekker née Kiel, and he and his family used her farm name as their surname.

While using the Drekker surname on 15 September 1799, Johann Konrad Kiel married Wilhelmine Katherin Ilsabein Rosemeier from nearby Almena. The couple had seven children, only two of whom married and had issue.

Johann Konrad, known as Grolm by this time because his father had begun to use the Grolm surname, died of pneumonia on 23 April 1824 at Stemmen. His funeral and burial occurred on 17 February; the funeral text was I Corinthians 1:5-44.

siblings, surname Kiel or Drekker or Grolm
Sophie Elisabeth
Christian
Ernestina Friederike
[Johann Konrad]
Amalie Louise

Parents are Numbers 212 and 213.

107 – Wilhemine Katherin Ilsabein ROSEMEIER was born at Almena on 13 July 1778 to Hermann Heinrich Rosemeyer and his wife Anna Maria née Voight, elsewhere Vogt. She was baptized on 17 July, her only sponsor being Anna Ilsabein Hoyer from Honstrup. There is a village ‘Hontrup’ in Reelkirchen parish, but no surname ‘Hoyer’ found anywhere in Lippe-Detmold in a ca1780 census of that Principality.
She married Johann Konrad Kiel, who was also called Drekker and ultimately called Grolm, on 5 September 1799. She gave birth to five children between 1800 and 1808; all died in infancy or early childhood except the last, who never married. To endure such adversity is beyond my imagination. The last two of the couple’s seven children married and had issue.

Widowed in 1824, she married Heinrich Konrad Sandmeier of Almena on 8 March 1825. No issue was born to the couple. He took charge of the Grolm property in Stemmen, using the surname Grolm. Later, his wife’s grandson, Heinrich Lodewig was old enough to take over its management and he assumed the farm name, Grolm, at that time.

Wilhelmine died on 1 April 1844 at Stemmen. Her funeral was on 5 April. The cause of death as given in the Varenholz churchbook is very hard to read, but I believe it is consumption (tuberculosis) complicated by old age. The pastor garbled her name and got her age wrong, but other churchbook entries supply enough information to confirm that I found the right person’s death.

Her widower, Konrad (elsewhere Conrad) Grolm né Sandmeier, lived until 19 February 1861 as a Leibsucher—retiree—in Stemmen. He and his unmarried stepdaughter Henriette Friederike Grolm made a home together at Number 22 in Stemmen. They made an improvement to the house that included an engraved wood sign over the door stating that the building had been done in 1859. He must have been extremely well thought of by his wife’s family; son-in-law Friedrich Simon Lodewig, after his first (Grolm) wife’s death, asked Sandmeier-Grolm to be a sponsor at the baptism of a child from his second marriage. I have written this note on my photocopy of the baptismal record: “Conrad Grolm was step-father of F. S. Lodewig’s first wife!”

Parents are Numbers 214 and 215.

108 – Johann Friedrich Wilhelm SÜLLWOLD’s baptism is recorded in the churchbook of Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold on 14 March 1756. He was born at Stemmen, probably a day or so before his baptism, to Johann (elsewhere Jürgen) Friedrich Sullwold and his wife Sophia Ernestine née Plecke; the mother is not mentioned in the churchbook entry about the baptism. Johann Friedrich’s Godfather was Johann Frantz Plecke of Varenholz.

He was confirmed at Varenholz on 2 September 1770.

On 25 September 1782 he married Wilhelmine Louise Florke, also of Stemmen. At least one child, our ancestor Friedrich Arnold Christian Sullwold was born to the couple. I did not attempt to research other issue.

He died of cancer on 22 May 1828. The death entry gives his name as Friedrich Sullwold, the only clue as to his ‘call name’ of Friedrich. His funeral and burial were on 25 May.

Parents are Numbers 216 and 217.

109 – Wilhelmine Louise FLÖRKE was born at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-
Detmold to Johann Levin Christian Flörke, otherwise Flörkemeyer, Flörckemeier etc., and his wife Anne Marie Elisabeth Manetter. Her baptism is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook on 22 June 1764. Her sponsor was Marie Louise Schnore (?) of Silexen in Lippe-Detmold.

Wilhelmine was confirmed on 14 March 1779 at Varenholz. The date of 18 November 1777 is written above the confirmation date and I suspect it is the date that confirmation instruction began for the class.

She married Johann Friedrich Wilhelm Sullwold on 25 September 1782, and bore to him at least one child, our ancestor Friedrich Arnold Christian Sullwold. Likely there were more children, but I did not research them.

Wilhelmine died of lung trouble on 15 January 1834 at the Sullwold Hof, Number 5 in Stemmen. Her funeral and burial were on 20 January, and are recorded in the Varenholz churchbook.

Parents are Numbers 218 and 219.

110 – Hans Friedrich FREITAG, otherwise Johann Friedrich—and there are a number of ways to spell the surname—was born at Rentorf, Talle parish, Lippe-Detmold, to Hans Henrich Freitag and his wife, Anna Sophia Ilsabein nee Heger, on 19 May 1765. I believe that is his birthdate, but cannot be certain that it is not the date of his baptism. Three male sponsors are listed. I cannot read their names; however, Jones gives the sponsors’ names as Herr Cord Kächlich of Bentorff, Joh[ann] Berend Grüttemeyer at gen (?), Johann Diderich Heinrich Heeger at Rafeldt. He presumes that Heeger at Rafeldt was the child’s grandfather, a risky presumption to my way of thinking, but certainly possible.

Hans was confirmed at Talle in 1779, after which he performed military service, reference to which is found in his marriage contract, being discharged on 7 November 1884.

Jones’ book contains a translation of the marriage contract between Johann Friedrich Freitag and Anne Luise Meinolf. My comments are in brackets, and the spelling is retained from the book:

“Tax 2 Thaler 20 Groschen
Order 1 Thaler
Copy of the protocol 3 groschen

Done at Varenholz
the 4th of July 1797

“Johann Friedrich, the legitimate son of Hans Henrich Freytag, subject to the seignorial dominion, of Rentorf No. 46, farmer of peasant community (bauerschaft) Bavenhausen, after having submitted his discharge, dated 7th of November 1784, from the military service of this country (Principality of Lippe [with seat] at Detmold) is to get united in matrimony with Anne Luise, the legitimate daughter of Jobst Henrich Meinolf, at present getting his portion of the seigniorial grand [sic: grant? or does it mean big?] farm homestead No. 8 at Lührsdissen [Lœrdissen, one kilometer south of Rentorf]. She comes to the groom and chief heir of the (his) parental farm, and is now taking over the parental farm together with him and is improving the same, according to the

See the first footnote to the biography of Person Number 55, Conradine Florentine Freitag.
submitted certified transcript of the protocol by the Amt Bracke, dated July 1st of this year, with 50 Reichsthalers in cash, 2 cows, 2 big pigs, 12 bushels grain, namely 6 bushels rye and 6 bushels [likely a word missing here: barley? wheat? oats?] besides the customary bridal carriage [dowry], all of which ought to be brought and delivered at the wedding.

"The groom's bodily parents, still living, are retiring with their full portion (from the farm) and are getting the entire house reserved as the dwelling for the retired ones [the Leibsucht], the ¼ part of the fruits of the trees, a lot of land in the so-called turnip garden, and a tract of land near the entrance of the aforementioned garden, about 4 bushels large (a tract big enough to yield a crop of 4 bushels) and with the agreement of both the retiring farmers (the father was a half-tenant only) only 18 bushels from the land belonging to the farm, namely:

1) in the shade (Kühlen) 5 short Köpfe (1 Kopf = ¼ Scheffel = ¼ bushel) which the retiring farmer had redeemed during his time at (?) 3 bushels
2) in the brightness (Helli), the lowest part, at 2 bushels
3) on the hillock (Bülte), on top below the hedge 2 Köpfe and the hindmost part there, measuring together 3 bushels
4) the topmost part on the 'Reckte' (rails, rack, stretcher, the translation is uncertain) together with the ¼ part of the land from the top down, of the land bordering to the land of Brackhagen, all together 3 bushels
5) on the long ‘Brand’ (former woodland turned by burning into arable land)
6) still at the same place, a part, namely the second part from below upwards 1 bushel
7) in the turnip garden, the middle part 1½ bushels
8) behind the border ('Brinke') the second lot from Rehm’s land on herewards 2 bushels
9) in the hereditary woods, the 2nd lot from below on at 1 bushel
10) further 18 bushels

"As much as the retiring farmer’s stepmother (Greta Ilsabe (Arning) Freytag) had held as her half-portion of the meadows belonging to the farm, to the topmost end in the ‘Tron’ (Throne?) meadow and in addition, still the topmost, (in) the chalk or lime (‘Kalk’) meadow, (making) together about one cartload of hay, including the aftergrass; and of the woodcutting rights belonging to the farm, the 3rd cartload of the firewood which the then farmer (the son) will bring in from the forest for himself.

"The retiring farmer people are taking with them for their portion: a) 2 cows, 1 one year old heifer and a calf while the starting young farmer people are retaining 5 cows and 2 heifers; b) two big pigs and a small gruntling while the starting farmer people are retaining 15 big and small pigs.

"Furthermore of the moveable property (the retiring farmer people are taking with them) a bed complete with bedclothes, 2 wooden chairs, one tub, one wardrobe, one kneeding [sic: for kneading dough] trough and one baking pan, one straw cutter with a chopping blade, 3 spinning wheels, one reel, one hackle (a flax-comb) with two hacks or beaters, one copper kettle, holding about 6 quarts, one big and one small iron pot, one pancake pan, one bucket of fir wood and one of oak wood, one pitchfork.

"Thus was done in the presence of both the betrothed ones, of the groom’s brother, the present farmer Hans Henrich Meinolf of Lührdissen, and of the groom’s father.

On the same day the retiring farmer asked for a copy of this protocol, which was granted. As above.”

Jones comments,

“They had left nothing to chance. The parenthetical insertions in the above were added to make the document a bit easier to understand and, except where they are German words, are not in the original.”

It seems like there were five people present when the marriage contract was signed and there may have been, but what Jones doesn’t mention is, that one of the groom’s brothers was the
present farmer Hans Henrich Meinolf of Lüerdissen. Hans Henrich Freitag had married Anna Luise’s sister Margarethe Catharine Meinolf, taken charge of the Meinolf farm at Lüerdissen, and assumed the Meinolf farm name. The way the commas are used makes it hard to determine whether it was this brother, now called Meinolf, or another.

The couple was married on 30 July 1797 by the pastor at Talle. Hans is described as Mittelhalbmeyer, and Jones gives the translation “a farmer who pays as rent half the produce of his farm”.

The couple had seven children, the last an unnamed girl born on 26 November 1816, who died at the age of four days before she was baptized. Anna Luise died of puerperal fever on 1 December 1816, a week after giving birth. Her funeral, recorded in the Talle death register, was on 5 December.

On 14 April 1818, Hans agreed to a marriage contract with Anna Maria Sophie Siekhans of Lüerdissen. The Jones book contains a translation; suffice it to say here that she brought a lot of money and animals as her dowry, and the contract made provisions for the six living children from Hans’ first marriage to receive their inheritance. The children are named in the document, but the names don’t exactly jibe with the names that I found in the Talle church records. The couple was married on 9 May 1818. Anna died of asthma on 26 March 1847.

Hans died “on account of old age” (Altershalbar) on 5 December 1834, with funeral and burial on 8 December, presumably at Talle.

siblings, surname Freitag
[Hans Friedrich]
Anna Sophia Ilsabein
Hans Henrich, married Margarethe Catharina Meinolf, was called Meinolf; issue
Anna Catharina Charlotta
Ernst Dietrich
Anna Cathrina Ilsabein
Johann Henrich
Anna Catrin Ilsabein

Parents are Numbers 220 and 221.

111 – Anna Louise Henriette MEINOLF was born on 30 June 1775 at Lüerdissen, Lippe-Detmold, to Jobst Henrich Meinolf and his wife Anna Marie Elisabeth née Niebur. The

---

221 August Schmidt is descended from this couple. He married his third cousin Lina Grolm, Jette Grolm Niemann’s sister, and lived at Elm Creek, Nebraska; he is a Streiff ancestor. August’s mother was née Heuwinkel, and Gottlieb Niemann wrote something about “Uncle Heuwinkel” in a letter to his brother-in-law August Schmidt. Germans often use the courtesy title ‘Uncle’ for rather distant cousins, in this case actually Gottlieb’s wife Jette’s cousin. This remote relationship may account for the fact that the Council Bluffs, Iowa, Heuwinkel family possesses a wedding picture of Gottlieb and Jette Niemann and as well as the baptismal picture of their infant son, Oscar.

222 List found in Jones’ book; see the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 55.

223 Her name is sometimes stated as Catharina Margarethe.
family's church home was St. Johann's in Lemgo. Her name as stated on the baptism record, where her sponsor is a Fr. Schilling of Lemgo, is "Louise Henriette".

Again Louise Henriette, she was confirmed at St. Johann's in 1790.

When her marriage contract with Hans Friedrich Freitag was drawn up on 4 July 1797, her name was stated 'Anna Luise', or at least that is what Jones' researcher saw. 'Anna Louisa' is her name on the church record when she and Hans were married on 30 July 1797. As her children's baptisms were entered in the Talle churchbook, her name was "Anna Louisa Meinholz", Anna Louisa Meinholtz, Anna Louisa Meinolds, and Anna Louisa Meinolz; she was "Anna Louisa Freitag" when her death was recorded.

Having borne seven children to Freitag, Anna Louise died of puerperal fever (childbed fever) on 1 December 1816, a week after giving birth to her seventh child, who had died the day before. Her funeral was on 5 December, recorded in Talle.

Siblings, surname Meinolf
Margarethe Catharina, married Hans Henrich Freitag, who was then called Meinolf; issue
[Anna Louise Henriette]
Herman Henrich

Parents are Numbers 222 and 223.

112 – Hans Curt GUMBEL was born on 15 June 1776 to Johannes Gumbel and his wife, Magdalena née Griessel at Niedermöllrich, Hessen. He was baptized on 23 June; the name in the Christening register is 'Hans Curt'.

Excursus: John Halvorsen "Hal" Pippert obtained certified extractions of Niedermöllrich church records of his Pippert ancestry, some of which converges with the Gumbels in this compilation. He shared those copies with me, and much of the information about Hans Curt Gumbel comes from those copies with their translations. The documents are signed "Böttcher, Pastor" and are dated 11 May 1960. Each document is translated, but the English in these translations is awkward, and I have reworded them in the interest of clarity. The spelling of his name is retained, pointing up the fact that it was not standard.

Mrs. Habenichtsupplied names and dates as well, including confirmation data, plus additional information about occupations. I also obtained microfilm copies of civil records of the era, and some facts come from that source.

***

Hans Curt was confirmed at Niedermöllrich in 1790.

[224 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.]
On 17 November 1796 at Niedermöllrich, ‘Hans Curth’ Gumbel, the son of the citizen and master blacksmith of that place Johannes Gumbel, married Elisabeth, the daughter of Johann Jost Schäfer, schoolmaster in Solms, under the jurisdiction of Niederaula.

Hans Curt was ‘Obergrebe’, translated ‘chief justice’, a position somewhat corresponding to mayor. One of his duties was signing civil records, and at least once he signed his name “Gumbell”. His death record states that he was a citizen at Niedermöllrich, former chief justice and blacksmith.

Widowed in 1830, he died 10 September 1839 in Niedermöllrich, and was buried there. In earlier times burials were made in the churchyard, but a cemetery was later established at another place. I don’t know when this occurred, so I don’t know where the early Gumbel ancestors are buried.

Siblings, surname Gumbel

- Johann Adam
- Anna Catharine
- Anna Gertrud
- Anna Maria
- [Hans Kurt]

See Illustration Number 112.

Parents are Numbers 224 and 225.

113 – Elisabeth SCHÄFER was born at Solms, Hessen on 15 July 1775 to Johann Jost (otherwise Johann Justus) Schäfer and his wife Anna Catharina née Zulauf.

She married Hans Curt Gumbel on 27 November 1796, and bore him four children whose names are known to me. There were likely more children.

She died on 23 September 1830 at Niedermöllrich, and was buried there on 26 September.

Siblings, surname Schäfer

- Anna Margarethe; married Johann Georg Bätz;
  issue
  [Elisabeth]
- Likely more siblings

Parents are Numbers 226 and 227.

114 – Johannes RITTER was born on 11 October 1783 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Conrad Ritter and his wife Anna Elisabeth née Römer. He was confirmed there in 1797.

By occupation he was a master tailor and Musikant: minstrel.
He married Anna Elisabeth Vollmar on 19 August 1810 at Niedermöllrich, and the couple had one child whose name is known to me.

Death information was not found in the Niedermöllrich church records. A number of reasons come to mind: It could have been omitted by the pastor; Johannes could have been living at another place, perhaps with a married child, when he died; or (least likely) it could have been overlooked by Mrs. Habenicht.\textsuperscript{225}

See Illustration Number 114.

Parents are Numbers 228 and 229.

\textbf{115 – Anna Elisabeth Vollmar} was born on 20 June 1784 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Johannes Vollmar and his wife Maria Elisabeth née Otto. She was confirmed there in 1798.

She married Johannes Ritter on 19 August 1810 at Niedermöllrich, and bore one known child, likely more.

She died on 28 February 1821 at Niedermöllrich; the funeral and burial occurred there on 1 March.

Parents are Numbers 230 and 231.

\textbf{116 – Johann Bartol Nuhn}, sometimes referred to as Barthold Valentin Nuhn, was born 20 February 1778, between 3 and 4 o’clock in the morning, at Niederaula, Hessen, Germany, to Johann Valentin Nuhn and his wife, Katharina Elisabeth née Bieber. He was baptized there on 25 February 1778. His sponsors were his Grandmother Bieber and another whose name I cannot read. He was confirmed at Niederaula in 1792. On 9 March 1805, he agreed to a marriage contract at Niederaula, signing his name “Johann Bartol Nuhn”, and married Angelika Thamer there on 1 April 1805. He was a farmer. He died 12 February 1817 in Niederaula and was buried there.

Sibling, surname Nuhn

Anna Katherina married Johann Heinrich Rohrbach; issue; immigrated to America\textsuperscript{226}

See Illustration Number 116.

Parents are Numbers 232 and 233.

\textsuperscript{225} See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.

\textsuperscript{226} Along with a son Conrad, the Rohrbachs immigrated to Illinois in 1834, first settling in Washington, then moving to Piper City. They accompanied Sebastian Gömpel, son of Bertold Gömpel, a Hessian soldier in the Revolutionary War. Bertold’s sister, Eva Katharina Gömpel, married a Rohrbach and became the mother of the immigrant Johann Heinrich Rohrbach.
117 – **Angelika THAMER** was born at Mengshausen, Kurhessen, to Franz Thamer and his wife Elisabeth Thielen about six o’clock on the evening of 8 February 1779. She was baptized there the next day. When the marriage contract with Johann Bartol Nuhn was agreed upon, she signed “XXX”, as was customary on the part of the women of the community. She died on 11 February 1842 at Niederaula, and was buried there.

Parents are Numbers 234 and 235.

118 – **Johann Georg BÄTZ** was born 22 August 1779 at Niederaula to Johannes Bätz and Katharine Elisabeth Heiderich. He was confirmed in Niederaula in 1793.

A linen weaver as well as a soldier in [word I can’t read] Prince Corps, he married Anna Margarethe Schäfer on 26 January 1800 at Niederaula. He is referred to as Georg Bätz within the 1833 marriage contract of his daughter Anna Margarete, but he used an initial that does not actually look like ‘J’ before ‘Georg’ when he signed it.

He died at Niederaula on 9 December 1842.

Siblings, surname Bätz
- Johann Georg, born 22 August 1772
- Anna Katharina, born 4 December 1773 died 1812
- Anna Maria born, 1776 died 1777
- Kunigunda born, 1778 died in infancy
- [Johann Georg]
- Elisabeth born, 19 May 1783; married; died 1 July 1848

See Illustration Number 118.

Parents are Numbers 236 and 237.

119 – **Anne Margrethe SCHÄFER** was born 24 September 1771 at Solms, Kurhessen, Germany to Johann Jost (elsewhere Johann Justus) Schäfer and his wife Anna Catharina Zulauf. She was confirmed there in 1785, married Johann Georg Bätz in 1800, and died at Niederaula on 10 December 1839.

Siblings, surname Schäfer
- [Anne Margrethe]
- Elisabeth born 1775, married Hans Curt Gumbel; issue
  - Likely more siblings

Parents are Numbers 238 and 239.

120 – **Gottfried Erdmann SCHILLING** was born on 22 March 1775 at the Schilling Hof
at Schartau, Province of Saxony, Prussia, now Germany, to Nicolaus Schilling and his wife Anna Dorothea née Lüders. Much of the available information comes from his death record, and nothing is known about his baptism or confirmation. At the time of his death he was a farmer and was of the Lutheran faith.

Appendix 10 contains information about how I happened to find living relatives in Germany; they supplied an Ahnenpass, prepared for a descendant of his brother. It is the document required by Hitler’s government that proved “Aryan” ancestry.

Gottfried married Anna Dorothee Jacobs about 1796. They became the parents of at least four children.

Attended by a Dr. Massmann, he died of typhus at six o’clock on the morning of 30 August 1834 at Osterburg, survived by his widow and four adult children. A Mrs. Seifert verified that the deceased was indeed Gottfried Schilling; it is not clear why such verification was necessary. He was buried at St. Martin’s Cemetery at Osterburg on 1 September 1834.

Siblings, surname Schilling
   Joachim, married Elisabeth Sophie Behndorf; issue
   [Gottfried Erdmann]
   Likely more siblings

Parents are Numbers 240 and 241.

121 – Anne Dorothee JACOBS was born about 1775; her birthplace and parents’ names are not known.

She married Gottfried Erdmann Schilling about 1796, and bore four known children to him. She died at Arendsee, a small city near Osterburg in the Altmark, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany. Since she and her husband had been living at Osterburg at the time of his death, one can infer that she had gone to Arendsee to live with one of her children. There is something about a Frau Tiemann mentioned in the death entry in the church record, and I believe that she paid the fees connected with the funeral and burial; it is possible that this Mrs. Tiemann was her daughter, or she may have been a person who was able to verify the identificaton of the remains.

Four adult children survived when she died of dropsy at midnight on 9 March 1851. She was buried at Johann Cemetery at Arendsee on 13 March 1851, with Pastor Bracht officiating.

Parents have not been identified.

122 – Christian SCHULZ was born at 6 p.m. on 23 March 1771 at Schinne in the Altmark, presently Sachsen-Anhalt in Germany. His father was Johann Friedrich Schulze and his

Symptoms of typhus include high fever, skin eruptions and severe headache. Contagion is spread by lice, ticks or fleas. Typhoid fever, in contrast, is caused by ingestion of contaminated water or food.
mother’s maiden name was Anna Catharina Seeger. Christian was baptized on 25 March 1771. His sponsors were Peter Venrelberg, Curtiasser Reiter des Marsleinochen(?) Kavillere Regiments; Christian Wolter; and Anna Maria Seeger from Schönfeld. This information comes from the Schinne church records.

Christian was a citizen of Osterburg and and his occupation was wheelwright when he married Charlotte Sophie Loudon on 12 July 1801 at Schinne. Another source gives his occupation as cartwright. The couple had three daughters before she died in 1813.

He married Charlotte Pflughaupt, a maiden from Krahemark in 1813, but the couple had no issue. She, along with three married daughters, survived when he died of the debility of old age at six-thirty on the morning of 9 April 1850. His funeral and burial took place on 12 April. He is buried at Osterburg, but I cannot read the name of the cemetery.

The death entry in the Osterburg church register states that his birth date was 21 March 1769, but I regard that the birth information found in the Schinne church record is correct.

Parents are Numbers 244 and 245.

123 – Charlotte Sophie LOUDON was born about 1772-77, probably in Osterburg in the Altmark, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany, to Christian Friedrich Loudon and his wife, whose name is unknown.

She married Christian Schulz on 12 July 1801 at Schinne. The couple lived at Osterburg, where she bore three daughters to Schulz. She died on 14 April 1813, and her funeral and burial took place at Osterburg on 16 April. I found her death recorded in the churchbook at Osterburg, and took a picture of her death entry with my 35 millimeter camera because no copy machine was available. It is very hard to read, but the cause of death appears to be some kind of fever.

Father is Number 246.

124 – Hennig Wilhelm KROME was born about 1769-70, calculated from his death age of 58 in 1828. Birthplace and parents’ names were not found in the church records of Gross Stöckheim, Braunschweig, now Niedersachsen, Germany, where he lived and reared his family. However, when I did the research, I made a subtraction error and looked for his birth about 1765. This research was carried out in Germany; the church records have not been filmed by the LDS, and there has been no opportunity to correct my error.

Hennig married Dorothee Friederike Elisabeth Weferling, probably about 1797-1798, but the marriage did not take place in Gross Stöckheim. The couple had eight known children. Since I did find at least one other Weferling in the Gross Stöckheim church records, it seems likely, at least, that Dorothee was from there and Hennig was not, and the marriage took place in his home parish.

He was a carpenter, a day laborer and a cottager, the last meaning that he had enough land to
raise a garden and perhaps a cow or two and some hogs and poultry.

Hennig died of pneumonia at six o’clock on the morning of 24 January 1828, with funeral and burial taking place on 28 January; the churchbells were not tolled at his funeral.

Parents have not been identified.

125 – Dorothee Friederike Elisabeth WEFERLING was born about 1775, calculated from her death age of 63 in 1838. It is likely that she was a native of a village near Gross Stöckheim in the Duchy of Braunschweig, now Niedersachsen, Germany.

I found the death of a widower, Johann Heinrich Weferling, age 76 in 1826, who would be the right age to be Dorothee’s father. He died of weakness after having been blind for eighteen years, my translation subject to error. Nothing was found to link him to Dorothee.

Dorothee married Hennig Wilhelm Krome about 1797-1798, and bore him eight children.

She died at seven o’clock on the morning of 30 July 1838 of pneumonia. Her funeral and burial, the churchbells silent, took place on 2 August 1838.

Parents have not been identified.

126 – Heinrich Jürgen DEIPENAU was one of twins born on 14 January 1764 at Klein Mahner, Duchy of Braunschweig, now Niedersachen, Germany, to Jürgen Deipenau and his wife Maria, whose maiden name is not known.

He married Marie Christine Strübig on 2 November 1794 at Klein Mahner. The couple had two known children.

Widowed in 1807, he died on 9 December 1814 at Klein Mahner, at one o’clock or four o’clock in the morning, two minor children surviving. His funeral and burial took place on 11 December.

I did the research on this family at an archives in Braunschweig, Germany. The church records were on microfiche and there was no copying capability, so I possess no documentation.

Siblings, surname Deipenau
- [Heinrich Jürgen] (twin)
- Ilsa Catharine (twin, listed as a survivor at Heinrich Jürgen’s 1814 death)

Parents are Numbers 252 and 253.
127 – Marie Christine STRÜBIG was the wife of Heinrich Jürgen Deipenau, whom she married on 2 November 1794 at Klein Mahner, Duchy of Braunschweig. She bore two known children to Deipenau.

Marie died on 27 April 1807 at Klein Mahner, with funeral and burial on 30 April. Her husband and two minor children survived.

Parents have not been identified.
Illustration Number 74: Gen. John Blassingame, from a color photograph of a portrait owned ca. 1970 by Mrs. W. B. Paddock of Fort Worth, Texas. It measures approximately 24 x 28 inches. An appraiser from the Metropolitan Museum, considering the skin tones and technique, told Mrs. Paddock that it may have been painted by either Peale or Stuart, both famous American artists.

Mrs. Paddock’s grandmother, Mrs. William Easley Blassingame née Eliza Paul Townes, used it as a firescreen in front of the fireplace at their home in Gonzales, Texas, during the Civil War. A hole in the tip of the nose resulted; it was restored by an artist in Colorado Springs, Colorado.

Mrs. Caro C. (Cleveland) Powell, a descendant of Gen. Blassingame, believes it may have been painted by John Wesley Jarvis (1780-1840), who painted Gen. Blassingame’s neighbor, Joel Roberts Poinsett. Poinsett was a planter, scientist and diplomat who introduced the poinsettia into the United States after serving as United States minister to Mexico.

Above information from The Blassingame Families by W. Doak Blassingame (Vol. I.)
Illustration Number 74: Signature of Gen. John Blassingame, 17 Jan 1807, from his father-in-law Robert Easley’s estate papers.

Illustration Number 75: Signature of Elizabeth (Easley) Blassingame from her husband’s estate papers, dated 21 June 1826.

Illustrations Number 74:

← Gravestone of Gen. Blassingame, from Dr. W. Doak Blassingame’s Volume II. The “facts” are incorrect—he was almost certainly not a boy soldier in the Revolutionary War, and he married Elizabeth Easley in 1794.

→ Taken during the 1990’s, same stone, the cemetery much overgrown with vegetation.

Illustration Number 76:
Signature of Peter Clingman from a 7 August 1833 promissory note to the Bank of Cape Fear at Salem, North Carolina. The drawing of a seal and the word “seal” obscure some of his signature.

Illustrations Number 89: Margaret (Rambo) Runyan’s gravestone in Shiloh Cemetery at Pigeon Forge, Tennessee. Close-up of engraving “M R” on right.

Illustrations Number 94: Edmund Borum’s signature found on a 4 September 1850 document concerning his War of 1812 Pension.

On his 23 February 1867 Oath of Allegiance, in which he asked for reinstatement of his War of 1812 pension after the Civil War, his signature was shaky, and he wrote “Edmun.”

Illustrations Number 112: Hans Curt Gumbel wrote his name ending in double ‘l’ when he witnessed his mother’s Death Certificate on 15 March, 1812.

He signed with one ‘l’ at other times, this from his son Carl’s 1808 Birth Certificate.

Illustration Number 114: Signature of Johannes Ritter from the civil record of his daughter Sabina’s 1810 birth.

Illustration Number 116: Johann Barthol Nuhn’s signature from his 1805 Marriage Contract.

Illustration Number 118: Signature of Johann Georg Bätz, from the 1833 Marriage Contract of his son Wilhelm. He signs, “George” Bätz. This is not the same example of his signature referred to on Page 317 of the text.
EIGHTH GENERATION

144 – Joseph ROBINSON was probably born between 1725 and 1730 in or near Fauquier County, Virginia. His parents were William Robinson and Catharine Taylor, the link unquestionably proved by a lawsuit in Fauquier County, Virginia researched by John K. Gott. Joseph’s brother David Robinson sues his mother and others, stating that he was made to work like a slave by his step-father, John Rector; that he asked for his share of his father, William “Robertson’s” estate, but was told that it had become so mingled with that of his stepfather, that it couldn’t be separated; that his siblings, named in suit, had presumably received some small satisfaction for their claims and refused to join him; these siblings are also named as co-defendants.

The suit is quite interesting from a historical perspective. At its 1774 filing, summons were issued in the name of George the Third; later summons were issued in the name of the Common Wealth of Virginia. It was dismissed in 1791, presumably because of Catharine Taylor Robinson Rector’s death.

Joseph married and had at least one child by a first wife, whose name is unknown. His widow, Martha, maiden name unknown, survived him.

Joseph’s will was dated 21 May 1782 and recorded 22 July 1782. The will itself does not survive; therefore we do not have signatures of witnesses, and Joseph himself signed with a mark. It is really impossible to make a judgement about his literacy or lack thereof, because he may have been too “sick and weak of body” to write his name. The will was copied into Fauquier County, Virginia Will Book 1, pages 445 and 446.
transcription follows:

“In the name of God Amen this the twenty first day of May in the year of our Lord Christ one thousand seven hundred and eighty two. I Joseph Robinson of the County of Fauquier and parish of Leeds being very sick and weak in body but of perfect and sound mind and memory thanks be to God therefore calling to mind the mortality of my body and knowing it is appointed for all men once to die do make and ordain this my last Will and testament in manner and form following Principally I commend my soul unto the hands of almighty God who gave it me trusting in the merits of my Saviour and redeemer Jesus Christ for pardon and remission of sins at the last day and my body to the earth to be decently buried in a christian like manner at the discretion of my Executors hereafter named and touching such worldly Estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me with in this life I give devise and dispose thereof in manner following. Item I give the use of my whole Estate both real and personal to my loving Wife Martha Robinson during her Widowhood or natural life, and after the day of her marriage or death it is my Will and desire that all my lands and other Estate whatsoever (Except the negroes and their increase that came by my beloved Wife Martha Robinson) to be equally divided between my loving Children to wit. Maximillian Robinson, John Robinson, William Roberson, Dorcas Murry, Hannah Kincheloe, Nancy Robinson, Catherine Robinson, Peggy Robinson and Molly Robinson, my just debts being first discharged and the following legacies paid Viz. ten pounds specie to my Grandson Maximillian Robinson, Ten pounds to my granddaughter Hannah Robinson and ten pounds to my granddaughter Lucy Robinson, the same being the Children of my son Benjamin Robinson, deceased. Item my will and desire is that all the negroes above mentioned that came by my loving Wife Martha Robinson with their increase at the day of her death or marriage should be equally divided between my beloved Children hereafter mentioned Viz. John Robinson, William Robinson, my daughters Dorcas Murry, Hannah Kincheloe, Nancy Robinson, Catherine Robinson, Peggy Robinson and Molly Robinson. And lastly I ordain constitute and appoint my loving Wife Martha Robinson Executrix and my son John Robinson Executor Executor [sic] to this my last Will and Testament ratifying confirming this and no other to be my last Will and testament disannulling and revoking all other Wills bequests and legacies given heretofore by me In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year first above written.

“Signed sealed & confirmed in presence of his
John Barker
Joseph Robinson ? 228
his
Joseph X Robinson LS
mark
James X Whight
mark
Jesse Robinson

“At a court held for Fauquier County the 22d day of July 1782 This Will was proved by the oaths of John Barker Joseph Robinson Jun 229 James White and Jesse Robinson Witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded. And on the motion of Martha Robinson the Executrix therein named who made oath and executed and acknowledged bond as the Certificate is granted her for obtaining abstract thereof in due form.

“Testere[?] HBrookett”

228 There are some letters after Joseph Robinson’s name; some transcribers have seen this as “Jr.” but I cannot make them spell “Jr.” although I can make no other interpretation.
229 The word “Jun” is definitely legible here.
Siblings, surname **Robinson**

- David
  - Ann married Henry Rector [related to her stepfather]
- Frances married first John Ball; married second William Howell [Joseph]
- William

Halfsiblings, surname **Rector**, from his mother’s marriage to John Rector

- Henry (could be from Rector’s first marriage)
- Daniel (could be from Rector’s first marriage)
- Jacob (could be from Rector’s first marriage)
- Charles
- Catherine
- Elizabeth
- Benjamin
- Frederick

Stepsibling, surname **Rector**

- John Jr., from John Rector’s marriage to Catherine Fishback

Parents are Numbers 288 and 289.

**145 – Martha ________** was the wife of Joseph Robinson, almost certainly his second wife. She brought property (slaves) to the marriage, and Joseph makes it clear in his will which of his children are to share the inheritance of these slaves and their increase, Maximillian being excluded almost certainly because he was the son of Joseph’s first wife. Benjamin is not mentioned either, but since he was already dead (his children are mentioned elsewhere in the will), it is not really clear whether he was Martha’s son. Martha was living when Joseph died, was named along with son John to execute Joseph’s will.

It seems likely that Martha’s parents were in Virginia because of her ownership of slaves, either as part of her dowry or by inheritance.

Parents have not been identified.

**148 – William BLASSINGAME** has been proven to be the father of General John Blassingame and others (see Number 74, John Blassingame).

I joined with Mrs. Phyllis H. Harrison, Mrs. Barbara L. Eades, Mr. Larry Tyner and Mrs. Susan Stillwell Lafo, in engaging the services of Mr. Brent W. Holcomb, a professional genealogist of sterling reputation who specializes in South Carolina research, asking him to find additional information on William Blassingame of Cheraw District, especially to learn the name of his wife and the names of the parents of both. While Mr. Holcomb was able to rule out some possibilities, nothing was really determined; he came to believe that William’s father may have been one Philip Blassingame, but that is only an educated guess.
The probate records of Cheraw District 1781-1787, as well as deed records 1785-1806, were lost in the Darlington Court House fire of 1806. Earlier probates were recorded in Charleston, but nothing helpful to us survives among the probate records.

Some deeds do survive, and while they are interesting, they contain nothing of genealogical import. Mr. Holcomb found the following (spelling is as contained in his report):

**Colonial Plats, Volume 13, page 251** (a plat for James Blassingame, 16 Nov 1771 is among these):

"Pursuant to a precept by John Bremar, Esq., D. Sur: Genl, bearing date 7 August 1770, I have admeasured and laid out unto William Blazingame, a plantation of 150 acres on a small creek known by the name of Westfield’s Creek, in Craven county on S side Pee Dee River, certified 19 Sepr 1770. P. James Dozer, D. S."

"Pursuant to a precept by John Bremar, Esq., D. Sur: Genl, dated 1 May 1770, I have admeasured and laid out unto William Blasingame, a plantation of 10 acres on S side Pee Dee River in Craven County adj. land of Claudius Pegues, Isaac Jenkins, and Pee Dee River, certified 10 Sepr 1770. P James Dozer, D. S. Ord. Co. 2 Apr 1771."

**Pre-Revolutionary Loose Plats, Folder 141** (grants for James Blasinghame and John Blasingame [Union County], are among these):

"Pursuant to a Precept directed by John Bremar, Esqr., Deputy Surveyor Genl dated 1 May 1770, I have admeasured and laid out unto William Blazingame, 26 acres in Goodman Island in Craven County adj. land of Claudius Pegues, Mrs. Jenkins, Pee Dee River, certified 7 May 1770. John Dozer, D. S."

"Pursuant to a precept by John Bremar, Esq., D. Sur: Genl, dated 1 May 1770, I have admeasured and laid out unto William Blasingame, a plantation of 10 acres on S side Pee Dee River in Craven County adj. land of Claudius Pegues, Isaac Jenkins, and Pee Dee River, certified 20 Sepr 1770. P James Dozer, D. S."

"Pursuant to a precept by John Bremar, Esq., D. Sur: Genl, bearing date 7 August 1770, I have admeasured and laid out unto William Blazingame, a plantation of 150 acres on a small creek known by the name of Wesfields Creek, in Craven County on So side Pee Dee River, certified 19 Sepr 1770. P. James Dozer, D. S."

**Royal Grants, Volume 21, page 63:**

George III to William Blazingame, 26 acres on good Mans Island in Craven County, adj. land of Claudius Pegues, Mr. Jenkins, dated 21 August 1770.

**Royal Grants, Volume 23, pages 438-439:**

"George III to William Blazingame, 10 acres in Craven County on the south side of Pee Dee River, adj. land of Claudius Pegues, Isaac Jenkins, dated 4 May 1771."
“George III to William Blazingham, 150 acres on a small creek known by the name of Westfields Creek in Craven County, South side of Pee Dee River, 4 May 1771.”

Land Memorials, Volume 10, page 461:

“A Memorial exhibited by William Blazingham, 10 acres in Craven county on S side Pee Dee River, adj. land of Claudius Pegues, Isaac Jenkins, survey certified 2 April 1771 and granted 4 May 1771. dated 7 June 1771. D’ld 17 Sept 1772 to William Blasingame.”

“A Memorial exhibited by William Blasingham, 150 acres in Craven county on a small creek known by the name of Westfield’s creek S on Pee Dee River, survey certified 2 April 1771 and granted 4 May 1771. dated 7 June 1771. D’ld 17 Sept 1772 to William Blasingame.”

Mrs. Barbara L. Eades obtained William’s Revolutionary War record and furnished a copy to me. Little information can be gleaned from it other than two Indents, showing that he was to be paid £64, 10 shillings and 1 penny sterling for Provisions and Forage for Continental use in 1781, and £2, 6 shillings and 7½ pence sterling for provisions and forage for Militia in 1781.

He served in the Revolutionary War as a private under General Francis Marion, ‘The Swamp Fox’, being listed in Marion’s Men: A list of twenty-five hundred, compiled by William Boddie [1938, Charleston, South Carolina].

Excursus: Inglis Fletcher wrote fictionialized historical novels including a North Carolina Series, dealing with North Carolina from the time of its settlement through the Revolutionary period.

Two of the books deal specifically with the Revolutionary War, and in one, Toil of the Brave, a minor character named Blasingame appears. He is a patriot, performing intelligence for the American cause. One wonders if Mrs. Fletcher, who did meticulous research, knew personally (her own ancestors were residents of the region) about a patriot named Blasingame.

***

Little information is available about William’s personal life. No family bible or other family record has been found. His wife’s maiden name may have been Westfield, but there is no proof. Some of his descendants have used that name as a given or middle name for their children.

Mrs. Eades found a legal document concerning William’s purchase of the remaining eight years of James Booth’s indenture to Thomas Ellerbee on 5 January 1777. James’ parents, James and Rachel Booth had agreed to this indenture on 17 January 1772 in St. David’s

230 A descendant of William’s son Thomas Blassingame has proved eligibility for the Sons of The American Revolution on William’s RW service; his surname is Eades, and his SAR Number is 160873.
231 ©1946 Bobbs-Merrill Company, Indianapolis
parish. It was for a term of thirteen years, and the parents were paid £80 for young James’ services. As is noted in the biography of his son John (Number 74), it was a slave William owned whose sale proved that he was John’s father. Presumably he owned other slaves as well.

Vestry minutes of St. David’s Parish in South Carolina exist for the years 1768-1832. Included in these minutes is the information that William was a member of the St. David’s Society, and served as an overseer of the poor for St. David’s Parish in 1778.

He had died by 1782; John Westfield’s own Revolutionary War record contains the information that he was the executor of William’s estate, having signed in 1785 for the Indents due William for his service in the Revolutionary War.

Parents have not been identified.

150 – Robert “Robin” EASLEY was born before 1741, probably in Goochland County, Virginia, the son of John Easley, Jr. and Joyce Allen. He was, of course, named after his grandfather Easley.

His first marriage was to Elizabeth Coleman and occurred probably about 1773 in Virginia. Only one child, Elizabeth Smith Easley, is believed to have been born to the couple.

Robert Easley married second, between 1778 and 1780, his first cousin, Mary Allen (born 31 August 1738), with whom he had issue: Samuel Allen, John Allen and Ann “Nancy”. One might sense (and perhaps I’m reading too much between the lines) that this was the woman he would have married first, except for family opposition because of their close blood relationship. Mary’s father, Samuel Allen’s will contains two items upon which I’m basing my opinion about this:

“Item - I lend unto my daughter Mary two negroes named Ben and Cloe during her natural life, provided she will keep the same in her own possession but not to be sold or hired out or by any means taken out of her possession during her said life and after her death to be divided among her children if she have any, by my Execrs and if she die without lawful issue then my desire is that the said negroes with the increase, if any, return to the hand of my Execrs and be equally divided with the rest of my estate.”

“Item - My will and desire is that my said daughter Mary have full and free possession of one small room in my house in the shed that opens into chamber where I usually lodge and that she freely possess the same without interruption so long as she shall live unmarried and if she ever marries during her natural life, I likewise give to my said daughter Mary one feather bed and furniture.”

Excursus: The description of Mary’s room brings to mind a Virginia tradition, the ‘safe room’, a room occupied by the daughters of the family, and opening only through their parents’ bedroom, as told by Frances Parkinson Keyes in her 1936 historical novel Honor
Bright, in which the following description is given:

"...life was very lonely on the plantations in the early days, and when the settlers and their families went to stay with each other they naturally tried to make up for the dull periods between visits. There was a great deal of drinking and lovemaking. So girls were protected—that is, as much as they could be."

The story goes on to tell about how the room was often not safe.

***

It has been suggested by at least one researcher that there might have been something wrong with Mary, prompting her father to write in this vein; I suggest that she was learning to cope with a broken heart, perhaps even sulking, but there wasn't anything wrong with her—witness her eventual marriage to Robert Easley after he was widowed. She was about 40 years old when they married.

Dr. DeMarce writes,

"According to family tradition, this Robert Easley was a private in the American Revolution. If so, his service would have taken place in Virginia and has not been proven. He moved about 1786 to Pendleton, District, South Carolina, and purchased 100 acres along George’s Creek to the Saluda River. The family home was named River Side."

Mary died before 10 March 1801, when Robert married third Catherine Benson; they had no children. Catherine was a great deal younger than Robert, which accounts for the fact that his father-in-law is mentioned in Robert’s will, my transcription of which follows:

"State of South Carolina
Pendleton District

"In the name of god Amen;

"I Robert Easley of the District aforesaid, being in my perfect senses & Sound in Memmory on this thirty first Day of March in the year of our Lord one thousand Eight Hundred & Six have made this my last will & Testament __________

"Item after all my just Debts being first paid out of my Estate I give unto my Daughter Elizabeth Blassingame the wife of John Blassingame one negroe man known by the name of Great Ned

"Item I give unto my Grand Daughter Mary Blassingame and a daughter of Elizabeth Blassingame one negroe Girl or woman near the age of herself to be purchased of my Stock and Landed property

"Item, Ben, Floro, Lucy, Jo, Abram, Jess, Sam, Rose, Alcy, Morning & James I Leave to be Equally Divided between my two Sons Samuel Easley John Easley & My Daughter Nancy Blassingame wife of Thomas Blassingame

"Item;"
"I give unto my Son Samuel Easley two Negroe men to wit, Isham & Ralph, 

"Itim I Give unto my Son John Easley two Negroe men to wit, Little Ned & Daniel 

"Item I give unto my grand Daughter Mary Blassingame Daughter of Nancy Blassingame one Negroe girl named Amy 

"Item I give unto my beloved wife Catherine her Choice out of my Stock of Horses with a Good Saddle & Bridle & her Choice one of the Beds & furniture & two Cows & Calves, her Choice of my Stock of Cattle, I also lend unto my wife Catherine During the life of her father Enoch Benson my negroe Woman Suck & at the Death of the s’d Enoch Benson I Give my negroe woman Suck to my Daughter Nancy Blassingame & at the Death of Nancy Blassingame the s’d Suck her Increase I give to my GrandDaughter Polly Blassingame Nancys Daughter 

"Item if my Son Samuel Should Dye without a Lawful heir the negroes I Give unto him I leave to be Equally Divide amongst the Children of Nancy Blassingame; 

"Item if my Son John Easley Should Dye without a Lawful heir I Leave the negroes given to him to be equally Divided amongst the Children of my Daughter Nancy Blassingame. 

"Item as it is my wish and Desire that no Disputes may arise between my Children after my Death and with every thing to appear fair & easy to be understood it is my Request that after my Death that my Executors Do Sell the whole of my three tracts of Lands Joining lines on Saluda River and Georges Creek & all my Stock of Every kind all my household & kitchen furniture with all tools of every kind 

[next page] & all my Stock of grain of very kind at a Credit of twelve months & the monies arising therefrom to be equally Divided between my two Sons Samuel & John Easley and in case of both or Either of my Sons Samuel & John Easley Dying without Lawful heir the property or money then to be Equally Divided between the children of My Daughter Nancy Blassingame and as I am at this time in my perfect Sences I have thought fit to appoint Major John Blassingame & William Easley of Greenville District my Lawful Executors to Do & act according to the best of their abilities whereby I hereunto Set my hand the Day & year first mentioned 

in presence of /s/ Robert Easley 
Thos C Lorton 
John Dyres 
Samuel Townes 

Robert died between 1 April and 6 December 1806 in Pendleton District, South Carolina. No gravesite has been found. 

An inventory and sale of his property conducted on 15, 16 and 17 January 1807 includes 770 acres sold to Samuel A. Easley; 5 hogs sold to Thomas Easley; 1 colt, cow, bull etc. sold to John A. Easley; 18 head of cattle etc. sold to John Blassingame; and 2 bridles, 5 bushels of tobacco, flax, sold to William Easley. 

Siblings, surname Easley 
Judith born about 1735
Samuel born about 1736
John born about 1738, married Ann Gowan; issue
William born between 1739 and 1746, married Jane Scruggs; issue
[Robert]
Millington born before 1746, married Elizabeth ________; issue

Parents are Numbers 300 and 301.

151 – Elizabeth COLEMAN was born probably in Cumberland County, Virginia perhaps about 1750.

She married Robert Easley about 1773, and gave birth to a daughter, Elizabeth Smith Easley, on 21 March or May 1774 in Virginia. If she had other children, they are not known to me.

She died about 1777 or 1778, in Virginia, but her burial site is not known.

Parents are Numbers 302 and 303.

152 – Alexander CLINGMAN was born before 11 October 1738, at some place where he was not a subject of the King of England. In Rowan County, North Carolina on Friday, 11 October 1754, he took an oath abjuring his previous allegiance and swearing fealty to the King of England. He had to be at least sixteen years old to do this, so his birth can be dated from that. Of course, he could have been quite a lot older than sixteen on the day of the oath-taking, especially if he had only recently arrived in the Colony.

Along with Alexander “Clingerman” taking the oath the same day were Casper Keenor, Steffel Goodheart and Mathias Beever. Keenor may have been Kühner, Steffel is a nickname for Christoffel or Stephan, and the name Beever was probably Bieber in German, corrupted in the same way that Huber became Hoover. Any or all of these men may have come from the same village as Alexander—he surely didn’t come alone from Germany—but there is no way to know. Squire Boone, Daniel Boone’s father, was a justice at the court of Rowan County at that time, but was not mentioned as being present on the day that Alexander took his oath. He did however, attend court the next day.

Writings by Mrs. Melinda (Jones) Cubage recount the family lore that the Clingmans were Lutheran and “German Palatines from off the Rhine” who landed at Philadelphia about 1727. Frances (White) Speer believed that Alexander was two years old when the family came to America. I suspect that this lore was transferred from some other branch of her family to the Clingmans, because if Alexander had come with his parents, his father’s oath would have taken care of the entire family; if he had been born after their landing on this continent, he would not have possessed any previous allegiance. Other possibilities as the source of this lore include: The Keiser family, or the ancestors of Ann Martha Clingman. (Mrs. Cubage’s Jones ancestors were probably Welsh or English, and I believe that her Grandmother Jones’ maiden name was Box, perhaps a misspelling of the German name Bax which is pronounced exactly like ‘box’ in English, or an Anglicization of the German name Bach—or perhaps not). A good many family historians have been and are currently working
on finding a birthplace in Germany or another German-speaking place, for Alexander, but so far no one has been successful.

(There is a faction that believes that Alexander and some others were so suspect that they had to take an oath frequently. I have not personally seen evidence of this.)

After the oath taking, the next time I was able to find Alexander mentioned in Rowan County records was among Rowan deed abstracts:

“12 May 1756. _______ to Peter Arrant for 10 shillings sterling 620 acres between Grant and Crane Creeks adjoining the Courthouse lands, Alexr Clingman, Geo Cathey and John Nisbet. W. Churton, Richard King. Proved Jan 1757”

“11 January 1757 John Verrell atty to John Long gentleman for £40 Virginia Money, 620 acres between Grand and Crane Creeks adjoining courthouse lands, Alexander Clingmann and the path to Geo. Cathey’s and John Nesbet. Andrew Cranston, John Dunn proved April Court 1757”

Alexander is listed as a taxpayer in Rowan County in both 1759 and 1761, but his name is not found again in the taxpayer lists until 1778.

These metes and bounds land descriptions indicate that Alexander owned land, for there seems to be no other reason that he, i.e., his land, could have been named as the boundary marker. No deed can be found on file indicating his acquisition of this land. Perhaps some of the deed records were lost, because Dan Baird, whose wife is a Clingman descendant, found a book called Carolina Cradle in which there is a map showing the original land grants in Rowan County; it was dated 1747-1762, and shows Alexander Clingman’s land grant adjacent to, on the northwest side, of Salisbury Courthouse land.

Lewis Brumfield believes that this Alexander who took the oath in 1754 is a different man than the one found in the 1772 court minutes, below, perhaps the two being father and son. He makes a rather strong case for this; Alexander’s age would have been against his survival of the horrible conditions when the local militia was imprisoned by the British at Charleston—but when one discovers that there is no proof that he did Revolutionary War service as a soldier but only supplied matériel to the war effort, this argument is entirely negated.

The next time Alexander’s name appears in the court minutes is on Thursday, 7 May 1772, when he was appointed (with others) “as a jury to view and lay out a road from Salisbury to the nearest and best way to Henry Fulwiders leading by James Carsons and so between Jacob and Michael Browns”.

His first land purchase for which a deed has been found in the county records, is on 19 February 1774. Philip “Aaronhart” and his wife (these are almost certainly relatives if not the ancestors of the Eamhart family famous in auto racing circles) deed 281 acres to Alexr. Clingman. Philip signs his name in Old German Script “Phillip Ehrenhardt”, and his wife Elizabeth signs with X. The witnesses are Hannah [?] Huber writing in Old
German Script; her husband John Hoover who writes the Anglicized form of his name in standard cursive letters; and Thomas Carson. This transaction was proved at the court sitting on Friday, 6 May 1774. The land lies on both sides of Dutch Second Creek. Lewis Brumfield describes it as,

"...probably land Alexander had been farming for or with Aaronhart for several years, as Alexander is designated 'planter' in the deed. This was part of Aaronhart’s ‘new’ tract, which he bought from Lord Granville’s agents in 1762, 500 acres in all.... Alexander paid Aaronhart one hundred and fifty pounds ‘Proclamation Money’, the colonial state-issued money, not as worthless as it was later, but practically worthless, as you can tell from the high price he paid."

Brumfield believes that Alexander may have been apprenticed to Aaronhart, a blacksmith. However, when he made his will, he called himself a farmer. Brumfield goes on to say that blacksmithing would have brought in cash money, while farming

"... provided subsistence and bartering material but little cash, unless the farmer made whiskey from his corn and brandy from his fruits."

A book containing abstracts of the deeds states “he signs in Old German Script”. I inferred that Brumfield understood that Alexander had signed in Old German Script, but I looked at the original, and it was of course the Grantor, Phillip Ehrenhardt who signed. No signature of Alexander is known to exist.

There is a branch of the family that believes that Alexander had a first wife, a Mary Ehrenhardt. I have no opinion one way or the other, but it does seem like he was a good deal older than Elizabeth, so it is certainly possible; we know from land records that an Ehrenhardt family were neighbors. Others believe that there were two Alexanders, the one who took the oath in 1754 and a younger one, perhaps his son or nephew. I believe that the one we first find in 1754 is the same Alexander whose wife was Elizabeth Keiser. There is a chance that the 1754 Alexander, in spite of having taken the oath, went back to the old country for a while, accounting for his absence from the records between 1761 and 1772. I don’t believe there is a way to prove either theory.

Virginia Powers, a researcher of the Peter Keiser (various spellings) family, found a book called A Compilation of the Original Lists of Protestant Immigrants to South Carolina 1763-1773. Listed as arriving on 17 October 1766 were Elizabeth Klingmanin, Peter Keysher age 19, and Andreas Klingmanin age 2½. At that time, in the German language, it was customary to add ‘in’ to a female’s name to indicate feminine gender. An English speaker/writer, compiling the list, wrote the ‘in’ after Elizabeth’s name because that was what she said (the correct spelling in German would be ‘Elisabeth’). Andreas must have been her little boy, but the American wouldn’t have understood that she had spoken her name in the feminine, and would have assumed that the little boy had the same surname.

---

No Andreas or Andrew\textsuperscript{234} Clingman (any spelling) has been found in the North Carolina records, but of course he may have died young. It is not easy to mesh these people into Alexander Clingman’s family, but a scenario might be found.

Both Mrs. Cubage and Brumfield state that Alexander was a soldier in the Revolutionary War. Mrs. Cubage certainly had heard family lore (her Poindexter and Pledge ancestors were Revolutionary soldiers), and Brumfield probably was quoting Mrs. Cubage. With only that to rely on, Brumfield tells about the Rowan Regiment marching to Charleston in 1778, “Clingman probably among them”, and about the threat to Charleston in 1780: “Once again the Salisbury militia was called out, Clingman again among them, and sent down there.” He goes on to tell how they were trapped and captured, and the horrible conditions of their imprisonment in chains on British troop ships at Charleston. He wonders how a man of Alexander’s age could have endured this. Mrs. Speer believed that the Revolutionary War legend was not true, that Alexander served in neither the Continental Army, the North Carolina Militia, nor any home guard. She found a document in Raleigh, at the North Carolina Department of Archives and History, indicating that he supplied something worth £20 to the war effort:

“This certifies that the following information is recorded in a manuscript volume located in this Department titled ‘Revolutionary Army Accounts’ (Volume VII, Page 86, Folio 1):

“Heading: [Certificates p[aid] by the Treasurer to the Comptroller July 1790.

“Number: 407

“Name: Alexr. Klingerman

“Amount: 20 pounds, principal; 8 pounds, 2 shillings, interest

“Other information: Lewis Beard. Sheriff

Rowan [County]”

The copy that Mrs. Speer sent to me was certified by Ann Patterson, State Archivist on 13 August 1969.

The above document seems to indicate that, since he was supplying matériel for the war effort, probably either meat, grain, hay etc. from his farm, he was not actively fighting in the war.

Alexander’s name appears in the Rowan County court records as having served on juries in 1782, 1783, 1788 and 1789. The last jury reported on Friday, 7 August 1789 that the road they were appointed to lay off from Salisbury to Fishers Ferry, would run from Salisbury by William Carsons, Jacob Browns, Frederick Fishers, Alexander Klinglemans and Richard

\textsuperscript{234} To find proof that the German name Andreas is Andrew in English, find the name in the Bible (I used Matthew 10:2), then look at the same chapter and verse in a German Bible. This scheme works with any Biblical name and works between languages other than German and English.
Davis and thence into the old road leading to Fishers Ferry on the Yadking [Yadkin] River. Jury is a term used in different ways in different places. For example, what we in Nebraska call the County Commission or County Board, is called the Police Jury in Louisiana. Persons serving as members of this body are called Police Judges.

On Friday, 6 May 1791 the court minutes record that Elizabeth Davis, orphan of Solomon Davis deceased, being six years and three months old, is bound to Alexander Klingerman until she attains eighteen years. Master is to comply with the law. This bound girl was to figure in the family’s history a few years later.

The court minutes note on Friday, 6 February 1795 that Alexander Clingerman is granted an ordinary license, with Jacob Lyardly as security. An ordinary, of course, was an inn or tavern, and appears to have been at the Clingman home. Alexander had quite a large family and surely could have used the extra income that such a venture might bring. The road to the ferry, which he had helped to position, should have brought some traffic past his place; but it doesn’t seem fair to accuse him of scheming for this, as he waited six years from the time the road’s course was determined until he applied for his ordinary license. By this time, it is logical to assume that some of his children were old enough to do the physical work the ordinary entailed. This may have been a sort of apprenticeship for sons Peter and Jacob, who were to manage a store at Huntsville some years later.

Alexander made his will on 19 June 1803, and on Tuesday, 9 August 1803, the last will of Alexander Clingaman was proved and letters testamentory issued to Frederick Fisher (his neighbor along the ferry road) and Peter Clingman. I transcribed the spelling, capitalization and punctuation in the will as exactly as possible:

“In the Name of God Amen. I Alexander Clingerman of the County of Rowan Farmer being sick and weak in body but sound in Mind and memory and understanding (Praised be God for it) and considering that certainty of Death and the Uncertainty of the time thereof; and to the End I may be the Better Prepared to Leave this world, when Ever it shall be Please God to Call me home, do therefore make and Declare this my Last Will and Testament in Manner following, that is to say, First and Principally I commend My Soul into the hand of Almighty God My Creator hoping for free Pardon and Remission of all My sin and to Enjoy ever lasting Happiness in his Heavenly Kingdom, through the soul merits of Jesus Christ My Savior. My Body I Commit to the Earth at the Discretion of My Executors herein after Mentioned. And as to My Worldly Estate of which it hath Pleased God of his Great Mercy and Goodness to Bless me, I Dispose of the same as exactly as possible:

“First, I will that all the Debts that I shall owe at the time of my Disease Shall be justly and truly paid Item Next My Will is that My beloved Wife Elizabeth shall have one of my Horse beast that she may chuse Out of my Stock and her choyce Cow that she may choose Out of My Stock of Neat Cattle. also all the Flax Wool and Cotten that I shall Leave at the Time of My Dicese and also All the Crop of grain that shall be growing on the Farm whereon I now Live and All the grain Flower or Other articles of Provision that I shall Leave in the House Etc for the support of hir family; and My will is that My said Wife shall have and Possess My Dwelling house and all the Farm Now in My

235 When I was a child one could buy Neats Foot Oil; it was used on shoes for waterproofing or to make them look better or wear longer. I wonder if this has anything to do with Alexander’s description of his cattle as “Neat”.
Possession During her Naturall Life and No longer. Item I give and Bequeath and Divise unto My beloved and Dutifull son Michael Clingerman One Hundred and fifty acres of Land to him his Heirs and Assigns for Ever to be Land of in My Old Tract of Land on Second Creek Begining on the upper Line of of the Said Old Tract in Earnharts Line and Runing along the Old Line West to the Old corner of the same where with the Old Line again North thence a new Line to be Run East Crossing the Creek to a Corner near the Creek thence up the Creek so onto include the Cotten Machen to gether with all the Buildings thereunto belonging and the Land that maybe Overflowed by the Pond of the same but not to include any of the Clared Land of the Old Plantation. Item, I also give and bequath unto youngest Dutifull and beloved son Jacob Clingerm Three Hundred Acres of Land Part of the Land I now Live on on the said Second Creek to be Land of on the East side of said Creek joining the Lines of Land Devised to my son Michael Clingerman and Earnharts Line and My Old Line on the East side of my Land so as to Include my Old Plantation and the Creek is to be the Line on the west side of his Land to Mich Corner for Compliment Provided and My will is that my said son Shall Stay and Abid on the Plantation and not Leave the same untill he shall Arrive at the full Age of Twenty One years and that he shall assist his Mother in Suporting her on the said farm During of her Natural Life or widowhood - also It: is my Will that the Remainder of My Land be Equally Divided in Proportion to the value thereof into Five Lots, and that my beloved son George Clingern and My beloved son Peter Clingerman and my beloved son Henry Clingerman and my Dutifull Daughters, Easter and Catherine Each of them to have one of the said Five Lots of Land if they should so agree Otherwise My will that if they should not agree to take such Lot as they should Draw of the Land when so Divided by Five Men to be Appointed for that Purpose as there Part of the same that the same shall be sold at Publick Sale and the Price thereof given to them as the Divident or whole share of the same by My Executors, whereas I have heretofore Advanced to my Elder son George Clingerman the sum of Forty Pound which I allowed to be Part of his Patrimony My Will is therefore that the sum of Forty Pounds be Deducted out of his Divident or Equal Part of My Estate so that _____ which May be so by my Executors, and I do hereby Consitute and Appoint My Beloved sons Michael and Peter Clingerm and My Trusty and beloved Friend and Neighbour Fredrick Fischer as my Executors in this My Last will and Testament In witness whereof I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal Rattifying and Confirming this to be My Last will and Testament this Nineteenth Day of June in the year of Our Lord Christ One Thousand Eight Hundred and Three

“signed sealed and
Declared in his
Presents of Alexander + Clingerm____
mark

David Woodson jun
her
Martha + Woodson
Mark”

Signing with only a mark may have been because he was not literate, or he may have been too weak to sign his name.

Alexander died some time between 19 June and 8 August 1803, but the exact date is not known, nor is his burial place, and there doesn’t seem to be any way of finding out. He is certainly buried near his old home in Rowan County and like many other early Americans, in an unmarked grave. One can imagine that gravestones were not important to Germans, because they were not important in the old country—there they are destroyed after a time, and new burials made in the cemetery lot. The church in Germany was charged with keeping records, however, and as long as there are records,
vital statistics about people without gravestones can be found. No one who has searched has found any church records for the Clingman family. There were those who left Germany partly to get away from the power of the church, and Alexander may have been one.

Parents have not been identified.

153 – Elizabeth KISER, (Kizor, Kizer etc., almost certainly Elisabeth and Keiser or Kaiser in her native Germany) was the daughter of Peter Kiser. His name is spelled several ways in his own will, and he signed with a mark, evidently too weak to sign or perhaps illiterate.

I have long believed, but possess no proof whatsoever, that Alexander Clingman and Elizabeth Keiser were related to each other, perhaps first cousins. I believe that when we find their homes and families in Germany, they will be living in the same or neighboring villages. This blood relationship makes a perfect reason for Peter Clingman to oppose so vehemently the marriage of his son Alexander Brandon Clingman to Ann Martha Clingman, the couple being first cousins.

Elizabeth may be the young woman found by Virginia Powers who immigrated with a 2½-year-old son Andreas in 1766 (see Alexander Clingman biography, number 152). Alexander, if it is true that he had a wife Mary Ehrenhardt who died, may have gone back to the old country and married Elizabeth; she may have been a sister to the Peter "Keysher" on the same ship. Her parents and siblings were in North Carolina by the time her father made his will in 1780, but there is no way of knowing whether they came before or after Elizabeth and her supposed brother came.

If this is our Elizabeth, she must have grieved sorely at the death of Andreas (he almost certainly died, because he does not appear in any record). Few families were able to rear to adulthood all the children born to them; she may have lost additional children.

Brumfield writes that she spoke with a heavy German accent, so it can certainly be assumed that she did not grow up bilingual or come in constant contact with the English language early in life. I believe his statement is based upon family lore.

I tried to find documentation for Brumfield’s assertion that Elizabeth Clingman’s maiden name was Keiser (any spelling), that information attributed to Thomas Lanier Clingman. I looked through several files in the Manuscript Department of Wilson Library at the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill, but I didn’t find anything stating that Thomas Lanier Clingman said that, and Brumfield didn’t state where he found it. When I found the Last Will and Testament of Peter Keizer (many spellings), naming his daughter ‘Elisabeth Clingingman’, I felt confident that Thomas Lanier Clingman’s supposed statement was correct.

Nothing concrete emerges about Elizabeth’s early life. We can assume that she had her hands full, rearing a large family. There is no indication that the Clingmans had any slaves. The addition of a six-year-old ‘servant’ into the household in 1791 wouldn’t have lightened

\[^{236}\text{I can’t find any of this in Brumfield’s book, and believe that he related orally to me that Thomas Lanier Clingman said his grandmother Clingman’s maiden name was Keiser.}\]
her workload; indeed, more work and (later) grief were encountered as a result.

Brumfield knows the North Carolina countryside where the family lived and imagines the family picking the wild berries and greens that grow there, a safe guess. He writes,

“Mrs. Alexander Clingman, widowed in 1803, remained living in her log house on Dutch Second Creek in southeastern Rowan County after her sons, Jacob and Peter, went up to Shallow Ford to start their business. She was still living there in 1815, when she is shown on the Rowan tax list for her district.”

She probably didn’t live alone there, because daughter Esther was at home with her son Isaac Jarratt until her remarriage about 1810. Catherine almost certainly lived at home with her mother until her marriage.

On 20 November 1826, Brumfield writes, Mrs. Elizabeth Clingman charged the following articles at the Clingman store: 1 set plates 40¢; 1 dish 60¢; 1 set cups & saucers 40¢; 1 bowl 40¢; 2 pitchers 65¢; 1 sifter 87½¢; spoons 25¢. Something of a fanatic about dishes myself, I wonder if these were real necessities, or if the dishes were pretty enough to make her want them. In my own imagination at least, the plates, cups, saucers, dish and bowl all match, making a pretty table setting.

It was after Catherine married Abraham Area (many spellings) and moved to Concord, Cabarrus County, North Carolina, that Elizabeth went to live there. Brumfield:

“Alexander’s widow Elizabeth lived on a long time after his death, at least until 1827, as the Clingman store ledgers show. Memories of her German accent continued in the family for generations. She was very active up into her old age, travelling back and forth between her daughter’s home in Cabarrus County and the home of her sons at Huntsville in Yadkin County. The Clingman store ledger shows Leonard Bullin being paid to take her home to daughter Catharine’s, on one occasion in January, though she usually visited Huntsville in the summer. She must have liked those cool August mornings better when fog shrouds the Yadkin River Valley. Better than the hot, flat cotton fields of Cabarrus.”

Her name is not found on the 1830 U.S. census, so she must have died before then; her death date and burial place are not known, but she probably died at Concord in Cabarrus County, where she lived with her daughter Catherine.

Siblings surname Keiser, Kizer, Kiser etc.
[Elizabeth]
Margaret married Mr. Tetter
Peter (inherited family bible, according to father’s will)
George
Frederick
Catherine
Sarah married John Reid (various spellings); issue
Rachel

Parents are Numbers 306 and 307.
154 – Francis POINDEXTER was born 9 December 1764 in Goochland County, Virginia to Thomas Poindexter and his wife Elizabeth nee Pledge. His baptism is recorded on 17 February 1765 at St. James Northam Church (Anglican) in Goochland. His name is stated on the baptismal register ‘ffrancis’, (as transcribed in The Douglas Register) and no middle name is given. Descendants often state that his name was Francis Anderson Poindexter.

‘Anderson’, his often-stated middle name, is puzzling to me. There doesn’t seem to be an Anderson ancestor, although we know next to nothing about his Poindexter grandmother. The maiden name of his mother-in-law was Anderson, which may be only a coincidence; on the other hand, this may be an additional earlier blood relationship which made Peter Clingman oppose so violently, because they were first cousins, the marriage between his son Alexander and Ann Martha Clingman.

The family moved to North Carolina about 1771, the land being then in Rowan but now in Yadkin County. I have found nothing concerning his early life, but have not committed myself to extensive research.

He rose to the rank of Captain during the Revolutionary War, although he was very young. His Revolutionary War service has been researched by women seeking membership in the Daughters of the American Revolution, and results can be found in the library of that organization. His name is not found in the Index to Compiled Service Records of Volunteer Soldiers from North Carolina.

After the death of his old comrade-in-arms Robert Lanier in 1785, Francis is said to have begun to visit Lanier’s widow, Jane nee Pattillo, to “comfort her”. They were married on 16 May 1786 in Granville County, North Carolina, by Jane’s father, the Rev. Henry Pattillo. The couple had five children, born between 1787 and 1797.

Francis died on 21 March 1802. His early death has been attributed to injuries sustained in the Revolutionary War.

There is a copy of an 1817 document in Francis’ estate papers, in which some of his siblings petition against the others, including Francis’ heirs (because he is deceased) that the court appoint commissioners to lay off and divide two tracts of land possessed by their father, Thomas Poindexter, who died in the month of January, 1807. Both tracts lay along the Yadkin River. The petition prays that the commissioners make a fair division of the land, as nearly equal in value as possible.

Also among Francis’ estate papers is a petition of “Ormond” Kimbrough, stating that he “conceives himself in danger by reason” that Francis and Jane Poindexters’ children, Henry P. Poindexter and Jane Poindexter, had gone into Court and chosen Henry Harrison, Esquire, to be their guardian, and that Kimbrough had become Harrison’s security. Kimbrough petitions that he be released from being Harrison’s security and that Harrison be compelled to give other security.

237 This is Orman Kimbrough, the husband of Jane Pattillo Poindexter’s sister, Mildred Pattillo.
At the February, 1808, term of the Surry County Court, a summons was issued to Harrison to appear at the next term and give other security. Four children of Francis Poindexter, deceased, are listed in this document: Henry P. Poindexter, Jane Poindexter, Francis Anderson Poindexter and Thomas W. Poindexter. Francis’ daughter Ann had already married Peter Clingman, and was not subject to guardianship. Francis Anderson is the one in question, in my opinion, because he is elsewhere Francis Alexander. This action is only place where I find ‘Francis Anderson Poindexter’ spelled out, and I find it twice. I believe it was this son, not his father, whose middle name was Anderson. He would have been named for Jane Pattillo Poindexter’s mother, Mary Anderson. Proof of Capt. Francis Poindexter’s middle name “Anderson” is not likely to be found, in my opinion.

Jane Poindexter was the Administratrix of her husband’s estate. In March, 1802 she accounted for funeral expenses including Coffin 3½ Dol costing £1, 17 shillings and sixpence, three gallons of Whiskey costing £1, 10 shillings, and £3 paid to a preacher. On 1 July 1802, she paid £1 and 10 shillings to a cryer (auctioneer) at the sale of the property, and 15 shillings to a clerk.

Other expenses she claimed included 5 barrels of corn “allotted to me out of the crib which was sold but which I did not get” and valued at £5, 6 shillings, and taxes paid for 1799 and 1801, £2, 5 shillings for each year. Also listed is cash she “paid to obtain an order of Court for Settlement” at 2 shillings, for a total of £18, 10 shillings and sixpence.

Her signature appears several times in the estate papers.

William Thornton, Joseph Williams, George Kimbrough and Peter Mock were appointed by the Surry County Court to “allot and point out such part of the Crop, Stock & provisions of the Estate of Francis Poindexter dec’d to his Widow Jane Poindexter for the Support of said Widow & Family for the space of one year...”. They submitted this allotment on 26 June 1802:

“All the Bacon now on hand supposed to be about one Hundred pounds. All the Hogs she has in Possession being Twenty Seven Head including Six piggs which we concur ought to be allowed for fresh use. all the Crop of Wheat & Rye now in the fields, all the old Corn in one Crib which we suppose to be 10 or 12 Barrels & 5 Barrels more out of another Crib that is not yet broken, And all the Crop of Corn now growing in the fields. And three grown Cows for Beef the Ensuing fall and Winter.”

At the time of his death, Francis owed William Harvey £10, 7 shillings and nine pence for his children’s schooling and some other things that aren’t legible due to inkblots on the paper. Another slip of paper lists £2, 4 shillings and nine pence for corn and brandy with dates between 1796 and 1801; these transactions are with Capt. John. Colvard, but

---

238 Interestingly enough, one Robert Anderson was a co-defendant in the Louisa County, Virginia lawsuit in which the Poindexter family figured. See the biography of Thomas Poindexter, Person Number 616.

239 This word could be ‘Daf’, but I think it is ‘Dol’, and that it means ‘dollars’. The money system may have been in transition at that time, between the colonial British pound and the American dollar.
I am unable to determine whether Colvard owed Poindexter's estate, or whether Poindexter owed Colvard.

In a different document, Colvard submitted a bill showing £5, one shilling and sixpence owed to him in "hard money" by Francis Poindexter, for whiskey and coats, one of them a 'Newmarket' coat. The time frame of the transactions shown on the bill is between 1790 and 1801. The word preceding 'coat' may be 'making'; if it is, Colvard may have been a tailor. It appears that it usually cost 16 shillings for one of these. The name Garner is associated with the whiskey, probably meaning that Colvard bought whiskey for Poindexter at Garner's store, a landmark in the region.

I am transcribing below the list of items belonging to the estate that were sold at auction on 1 July 1802, along with the buyers' names. Money amounts are stated in pounds, shillings and pence. I wonder if the word "To" is an erroneous rendition of "Do", an abbreviation for ditto.

"Sold of the Estate of Francis Poindexter Dec'd on 1 July 1802
to wit

Jane Poindexter one Desk £ 2-0-?
To one Desk and Bookcase 0-1-0
To one feather Bed and furniture 2-10-0
To 2 Do 4-0-0
To 1 Do 2-10-0
To one Trunk and wearing apparel of the Dec'd 1-0-0
To 2 Tables 0-15-0
To 6 Chairs 0-10-0
To 2 Set hand Irons 1-10-0
To one Candle stand 0-13-0
To 2 Ch??ts 0-6-6
To one Musket 3-15-6
Benjamin Bingham one Rifle gun 5-1-6
Jane Poindexter one Shot gun 2-0-?
George Kimbrough one old Musket 1-12-0
John Chapman 3 Goards Powder 0-13-0
Joseph Williams Jun' one Horn and Shell 0-8-0
Jane Poindexter one Cupboard & furniture 1-10-?
To 2 flax Wheels 0-5-0
To 1 Hackle 0-5-0
Ormond Kimbrough Case??? & Bore 0-5-0
Jane Poindexter one Candlestick 0-1-?
To 2 Cotton wheels 0-10-0
To one Grid Iron 0-1-0
To one Negro Boy 196-0-0
Hugh Logan one Still 48-10-0
Bartley Odeneal 5 Barrels corn 1st lot 5-5-6
Leonard Davis 5 Barrels corn 2nd Lot 5-6-1

240 There is a chance that the Garner of the Garner store is connected to the Gamer ancestry in this book, but I have been unable to make such a link.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item Description</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Erasmus Chapman 5 Barrels corn 3rd Lot</td>
<td>5-7-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4th Lot Jeremiah Crook</td>
<td>5-7-1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5th Lot Tolbert Riessel</td>
<td>5-7-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6th Lot Jonathan Dolton</td>
<td>5-6-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7th Lot Daniel Scott</td>
<td>5-6-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8th Lot Elias Hopkins</td>
<td>5-5-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9th Lot Charles Hunt</td>
<td>5-6-1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10th Lot Erasmus Chapman</td>
<td>5-6-?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jonathan Haines one Stud Horse</td>
<td>27-0-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Poindexter 1 Horse</td>
<td>14-10-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To one Sorrel Filly</td>
<td>15-10-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To one Colt</td>
<td>16-0-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Longino one Sorrel Stud Colt</td>
<td>7-5-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Poindexter 2 tin Canisters</td>
<td>0-10-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Coffee mill</td>
<td>0-5-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orman Kimbrough Jane Poindexter one Grindstone</td>
<td>0-2-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Poindexter pot Jugs &amp; Bottles</td>
<td>0-3-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To ? Dishes</td>
<td>0-10-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12 Plats</td>
<td>0-12-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 Spoons</td>
<td>0-2-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>½ Dozen knives and forks</td>
<td>0-5-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Doctors Medicine</td>
<td>0-8-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Churn half Bush &amp; pails</td>
<td>0-1-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 7 hoes</td>
<td>0-5-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 2 Boreshares &amp; one Shovel</td>
<td>0-6-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Barrels Hogs &amp; ??? Celler furniture</td>
<td>0-6-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Box of window glass</td>
<td>0-3-2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To one Share</td>
<td>0-2-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Iron Wedge</td>
<td>0-1-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 4 old Axes</td>
<td>0-2-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orman Kimbrough To share &amp; shovel plough hoes</td>
<td>0-9-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Poindexter 15 Divested Deerskins</td>
<td>1-10-?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Sundry pieces of Leather</td>
<td>0-10-?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Box of old Iron</td>
<td>0-4-?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 4 Bells &amp; Hammer</td>
<td>0-4-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry Poindexter one Saddle</td>
<td>0-3-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Poindexter one Side Saddle</td>
<td>0-10-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To one Mans Saddle</td>
<td>0-13-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To one Cradle</td>
<td>0-1-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 2 Bridles</td>
<td>0-2-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Pr Sadle Bags</td>
<td>0-3-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Capt. Kimbrough 6 Deer Skins in the hair</td>
<td>0-19-1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Poindexter to 8 Roles of pasting paper</td>
<td>0-3-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To Parcels of Books</td>
<td>0-11-?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 4 Bee hives</td>
<td>0-5-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 9 head sheep</td>
<td>0-13-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 27[?] head geese</td>
<td>0-11-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To 3 Cows and Yearlings</td>
<td>8-0-0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

241 The word is difficult to read, and I finally settled on 'divested', which I believe means that the hair has been removed. It seems to be a logical opposite of "Deerskins in the hair" mentioned later.
Thomas Longino one Cow and yearling 5-1-11
Jane Poindexter Jun To one Heifer 3-7-0
Thomas Longino one Heifer 3-15-0
To one Black Heifer 2 years old 2-16-0
To one B[?l?]ack Crummy horn Heifer 4-1-11
To one Black & white Cow 5-1-6
Wm Harvey one Black Cow and Bull yearling 6-10-1
Thomas Longino one Cow 4-11-0
Jane Poindexter To one Heifer 2-2-0
Jane Poindexter one Old Waggon 5-5-0
A parcel of Tobacco 0-12-0
To 2 Kettle, 3 Pots and 1 Dutch Oven pott rack and hooks 1-1-0

"[signed] Jane Poindexter Exe"\textsuperscript{242}

Total amount realized from sales is £420, 7 shillings and nine pence (I did not add the figures myself). In addition, there is a list of intangible items belonging to the estate with a value of £1,082, 4 shillings and 3 pence. Much of this amount consists of notes on various people, but also included is £250 cash in a trunk and £28 cash in a desk, plus £1, 4 shillings and 9 pence in paper money.

Intangible debits listed total £93, 4 shillings and 10 pence.

The net value of the estate is £998, 19 shillings and five pence. If there is anything in the estate papers about real estate or its value, it escaped me.

Final settlement occurred on 17 August 1809.

Francis is buried in the family cemetery just east of the Shallow Ford\textsuperscript{243}.

Siblings, surname Poindexter

Ann Radford, married Daniel Scott; issue
[Francis]
William Pledge, married Elizabeth Amburn
Martha Milner “Patty” married George Pettitt
Thomas Pledge, married Elizabeth Lovill; issue
Elizabeth, married first Mr. Evans; married second, Mr. McCameron
Mary Wentworth, married Jesse Riding or Ridings
John George, married Sarah James
Archibald, married Rebecca Flynn
Sarah, married James Lovill
Robert Alexander, married first Miriam Flynn; married second, Charlotte Martin\textsuperscript{244}

\textsuperscript{242} Since Francis left no will, his widow was Administratrix of his estate, not Executrix of his will. She may have been distraught enough that she didn’t comprehend the difference.

\textsuperscript{243} See cemetery information in the biography of Person Number 77.

\textsuperscript{244} Charlotte was the widow of Benjamin Pettitt.
Dorothy, married Capt. William Randolph

See Illustration Number 154.

Parents are Numbers 308 and 309.

155 – Jane PATTILLO was born to Rev. Henry Pattillo and his wife Mary “Milly” Pattillo née Anderson on 30 May 1760.

Excursus\(^{245}\): The name Pattillo was probably originally spelled “Pattuloch” meaning in the Gaelic language, “the foot of the lake.” There are many variations in spelling, and sometimes the name is shortened by omitting the first syllable, e.g. Tullo. Some believe that the family may originally descend from the Roman legate Pettelius who came to Britain in 323 A.D. If this theory is true, it negates the belief that the name originated in the Gaelic language.

Two places are said to be named Pittellock, one near Freuchie in Fife and the other near Glenfarg, Perthshire. Neither can be found in the 1990 Ordnance Survey Motoring Atlas of Great Britain, which is printed on a scale of 3 miles:1 inch; a contact who lives nearby led me to a map on the Internet that shows Pittellock south-southwest of Freuchie.

Early mentions of Pattillos: Ade de Pettilbk is mentioned in a memo of 1295, probably the same man as Adam Pethilloch who appears as assizer at Perth in 1305; William de Pettitolok held a charter of lands of Gibbololistoun in Fife from Robert I; John de Pyttyllock held a toft in Portyncrag in 1433; Robert Pattulbh, who went to France in 1424, is called a “great Captain” in Chambers’ History of Charles VII, page 178.

According to Clans, Septs, Regiments of the Scottish Highlands by Frank Adam, the Pattulbs of Fife and Perth were a Sept (dependent) of Clan Macgregor. The Wigtonshire Pittullichs were members of Clan Donald of Keppoch.

***

According to a treatise published in The North Carolina Historical Review\(^ {246}\), her father was serving churches at Willis, the Byrd and Buck Island in North Carolina at the time of Jane’s birth; her exact birthplace is not known. Her father wrote in his journal,

“Being doubtful of the Life of the little infant, I had it offered to God in my Sickness, by receiving the Seal of Baptism and in Memory of my aged Mother named it Jane.”

She grew up in various places where her father was called to minister, enjoying the advantages and overcoming the disadvantages of being the “preacher’s kid”.

\(^{245}\) Much of this information comes from The Heritage of Yadkin County, see footnote to the biography of Person Number 76; Casstevens credits Melba C. Crosse’s book Pattillo, Pattillo, Pattullo and Pittillo Families, published at Fort Worth, Texas in 1972.

On 12 June 1775, in Bute\textsuperscript{247} County, North Carolina where her father was serving churches, Jane married Robert Lanier, a man fourteen years her senior, who was to be a captain in the North Carolina Militia during the Revolutionary War. Lanier was buying land in the Yadkin valley as early as 1771. On 15 July 1775, Robert and Jane Lanier sold for £500, a small loss, land he had purchased the previous April. Jane signed her name to the deed, which Brumfield\textsuperscript{248} finds unusual for a young woman of that time and place, but she was educated, being the daughter of a minister and schoolmaster.

Lanier continued to accumulate land. Brumfield writes,

"As soon as the North Carolina Legislature passed the Confiscation Acts in 1777, Jane and Robert Lanier acquired the large tract owned by Edward Hughes, one of the well-to-do Quakers who was a Tory during the Revolution....Swarms of Patriots were sent out about the countryside to warn all landowners to be sympathetic to the Patriot cause, or risk loss of property. This was known as ‘warning in’.”

There is a long account of a Revolutionary War happening in The Heritage of Yadkin County\textsuperscript{249}, taken from A. H. Jarratt’s writings. I don’t put much stock in it, because virtually the same account was written about a family in Virginia (although the part about the new uniform wasn’t included in the Virginia story). As Jarratt tells it (and he confused Jane’s husbands), Jane and her husband had a plantation on the east bank of the Yadkin river, near the Shallow Ford. The Revolution came on and Capt. Lanier with his North Carolina Militiamen joined Gen. Nathanael Greene’s army. Lanier knew his wife would have a new uniform ready for him, and sent his body servant to go to his home, ahead of the army, to get the uniform. Greene was able to cross the river, but it rained that night and the river flooded, preventing Cornwallis’ army’s crossing, giving Greene a day’s advantage. In the meantime, Lanier’s servant had been to the home and gotten his master’s uniform, and started back to the west side of the river where he was to have met Lanier. He happened to meet Cornwallis there, and put the uniform on and continued with Cornwallis, showing him the best road to follow. They arrived at the Shallow Ford, and Cornwallis decided to camp there for the night because Lanier’s place seemed to offer some shelter and to be well-stocked with provisions.

“So it happened that when he rode up to the house the...servant still held by his side.... Jane was naturally furious when she saw the negro in his master’s new uniform. According to her own account, as handed down by tradition, she said she forgot that she [was] a lady and also that she was the daughter of a straight laced Scotch [sic] Parson and without even speaking to Gen. Cornwallis, she proceeded to drag the negro from his horse and taking his riding crop, made him strip to the waist and gave him a good thrashing and also a very proficient string of profanity along with each stroke of the whip, while Cornwallis sat with his hat in his hand and a broad smile on his lips looking on in thorough approval.

“When General Cornwallis’ servants were getting settled for the evening meal, they saw the old time

\textsuperscript{247} I have been challenged on this statement, because there is now (2002) no North Carolina county named ‘Bute’. The county was named for Lord Bute, who had the ear of King George III and promoted policies which led to the Revolutionary War. Naturally, when the county was realigned and divided, neither of the counties, Franklin and Warren, into which the land fell, was named Bute.

\textsuperscript{248} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 38.

\textsuperscript{249} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 76.
corner cupboard in the...dining room and proceeded to pitch the beautiful old Willow Ware\textsuperscript{250} out of the window breaking practically all of it, and replaced it with the silver plate which the General carried along with him even in his American campaign. This old cupboard has since been known as The Comwallis Cupboard..."

"Of course Comwallis and his army while encamped at the... plantation, managed to consume all possible edible property and to kill and eat or take it away with them for future consumption, leaving absolutely no food on the place for the family nor the slaves, of whom there were quite a goodly number. However, after the army had left, one lone old goose came slipping out from under the house, where it had hidden and thereby escaped the British. Here again...Grandmother Poindexter forgot her good Presbyterian upbringing and swore fluently. She had the darkies catch the goose and putting a young negro on a swift horse, told him to catch up with Comwallis and give him the goose for his supper with her compliments. When the negro delivered the goose to the general, he hung [it] by the feet to the horn of his saddle and told the boy to tell his mistress that the General accepted her gift with much pleasure and would certainly remember her kindness when he ate his supper that night."

This makes a good story, and I suppose some of it is true. Brumfield gives a somewhat different version, attributing it to a 1926 memoir written by Jane’s great-granddaughter, Mrs. Betty Puryear Gibson of Concord, North Carolina:

"...The camp women accompanying the army came in Jane’s house, bringing the rations of the army and Comwallis’ own gold plate. They brushed Jane’s china and silver out of her corner cupboard (which is still in the family, called the Comwallis cupboard) and replaced it with Comwallis’ plate. All of Jane’s livestock was slaughtered to feed the British army. The camp women took over her kitchen house, which stood a short distance from the main house, to prepare the food. Jane managed to secrete a goose leg in her clothes and take it to her children, who cowered in the loft of the main house. (Little Thomas\textsuperscript{251}, about five then, had a sister, Elizabeth, who died a short time later.) Late in the day, after feasting, Lord Comwallis, the British army and the camp women departed, anxious to resume to [sic: the] chase of General Greene and his army. After they left ‘one lone gander’ crept out from under the house, ‘the only living thing—except for human beings—left on the place’...."

(The Albemarle County, Virginia Historical Society published a book *Ante-bellum Albemarle,* in 1974, which details the history of ante-bellum dwellings that continued to exist at that time. The ‘Old House at The Farm’, near Charlottesville, was part of the original Nicholas Meriwether grant in 1735. At the time of the Revolutionary War, British Gen. Tarleton is supposed to have slept one night at this old home, by then occupied by Nicholas Meriwether’s grandson Col. Nicholas Lewis and his wife, Mary Walker Lewis. After his retreat the next day, it is told that Mrs. Lewis dispatched after him a servant bearing the lone survivor of her ducks, with the message that as he had taken the rest of her flock he might as well take this too. This story has been told in various Virginia publications—Burk’s *History of Virginia, Vol. IV;* Randall’s *Life of Jefferson;* Lossings’ *Field Book of the Revolution;*

\textsuperscript{250} I’m not sure Willow Ware was invented by that time. I did a little research on it once, but cannot find my notes.

\textsuperscript{251} The name Thomas Lanier came into the Clingman family from this Thomas, who died young, in 1800 according to Brumfield. It was also used in the Williams family; playwright Tennessee Williams’ legal name was Thomas Lanier Williams.
Woods’ *History of Albemarle*; Howe, Howison, Porte Crayon and other authorities. Since there is a connection between the Poindexters, the Meriwethers and the Lewises, I believe it is very likely the story got transferred to Jane, but really belongs to Mary Lewis.)

No one has recorded anything about how Jane (or Mary Lewis, as the case may be) was able to surmount this loss of property and manage to feed her family and slaves.

After the Revolutionary War, Lanier, by now sometimes referred to as Colonel, which may have been his post-war Militia rank, continued to buy land. He died in 1785, and is said to be the first person buried at the family cemetery. His wife and his brother-in-law, Col. Joseph Williams, were appointed Executors. Williams was the husband of his sister Rebecca Lanier.

Brumfield writes,

> “Then Capt. Lanier’s good friend and comrade-in-arms, Capt. Francis Poindexter, began to visit the widow Jane to comfort her, and the next year, in May 1786, they were married. They went down to the home of her father, Rev. Pattillo, who was then living at Williamsboro in Granville County, for him to perform the ceremony. After the marriage, Capt. Poindexter replaced Jane as Capt. Lanier’s Executor, according to Surry court records.”

This is a charming story, and while comforting Jane might have been Francis’ first order of business, I don’t think we can be sure that the courtship proceeded in exactly that manner. The wedding took place on 26 May 1786.

The Poindexters lived on the plantation on the east side of the Yadkin, near the Shallow Ford, that Lanier had bought earlier; and Jane started a second family, her daughter Elizabeth having died by that time. Five children were born to Francis and Jane Poindexter. Although it has been written that the two girls were twins, they were not; Ann was already married and a mother while Jane was still in school.

*The State Records of North Carolina*[^252], Volume XXI—1788-1790, Collected and Edited by Walter Clark, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of North Carolina, contains a report dated 15 December 1790, which gives some insight into the difficulty Jane ran into in trying to get her first husband’s estate settled. She must have breathed a sigh of relief at the following:

> “The committee to whom the memorial of Jane Pindexter and Joseph Williams, was referred, beg leave to report—That from the information of the Comptroller, it appears that it is impossible to raise and support any charge in behalf of the public against the estate of the late Robert Lanier, Treasurer of Salisbury district, for the utmost industry has been ineffectually used to collect from the Clerks of the different counties of the said district their assessments, during the period in which Mr. Lanier acted; not any document on the subject being preserved, or information to be had, unless it be derived from Mr. Lanier’s own books.—That it appears to your committee from sundry affidavits, and the testimony of divers gentlemen, that some short time previous to Mr. Lanier’s death, he had protested himself fully able and willing to settle his accounts with the Comptroller, and had even somewhat

proceeded in the business,—but that the papers brought forward for that purpose, having been packed up in his absence from home, had fallen into great confusion by the transportation, &c., which put it out of his power at that time to accomplish a final settlement—That these same papers, having come into the hands of his executors, have been deposited with the Comptroller, containing vouchers, certificates, &c., to a very considerable amount—That considering the premises, your committee are of opinion, that the Comptroller be directed to balance the account of the said Robert Lanier, dec. and that the account of the said Lanier be so closed, or in such other manner, as will best answer the intention of this report. Which is submitted.

"R. CLINTON. Ch."

Francis Poindexter died on 21 March 1802, and was buried near Robert Lanier in the family cemetery. Jane was again faced with the sad prospect of rearing a family alone. She seems to have been a remarkable woman who was able to meet every challenge. The physical work, of course, was done by slaves, but her responsibilities would have been enormous.

Evidently adjusted to widowhood and with the reins firmly in hand, she wrote in August, 1808 to her daughter Jane, who would later marry Jacob Clingman. The writing on the outside of the letter (envelopes came into use much later), in the upper left corner reads “Panther Creek, N. C. August 22, 1808”. Handwritten in the upper right corner: “Paid. 12½”. The letter is addressed, “Miss Jane Poindexter at Mr. J. F. Pattillo’s, Granville” and the word “Mail” is written at the lower left. John Franklin Pattillo, Jane’s brother, was a teacher to whom young Jane would go to school.

My transcription of the letter:

"Shallowford, August 22
My dear Daughter,

“As your Aunt Milly intends to write to your Grand-ma, I shall write to you, tho’ I can’t say you deserve it, for you have been now about 4 months in G. [Granville] and not a line has any of us had from you, but I won’t scold about it any more now, for maybe we shall get a letter soon. I think I want to hear from there worse than I ever did in my life, and have wanted to see you all bad enough since I left you—it seems somehow like I did not make a fair start that morning, and if I live I shall have to come back before very long to make a fresh one. The English Fiddle play’d Bass and Terrible both that moming, but the poor wretch has suffer’d in the flesh since, for her back got hurt coming home, and Darby has put out one of her eyes since. —

“Tell your Gma that I wrote to her the week after I got home, but the Post fail’d coming along and the letter lay a week at the office [part of the word ‘office’ is not legible, but it seems obvious] before it was started. I expect she has got it before now, and she must excuse my filling it with the History of my suffering &c, for I really came along right comfortably the greater part of the way but I had been prevented from writing, by company, until I was afraid I should be too late, and could not think of any thing else just then to write about.

“Mrs. Singleton has left these parts. I have not seen her since I got home, I sent her word several
times to come and see me but she would not, she is gone off a few Dollars in Mr. Clingman's Debt, they trusted her for a fine shawl and some other things as she liv'd with me, and they pitied her misfortunes. I call her the most refin'd Hypocrite I ever was acquainted with.— Miss Caty Clingman has been up at her Brothers some time, and is much disappointed in not seeing you. I don't know how long she expects to stay, but it is likely she may stay 'til you come home, she is a right sensible agreeable little girl.— Mr. C., Nancy, Miss Caty, Harry and Mr. Matthew all took a trip up to the Pilot Mountain last Wednesday and Thursday. They ascended the Pinnacle, and came to your Uncle Scot's that night and Friday they were at Mr. Halls at his son Harrison's wedding, and stay'd at your Grand-mother's that night and home on Saturday. Harrison married to a Miss East. I have’n't got Harry off to school yet, but expect to send him to Germanton in a few days. They say there is a very good teacher there. I mentioned to your G-ma that I had got a letter from Cousin Henry, he writes for me to send Harry back to him immediately to Tennesee and says that is the best plan he knows for him to learn something and that he will bring him in with him when he comes which he expects will be at, or before Christmas, but if it was a ten times better place than it is, I cannot start him off just so, by himself, to go I don’t know where nor for what, it's like Henry will blame me, but I can't help it. I blame some of his conduct too.— We are all reasonably well at Present, and the Neighbours I believe are generally well, all but old Mr. Howard, he lies very low, and has for several weeks. Mr. Brazier preached at his house yesterday. I was there, and have not been home since I stay'd here (at your Uncle K's) to write this morning and watch for the Post. Give my most affectionate love to your dear Grandma, and tell her I intend to write to Sister Nancy in a few days and let her know how little probability there is of her favorite scheme ever taking place, and shall urge her to come in. Sister M. encloses a letter from her to Mamma, she wrote to us on the other half sheet, and says that Johnny has travel'd all over Kentucky, and has not got a lattin school 9 [not sure it is 9] miles from her, & gets 300 Doll a year. — Remember me affectionately to your Uncle J. and tell him I am looking for a letter from him and want [word missing due to a hole in the paper] from him very bad. Give my love to my dear [illegible—may be 'little'] Caroline, and tell her, her Aunt loves her dearly, and wants her to be a good girl, and when I come to see her again I will bring her something mighty pretty. Sally and Polly send their love to you all. Farewell my dear Daughter, be all the help and comfort you can to your dear old G-ma. Your ever affectionate mother,

“Jane Poindexter”

Notes from Brumfield’s excellent analysis:

“Jane Pattillo Lanier Poindexter...gives the impression of being a lively, intelligent, attractive lady, vitally interested in her family and friends. This letter—in a firm, practical, intelligible handwriting and straightforward style—was written to her daughter Jane...while her daughter was staying with Grandmother Mrs. Henry Pattillo at the Glebe [parsonage] in Granville County.... Young Jane went to live with her Grandmother and Uncle John (he was a schoolmaster) Pattillo as a teenager to get her education. Jane was 17 when this letter was written to her. Jane’s older sister, Anne [sic], was already married to Peter Clingman at this time and had a son, Alexander Brandon Clingman.”

Brumfield goes on to point out that young Jane’s “Aunt Milly” was the youngest sister of the writer. She was married to Ormon Kimbrough, “Uncle K.” Jane remained there 

---

253 In my own family experience, it was an in-law who was not highly esteemed who was called by his surname only or “Mr. Surname”. Those well accepted by the family were called by their given names. I noticed this same phenomenon in Ben Ames Williams’ book House Divided, when Cinda’s husband Brett Dewain, a man of sterling character, is called ‘Brett’; but Tilda’s husband, Redford Streean, a wheeler and dealer ill-regarded by his in-laws, is “Mr. Streean”. Williams, incidentally, is related to the Surry County Williams family.
after going to the preaching the day before, so she could send this letter from there. He conjectures that mention of the English fiddle playing bass and terrible must have been an allusion to some kind of sad, melodramatic music popular at the time, which described her own melancholia at leaving young Jane at the Pattilos after a recent visit. When she describes herself in the third person, Brumfield finds a detachment and sense of humor about herself (and I have the same feeling about her statement “... if I live”), and he sees a reminder of the slave owner’s sense of responsibility when she mentions Darby’s eye.

About the delayed letter Brumfield writes, “This is an interesting commentary on the postal system in 1808....

He doesn’t know who Mrs. Singleton was, but states, referring to the writing style:

“This is straight out of Thackery, with a bit of Jane Austen thrown in....”

Caty Clingman was Catherine, sister to Peter and Jacob Clingman, who was later to marry Abraham Area. Those who went to Pilot Mountain were Peter Clingman (“Mr. C.”)—I wonder if it was custom of the time to call one’s son-in-law ‘Mr.’, as it was to call one’s husband ‘Mr.’), his wife Ann whom her mother called by her pet name ‘Nancy’, Caty Clingman, Henry Pattillo Poindexter, Jane’s son, and a Mr. Matthews, a young man of the community. Brumfield states that Harry was a little young to be a boyfriend for Catherine. Although going to Pilot Mountain is still a popular place to go for a jaunt, climbing to the pinnacle is dangerous. Uncle Scott is Daniel Scott, husband of Francis Poindexter’s sister Ann Radford Poindexter—the Scotts lived back toward the Yadkin River from Pilot Mountain.

The Halls (they went to Hamson Hall’s wedding after their mountain-climbing adventure) were old settlers in the area. Logistics always seem to concern me, so I’ve been puzzled about just how this trip was carried out. They must have gone with a carriage or wagon to the base of the mountain, taking along clothing and necessities for the trip and for making themselves presentable at the wedding.

After the wedding they stayed at “your Grand-mother’s”; this was Elizabeth “Betty” Pledge Poindexter, Francis Poindexter’s mother.

Jane continues with her concern about getting her son Harry off to school. Jane’s brother, Henry Pattillo, Jr., became a physician. It is his son whom she refers to as “Cousin Henry” who would like young Harry, Jane’s son, to attend his school in Tennessee. Jane evidently feels that this would not be a suitable option.

She expresses concern about a neighbor, Mr. Howard, who is ill, and continues by telling about Mr. Brazier preaching at Mr. Howard’s house. The daughter of a renowned preacher must have missed the regular church services of her youth, but her neighborhood was still the ‘frontier’ and traveling ministers came around and held services in the homes, although some denominations were establishing churches by then.
Brumfield’s analysis concludes,

"‘Uncle J.’ was Mrs. Poindexter’s brother, John Franklin Pattillo, to whom ownership of ‘The Glebe’ would pass at their mother’s death. ‘Caroline’ is his daughter. ‘Sally and Polly’ are probably personal slaves of daughter Jane and her siblings."

Although she expressed tongue-in-cheek concern about her health and mortality at age 48 in 1808, she did live on until 8 January 1826.

Papers about the settlement of Jane’s estate are on file in Surry County, but the content of those transcribed below makes it clear that some of them were not saved. My transcription follows, original spelling retained:

"Inventory and list of Sale of the Personal property of Jane Poindexter decd.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Item</th>
<th>Price</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Peter Clingman bought</td>
<td>2 old Chests</td>
<td>.12½</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Table</td>
<td>.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Beadstead</td>
<td>.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Candlestand</td>
<td>.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Clock Case</td>
<td>5.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Desk</td>
<td>11.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Old Riding Chair</td>
<td>5.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Old Waggon Irons</td>
<td>6.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Shot Gun</td>
<td>4.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Folding Table</td>
<td>3.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Francis Rose</td>
<td>Beadstead</td>
<td>.87½</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8 Chairs</td>
<td>1.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Reel [?]</td>
<td>.40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Douthit</td>
<td>G?? Board &amp; Furniture</td>
<td>2.35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George Carver</td>
<td>Loom</td>
<td>2.80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Large Pot</td>
<td>2.20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jesse Chinn</td>
<td>Book Case &amp; Books</td>
<td>.60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Red Heifer</td>
<td>3.65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Calf</td>
<td>1.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cow</td>
<td>7.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Heifer</td>
<td>8.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Musket</td>
<td>1.65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2 Slays [sleighs?]</td>
<td>.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pot</td>
<td>.95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oven</td>
<td>1.05</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
"Pot Rack .50
"Oven .26
"Old Trunk & Bed Cloathes 2.25
"Bed & Furniture 11.30
"Spinning Wheel .50
"Looking Glass .50

"The foregoing Inventory is not a Compleat return of all the effects of Jane Poindexter. The Balance will be returned at Ct. [Court] Term next.

"H. P. Poindexter

[An Inventory of the estate of Jane Poindexter November 1828]

"Recorded

"Jane Poindexter 1828"

Jane Pattillo (Lanier) Poindexter is buried between her two husbands at the family cemetery (see cemetery information in the biography of Person Number 77).

Siblings, surname Pattillo

[Jane]
Anderson, married Catherine Harper; issue
Henry, Jr. (Dr.) married; issue
Ann, married first Maj. Richard Harrison, issue; married second Farrow, issue
Mary, married Samuel Griffin
William Johnstone, married first Diana Minor Harper, issue; married second
Martha Jones and/or Sarah Chrisholm [Chisholm?]
John Franklin, married first Ann Webb, issue; married second, Harriette Pattillo Hyde, his cousin; issue
Milly, married Orman Kimbrough; issue

See Illustrations Number 155.

Parents are Numbers 310 and 311.

156 – Alexander CLINGMAN’s biography is printed as Person Number 152 above.

157 – Elizabeth KISER’s biography is printed as Person Number 93 above.

254 This is Jane Poindexter’s eldest living son.
255 I have seen two names given as William’s second wife, Martha Jones and Sarah Chrisholm. No issue with Chrisholm, and no information about Jones. I do not know whether he married both of these women.
178 – Jacob RAMBO was born in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, probably about 1727, to Swan Rambo and his second wife Barbara, whose maiden name is unknown. Swan died in Berks County, Pennsylvania in 1730.

At some time in the late 1730s or early 1740s, Barbara and her children moved south to Augusta County, Virginia, where Jacob married Deborah Allen about 1749 or 1750. After their marriage, Jacob and Deborah settled on a farm near Smith’s Creek in that portion of Augusta County, Virginia that was cut off to form Rockingham County in 1778. This land lies not far from the town of New Market. They had a large family, but a reliable listing of their children is not available.

The Rambo family had been Lutheran, although Jacob’s own early religious preference is unknown. According to the records of the Hopewell Monthly Meeting of Friends, however, Jacob joined the Quaker Church on 2 May 1774.

Jacob bought his first land in the New Market area in 1751, purchasing a tract from Andrew Bird. The Birds and Rambos were known to have been associated in Berks County, Pennsylvania. He received a patent for 254 acres on 10 August 1759, and another 16 acres between his two tracts was surveyed for him.

After Deborah passed away about 1778 or 1789, Jacob married for a second time to Catherine Huling née Mounce, on 19 July 1790 in Rockingham County. Catherine, who had been born about 1730, was the widow of his neighbor, Andrew Huling (also written Hulings). She was the daughter of Henry Mounce of New Castle Hundred in New Castle County, Delaware. There are no known children from Jacob’s second marriage.

Jacob must have moved west to Washington County, Ohio with relatives about the time he deeded his land to his sons between 1791 and 1795. He died there between 20 June 1803, when he made his will, and 16 August 1803, when his will was presented for probate. It can be found on page 57 in Book 1 of the probate records of Washington County. The will was copied into the book, so Jacob’s signature (his mark) was written by a clerk and not by Jacob himself. It is not known whether he was literate or not, because he was sick and weak, perhaps so much so that he was unable to sign his name to his will. The court documents, including an estate appraisal read as follows, from pages 57 and 58:

“At a Court of Common Pleas of the County of Washington & State of Ohio held on the third Tuesday of August Anno Dom. 1803 the following Will was brought into Court & proven in open Court by two of the subscribing witnesses –

Jacob Rambo’s Last Will & Testament

“In the name of God, Amen. I Jacob Rambo of Waterford, County of Washington & State of Ohio, being sick weak & low in body But in perfect mind and memory thanks be given to God.

Information found in Allens, Quakers of the Shenandoah, Their Ancestors and Descendants, by Rudelle Mills Davis and Peggy Davidson Dick; privately published, 1984.
Calling unto mind the mortality of my body, knowing that it is appointed unto all men once to
die. Do make & ordain this my last will & Testament that is to say principally and first of all I
give & recommend my soul into the hand of Almighty God that gave it & my body to be buried
in decent Christian burial. And as touching such worldly estate wherewith it has Pleased God to
bless me in this life I give devise\textsuperscript{257} & dispose of the same in the following manner & form--.

"First I give and bequeath unto my dearly beloved wife Catharine all of the real & personal
Estate that I now stand possessed of after my Debts are truly and faithfully discharged with an
exception that she the said Catharine pay or cause to be\textsuperscript{258} unto Jackson Rambo one of my sons
the just sum of one hundred Dollars out of S\textsuperscript{d} Estate. And further what remains at my wife's
Decease if any remain Shall then fall unto my Grand son Jacob Rambo, Son of Rebekah
Turley.

\begin{quote}
"Signed Sealed published
proclaimed & Declared
by the S\textsuperscript{d} Jacob Rambo
as his Last Will and
Testament in his presence
and in the presents of each
other have hereunto sub
scribed our names this
Twentieth day of June
one thousand Eight
hundred & three.

"Ekekiel Deming
"William Williams
his
"Jesse X McFarlin
mark"
\end{quote}

"Inventory of the Estate of Jacob Rambo Returned into Court at Dec.
Term Anno Dom 1803, which was as follows.--

\begin{tabular}{l} 
One light brown coat 7 Dols. One Kersey more vest 4 Dolls. \hspace{1cm} 11. \\
One fur hat 2.50 \hspace{1cm} One Pair Buckskin Breeches 1.50 \hspace{1cm} 4. \\
1 Bead with striped ticken 7.00 \hspace{1cm} 7. \\
1 Bed Quilt 3.00 \hspace{1cm} 1 old rose Blanket 2.00 \hspace{1cm} 5. \\
Two Sheets, one linen & the other Humhum [homespun?] 5.00 \hspace{1cm} 5. \\
One old Bed 4.00 \hspace{1cm} One Rose Blanket 3.00 \hspace{1cm} One old woolen sheet 1.50 \hspace{1cm} 8.50 \\
One Pair sheets 5.00 \hspace{1cm} two Boalsters 1.00 \hspace{1cm} two pair pillows 1.50 \hspace{1cm} 7.50 \\
Three old Bed Quilts 7.00 \hspace{1cm} One old Bible & testament .50 \hspace{1cm} 7.50 \\
Travels of John Churchman .25 \hspace{1cm} One old looking Glass .33 \hspace{1cm} .58 \\
One chest with Lock & key 2.25 \hspace{1cm} One ham .75 \hspace{1cm} 3. \\
One Bake kettle 1.75 \hspace{1cm} One small Porridge pot .50 one tea kettle \hspace{1cm} 2.75 \\
Two tin pails .25 \hspace{1cm} One Bucket 1.25 \hspace{1cm} One Trammel 1.25 \hspace{1cm} 2.75 \\
Three large Basons 2.00 \hspace{1cm} two Platters .75 Eight pewter plaates 2.75 \hspace{1cm} 5.50 \\
\end{tabular}

\textsuperscript{257} The word here is definitely "demise" but is no doubt meant to be "devise".
\textsuperscript{258} Rambo may be his middle name, or his name may be Jacob Turley, the name having been miscopied
into the court minutes. It is possible, of course, that he was born to Rebekah Rambo before she married.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item Description</th>
<th>Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>One axe</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One hatchet</td>
<td>2.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One pair St?_ yards</td>
<td>5.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Coffee mill</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Sieve</td>
<td>0.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Portmanteau</td>
<td>2.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Rifle</td>
<td>8.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two Steel traps</td>
<td>6.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iron Hopples</td>
<td>1.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Collar hames &amp; traces</td>
<td>3.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piece of Chain</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Old Horse</td>
<td>12.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Cow</td>
<td>15.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Calf</td>
<td>3.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Note against John Evans</td>
<td>200.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One D° D° W° Bowes</td>
<td>8.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fifty acres of land and Cabbin</td>
<td>80.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$426.33

"By virtue of a Warrant from Edward W. Tupper Esq. Clerk of the Court of Common Pleas authorizing us to take an Inventory of the Estate of Jacob Rambo late of Waterford Deceased we have taken the foregoing which we do hereunto subscribe our names.~

"Simeon Deming
"William Williams

"Waterford 7th Sept 1803~

"Washington } Personally appeared Simeon Deming & William Williams signed
County ss } to the foregoing appraisement & made solemn Oath to the
same as the Law directs.

"Robert Oliver Justice Peace

"25th Oct. 1803~"

Jacob is doubtless buried near his old home at Waterford, Washington County, Ohio. Inquiry to the genealogical society there results in the reply that no gravestone can be found.

Halfsiblings, surname Rambo, from his father’s marriage to Ann Christian
Magdalena, died at about 20 months of age
Peter
Joseph
Christian
Ann
Lars “Lawrence”
Maria
Magdalene

Siblings, surname Rambo
Swan married Jane Pinson; issue
Peter
William
[Jacob]
Jane

Parents are Numbers 356 and 357.

179 – Deborah ALLEN was born about 1727, probably in Cecil County, Maryland, to Reuben Allen, Quaker, and his wife Mary, whose maiden name is unknown. The family
moved to Pennsylvania about the time of Deborah’s birth, and it is possible that she was born there.

*Aliens, Quakers of the Shenandoah*\(^{259}\) contains information about Deborah and her family. Marcie Richie writes,

“I contributed the information about Deborah Allen in the Allen book, along with several other Rambo researchers. Although we examined Quaker records, land, marriage, and wills, we were never able to find a document that said ‘Deborah, wife of Jacob Rambo, was the daughter of Reuben and Mary Allen’.”

Marcie then quotes from the book (edited for clarity):

“Deborah was a Quaker before her marriage to Jacob Rambo which occurred before 1750. Original minutes of Hopewell Monthly Meeting on microfilm reveal that on the 2\(^{nd}\) day, 10\(^{th}\) month 1775 Deborah presented a letter acknowledging her outgoing in marriage, which was accepted. Why was this done 25 years after her marriage? There was a great flurry of activity among the Quakers living near Smith Creek about this time. Jackson and Joseph Allen requested their children be received in 1775. Jacob Rambo had been received by Hopewell in 1774. It would seem that simply for the first time in a number of years the Quakers in the area once again had a meetinghouse....

“Family names given to children are one clue to family connections, and in this case prove most interesting. Deborah Rambo named one son Joseph, another Jackson, and a daughter Margaret. If Deborah is indeed the daughter of Reuben Allen I, then these children could have been named for her two brothers and her sister. We have no record of her naming a son Reuben, but her son Joseph named a son Reuben. Of course, we have no records of children of Deborah who may have died, nor any middle names of her known children. Although Jacob and Deborah Rambo were probably married before 1750, Jacob Rambo does not appear in any of the records of administration of Mary Allen’s estate in 1751, nor are there any land transactions for Jacob Rambo that show a connection with the other Allens. Jacob and Deborah were regularly in attendance at all the weddings at Smith Creek Meeting House and their own daughter Rebecca married John O’Neill there in 1785. He was later to marry Hannah Bond, daughter of John and Margaret (Allen) Bond.... It is also interesting that both Jackson and Joseph Allen named daughters Deborah....”

It is easy to imagine that if Deborah’s parents forbade her marriage ‘out of unity’ (a Quaker expression meaning that she married a non-Quaker who did not convert to her faith) and she defied them causing a family rift, she would not have named children for them. She may have used the names of those of her siblings who ‘took her side’ in the dispute. Her husband’s non-participation in his mother-in-law’s estate settlement could also be explained by this possible rift.

**Excursus:** Concerning the history of the Allens, Ralph Jenkins\(^{261}\), an Allen researcher, cites an Internet Website that is “maintained by Jack MacDonald, an authoritative Allen researcher with many years of experience and good credentials, and summarizes the most reliable conclusions of many Allen researchers”.

\(^{259}\) See the first footnote to the biography of Person Number 178.

\(^{260}\) Quakers had a fundamental objection to the names of the days and months, some of which have pagan origins, so they used the numbers.

\(^{261}\) Jenkins is (2001) Associate Dean, College of Liberal Arts, Temple University, Philadelphia.
Jenkins writes,

"After several exchanges about Deborah between him and me, and after his consultation with his fellow Allen researchers, he and they have agreed that the evidence convincingly establishes Deborah as the daughter of Reuben Allen and Mary, and have listed her as such on Jack’s Website.

Although Jenkins doesn’t mention ‘preponderance of evidence’, the Allen researchers’ conclusion was apparently made on that basis. The preponderance I see personally is the patterns used in naming their children, by Deborah, her siblings and her children; plus the lack of another Quaker Allen family in the region, to which Deborah might belong.

Jenkins (edited for clarity):

"The importance of this decision is that it connects her, and therefore the descendants of Isaac Barefoot Runyan and Margaret, to George Allen born ca. 1590, possibly Dorsetshire, died April 1648 Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts. George is listed in Hotten’s List, pages 283-84, as ‘Bound for New England, [from] Waymouth ye 20th of March, 1635’.

(I have trouble squaring this with what is found in Hotten’s List, but there is a possible explanation, given the fact that Number 45 is missing from the list: Number 46 is George Allyn, aged 24 and Number 47 is Katherin Allyn his Wife aged 30. It appears that Number 45 should have been a person 24 years old, then George—Number 46—who was given the age of Person 45 instead of his own age, then Number 47, Katherin Allen age 30. This omission of Number 45 is not Hotten’s error; he remarks in a footnote “There is no No. 45.”)

Jenkins continues,

"George’s son Ralph became a Quaker, and was therefore frequently mentioned in the Plymouth records, since Quakers were regarded as troublemakers. Here’s a sample:

Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England, II, 172-173. 7 Oct 1651: ‘Att this Court Ralph Allin, Senr, of Sandwich, and Richard Kerbey were summoned to answere for theire deriding, vile [sic: vile] speeches of and concerning Gods word and ordinances: they are bound ouer vnto the the next Generall Court to make theire appeareance, and in the mean time to bee of good behavior towards all manor of psions, & not depart the said Court without lycence...’ under bond of 20 pounds. ‘Wee further psent Ralph Allen, Senior, and his wife, George Allen and his wife, William Allen and Richard Kerbey, Peeter Gaunt and his wife, Goodwife Turner, and widdow Knott, all of the towne of Sandwidg, for not frequenting the publick worship of God, contrarye to order made the 6th of June, 1651’.

“Ralph’s son Joseph moved to Rhode Island, surely to escape the problems of Quakers in Plymouth...”.

262 John Camden Hotten, Ed., The Original Lists of Persons of Quality; Emigrants; Religious Exiles; Political Rebels; Serving Men Sold For A Term Of Years; Apprentices; Children Stolen; Maidens Pressed; and Others Who Went From Great Britain to the American Plantations 1600-1700, New York: J.W. Bouton, 1874; Reprint by Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc., Baltimore, 1983.
Deborah and Jacob Rambo had a large family, perhaps as many as ten children. Some believe that Jackson and Johnson “Sol” are the same person.

Deborah appears to have died in Rockingham County in about 1788 or 1789. A burial place near her home there is likely, but no gravestone has been found.

Siblings, surname Allen
- Mary, married Thomas Moore
- Reuben, Jr., married Ingeborg Hughes
- Jackson, married Betty Davis
- Joseph, married first Ruth White; married second Eunice Walton née Rogers
- Margaret, married John Bond

Parents are Numbers 358 and 359.

186 – Joseph ADAIR, Jr. was born about 1733 to Joseph Adair, Sr. and his wife Elizabeth.

His birthdate has been stated as 12 May 1733. This date may be correct, but no gravestone or other original record of his birth has been found. He is said to have been born in Chester County, Pennsylvania, and records there contain the Adair surname; other names are found there that show up later in Laurens District, South Carolina. A group migrated from Pennsylvania to Laurens District about 1755.

Mrs. Patterson believes that Joseph had two or possibly three wives.

His wife’s name has been given as Sarah Dillard, but this has been proven to be an error. Dr. Adair (he consistently writes ‘Laurens County’, but it was officially Laurens District at the time these events occurred) writes,

“Almost all of the better Dillard family genealogists completely discount even the existence of James Stephen Dillard [the name given for Sarah’s father]. The use of middle names was almost completely unheard of in his time, for one thing. There is some speculation that he was ‘made up’ by a professional genealogist several generations ago who wanted to make his fee.

“As for Sarah Dillard being the spouse of Joseph Adair, it’s possible, but not to the Joseph Adair who was the father of Elizabeth. This family has been confusing for a long time because of shoddy work done in the 1920’s on the family tree. A few years ago Mildred Brownlee did a thorough study of the Adairs of Laurens Co. using primary genealogical sources: deed records and will books, primarily. The following source identifies the name of Joseph’s wife, but we do not know her surname as yet.

---

264 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23. Mrs. Patterson is descended both from Joseph’s son John Adair and Joseph’s daughter Cassandra Adair McCrary.
265 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner

by Lila Niemann Garner

365

Elisha is one of Joseph's sons.


"Joseph & Elisha Adair to Alexander Wilkinson for $350, a tract of land containing 150 acres, more or less, on the waters of Duncan Creek, on a branch called Millers Branch beginning at a poplar thence S 74 E 40 ch 50 links to a white oak, thence due E 13.70 to a stake, thence N 79 W 24.46, etc.

"Witnesses:
Thomas McCrary, Sr.
Thomas McCrary, Jr.
James Adair
James Dillard, JP.

"Dowry release of Elizabeth Adair, wife of Joseph and Elizabeth Adair, wife of Elisha, by JA Elmore, JP."

Dr. Adair:

"The 150 acres above is evidently part of the 340 acres which Joseph Adair had previously deeded to Elisha Adair but retained life estate for himself and his wife. In order to insure that there would be no future legal entanglements, both Joseph Adair and Elisha Adair entered into the sale of the land. Their wives, both of whom were named ‘Elizabeth’, released dower rights.

"So far, so good, but it gets more complicated. There was another Joseph Adair living in Laurens Co. at the same time and about the same age, separate and distinct from old Joseph Adair Sr. who has died 20 years earlier.

"Laurens Co. Deed Bk. F, p. 109 12 Feb. 1796, Joseph Adair, Jr. to Wm. Holland, 120 a. on a small branch of Duncan Creek. N on John McCreary now John A. Elmore, SW by John Adair now Benj. Adair, S by me, a grant of 2 Oct. 1786; the other plantation of 100 a. purchased from Samuel Ewing 16 Dec. 1778, part of 150 a. grant to Samuel Ewing 30 Sept. 1774, Joining the above tract.

J.A. Elmore

"Release of dower: Sarah Adair, wife of Joseph Adair, Jr.
Eleanor(x)Adair. Widow of James Adair, dec’d."

Dr. Adair continues,

"Here are my current ideas on the structure of the Adair family…. Two Adair brothers came to Laurens County about the same time: James and Joseph [Sr.]. Both were cooperers. Joseph’s wife was possibly Sarah Lafferty. James’ wife’s name was Eleanor, surname unknown. Both James and Joseph had sons Joseph. Joseph son of Joseph [i.e., Joseph Jr., subject of this biography] had a spouse Elizabeth, surname unknown. Their family included all the Adairs normally thought to be offspring of Joseph and Sarah Dillard, including Elizabeth, wife of George Davis and John Huston. Joseph, son of James, had a wife Sarah, surname unknown, but may have been Dillard. If she was a Dillard, how (or if) she related to Capt. James Dillard is currently unknown…."

Joseph made his will on 20 January 1812, and died on 17 October 1812 in Laurens District, South Carolina; the death date is stated in an Adair genealogy, but no proof is
offered. No wife is mentioned, so he must have been a widower. A transcription of his will follows:

"State of South Carolina  
Laurens District. In  
the name of God, Amen.

"Know all men by these presents that I, Joseph Adair, of same State and District Aforesaid are now in good health and in my natural Sencese at this date and time make my Last will an testament. At my death I bequeath my body to the tomb, my soul to the almighty God my maker and Creator and Jesus Christ my Redeemer. Likewise I give and bequeath unto John Adair, my Son, all the land that I layed off[?] for him, that Richard holland and John Prier [frier?] now lives on and one Negro woman named Jude. Likewise I give and bequeath unto my Son James Adair all that part of tract of land he now lives on lieing on the South Side of Little Dunkins Creek bounded on land of Thomas McCraryes, Elixander Wilkersons Elisha Adair and one Negro man named Duke. Likewise I give and bequeath unto my Robert Adair the money that he did Receive from Ellixander Wilkerson for a tract of Land Maid over by me and my son Elisha Adair to said Wilkerson and one Negro girl named Tammer. Likewise I give and bequeath to my son Elisha Adair all that part of land I now Live on containg three hundred and Seventy five Acres more or less, reserveday by John A. Elmore one Negro boy named Morris, one new waggon and all her harness.

"Likewise, I give and bequeath unto my grandson Joseph Adair, son of Elisha Adair one set of Silver Coat buttins, and one set of silver breaches buttins to my Son Robert Adair— Likewise, give and bequeath unto my daughter Elizabeth and her husband John huston one Negro girl named Claris to be thame during there Natural Life, and at there death to be Equally Divided among all Elizabeth hustons Children of her natural body Likewise, I give and bequeath unto my daughter Jean, wife of thomas holland, one Negro girl named dice. Likewise, I give and bequeath unto my daughter Cassy Wife of Thomas McCrary one Negro woman named Lid Likewise I give and bequeath unto Charty, wife of David Little, one Negro woman Named Sarah and all the rest of my perishable property to be Equally Divided among my Eight children of my natural boddy as I harby Set my hand and Seal this 20 day of January, 1812 it being in the thirty sixth and thirty seventh years of American independency I do here apoint Elisha Adair and John Adair my Exetors.

"Witness present, /s/ Joseph Adair (his seal)  
Richard Holland  
William Adair  
Geo. McCrary"

Recorded in Will Book D-1, Page 105.  

Mrs. Patterson states that John had already died when the will was to be executed, so Elisha was the sole executor. The estate inventory was of a general nature, not item by item. Its estimated value was $4,026.00; eleven slaves made up most of this, since the real estate was not evaluated.

No gravestone has been found in the Duncan’s Creek Presbyterian Church Cemetery; he and his family were members of that church. He is surely buried near his old home on Duncan’s Creek in old Laurens District.
Siblings, surname Adair (assuming that his father is the Joseph Adair, Sr. whose will was dated 1788)

[Joseph]
James, married first __________; married second Rebecca Montgomery
Benjamin
Jean, married Mr. Ramage
Sarah

Stepsiblings, surname Long, from the first marriage of his father’s second wife,

Susanna Long’s first marriage
Mary, married John Owens
Robert (called son-in-law, meaning stepson, in Joseph Adair, Sr.’s will)

See Illustration Number 186.

The information I have uncovered about Joseph Adair, Sr. is included below in case the Joseph Adair, Sr. who made his will in 1788 in Laurens District, South Carolina, is found to have had a wife earlier than Sarah Laferty (or very possibly he is not the Joseph ‘Adare’ who married Sarah Laferty), and proof later emerges that he is the father of ‘our’ Joseph Adair, Jr.

Ninth Adair Generation

372 – Joseph ADAIR, Sr. may be the father of Joseph Adair, Jr. This Joseph, who died after 9 January 1788 when he made his will in Laurens District, South Carolina, had a son Joseph. A Joseph Adair is known to have married a woman named Sarah Laferty in 1746 at the Old Swedes Church in Wilmington, Delaware; but she is certainly not the mother of ‘our’ Joseph Adair, Jr., who was born about 1733. If indeed Joseph, Sr. is the father of ‘our’ Joseph, Jr., Sarah Laferty is not his mother and Joseph must have had one or more earlier wives.

It has been stated in an early Adair genealogy that Joseph, Sr. was born about 1711 in Antrim, Ireland. No documentation was offered.

Mrs. Patterson266 writes (edited for clarity),

“There exists a booklet or program for a dedication of a stone to Joseph Adair, Sr. in 1988 at Duncan’s Creek Presbyterian Church which gives the date for the legal proceedings267 as 1759. It shows only the two wives and says that all the children by Sarah Laferty were born in Ireland as well as giving incorrect information for son James. At the time this was the state of known information.

“There are several records indicating that Joseph, Sr. served as a Commissary during the Revolutionary War in South Carolina. That state kept its own records and paid its own soldiers for their military service. It also paid for supplies for both the military and distressed civilians. This was the work done by Joseph, Sr. His name is found on a 1778 petition (actual signature). This with the Revolutionary records for South Carolina entitle descendants to membership in patriotic societies.”

266 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
267 An estate settlement in Pennsylvania.
I found the following transcription of Joseph Adair's will on a Website devoted to the genealogy of the Adair and Holland families. The transcription of the will of Joseph Adair, Jr. found on that Website was full of errors, although I don't believe that any meaning or intent was compromised. I cannot attest to the accuracy of the following because I do not have a copy the original:

'In the name of God, Amen. I Joseph Adair of the State of South Carolina and County of Laurens Cooper being through the abundant mercy of God, though weak in body yet of a sound and perfect understanding and memory; Do constitute this my last will and Testament and desire it may be received as such. First I most humbly bequeath my soul to God, my maker, beseeching his most gracious exceptione of it. Through the all sufficient merits and meditations of my most compassionate redeemer Jesus Christ who gave himself to be and attonement for my sins and is able to save to the uttermost all that come to God by him seeing he ever liveth to make the intersession for them and who I trust will not reject me a returning penentant sinner when I come to him for mercy. In this hope and confidance I render up my soul with comfort, humbly beseeching the most Glorious and blessed Trinity, one God most Holy most mercifull and gratious to prepare me for my desolution and then to take me to himself into that plan of rest a incomparable felicity which he hath prepared for all that love his holy name Amen.

Blessed be God I give my body to the earth from whence it was taken in full assurance of its resurrection from thence at the last day. As for my burial I desire it to be decent without Pomp or state at the discretion of my dear wife who I doubt not will manage it with all pre ______.

As to my worldly estate I will and possitively order that all my debts be paid, and next I give and bequeath to Susanna my dearly beloved wife all my stock of black cattle and hogs with all the pewter of my dresser; and one hundred and Sixty [cannot be read] dollars which is in the hands of my son Joseph Adair and all the store of my grain that may be mine at the time of my death for her support also all the farming tools that belong to me at my death. Also my beads and bed furniture to [illegible] the same during her life, and at her decease to go to my son James Adair; also to my son Joseph Adair I give and bequeath the remainder of the continental money that remains in the estate. Also one long posted bedstead and my armed chair; also I give and bequeath unto my son James Adair the one half of my Coopers Tools; and other utensils belonging to my trade with the whole of my wearing apparel, as also my chest at the decease of my wife; Also to my son Benjamin Adair, I give and bequeath the other half of my Coopers Tools, and utensils belonging to my trade; as also the half of that twenty pounds old currency which he had of me for which he was to have pailed a grave hard, which he never performed; also to my daughter Jean Rammage, I give and bequeath my brass scales; Also to my daughter Sarah Adair, I give and bequeath that other half of that twenty pound old currency which is in the hands of my son, Benjamin Adair; Also I give her at the death of my wife that Iron Pot that was her mothers with my iron crook; also I give and bequeath to my daughter Mary Owins my biggest iron pot, and my coarse flax hackle at the decease of her mother and to her husband John Owins the one half of the sawed plank of my loft and floor; and if it shall please God to call me home by this present disease, it is my will that the money he owes me should go to defray my funeral charges. Also to Robert Long my son-in-law I give and bequeath the other half of the plank of my loft and floor. And I do by these presents nominate constitute and appoint and ordain as the Executors of this my last will and testament; my truly and well beloved sons Joseph and James Adair; and I do hereby Revoke and disallow and make null and void every former will by me made, ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my last will and testament. In witness thereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal this Ninth day of January in the year of our Lord One Thousand Seven Hundred and Eighty Eight. Signed and sealed in the presence of

James Montgomery
Wm Bourlande

268 At the time the will was made, Laurens was called 'District', not 'County'.
his
James(l)Greek
mark

Recorded in Laurens County South Carolina Book A, page 19. No mention is made of the date the will was proven, so no death date can be estimated. By his own statement, Joseph was optimistic that his 'present disease' was not terminal, so he may have lived much longer. The original will is not in the files of Probate Judge's Office.

Joseph's wife at the time he made his will was Susanna, the widow of a Mr. Long. She may not have been the mother of any of his children.

His signature can be found in the Revolutionary War Document; if he is proved to be 'our' ancestor, it is nice addition to this collection.

See Illustration Number 372.

187 – ____________, whose name is unknown, was probably born between 1735 and 1740. She was the wife of Joseph Adair, Jr., whom she married about 1758, their eldest child having been born in 1759.

The proof that Joseph Adair, Jr. had a wife named Elizabeth is found in dower releases quoted in her husband's biography. Elizabeth, however, may not have been the mother of any or all of his children.

Mrs. Patterson believes that he had two or possibly three wives, the two oldest children with the first wife, in which case the mother of our Elizabeth Adair who married John Huston was probably dead before 1760; this situation is very uncertain, and needs more research. She mentions that the name 'Farmer' was used as a middle name by John’s descendants, which suggests to her that John’s (and probably Elizabeth’s) mother had a connection to the surname 'Farmer'.

In any case, Elizabeth Adair’s mother was probably buried in Laurens District, South Carolina.

Joseph made his will on 20 January 1812; his wife Elizabeth is not mentioned so it can be safely assumed that she, too, had died before that date. She is doubtless buried in Laurens District, South Carolina, but no marked grave has been found.

Parents have not been identified.

188 – Richard BORUM, Jr. was born in 1744 in Nottaway County, Virginia to Richard Borum, Sr. and his wife Judith, whose surname is not known. The Edmund Borum family

269 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
bible\textsuperscript{270} says, “Richard Borum father of Edmond was Bor\textsuperscript{d} 1744”.

According to The Hil(l)smann Family\textsuperscript{271} Richard married Sarah Hillsman about 1771. Mrs. Patterson\textsuperscript{272} found that the couple probably had eight children, including one daughter whose name is uncertain and another probable daughter whose name has not been found.

Researcher Francis Gill\textsuperscript{273} reports that the family moved to Tennessee perhaps about the same time their son Edmund and his wife moved there shortly after the birth of their second child, Judith, in 1807. They stopped at Knoxville long enough to make one crop, then went on to Wilson County, remaining there until their deaths. They were staunch Baptists and established churches where they settled.

When his father-in-law, Matthew Hillsman, made his will in 1780 in Amelia County, Virginia, he appointed Richard ‘Boram’ one of four Executors.

In 1829, he made a gift of fifty acres to two grandchildren.

The Edmund Borum bible states that, “Richard Borum Father of Edmond Borum Departed this life Aug\textsuperscript{t} 16\textsuperscript{th} 1835”. He is almost certainly buried in Wilson County, Tennessee, but no gravesite has been found. The index of Wilson County estate papers does not contain his name.

Siblings, surname Borum (order as listed in the Gill book\textsuperscript{274})

- Elizabeth, married Mr. Hubbard
- Judith, married a Mr. Clay\textsuperscript{275}; issue
- Martha, married John Moore
- Sarah, married George Foster
- Joanna, married Henry Vaughn; issue
- Mary, married a Mr. Smith
- James, married (possibly) Judith Hubbard
- [Richard]
- Edmund, married Edith Seay; issue

Parents are Numbers 376 and 377.

189 – Sarah HILSMAN or HILLSMAN was born about 1746 in Amelia County, Virginia, to Matthew Hillsman and his wife Ann, née Gillentine.

Excursus: The authors of The Hil(l)smann Family\textsuperscript{276} have made it clear that the Hillsman

\textsuperscript{270} See the biography of Person Number 47.
\textsuperscript{272} See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
\textsuperscript{273} See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
\textsuperscript{274} See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 23.
\textsuperscript{275} I have seen his name stated as John Moore Clay, but believe that his name somehow got merged with that of Martha’s husband, John Moore.
name is spelled with one ‘l’ or two, depending not so much upon what is deemed to be ‘correct’, but upon who is doing the writing. As spellings have become standardized, family branches have adopted both spellings and retained them.

The book, which should be consulted, explores and explains two schools of thought about the origin of the family Europe:

There was a Johan Von Hilsman among the Crusaders, and there is a German Hilsman Coat of Arms dating from 1096. The tradition of German roots is found among descendant families in West Tennessee and Georgia.

The authors don’t mention a date for the English Coat of Arms, but it is described in the book, and the tradition of British roots is found in the Virginia Hilsman families.

Inasmuch as people migrated back and forth between the British Isles and the European continent, both traditions could be correct. I personally believe that the immigrant to North America came from England, because all or almost all of the people among whom he settled in Virginia were English. This is not to say that his ancestor, one or more generations before, had not emigrated from ‘Germany’ (a German-speaking place) to Great Britain.

***

Sarah was certainly married to Richard Borum before her father died in 1781, likely long before. The couple probably had eight children, possibly more who have not been identified.

She died 8 November 1837 in Wilson County, Tennessee, according to the Edmund Borum family bible.

Siblings, surname HIL(l)sman; birth order uncertain
  Dianne, married Jacob Utley
  Ann, married first John C. Seay, issue; married second Caleb White
  Elizabeth, married a Mr. Utley
  [Sarah]
  Mary, married a Mr. Allen
  Joseph, married Elizabeth Moore
  John, married first Catherine Formwalt, issue; married second Rebecca Thrasher, issue
  James, married Lucy Clements; issue

Parents are Numbers 378 and 379.

190 – Abraham McGEHEE’s name is often stated Abraham (or Abram) F. McGehee, the middle initial alleged to stand for ‘Forrest’, no proof found. Documents I have seen myself have not used a middle initial. He was born in Prince Edward County, Virginia on 10

---

February 1767, to William McGehee and his wife, whose maiden name was Forrest. The dates come from the family bible of his daughter, Nancy McGehee Borum, where the ‘Abram’ spelling is used. Researchers consistently refer to him as ‘Abraham’.

He married Judith Penick on 17 September 1787, in Prince Edward County. The couple probably had ten children, four who have been positively linked to them and six more believed to be theirs, but unproven.

They, with relatives, moved to Wilson County, Tennessee about 1810, and by 1818 the McGehees and others had left that county to go to Limestone County, Alabama.

The following documents, signed by “Abram McGehee” are found in Limestone County, Alabama:

“Know all men by these presents that I Abram McGehee of the County of Limestone and State of Alabama for and in consideration of the natural love and affection which I bear to my daughter Fanny Tisdale & her children of the County & State aforesaid as well as for further consideration of one dollar to me in hand paid by the said Fanny Tisdale before the sealing and delivery of these presents the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged have given and granted and do by these presents give & grant to the said Fanny Tisdale her Executors Administratoirs and assigns One negro woman named Rachel and her three Children and her and there [sic] increase...this twentyeth day of December, one thousand eight hundred and twenty Eight.”

“Know all men by these presents that I Abram McGehee of the County of Limestone and State of Alabama for and in consideration of the natural love and affection which I bear to my son Abram F. McGehee of the County & State aforesaid as well as for further consideration of one dollar to me in hand paid by the said Abram F. McGehee before the sealing and delivery of these presents the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged have given and granted and do by these presents give & grant to the said Abram F. McGehee his Executors Administratoirs and assigns one very old Negro woman named Mol, One negro boy named Jeff Also one bed & furniture together with farming tools house & Kitchen utensils to have and to hold...this twenty fourth day of January One thousand eight hundred & twenty nine.”

The above documents have been copied into the court record by a clerk, and Abraham McGehee’s actual signature does not appear on them. It can be safely assumed, however, that he was literate, because the clerk does not indicate that he signed with a mark.

Both Limestone County and Talladega County estate settlements have been searched, and nothing can be found, so it is probably safe to assume that the above documents distributed his entire estate during his lifetime.

Abraham died on 12 June 1834 or 1835, probably in Talladega County. No marked burial place has been found.

Siblings (unverified), surname McGehee
[Abram/Abraham]
Martha, married George Morton
James, married Martha Atkinson
Halvesiblings (unverified), surname McGehee, from his father’s marriage to Sarah Walker
Eleanor, married Thomas Pettus
Mary, married Thomas Weaver; issue
Judith, married Simeon Walton, Jr.; issue
Jacob, married Mildred H. Clark
William, married Ann Foster
Elijah, married Virginsea Walker; issue
John Booker, married Elizabeth Taylor Walton; issue
Sarah Chappel, married Henry Matthew Penick

Parents are Numbers 380 and 381.

191 – Judith PENNICK was born about 1767-70 in Prince Edward County, Virginia, to
William Pennick and his wife, Judith nee Walker. Strangely enough, nothing was entered for
her in her daughter Nancy Borum’s family bible.

She bore at least four and probably ten children to McGehee.

The family moved to Tennessee, thence to Alabama, and she is believed to be the Judith
McGehee who is found, after Abraham’s death, in 1836 records of the Alpine Baptist
Church in Mardisville in Talladega County. Her daughter and son-in-law, Nancy and
Edmund Borum, are also found in these church records.

Judith probably died in Talladega County between 1836 and 1840, as no woman of the
correct age is found with the Borums on the 1840 census; she may be hidden in the census,
however, if she was living with a son. If she was living with a married daughter, she could
still be hidden, because while the census taker was supposed to write surnames different
from that of the head of household, he didn’t always do so. No death date or burial
information has been found.

Siblings, surname Penick
Nancy, married Thomas Tuggle; issue
Frances “Fanny”, married Philemon Southerland; issue
Lucy, married Reuben Boatwright; issue
[Judith]
Elizabeth “Betsy” married Robert Bagbey/Bagby; issue
William III, likely died young without issue
Nathaniel, married Zilla Allen
Jerusha, married John Boatwright
Polly Walker, married Charles Baldwin
Tabitha, married John Morton
Keziah, married Wyatt Arnold; issue
Hope Ann, married Thomas Sanders
Sarah B. “Salley”, married Francis Sanders
Josiah, married Miss __________; issue
Parents are Numbers 382 and 383.

192 – Johann Friederich BEKKER was born about February 1677 (calculated from the age given at his death) in Nienhagen, Schöttmar parish, Lippe Detmold. His parents were Johann Heinrich Bekker and his wife, whose maiden name is not known. It is also not known whether the Anna Ilsabein Bekker who was the wife of Johann Heinrich when he died in 1716, is Johann Friedrich’s mother. It is entirely possible that he is the son of an earlier wife.

Johann Friedrich married Anna Catherine née Altrogge, the widow of Johann Meise (otherwise Meisse and Meiße), on 18 November 1707. His status as the son of Johann Heinrich versus being someone’s widower indicates that it was his first marriage. With his marriage he assumed control of the Meise farm at Hovedissen; and he assumed the Meise surname, usually spelled later with only one ‘s’.

The couple had one known child.

Johann Friedrich’s death appears in the Schöttmar church record, dated 21 August 1728 at Hovedissen, his age stated as 51 years and six months. It is not known whether the date given is the death or funeral date. No cause of death is stated.

Father is Number 384.

193 – Anna Catherina ALTROGGE may have been born as early as August 1663, calculated from her death age, but that age may have been a guess on the part of the pastor at Schöttmar. She married Johann Meisse or Meise, and bore at least one son, who died at age 26, to him.

Widowed, she married Johann Friedrich Bekker on 18 November 1707, and bore a son to him on 3 November 1711.

She died on 6 April 1745, her death age stated as 81 years and eight months. She would have been about 48 years old when she gave birth in 1711 if the death age is correct, so it is subject to serious question. Her death is recorded in Schöttmar parish, her dwelling place listed as Hovedissen. No cause of death is stated.

Parents have not been identified.

194 – Johann Henrich BERNING is the father’s name given when his daughter Anna Maria married Christian Wilhelm Frohne in March, 1730; he was dead before her marriage. It is quite certain that the family lived at Eckendorf in Lippe-Detmold, but in the parish of Heepen, Westfalen, Preussen.

Inasmuch as his daughter’s maiden name was also stated as Ellerkamp, Baring,
Bähring, Berning and Beermann, trying to guess the correct name is impossible. Finding an answer seems hopeless, because there is a large gap in the Heepen church records. I see a chance of solving the puzzle if a farm history can be found and someone takes on the research. The Ellerkamp, Berning, Biermann and Beerman names can be found in Heepen parish.

I read the Heepen death records that exist before Anna Maria’s marriage, 1722 through 1725, then after a gap, 1727 until her 1730 marriage date. There is a possibility that Johann Henrich is the first 1722 death, but the handwriting is so difficult to read that I cannot be sure—and even if it is one of the names, I couldn’t be sure that his name wasn’t really one of the others.

Parents have not been identified.

196 – Joost Henrich KEISER ZU DINGERDISSEN presented a research problem. I found a Joost Henrich Keiser who was 14 years old when he was confirmed at Oerlinghausen in 1698, so I calculated a birth year of 1684 or 1685.

Joost Henrich Keiser married Anna Maria Ilsabein Schlicting on 17 October 1709. His name is written “Kaijßer” on the Oerlinghausen marriage record; ‘zu Dingerdissen’ was added to the name later.

The couple had five known children.

I found, in the Oerlinghausen churchbook, burial of a Joost Henrich Keiser zu Kingeridssen recorded on 24 May 1751 at age 66; he was dwelling at Ubbedissen.

Excursus: Having posted my genealogical database on the Internet, I often receive additions, corrections and comments from those who find it. Sven Högermann, who lives (2004) in Oerlinghausen, wrote to tell me that ‘our’ Joost Henrich had an earlier wife, and that I had found the death date of the wrong Kaiser. He says that ‘my’ Joost Henrich Kaiser married Catrina Aus dem Linenhaus (Linnemann) on 22 April 1690 and had two children with her. Assuming Sven is correct—and he certainly has access to archived documents that I do not—the man whose birth year I estimated as 1684 or 1685, couldn’t have been old enough to marry in 1690. Sven, too, found the burial of a Joobst Henrich Keiser zu Dingerdissen on 24 May 1751\(^{277}\). He says that this is not ‘our’ Joost Henrich, and that this man was Christened on 19 April 1685 in Oerlinghausen, that his father was Johan Cord Kaiser and his mother was Anna. Sven conjectures that Johann Cord was a brother or cousin of our Joost Henrich.

Sven consistently uses the ‘Kaiser’ spelling, but it is spelled several ways in the Oerlinghausen church records.

---

\(^{277}\) The Oerlinghausen churchbook does not give a death date, only the burial date, but Sven says he died on 14 May 1751. This makes me certain that Sven has researched some archived document, possibly a farm history, that I do not have access to.
This leaves me uncertain about his birth or death, but I can state with confidence that Joost Henrich Keiser zu Dingerdissen, who married Anna Maria Ilsabein Schlichting on 17 October 1709, is our ancestor.

Parents have not been identified.

197 – Anna Maria Ilsabein SCHLICHTING was born at Mackenbruch, Lippe-Detmold on 15 October 1686 (this may be her baptism date) to Johann Schlichting and his wife Ilsabein, nee Mensenkamp. The record is found in the Oerlinghausen churchbook. Her Godparents’ names are stated, but I am unable to read them.

She was confirmed at Oerlinghausen in 1702 at age fifteen.

On 17 October 1709, she married Joost Henrich Keiser, later called Keiser zu Dingerdissen, and the couple lived at Ubbedissen. She bore two sons and three daughters to Keiser.

She died at the age of 69 years on 7 February 1755 at Ubbedicken, the death recorded in Oerlinghausen. No cause of death is stated.

Siblings, surname Schlichting
   Brother, name unknown
   Johann Cord
   [Anna Maria Ilsabein]
   Sister, name unknown

Parents are Numbers 394 and 395.

198 – Heinrich Herman EVERT was born (or baptized) on 23 April 1700. His parents were Johann Henrich Evert and his wife Ilsche, nee Besten; the names of his Godparents are given, but I am not able to read them. The family lived in Lämershagen, Westfalen, Preussen. The record is found in the church record of Oerlinghausen, Lippe-Detmold, to which parish Lämershagen belongs.

His marriage to Anna Ilsabein Meyer zu Sieker on 17 May 1728, is also found in the Oerlinghausen churchbook. The couple had five known children.

Heinrich Herman’s death cannot be found in the Oerlinghausen churchbooks; one may surmise that he was living with a married child in another parish when he died.

Parents are Numbers 396 and 397.

199 – Anna Ilsabein MEYER ZU SIEKER has not been identified beyond her birthplace.
She married Heinrich Herman Evert on 17 May 1728, and bore five children to him.

Clues were sought in an attempt to figure out a birthplace for her. Each entry—marriage and children's births—in the Oerlinghausen churchbooks was scrutinized. No birthplace was mentioned in her marriage entry, and deaths are not found for her or her husband in Oerlinghausen parish records. One may infer from that lack that they were dwelling in another parish with a married son or daughter, at the times of their deaths.

The birth entry for a child born to her in 1743 is in a new handwriting, and the new pastor writes the home-town and presumed birthplace of Anna Ilsabein. On microfilm available from The Family History Library, however, the word is not legible because the book was so tightly bound that the center did not appear on the film. A Niemann cousin living in Wahrentrup made a research trip on my behalf to the Nordrhein-Westfälisches Personenstandsarchiv Westfalen-Lippe, Willi-Hofmann-Straße 2, 32756 Detmold, and obtained a photocopy there, on which the word 'Heepen' can be read.

There are large gaps in the Heepen birth records, and a likely time for Anna Ilsabein to have been born is missing: 1691 through 1714. No confirmation lists are available for Heepen. Several Meyer zu Sieker marriages are recorded in the Heepen churchbooks, and it is impossible to guess to which Meyer zu Sieker couple she was born. If a farm history is archived in Germany, further information may be found there.

Parents have not been identified.

200 — Berend Peter HACHMEISTER was born about 1667 at Heepen to Johann Hachmeister and his wife Ilsche nee Ramsel. There is some indication that his call name was 'Peter'. The information I have about this line is all from Michael Ortmann.

Peter married first, according to information written (where?) about her dowry, on 26 April 1700, to Margretha Ilsabein Puls. There was no issue from the marriage, and the couple divorced in 1705, the divorce granted by the Lutheran Consistory in Bielefeld.

Excursus: This early divorce came as a shock to me, and I considered what might have been grounds for divorce at that time. The possibilities I considered were her continued barrenness, insanity, refusal to enter into a conjugal relationship, and adultery. I have not researched Margretha and do not know if she married again.

About the time I received this divorce information, one of the German-focus mailing lists at Rootsweb was monitored by some real experts in German research, and I posed a question on the list: What would be grounds for divorce at the beginning of the 18th Century? The most comprehensive answer I received (from a man named Fred, and I regret that I didn’t find out or failed to keep track of his full name) appears below, retained because I found it to be an interesting comment on the times, not because it lists any possible grounds that I hadn’t already thought of:

278 See Background within the biography of Person Number 100.
"You didn’t need grounds as such. You needed to be a man who wanted to marry a different woman. At that point you basically made up a reason and the woman had little to say about it one way or another. Women didn’t have rights as we know them today.

"A female’s father typically arranged her wedding, and marriages for love were not the norm. Property rights to a woman were an accepted fact of life in a world where the man ruled and the woman obeyed.

"I may be stretching things a bit but it really wasn’t all that difficult for a man to get a divorce. On the other hand it did still go against the norms of society which had been against divorce until Henry VIII broke with the church because he wanted to marry anew. In Lutheran Germany those old rules were still in force but the Protestant church granted divorces especially if the man had financial resources. All he really had to do is claim that his wife was not faithful to him. Who was there to argue her side?"

Michael Ortmann stated that divorce was rare in that time and place; this Hachmeister divorce was the only one he had ever found during his research.

***

Peter married second, on 8 August 1707 (long enough after his divorce from Margretha to make it seem like he hadn’t already chosen a new bride before the first marriage ended) to Anna Magdalene Meyer zu Elentrup. The couple lived at Hillegossen in Heepen parish, and had four known children.

Peter died on 14 May 1727 at Hillegossen Number 6.

Sibling, surname Hachmeister
   Johan Tønnies, died unmarried

Parents are Numbers 400 and 401.

201 – Anna Magdalene MEYER ZU ELENTRUP was born about 1688 at Sieker Number 1, Heepen parish, Westfalen, Preussen, to Johann Henrich Meyer zu Elentrup and his wife Trin (or perhaps Anna) Ilsabein née Meyer zu Halen.

She married Berend Peter Hachmeister on 8 August 1707 in Heepen, and the couple lived at Hillegossen in Heepen parish. She bore two sons and two daughters to Hachmeister.

After his death in 1727, she married on 23 June 1728 Johann Henrich Hohmann, otherwise Johann Henrich Dingerdisse, who doubtless assumed the Hachmeister surname. No children are believed to have been born to the couple.

She died on 9 October 1748 at Hillegossen Number 6.

Parents are numbers 402 and 403.
202 – Johann Dietrich Meyer zu HEEPEN was born about July 1682 at Heepen, Westfalen, Preussen, to Johann Philip Meyer zu Heepen né Meyer zu Bexten and his wife, Margarete Magdalena née Meyer zu Olderdissen.

He married Anna Ilsabein née Meyer zu Jerrendorf, the widow of Henrich Pahmeyer, on 25 June 1729, after which he was known as Colon Pahmeyer. The couple had three children.

Colon can be translated as ‘colonist’ or ‘settler’. The title may have come into use after the Thirty Years War, when so few people remained to take charge of the land that settlers were selected, as the population increased, to reclaim land that had been abandoned and/or laid waste during the war.

Michael Ortmann²⁷⁹ writes about the Heepen farm:

“The Meyer zu Heepen was a most interesting farm. It was the largest farm in the county of Ravensberg (of about 5,200 farms in the late 18th century). The farm was larger than the whole village Lämershagen in the Oerlinghausen parish. Twelve smaller farms or Kötter belonged to the Meyer zu Heepen. Six of them were lying in the Principality Lippe. The farm itself lay in the county Ravensberg but belonged to Lippe and was owned by the Fürsten zur Lippe until 1786 when the farm came to Ravensberg. Up to this date there was about 300 years quarrelling between Ravenberg and Lippe about this farm. The Meyer zu Heepen had many privileges, that normally had only a noble seat, for example: He has a big shoot (in the so called 'ancienne regime' normally farmers were not allowed to hunt), his own seal, he was allowed to issue manumission letters for his Kötters, etc…. I would tell you much more but my English is too poor.”

Johann Dietrich died on 17 August 1746 at Brake 1, Münster parish, Herford, Westfalen.

Parents are Numbers 404 and 405.

203 – Anna Ilsabein MEYER ZU JERRENDORF was born in 1707 at Brake Farm Number 2, Münster parish, Herford, Westfalen.

On 18 June 1725, she married Heinrich Pahmeyer, a widower who had ten children with his first wife, Margaretha Magdalena née Meyer zu Heepen. The couple had one son, and Pahmeyer died on 20 August 1728.

On 25 June 1729, Anna Ilsabein married Johann Dietrich Meyer zu Heepen, who then assumed the Pahmeyer name, becoming Colon Pahmeyer, while his wife continued to be known as Fr. Pahmeyer. Two daughters and a son were born to the couple.

Anna Ilsabein died on 23 September 1753 at Brake Number 1, Münster parish, Herford, Westfalen.

²⁷⁹ See Background within the biography of Person Number 100.
Parents have not been identified.

204 – Joost Henrich KEISER ZU DINGERDISSEN’s biography is printed as Person Number 196 above.

205 – Anna Maria Ilsabein SCHLICHTING’s biography is printed as Person Number 197 above.

206 – Heinrich Herman EVERT’s biography is printed as Person Number 198 above.

207 – Anna Ilsabein MEYER ZU SIEKER’s biography is printed as Person Number 199 above.

208 – Herm LUDEWIG was probably born about 1740, at Langenholzhausen, Lippe-Detmold. Early Langenholzhausen Christening records give only the surname of the father and the sex of the child. When neither the mother’s name nor the child’s name is recorded, it is impossible to be certain of people’s identities. At least two Ludewig men and two Ludewig women can be found among Langenholzhausen deaths; while they are candidates for Herm’s parents, nothing further can be deduced from the records.

There is a gap in Langenholzhausen confirmation records between 1734 and 1759, and Herm’s confirmation almost certainly occurred during those years.

The Langenholzhausen churchbook marriage gap is between 1744 and 1757. Herm would have been too young to marry at that time, and no marriage can be found when the records begin again. It has to be assumed, therefore, that he and his wife married in her parish; her surname and birthplace are unknown.

Herm died of pneumonia at Langenholzhausen. The date recorded in the churchbook is 5 May 1799, which may be the death date or the burial date. His age is stated as 59 years. Parents have not been identified.

209 – Anna Catherine _________ was the wife of Herm Ludewig. Her death is recorded in the Langenholzhausen churchbook on 25 November 1804, and it doesn’t say whether that is the death date or the burial date. The cause of death may be pneumonia, but it is so hard to read that I cannot be sure. Her age is stated as 65 years, pointing to a birth year of 1739. Parents have not been identified.

210 – Hermann Conrad Dietrich DEPPING was born to Hans Friedrich Depping and his
wife Ammalia Hedewig née Bexten at Laßbruch, Lippe-Detmold. The Silixen churchbook entry gives the date of 28 August 1726, but does not state whether that is his birth or Christening date.

Hermann married first Anna Marie Catharine Wolff, and she died at the age of 27 on 7 March 1763. I found issue from this marriage, but unfortunately only recorded the one child whose data I found germane as I gathered a preponderance of evidence that Amalia Charlotte Depping was Hermann Conrad Dietrich’s daughter.

On 7 August 1763, Hermann married his first wife’s sister, Catharine Dorothee Wolff. I am not certain that I found and recorded all the issue from this marriage.

I searched very diligently through the Silixen churchbooks and was unable to find Hermann’s death recorded, but was able to prove that he was dead before 14 May 1780. My translation of a son’s confirmation record:

“The baptism of Catharine Dorothee Wolff, born about 1738, cannot be found in Bösingfeld, although her siblings’ baptisms are recorded.

“When she married the widower Hermann Conrad Dietrich Depping on 7 August 1763, the marriage entry in the Silixen churchbook states that the bride is the sister of the bridegroom’s deceased first wife, the first marriage date given as 7 November 1755.

“That marriage entry, also in the Silixen churchbook, names the bride as Anna Maria Catharina Wolf of Bösingfeld.

“Anna Marie Catharina Maria Wolf’s birth entry was found in the Bösingfeld churchbook. She was born 16 July 1735 to Johann Conrad Wolf and his wife Catharina Margarete née Freund. She was baptized 24 July 1735.
"Since the brides are sisters, and parents are named for Anna Catharina Maria, Catharina Dorothee is also the daughter of Johann Conrad Wolf and Catharina Margarethe Freund, both of whom were living at the estimated 1738 date of Catharina Dorothee’s birth.

"Catharina Dorothee Wolff’s 1752 confirmation, recorded in Bösingfeld, places her in Bösingfeld in the right time frame and gives credence to the estimate of 1738 for her birth, since she was probably 14 years old when confirmed."

The above evidence collection made me reach the conclusion that I could state with confidence that Catharine Dorothee Wolff (otherwise Wolf) was born about 1738 and was the daughter of Johann Conrad Wolff and his wife, Catharine Margarethe nee Freund. Either the pastor at Bösingfeld forgot to write the baptism in the churchbook, or her mother was at some other place when the baby was born and baptized.

Catharine Dorothee married her sister’s widower, Hermann Conrad Dietrich Depping on 7 August 1763, as recorded in the Silixen churchbook. She bore at least three children to Depping before his death, which occurred before 14 May 1780.

After her first husband’s death she married Johann Friedrich Wehrmann; he died at the age of 40 on 16 January 1784.

Catharina Dorothee died of pneumonia at four o’clock in the afternoon on 22 March 1797. Her funeral and burial were on 16 March 1797 at Laßbruch. I suspect that her ‘call name’ was Dorothee, because the pastor wrote ‘Amalie Dorothea’ on her death record. It is the same woman, because he mentioned that she was the widow of Hermann Conrad Depping and Johann Friedrich Wehrmann. Her age was given as 57½ years, which works out to birth about September 1739, close to my earlier estimate.

Sibling, surname Wolff
   Anna Maria Catharine, also married Hermann Conrad Dietrich Depping; issue
   [Catharine Dorothee]
   Perhaps others

Parents are Numbers 422 and 423.

212 – Jobst Henrich KIEL, called GROLM, also probably called DREKKER was born at Stemmen, Lippe-Detmold on 29 March 1717 (or that may be his baptism date) to Christoph Kiel and his wife Anna Catharina née Blome. The entry appears in the churchbook of Varenholz, to which parish Stemmen belongs. His sponsors were Johan Henrich Freund from Holzhausen; Johan Krüger, whose village I cannot read; Conrad Blome from Stemmen, and Johan (I can’t read his middle name) Blome from Stemmen.

He was confirmed by the pastor at Varenholz on 29 April 1731.
On 10 August 1749, Jobst married Anna Elisabeth Drekker née Kiel, a widow living at Stemmen. I found her death in the church records, but didn’t make a note of the date.

On 16 December 1763, Jobst Henrich Kiel, married Anna Sophia Elisabeth Deppingsmeyer or Kiel, called Sophie Kiel in the marriage record, who also lived at Stemmen. I did not attempt to research issue other than our ancestor, Johann Konrad.

His son Johann Conrad was also called Grolm, and I believe that one could find the reason by going back further into farm histories, the name evidently having come from the Grolm farm.

Jobst Henrich Kiel of Stemmen died of pneumonia on 25 April 1784 at the age of 67 years and one month.

Parents are Numbers 424 and 425.

213 – Anna Sophia Elisabeth DEPPING(SMEYER) or KIEL was born at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold to Hans Herman Deppingsmeyer or Kiel and his wife Anna Sophia Elisabeth née Stock in December 1743. The date cannot be read because the book is bound so tightly that the microfilm camera didn’t photograph the center. Three sponsors are listed, but I cannot read the name of the first. Anna Maria Plecken’s name is certain; the third is Gret Ilsabein Kohmeier or Rohmeier.

She was confirmed by the pastor at Varenholz on 21 May 1758.

She married the widower Jobst Henrich Kiel or Drekker or Grolm on 16 December 1763, and her call name of Sophie is deduced from that entry.

Sophie died of pneumonia on 29 May 1805 at Stemmen. The churchbook entry gives her age as 53 years and one month, and her maiden name as Wessels. I wrote the following after researching diligently through the Varenholz churchbooks:

“The death entry gives her maiden name as Wessels. The churchbook lists a Sophie Wessels who was born in 1752 which would have made her age 53 in 1805. However, a woman born in 1752 would have been only eleven years old in 1763 when she married Jobst Henrich Kiel. I examined the theory that Jobst Henrich Kiel’s wife Sophie ‘Kiel’ or ‘Depping(smeyer)’ or both, of the 1763 marriage, died, and Jobst married again. I found neither a death nor a marriage to support it. I found no marriage for Sophie Wessels in Varenholz parish. I have concluded that the pastor believed in error that her maiden name was Wessels, found the birth entry for Sophie Wessels in the churchbook, and calculated her death age from that, which in turn made her death age incorrect. Conversely, he could have guessed at her age and found Sophie Wessels to be a perfect match, therefore writing the name Wessels as her maiden name.

“To further support the belief that Jobst’s wife was Anna Sophia Depping(smeyer) Kiel, her half-brother, Johann Cristoph Wilkening (her mother’s son by first husband Hermann Christoph Wilkening) was a sponsor when her son Johann Konrad was baptized.”

Parents are Numbers 426 and 427.
214 – Herman Heinrich ROSEMEIER was born on 22 September 1751 at Almena, Lippe-Detmold to Herman Christoph Rosemeier and his second wife Anna Ilsabein née Hilcker. I believe I can read 26 September as the date of his baptism; his sponsor was Heinrich Christoph Huxhol.

Herman married thrice-widowed Anna Maria Bebermeyer née Voigt, otherwise Vogt, on 21 September 1777 at Almena. I did not research issue from that marriage other than our ancestor Wilhelmine Katherine Ilsabein Rosemeier.

I conducted a diligent search, but did not find Herman’s death, nor his wife’s, recorded in the Almena churchbook.

Parents are Numbers 428 and 429.

215 – Anna Marie VOGT, otherwise VOIGT was born at Hensdorf, Lüdenhausen parish, Lippe-Detmold to Herman Christoph Vogt and his wife Catharina Ilsabein Bilstein or Billstein. One can guess that she was born a few days before her baptism, which took place on 1 February 1737. Her sponsors were Hans Huxhol’s wife, Martin Stock’s widow, and Cord Heinrich Huxhol’s wife, all from Hensdorf, and Herman Heinrich Brakmeyer’s wife from Hohn?

She married Hermann Heinrich Sievert on 13 October 1759; he died 14 November 1762.

Now Fr. Sievert, she married Hans Herman Hilcker on 17 July 1765; having assumed the Sievert farm name, Hans Herman Sievert died on 27 October 1771.

Anna Maria, the widow Sievert married Johann Cord Bebermeyer on 23 December 1772; Bebermeyer “vulgo Sievert” died 6 January 1775.

She married Herman Heinrich Rosemeier on 21 September 1777 at Almena, known issue from that marriage being one daughter, our ancestor.

Neither her death nor her husband’s can be found in the Almena churchbook; they may have been living with an adult son or daughter from one of her earlier marriages.

Siblings were not researched.

Parents are Numbers 430 and 431.

280 Vogt or Voigt (it is written both ways) is pronounced “Fokt”, rhymes with croaked.
281 Vulgo (Latin): Commonly known as; in the vernacular; called.
216 – Johann or Jürgen Friedrich BÖKE or SÜLLWOLD otherwise Süllwoldsmeier\(^\text{282}\), Süllwoldsmeier etc., was born at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold on 1 August 1716 to Cordt Böke (otherwise Baucke) alias Süllwoldsmeier and his wife Cathrina Margreta née Süllwold. He was baptized on 12 August. His sponsors were Jürgen —I can’t read his name but he was from Varenholz; Simon Henirch Starke; Friedrich Rügge from Langenholzhausen; and Franz Vogt, whose village I can’t read.

He was confirmed in 1738.

On 11 August 1752, he married Sophia Ernestine Plecke of Varenholz. His name is written “Baucke Süllwolds Meijer” in the Varenholz churchbook marriage register, and her name is rendered in the feminine: “Plecken”. The couple lived at Stemmen; the only issue from the marriage that I attempted to research was our direct ancestor, Johann Friedrich Wilhelm Süllwold.

He died of dropsy on 4 August 1794 at Stemmen, at the age of 78 years and 3 days. His funeral and burial were on 6 August.

Parents are Numbers 432 and 433.

217 – Sophia Ernestine PLECKE, the German “Plecken” is feminine, was born at Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold on 3 April 1735 to Johann Franz Plecke and his wife Marie Ilsabein née Hancke. Her baptismal sponsor was a Fr. Harms from Möllenbeck; I can’t read the lady’s first name.

She married Johann or Jürgen Friedrich Böke or Süllwold etc. on 11 August 1752, and bore him at least one child.

Widowed more than 10 years earlier, she died on 15 May 1805 at the age of 68. Her ‘call name’ was probably Ernestine, because the pastor wrote “Ernestine Elisabeth Süllwold” in the death register. The cause of death was abdominal inflammation. Her funeral and burial were on 19 May.

Parents are Numbers 434 and 435.

218 – Johann Levin Christian FLÖRCKE, otherwise Flörkemeijer etc., was born on 10 January 1740 at Stemmen, Lippe-Detmold, to Anton Christian Flörcke or Schötker and his wife Wilhelmine Louysa Meyer zu Volckhausen. He was baptized by the pastor at Varenholz on 20 January; his sponsor was Herr Commissarious (agent) Staackmann of Varenholz.

He was confirmed in 1754.

\(^{282}\) For an explanation of the Lippe Meier Laws, see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 24.
He married Anne Marie Elisabeth Mannetter of Stemmen on 11 June 1762. Issue other than our direct ancestor, Wilhelmine Louise Flörcke, was not researched. His ‘call name’ seems to have been Christian; that is the name given at the death of his wife.

Widowed in 1785, he married Henriette Louise Mencken from Brüntorf on 25 January 1788, the marriage recorded at Varenholz. His name is given on the marriage entry as Halbmeyer Levin Christian Flörcke. The couple’s marriage is also recorded in the church records of Talle, the bride’s home parish, on 21 January 1788. I have not seen this entry myself; the LDS extraction team saw his name as Christian Ervin Flörcke; it is not unusual to find marriages recorded in two places.

The couple built a house in Stemmen, and its “house writing”, on a balcony which is attached on the side, survives; translation by Veronika Timpe:


“Preserve me, oh God, for in thee do I put my trust. Psalm 16, Verse 1. Johann Christian Flörke and Henriette Menken from Brüntorf.”

He died of dropsy on 17 March 1818, at the age of 78 years and two months, survived by his second wife. His funeral and burial were on 21 March.

Siblings, surname Flörcke, Flörckemeier etc.
Frantz Friederich Anton
[Johann Levin Christian]

Parents are Numbers 436 and 437.

219 - Anne Marie Elisabeth MANNETTER was born, probably early in March 1734, to Johann Conrad Mannetter and his wife Anne Elisabeth née Kuhlmann at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Demold. She was baptized on 7 March 1734, that event, along with her other life events, recorded in the Varenholz churchbooks. Her sponsor was Anne Marie Mannetter.

She was confirmed in 1747.

She married Johann Levin Christian Flörcke or Flörckemeijer etc., on 11 June 1762. Issue from the marriage, other than our direct ancestor Wilhelmine Louise Flörcke, was not researched. The family lived at Stemmen.

Anne Marie Elisabeth died on 8 November 1785—or that may be the funeral date. The cause of death is “hitzigen Fieber”. “Hitzig” means feverish; a feverish fever? Perhaps chronic fever?

Parents are Numbers 438 and 439.
220 – Hans Henrich FREITAG was born at Rentrup, Talle parish, Lippe-Detmold to Hans Henrich Freitag and his wife, whose maiden name is not known. He was baptized by the pastor at Talle on 3 February 1736; his birth had probably occurred a few days earlier. His sponsors were, according to Jones, Vits Hans at B[aven]h[ausen], the Niederste at Huxoll, Hagemeyer and Held at B[avenhausen]. My copy of the Talle baptismal record from the microfilm is very bad, and some of the words are obliterated by the book’s tight binding.

He was confirmed at Talle in 1750.

Jones presents the below translation of his marriage contract:

“Done at Varenholz, on the 24th of February 1764
Hans Henrich Freytag of Rentrup is going to marry Anna Sophia Heeger of Rahfeld.

“The bride is moving to the groom and brings with her 150 Thalers in cash, a bridal carriage, one horse, half an iron mounted wagon, 4 cows and 4 pigs, separately half a cart-load of grain and a wedding dress.

“Thus officially recorded in the presence of the groom, the bride’s brother-in-law and Hans Heeger, farmer in Rahfeld. As above.”

Jones:

“It is quite apparent that he was marrying well, and the bride’s family was making sure that he was on record as to her belongings. A bridal carriage was a cart-load of household goods, furniture, household implements, etc. Basically the same thing as a hope chest it tended to include things which ordinarily would not be considered part of a hope chest in this country.”

The couple was married at Talle on 25 March 1764, and had, according to Jones, eight children.

Widowed in 1805, Hans Henrich died “on account of old age” on 28 September 1828, with burial on 1 October, the death recorded in Talle. The churchbook entry states his death age as 98 years, but he was really only about 92½.

Father is Number 440.

221 – Anna Sophia Ilsabein HEGER was born, probably at Rahfeld, otherwise Rafeld, Rafeldt etc., about 1742-1744. Jones thinks there is sufficient evidence to indicate that her father’s name was Heinrich Heger, otherwise Heager, Heeger, and that her mother’s name was Ilsabein. Rahfeld is in the parish of Hohenhausen. I researched its churchbooks without

283 See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 55.
284 Jones states that he was unable to find a death for Hans Henrich, but that he was dead before his son Hans Friedrich’s second marriage contract was drawn up on 14 April 1818. I scrutinized that marriage contract carefully, and found nothing that implied that the father was dead; I had already documented his 1828 death. It is possible that he misinterpreted the contract to state that the young farmer’s stepmother was still living, but it clearly states that the retiring farmer’s stepmother is still living.
285 See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 55.
success in finding the family.

Jones states that she was confirmed at Hohenhausen in 1756, pointing to a birth year of about 1744.

After agreeing to a marriage contract (see her husband’s biography) on 24 February 1765, she married Hans Henrich Freitag on 15 March 1765, the marriage recorded in Talle. The couple lived at Rentorf, where she gave birth to eight children.

Anna Sophia Ilsabein Freitag’s death is recorded in the Talle churchbook. The date is 1 January 1805, which may be the funeral date. She died of asthma, and her age is stated as 63 years.

The marriage contract makes mention of a brother-in-law, implying that she had at least one sister.

Parents have not been identified to my satisfaction.

222 – Jobst Henrich MEINOLF lived at Lüerdissen, Lippe-Detmold. The family’s life events were recorded in St. Johann Reformed church in nearby Lemgo (St. Nicholai in Lemgo is Lutheran); finding them was a matter of ruling out one or the other. The St. Johann churchbooks contain gaps, so I found little information.

He is believed to have married Anna Marie Elisabeth Niebur before 1767, when a daughter “Cathrin Margret” was born to “Meyer [farmer] Mehnolf”. They may have been married quite a lot earlier and had other children, but no records exist. The possibility exists that this child was born to Meinolf and an earlier wife, and if the man who died at the age of 84 is our Jobst Henrich, he was a great deal older than our ancestress, giving greater credence to the possibility that he had an earlier wife. A marriage contract would answer the question. If there were older children they either died young or married well, because this Cathrin Margaret’s husband assumed control of the Meinolf farm in Lüerdissen.

At the birth of the next known child, our ancestor Anna Louise Henriette Meinolf in 1775, his wife’s maiden name is clearly stated.

The last child I found for the Meinolf-Niebur couple, Herman Henrich, was born in 1779. If he had lived to reach maturity, he surely would have been the heir.

Jobst Henrich was still living when his wife died in 1793.

I found the death of an 84-year-old Jobst Henrich Meinolf in Lüerdissen on 25 December 1798, with burial on 27 December. If the death age was correct, this man was probably born about 1714, which would make his age about 65 when the last known child was born to the Meinolf-Niebur couple. While I believe he was Niebur’s husband, it is possible that this Jobst Henrich Meinolf was her father-in-law or another man in the community who
happened to have the same name. I did not find the death of a Jobst Henrich Meinolf recorded later.

Parents have not been identified.

223 – Anna Marie Elisabeth NIEBUR was probably born in about October 1738, calculated from her 1793 death age. Birth records available for St. Johann in Lemgo do not include the probable time of her birth. I searched the Heiden parish records, thinking that she may have been part of the Niebuhr family there who became a part of the Niemann family by marriage in 1825.

I searched both Varenholz and Schötmar court records for a marriage contract, but was unable to find one. Anna was certainly married to Jobst Henrich Meinolf in Lüerdissen before 30 June 1775, when she gave birth to a daughter and her maiden name is stated in the baptismal entry recorded at St. Johann in Lemgo. She may have already been Meinolf’s wife when only the father’s name was mentioned at a baptism in 1767. A son was born to Meinolf and his wife in 1779.

Anna Maria Elisabeth Meinolf died at Lüerdissen at the age of 54; the pastor of St. Johann recorded the date as 8 April 1793, but did not indicate whether it was the death or funeral date.

Parents have not been identified.

224 – Johannes GUMBEL was born on 25 November 1744 in Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Hans Curt Gumbel and his wife Catharina née Büchner. He was baptized there on 29 November, and confirmed in 1758.

He married Magdalena Griessel in Niedermöllrich on 31 March 1766, the marriage document stating that the wedding occurred during the prayer hour. The couple became the parents of five children whose names are known to me.

Johannes died on 6 June 1803 in Niedermöllrich. His funeral and burial took place on 8 June.

Parents are Numbers 448 and 449.

225 – Magdalena GRIESEL was born on 2 December 1736 (possibly her baptism date) in Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Johann Adam Griesel and his wife Elisabeth née Trischmann. She was confirmed in 1751.

Excursus: No spelling standard existed in these early times, and the name is spelled variously Griesel, Griesel, Griessel, and Griessell. I haven’t seen the original records myself, but from experience with other German records, I suppose that the ‘ss’ is sometimes ‘ß’.
The Griesell name is found in 1585 Niedermöllrich tax records, so it is an old name there. The biography of Person Number 28 in the Fifth Generation contains information about the word Huebe (its plural is Hueben). At least some of the persons named below are likely our ancestors, but to the best of my knowledge, no links have been made.

Griesell, Cunze must pay 1 Huebe
Griesell, Herman the elder must pay 2 Hueben
Griesell, Herman the younger must pay 1¼ Huebe
Griesell, Otto has to pay ½ Huebe

** **

Magdalena married Johannes Gumbel on 31 March 1766 at Niedermöllrich, and bore at least five children to him.

She died at Niedermöllrich on 15 March 1812, with funeral and burial there on 17 March.

Parents are Numbers 450 and 451.

226 – Johann Jost (elsewhere Justus) SCHÄFER was born 22 June 1738, at Solms, Hessen, the 6th child of Kaspar Scheffer (Schäfer) and his wife Anna Elisabeth née Reuter.

Johann was confirmed in Niederaula in 1752, and married Anna Catharina Zulauf there on 19 April 1763. His wife’s name is given as ‘Zeitauf’ in the Niederaula book while Mrs. Habenicht saw it as ‘Zulauf’ and traced back two more Zulauf generations.

The Niederaula book varies a little from the church records, calling him Johann Justus Scheffer (Schäfer). He was the Schulhalter zu Solms (school teacher at Solms), the sixth child of Kaspar Scheffer (Schäfer).

Widowed a year earlier, he died at Solms on 10 October 1799.

Siblings, surname Schäfer
Five older
[Johann Jost/Justus]

Parents are Numbers 452 and 453.

227 – Anna Catharina ZULAUF (her maiden name is seen as Zeitauf by Traugott Classen in the Niederaula book, but I see ‘Zulauf’ everywhere her name is written in the church records) was born 6 February 1737 in Solms, Hessen, to Conrad Zulauf and his wife Anna Martha Vaupel.

---

286 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 29.
287 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
288 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 29.
Research: I have every confidence in Mrs. Habenicht's\textsuperscript{289} research, and have come to believe, after some further research, that ‘Zeitauf’, as stated by Ms. Classen, is an error. First, no surname ‘Zeitauf’ appears in the 2000 online version of the telephone directory for Germany nor in the International Genealogical Index for Germany. Second, an inquiry on a mailing list that is monitored by experts on Germany and the German language brought a response that, while the books written about German communities are usually quite good, they do contain errors.

***

She married Johann Jost (or Johann Justus) Schäfer on 19 April 1763, and bore him two known children, likely more children.

She died on 5 October 1798 in Solms.

Parents are Numbers 454 and 455.

228 – Conrad RITTER was born on 12 June 1748 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Dietmar Ritter and his wife Martha Elisabeth née Brenner. He was baptized there on 16 June, and confirmed in 1762.

He married Anna Elisabeth Römer at Verna, Hessen, on 31 March 1775. He was a master blacksmith.

He died on 7 February 1800 at Niedermöllrich, with funeral and burial taking place there on 10 February.

Parents are Numbers 456 and 457.

229 – Anna Elisabeth RÖMER was born at Verna, Hessen on 23 September 1747 to Adam Römer and his wife Anna Martha née Trischmann. She was baptized there on 26 September, and confirmed in 1760.

She married Conrad Ritter at Verna 31 March 1775, and bore one known child to him.

She died on 7 February 1800 at Niedermöllrich. Her funeral and burial took place there on 10 February.

Parents are Numbers 458 and 459.

230 – Johannes VOLLMER was born about 1753 to Johannes Vollmar and his wife Engel (Angelika) Wicke. He was confirmed in 1767.

\textsuperscript{289} See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
A farmer at Niedermöllrich, he married Marie Elisabeth Otto on 18 February 1780.

He died at Niedermöllrich at the age of 61 years on 27 May 1814. His funeral and burial occurred on 30 May.

Both his death age and his probable confirmation age of fourteen were used to calculate his birth year, because neither his birth nor baptism was found in the Niedermöllrich church records.

See Illustration Number 230.

Parents are Numbers 460 and 461.

231 – Marie Elisabeth OTTO was born about 1758 at Harle, Hessen, to Conrad Otto and his wife, whose name is unknown to me.

She married Johannes Vollmar on 18 February 1780 at Niedermöllrich, and bore one known child to him.

She died at Niedermöllrich on 16 January 1793 at the age of 35 years. Her funeral and burial were on 18 January.

Father is Number 462.

232 – Johann Valentin NUHN was born at Niederaula on 18 September 1756 to Johann Heinrich Nuhn and his wife Elisabeth Öhm. He was confirmed there in 1771, and married on 22 October 1777 to Catharina Elisabeth Bieber. He was a farmer. He died on 24 October 1824, and was buried at Niederaula.

Siblings, surname Nuhn
   Regina born 1752, died 1757
   [Johann Valentin]
   Elisabeth born 1759, died 1762
   Anna Eva born 1762, died 1768

Parents are Numbers 464 and 465.

See Illustration Number 232.

233 – Katharina Elisabeth BIEBER was born on 4 October 1758 at Niederaula to the Erbgutesbesitzer (owner-occupant of an inheritable estate) Johann Barthold Bieber and his wife Anna Martha Herwig. She was confirmed there in 1773.
Excursus: The Niederaula book\(^{290}\) outlines the descendancy of Die Besitzer des Erbgutes Bieber 1664 bis 1978 (owner-occupants of the Bieber family estate 1664 to 1978), only the heir and his wife being named in each generation. It has always passed to a son, presumably the eldest, until the last generation mentioned in the book when a Bieber daughter born in 1931 married a Pfalzgraf, who became the Besitzer. If I had known about its existence when I was in Niederaula, I would have asked directions to the family home and taken a look at it.

* * *

When Katharine Elisabeth married Johann Valentin Nuhn, her name is spelled in the church record as Catharine. Perhaps her death could be found if one had enough time to look at the church records; however, it is not entered in the Family register compiled from the Niederaula church records, so one can guess that she was living in another parish with a married child at the time of her death.

Siblings, surname Bieber

Illegible; born and died 1757

[Katharina Elisabeth]

Johann Philip; born 1761, died 1762

Johann Jakob; born 1763, died 1770

Johann Heinrich born 1766, died 1779

Johann Jacob, the heir; born 1769, died 1831, married Elisabeth Boss; issue

Elisabeth; born 1772, confirmed 1786

Magdalena; born 1775, confirmed 1789

Parents are Numbers 466 and 467.

234 – Franz THAMER was born 26 June 1742 at Mengshausen, to Johannes Thamer and his wife, Martha Elisabeth Albert. He was a farmer. On 16 June 1764, he married Elisabeth Thielen at Mengshausen; he died there on 12 November 1787, and was buried there.

Parents are Numbers 468 and 469.

235 – Elisabeth THIELEN was born 22 February 1745 at Mengshausen to Johannes Thielen, whose wife’s name is not stated on the birth record. When her daughter Angelika married Johann Bartol Nuhn, she signed “XXX” to the marriage contract; most women of the community were illiterate. She died 26 February 1815 about 1 o’clock in the morning at Mengshausen, and was buried there on 28 February 1815.

Father is Number 470.

236 – Johannes BÄTZ was born 16 April 1750 at Niederaula to Johann Georg Bätz and

\(^{290}\) See footnote to the biography of Person Number 29.
Katharine Gross, before their marriage. He was confirmed in 1764, and was a linen weaver. He married Katharine Elisabeth Heiderich between 22 August 1772 when she bore him a prelegitimate son, and 4 December 1773 when their first legitimate child was born. He died at Niederaula on 1 May 1791 and was buried there.

**Siblings, surname Bätz**

[Johannes]
Johann George born 24 September 1753, confirmed 1768
Elisabeth born 1756 died 1757
Elisabeth born 1758; married 1784; issue
Anna Barbara born 1761, unmarried, died 1833; perhaps had illegitimate issue
Johann Georg born 1764
E? Katharine born 1770

Parents are Numbers 472 and 473

237 – Katharina Elisabeth HEIDERICH was born 25 June 1743 at Niederaula, and was confirmed there in 1757. She died 23 December 1813 at Niederaula, and was buried there.

Unproven parentage is explored below.

Mr. Eugene G. Brenner, 2280 Durham Drive, Wheaton, Illinois 60187, submitted the following ancestry for Katharina to the Latter Day Saints genealogical information exchange forum, Ancestral File™. I wrote to him on 1 March 2000, asking if he was willing to share any documentation he possesses for this information, but he did not answer. I have no opinion about whether the ancestry he states is correct or not, except that the death date given for Valentin Schlotaclzawer is obviously wrong; but I’m placing his submission here because it might form the groundwork for further research:

**Ninth Heiderich Generation**

474 – Andreas Heiderich, born 1706, married 23 February 1730, died 17 January 1761, all events in Germany.

475 – Anna Maria Schlotaclzawer, born 14 April 1711, died 11 April 1761, in Germany.

**Siblings, surname Schlotaclzawer**

Johann Balthaser born 1703 died 1705
Anna Eva born 26 May 1706 died 16 Apr 1772
Johann Konrad born 29 Jan 1709 died 30 October 1739
[Anna Maria]

**Tenth Heiderich Generation**

950 – Valentin Schlotaclzawer, born 1671 at Kleba, Germany, died 9 July 1914 [sic: 1714?] married 29 December 1702 at Niederaula.
951 – Anna Thomas born 1676, died 26 April 1751, in Germany.

The Niederaula book mentions one Heintz Heiderich, who was responsible along with Caspar Bolender, for administration of the local old folks' home during the years 1596 to 1600. Whether this is our ancestor or not is subject to question, but it seems likely.

238 – Johann Jost SCHÄFER’s biography is printed as Person Number 226 above.

239 – Anna Catharina ZULAUF’s biography is printed as Person Number 227 above.

240 – Nicolaus SCHILLING was born 3 August 1743 (date calculated from his death age) at Schartau in the Altmark, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany, to Hans Schilling and his wife Anna Dorothea née Mertens.

He married Anna Dorothea Lüders on 20 September 1768 at Schartau. The couple likely had more children than the one who is known to me.

He was a farmer, and the family lived at the Schilling Hof in Schartau. Descendants live there at the present time (2005).

Nicolaus died on 18 December 1821 at Schartau and was buried there on 20 December.

Parents are Numbers 480 and 481.

241 – Anna Dorothea LÜDERS was born about 2 April 1746 (calculated from death age) at Hämerten, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany, the eldest daughter of Friedrich Wilhelm Lüders and his wife, whose name is not known.

She married Nicolaus Schilling at Schartau in the Altmark (now Sachsen-Anhalt) on 20 September 1768, and bore at least one child to him.

Anna Dorothea died on 10 October 1816 at Schartau, her funeral and burial occurring on 13 October.

Father is Number 482.

244 – Johann Friederich SCHULZE, according to his marriage record, was the son of Joachim Schulze of Faulenhorst, now in Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany. By occupation he was a wheelwright and cottager—a cottager has a small house with space for a garden and a little land for a cow or two and other animals.

See footnote to the biography of Person Number 29.
He married Anna Catharine Seeger on 30 October 1754 at Schinne in the Altmark, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt. The couple, who probably lived at Schinne, had one known child.

I wasn't able to find death information.

Father is Number 488.

245 – Anna Catharine SEEGER was born to Erdmann Seger and his wife whose name is not known, at Schinne in the Altmark, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany. Documentation of her birth, which I believe was 3 November 1733, is found in the Schinne church records. However, when I researched the family, the records were archived in a private home, and no copy machine was available. I took a picture with my camera, but the resulting print is hard to read.

She married Johann Friedrich Schulze at Schinne on 30 October 1754, and bore him one known child.

I was unable to find her death record, which is not to say that it cannot be found. I simply didn’t have the fortitude to continue searching when I felt like I was imposing on the family in whose home the records were kept.

Father is Number 490.

246 – Christian Friedrich LOUDON was a citizen of Osterburg in the Altmark, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany. He was cabinetmaker there at the time of his daughter Charlotte Sophie Loudon’s marriage to Christian Schulz in 1801.

Parents have not been identified.

252 – Jürgen DEIPENAU married Maria, the widow of a Mr. Stephen, on Easterday, 3 April 1763 at Klein Mahner, Duchy of Braunschweig, now Niedersachsen, Germany.

The couple became the parents of twins, perhaps other children. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

253 – Maria __________, whose maiden name is not known, married a Mr. Stephen. Widowed, she married Jürgen Deipenau on Easter Day, 3 April 1763. She bore twins to Deipenau in 1764 and perhaps they had other children, but only one sibling survivor, his twin, was listed when son Heinrich Jürgen died in 1814.

Parents have not been identified.
Illustration Number 154: Gravestone of Francis Poindexter at the Poindexter Family Cemetery near the Shallow Ford of the Yadkin River in Forsyth County, North Carolina. The stone is covered with lichen and not legible. He was born 9 Dec 1764 and died 21 March 1802.

Illustration Number 155: Jane Pattillo Poindexter's gravestone, beside that of her husband, Francis. She was born 30 May 1760 and died 8 January 1826. Her signature is from her husband's 1802 estate papers.

Illustrations Number 186: Signatures of Joseph Adair, Jr. Upper example is from a 1779 petition in Laurens County, South Carolina. The lower one is from his 1812 Last Will and Testament.

New information has come to light since I described information about Person Number 372, Joseph Adair, Sr. as 'uncertain' on page 367. I now believe that the Joseph, Sr., whose biography appears there, is almost certainly the father of our Joseph, Jr., and his signature will appear among the Ninth Generation Illustrations.

Illustration Number 230: Signature of Johannes Vollmar (he writes 'Volmer') as a witness to the civil birth registration of his great-granddaughter, Sabina Ritter, in 1810.

Illustration Number 232: Signature of Johann Valentin Nuhn from his son Wilhelm's 1833 marriage contract.
NINTH GENERATION

288 – William ROBINSON was probably born about 1700. Nothing has been proven to my satisfaction about parents, birthdate or birthplace. He was a farmer, and may have died in 1732 or 1733.

Some believe that his father was Anthony Robinson the son of John Robinson and that both were drowned at Egg Island in York County, Virginia on 7 April 1737, and “taken up and buried on 7 May 1737”. Mary, perhaps née Starky, is the name given for Anthony’s wife; but others state that an earlier wife, Jane, was William’s mother, and give a firm date of 20 August 1705 for William’s birth. Proof may be available that a William Robinson was born on that date to Anthony and Jane; however, proving that he is the same William Robinson who married Catherine Taylor presents the problem.

Records created in connection with a lawsuit filed in 1774 by his eldest son David Robinson in Fauquier County, Virginia, answer some questions about this family, but since not all relationships are clear, the statements also create more questions. The surname is written Robinson, Roberson and Robertson in these papers. John K. Gott researched the family, and John Blankenbaker transcribed the court documents. Several blanks appear in the court record, some remaining blank and some having been filled in, apparently later (but we don’t know how much later) with a different pen and in different handwriting. Portions that I consider pertinent follow:

“...That Wm. Robertson your orators [i.e. David Robinson’s] Father departed this life on or about the _____ day of _____ seventeen hundred and _____ leaving a Personal estate consisting of Stock furniture & tools & utensils of husbandry & a crop of corn and tobacco & left Catherine his widow one of the Defts to this bill of complaint & leaving your orator his eldest
son & heir at Law & anfourther [sic] children viz Ann Frances Joseph & Wm Robertson other Defts to this bill of complaint. That the said Catherine after the death of your orators Father possessed herself of his Estate & entemaried with John Rector who is since dead but during the Coverture converted the estate of your orators Father to his own use no administration of the same ever having been obtained or Inventory taken and your orator further charges that in his minority he worked for the said John Rector like a slave & had no education given him & when he attained his full age which was preceding the death of the said John Rector he applied for his distributive share of his deceased Fathers estate, but was told that none of it remained or at least that it was so mixed & blended with the said John Rectors estate that it could not be known or distinguished & therefore no satisfaction ever made... ?

David goes on to say that he believes his siblings received some small satisfaction for their claims against their father’s estate, and therefore join with his mother to defeat and defraud him out of his share.

Catherine Rector then replies; her answers take the form of a deposition rather than questions and answers given in open court. Those blanks appearing the record, which have been filled in later in a different hand and with a different pen are underscored below.

“This defendant now and at all times saving and reserving to herself all and every exception to the manifold untruths and uncertainties in the Complainants Bill contained, for answer thereto, or so much thereof, as she is advised is material for the [sic: her?] to answer unto she answereth and saith that she admit [sic] that she was intermarried with William Robertson the complain[an]ts father who died about the 15th day of April in the year of our Lord 1723 & by whom she had the Complainant and the four other children mentioned in the Bill that the said William upon his death bed requested, that Charles Taylor this defendants father should take into his possession what personal estate he left, pay his debts, and raise his children out of it. That accordingly after the said Williams death the said Charles Taylor possessed himself of what there was, & took the children home with him. That in no very long time after [emphasis mine] this defendant intermarried with the said John Rector, and thereupon they took the complain[an]t & the defendants other children home with them, but to the best of her recollection no part of the said William Robertsons personal estate, which, if any remained, was retained by the said Charles Taylor. That all of the said William Robertsons personal estate that came to her hands, or the hands of the said John Rector, to the best of her remembrance, were three wild hogs, which the said Charles Taylor agreed her said husband John Rector might take, if he could find. She says that the personal estate left by her said husband William Robertson was very inconsiderable... She admits her husband John Rector bred the complainant to honest industry, from which, if he has not been benefited, it has been his own fault. She denies all combinations without that etc, and prays to be hence dismissed with her costs on this behalf wrongfully sustained etc.”

This is either a part of the court minutes, written by a clerk, or a copy of her deposition also written by a clerk, and Catharine’s “signature” is in the same handwriting as the rest of the document.

In Beyond Germanna Volume 2, Number 1, John K. Gott analyzed statements made in the suit, and concluded that the death date of William Robinson, one of the filled-in blanks, is incorrect. It is possible that the digits are transposed, should have been 1732,
or that the year should have been 1733. I cannot help but wonder if Catharine was asked about dates, supplied the date of her marriage to Robinson, and it somehow got entered into the blank as Robinson’s death date.

In Volume 6, Number 6 of Beyond Germanna, John P. Alcock supplied further analysis of the Robinson suit. He examined deeds and other records and set forth parameters for Catharine’s childbearing years:

1. John Rector seems to be the John born in 1711 to Jacob Rector. There is an unsourced statement that John Rector and Catharine Fishback were married in March 1731; whether this was Old Style or New Style is not given. Catharine was living in March 1733/34 when her father, John Fishback, wrote his will; it is assumed that she died soon after that, leaving John Rector free to marry Catherine (Taylor) Robinson soon after her first husband’s death.

2. Charles Taylor is known to have died in 1740. His daughter Catherine was certainly married to Rector before that date.

3. Joseph Robinson’s age was estimated, based upon the fact that he was of age and paying poll tax in 1759, estimating his son Benjamin’s age at death and Joseph’s age at Benjamin’s birth. The estimated birth year of Joseph is 1726, making a good case for his parents’ marriage about 1723 (his brother David was the eldest).

4. For William and Catherine Robinson to have had 5 children, Alcock estimates that they were married about nine years. He seems not to have considered that there could have been one or more multiple births, but again, a 1723 marriage and a 1732 or 1733 death for William fits into the scheme.

5. Charles Rector is believed to be the fifth child of John Rector. He was born 24 April 1742 (unsourced), and the time fits perfectly, for Catherine to have borne Henry, Daniel Jacob and Charles to John Rector between a 1734 or 1735 marriage and that date. John Rector, Jr., John’s first child, was almost certainly born of his marriage to Catharine Fishback.

Alcock concluded that William Robinson and Catherine Taylor married about 1723. Five children were born before his death in 1732 or 1733.

Parents have not been identified.

289 – Catherine TAYLOR was the daughter of Charles Taylor, if the filled-in blank contained in the lawsuit papers (see Person Number 288) can be believed. In the register of the North Farnham Parish in Fauquier County Virginia, the following is found:


This is almost certain to be the Catherine Taylor who married William Robinson and John Rector.

She bore five children to William Robinson, and certainly bore five and probably eight children to John Rector.

She was still living in 1787 when she made a deposition in the suit, and is believed to
have died about 1789 or 1790. It was probably because she was no longer living that the suit was dismissed in 1791.

Sibling, surname Taylor
Charles, Jr.

Parents are Numbers 578 and 579.

300 – John EASLEY, Jr. was researched by Dr. Virginia Easley DeMarce\textsuperscript{292}, who states that he was probably born about 1711-1715 in Henrico County, Virginia. He was the son of John Easley and his wife Mary Benskin.

John married Joyce Allen about 1735. They were the parents of the six children named in his will; any others were almost certainly not living by the time his will was made.

His will was dated “this fourth day of One Thousand Seven Hundred and Forty Six”; one wonders if it really meant the fourth day of 1746, meaning 4 January, or the fourth day of the year if they were using the calendar that began in March, or whether the name of the month was inadvertently omitted. I personally favor the last scenario, believing that, if he was already sick and weak by January or March, he would have died early enough in the year that action to probate his Will would have been taken before August. His Will was admitted to probate on 19 August 1746 in Goochland County, Virginia.

Dr. DeMarce’s transcription of his Will follows:

“In the name of God Amen, I John Easly of Goochland County, being very sick and weak but in perfect sense and memory I give God thanks for the same Do make and ordain this my last will and Testament. first I give my soul to God as gave it to me. Secondly my body to be buried in decent manner. Thirdly I give what worldly goods it pleased God to possess me with as followeth:

“Item, I give and bequeath to my loving son, Samuel Easly, the four Hundred acres of land where I now [live] on Deep Creek to him and his Heirs forever.

“Item, I give and bequeath unto my loveing son John Easly one entry of land in Albemarle County containing four hundred acres upon the Middle River of Selah’s River between Flower’s and Teevan’s lines to him and his heirs forever.

“Item. I give and bequeath unto my loving son William Easly one entry of land in Albemarle County containing Four hundred acres upon the mountain fork of Slaih River to him and his heirs forever.

“Item. I give and bequeath unto my loving son Robert Easly one entry of land in Albemarle County containing Four Hundred acres on the main fork of Selaih River to him and his heirs forever.

“Item. I give and bequeath unto my loving son Millington Easly one entry of land in Albemarle County containing Four Hundred acres on Jone’s Eastline The side Slate River to him and his heirs forever.

\textsuperscript{292} See footnote to biography of Person Number 75.
"Item. I give and bequeath unto my daughter Judith Easley my negro man Will.

"Item. I give and bequeath unto my loving wife Joyce Easley my Horse Smoaker and her saddle and bridle. I also give her the use of a negro woman named Hannah and at her death to return to my daughter Judith. My will is that the rest of my estate shall be praised and sold and after my debts are paid the remainder to be equally divided between my loving wife and children and I appoint Tandy Walker and James Barnes Executors of this my last will and Testament.

"Witness my hand and seal this fourth day of One Thousand Seven Hundred and Forty Six.

John (X) Easley (Seal)

The witnesses were James Stafford, Thomas (X) Dupray, Easly (X) Kilpatrick and Samuel Coaker.

Dr. DeMarce found several entries in the court records pertaining to the settlement of the estate. Her book should be consulted for particulars.

By August 1748, Joyce (Allen) Easley’s father William Allen, who was guardian of the children, was ordered to appear at the “next Court then and there to Exhibit an Account of the said Orphans Estates”. In September 1748, Joel Chandler, Jr. was appointed and accepted the charge as guardian of the Easley orphans. It can certainly be assumed with some confidence that the widow Joyce Easley had married Chandler by the August court date, there being no other reason for the order to exhibit the account, other than that it was going to be turned over to Chandler.

In September 1753, the court of Cumberland County, Virginia, ordered that the Church Wardens bind out the male Easley orphans, according to law.

John Easley is doubtlessly buried in present-day Goochland or Cumberland County, Virginia, but his grave has not been found, is almost certainly not marked.

siblings, surname Easley
[John, Jr.]
William
Warham
Robert
Stephen
(probably) Daniel
(possibly) Thomas
(perhaps sisters)

Parents are Numbers 600 and 601.

301 – Joyce ALLEN was born 19 January 1719/20 in New Kent County Virginia. Her birth is recorded in the church records of St. Peter’s parish, the Church of England being the
church established by the government of that time. Her father was William Allen and her mother was Hannah, whose maiden name is not known. Hannah died about two months after Joyce’s birth.

About 1735, Joyce married John Easley, Jr. and bore him six children during the approximately eleven years of their marriage. They lived in Goochland County, Virginia, where he died in 1746. By September 1748, she had married Joel Chandler, Jr., in Cumberland County, Virginia. According to Dr. DeMarce, it is not known whether she had children from her marriage to Chandler.

Her father’s 1751 will includes the gift of £5 to “my daughter Joice Chandler”, as well as 400 acres of land to my “grandson Charles Burton and Wm. Easly”. In an article entitled Field Jefferson’s Second Wife in Tyler’s Quarterly Magazine Volume XIII, Landon C. Bell writes, “It is thought that probably it should read ‘grandsons Charles Burton and Wm. Easely’ and that the omission of the final s to the word ‘grandson’ may have been a scrivener’s mistake. The provision of the will in which they are mentioned is as follows:

“...I give and Bequeath to my grandson Charles Burton and Wm Easly four hundred acres of Land lying ...Joshua’s Creek in the County aforesaid to be Divided Equally between them both to them their Heirs and assigns forever.”

While there is no question that William Allen had a daughter Joyce, this Will is one of the few proofs found that she is the same woman who married first John Easley, Jr., and second Joel Chandler, Jr. The other proof is found in the Goochland County, Virginia court records for August 1748, when the court ordered that “William Allen Gent. Guardian to Judith, Samuel, John, William, Robert, and Millington Easley and Thos. Turpin and Jacob Mosby Gent. his Securities be Sumoned to appear at the next Court then and there to Exhibit an Account of the said Orphans Estates.” At the next court, in September 1748, Joel Chandler Jr. is “… appointed Guardian to Judith, Samuel, John, William, Robert and Millington Easley Orphans of John Easley Deceased who accepts the Charge.”

Some early genealogies give Joyce’s maiden name as Millington, because she had a son named Millington Easley. Dr. DeMarce found reference to several Millingtons mentioned in colonial records in the neighborhood, and writes, “So far, there is no evidence of a direct connection between the early Easleys and any of these Millington families. A clue might be sought in the maiden name of Hannah, wife of William Allen”.

Little is known about Joyce, other than the fact the settling of John Easley’s estate must have caused her some grief; there are a number of references in the court records to indicate this.

No death or burial information has been found for Joyce.

\[\text{\cite{footnote}}\]

\[\text{\cite{footnote}}\]
Siblings, surname Allen
  Samuel born 1713, married Martha Archer
  Judith born 1715, married Hutchings (or Hutchens) Burton
  Hannah born 1717, married James Scruggs
  [Joyce]

Halfsiblings, surname Allen, from her father’s marriage to Mary Hunt, widow of
Robert Minge
  Ann, born 1721, married a Mr. Speares
  William Hunt
  John
  Mary, died young without issue
  Valentine, born 1730, married Ann Arnold
  Susanna, born 1732, married William Soblet or Sublett, issue; married second
    Perrin Allday, no issue
  George H., born 1734
  Mary
  Philip, born 1740, married Elizabeth Coleman

Stepsiblings, surname Minge from Mary Hunt’s marriage to Robert Minge
  Tabitha
  Ann Hunt

It is certain that Joyce’s stepmother Mary Hunt Minge Allen Jefferson did not have children
with her third husband, Field Jefferson, the uncle of President Thomas Jefferson. Would
Field Jefferson’s children from his first wife Mary Frances (perhaps née Robertson), be
stepsiblings to Joyce? As many as thirteen children are sometimes attributed to this couple.
Those most frequently mentioned are Thomas, Peter Field, George, John Robertson, Mary,
Judith and Phoebe. Others named by various researchers are Sarah, Martha, Elizabeth, Allen,
Garland and James.

Parents are Numbers 602 and 603.

302 – Thomas COLEMAN was the father of Elizabeth who married Robert “Robin”
Easley. Little is known about Thomas, except that his son-in-law brought some actions
against him in court:

William Towns and Thomas Coleman & Elizabeth his wife. Suit in Chancery.

Towns and Thomas Coleman & Elizabeth his wife. Attachment is ordered.

William Towns and Thomas Coleman & Elizabeth his wife. Towns prevented from
carrying out of the state certain slaves, which are to be delivered to the persons who will
have title to them after the death of the wife of the said Thomas Coleman.
He probably died in Cumberland County, Virginia, but no burial place is known.

Parents have not been identified.

303 – Elizabeth _________ was the wife of Thomas Coleman. Nothing is really known about her, except that she lived at some time in Virginia. Her daughter Elizabeth, wife of Robert Easley, named her daughter Elizabeth Smith Easley, which makes me think that Elizabeth Coleman’s maiden name may have been Smith. This is pure conjecture on my part, and the family needs further research.

She probably died in Cumberland County, Virginia, but no burial place is known.

Parents have not been identified.

306 – Peter KISER was born in the region we now know as Germany, or at least in a place where the German language was spoken. His name was no doubt Keiser or Kaiser there. His name is spelled several ways in his own Will, and he signs with a mark—that may have been because he was “Ealing” (ailing) and too weak to write, but when he signed a deed earlier, he also signed with a mark.

There is lot that we do not know about him, including birth date, birthplace, early childhood facts, and marriage information. His Will states his occupation as “Coardwinder”, (correctly spelled cordwinder) a rather obsolete word for shoemaker.

Betty Klingman, living at Louisville, Mississippi told Annette Klingman295, who lives at Houma, Louisiana, that Peter Keiser had gold and silver mines, that he had come first to Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, thence to Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, through Hillsborough Township, South Carolina. She states that he was an immigrant from Germany. I suspect that the gold-and-silver-mine story belongs to Peter’s daughter Sarah’s husband, John Reid, Reith etc., various spellings. I do not know the source of the information on which she bases any of these statements.

Mecklenburg County, North Carolina Deed Abstracts:

Volume 6, pages 135-137: 1 April 1772, Peter Kizer to Joseph Garret, for £9 proclamation money...68 acres in Tract #2. Peter Kizer (P) (Seal) Wit: ____ Polk, Jurate. Rec. April Term 1772.

Volume 7, pages 389-391; 30 November 1773, Wm. Weatherford and wife Sarah to Peter Kizer of Meck...for £16 proclamation money...80 acres on a branch of Rocky River...Wm Weatherford (Seal) Sarah Weatherford (X) (Seal), Wit: William Mitchel, Peter Kizer (X). Prov. April Court 1774 by Peter Kizer.

Peter’s Will mentions that Elizabeth is his eldest daughter, and perhaps she is also the eldest

295 Annette Klingman’s husband’s immigrant ancestor arrived in the United States much later than the period under discussion here.
child. If by some chance she is the Elizabeth Klingmanin who came into Charleston in 1766 with two-and-a-half-year-old Andreas and on the same ship as nineteen-year-old Peter Keysher, one wonders if the rest of the family came to America after their arrival. And did older, already-married sons remain in Germany? The children are named twice in the Will in the same order, which seems to indicate birth order. The children’s names all look German to me except Sarah and possibly Rachel, the two apparent youngest.

Nothing in the Will indicates whether his wife Fanny is the mother of all, some or any of his children.

"Peter Keizer's Will Copied Requitum in book D 1784 Page 127"

"In the name of God amin. I petter Kiseyr of the State of noarth carolinea and County of macklinburg Coardwinder being for some time Ealing in body and finding myself still on the declining hand and as it heath pleased an alwise Got to bliss me with a numrious fammaly and a littel of the good things of this life and finding myself of a sound disposing mind and memory think proper to make this my Last Will and testiment and first I recommand my soul to almighty God who give it beging He would be graeically pleased to accept the saime for the mirits Sake of the Ever-blissed Jesus in whom I disire to trust and with respect to my worldly affirs first I allow all my Just and Lawful Debts to be payed I bequaith unto my wife fannie Kesyer the one third of all my movabel Estate together with a beed and furnitur and hir spining whiel her wearing apperl and seaddel and from the mouth of the Stillhouse branch where it runs into the river and forty roods from the said mouth of the branch up said branch then forty roods downwards requing forty roods of Said river till teen acers are completed Inclu din house [horse?] barn and orchard and likewise the one third of all the rest [reent?] of the remaind of the plantation as long as she is a widdo but no longer and a boot Jack and my big bibel duering hir widdo houde. Item I will or order that my mill on rocky river and the Land adgioying Said mill be sold in Six months after my deceess and all my other moveabel Estate to be put to publick Seal as well as the above named mill and at the death or maigage of fannia my wife I order and authierise my Exactor to put the plantation I live on at this deate to publick Seal and what Ever it is Sold for I allow it to be devided in the following mammar that is to say I allow or order that all of the movabeall Estate and the prise of the mill I order that it be divided in Eight Equal Shearrs between my Loving Sons and daughters Viz Elisabeth Clingingman my Eoldest Daughter peeter kiser margreet teatter George kyser fridrick kyser Cateran keyzer Sarah kyser and reachel kyeser and the Same Equal divide of all the money that the above named place at the death of my wife or maigage to be divided and an Equal divide of all rents as above to my loving sons and daughters that is my loving daughte Elisabeth Clingman my son petter kyser margret tatter George kyser fridrick kyzer Catren Kyzer Sarah dyexer reachel kyezzer all my beloved Sons and daughters Itam I bequaith unto my wellbeloved son petter Kyezer my big bibel at the mariage or dathe of my wife Itam I order that all my just debts be Justly dischargid with my funral Chargys Itam I nomnate and apoint my trusty and well beloved brother in law George Germon and my trusty frind William Heans to be my only Exector of This my last will and testament and do by these presents revock disanoll all other wills whatsoever acknowledging this to be my only Last will and testament Sinned with my hand and Sealed with my Seal and deated this fifth day of aprile in the year of our Lord one thousand Seven hundred and Eighty

296 I have no idea why the year is crossed out where the identifying information is written on the back of one of the pages.
"Sinned Selled and acknowledged
as the last will and testament of ye above
named Petter kyzer in presence of
Conrad Hartwig 297

hir
Jean X Germen
Mark

Archibald White Jurat"

I suppose one can safely assume that Archibald White, Jurat, did the writing of this Will; as one Kiser descendant wrote, “Didn’t they ever hear of punctuation?”

There has been some conjecture about George “Germon”, named “my brother-in-law” in Peter’s Will. Known to be living in the same neighborhood was a George Garmon, certainly the same man. I have seen a statement that Fanny’s maiden name was Garmon, because George was Peter’s brother-in-law. I submit that a brother-in-law could be

a. The brother of one’s spouse,
b. The husband of one’s sister,
c. The husband of one’s spouse’s sister.

Therefore, no real conclusion can be drawn from this, except that either Peter or Fanny was related either to George Garmon or his wife (who may have been the Jean Gerraen who witnessed the will).

The names Garmann and Gahrmann are found various places in German-speaking Europe. If German was their surname, it may be a direct translation of the name Deutsch, also prevalent in Europe.

If Peter married Fanny after his arrival in America, and she was the one related to the Garmons, finding them in Germany wouldn’t be helpful. Some of George Garmon’s descendants are working on finding their roots in the old country.

Perhaps the crossed-out year, 1784, is the year of his death. If so, he lived quite a long time in his declining condition, certainly a possibility.

He is no doubt buried in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, near his old plantation home on the Rocky River, but no grave has been located.

Parents have not been identified.

307 - Fannie __________. To conclude that Fannie (or Fannia), the beloved wife Peter

297 Name is written in Old German Script. When Brent Holcomb compiled abstracts of Mecklenburg County wills, he saw this name as “Samuel ____”
Kiser mentions in his Will is the mother of his children is, as far as I am concerned, making too much of a leap. It is certainly possible, but it is also possible that one or more other wives of Peter bore some, all, or none of his children. It is really correct to say that we know nothing at all about the mother of our ancestress Elizabeth (Keiser) Clingman.

The German names 'Francesca' and 'Susanna' have been suggested as names from which the nickname 'Fannie' may have been derived. If we ever find the family in Germany we will have a better chance of drawing conclusions.

We cannot even guess that Elizabeth’s mother is buried on the North American continent, but it is probably safe to assume that Fannie is buried somewhere in North Carolina or other state where one of her married children lived. There is a woman over 45 years old on the 1790 census, living with the Alexander Clingman family. Brumfield suggests that it may be Elizabeth’s mother, but there is no proof. The enumerator was supposed to list separately persons living in the household but having different surnames. The rules were not followed, and the lady may or may not be Clingman’s mother-in-law.

Parents have not been identified.

308 - Thomas POINDEXTER was born about 1733 in Louisa County, Virginia, to Thomas Poindexter and his wife Sarah, whose surname is unknown.

Nothing is known about his early life. On 26 June 1755, he married Susan Hughes in Cumberland County, Virginia. Susan and their infant son died about a year later.

He bought two parcels of land consisting of 90 acres each, in 1758. He bought two tracts of land in Goochland County in January 1760; Nimrod Poindexter was a witness to one of the deeds.

Thomas married Elizabeth Pledge, with consent of her father William Pledge which reads as follows:

“As Thomas Poindexter & my Daughter Elisabeth have agreed to Marry I have given my Consent as Witness my hand and Seal this Twelfth day of Feb’r 1760.

“Wm. Pledge”

Witnesses to the document include A Capt. Wood (I can’t read his first name), William Pledge Junr., and another Pledge whose first name I cannot read because the left side of the document is missing. This last may possibly be Martha Pledge, who did not marry until 1761.

The couple was married in St. James Northam Parish, Goochland County, Virginia; the marriage bond was dated 12 February 1760. The wedding occurred on 13 February, according to the International Genealogical Index and to Hattie Poindexter, writing in The
Heritage of Yadkin County. I have seen other dates for the marriage within the month, and believe that the thirteenth is correct but it could differ by a few days. Twelve children were born to the couple.

Thomas sold a parcel of land on 19 February 1760, but the transaction was evidently not completed until 15 April 1760, when his wife Elizabeth relinquished her dower.

The land purchased in 1758 was sold on 13 January 1762, and Elizabeth relinquished her dower on 18 May 1762.

When the Goochland County court sat in September 1765, it was ordered that Thomas Poindexter pay Nimrod Poindexter for three days’ attendance and for coming and going sixty miles, in the matter of the suit of David Clarkson. The amount that Thomas had to pay Nimrod was set at 430 pounds of tobacco.

The two transactions containing Nimrod Poindexter’s name may indicate that he and Thomas had a fairly close relationship.

By 1772, Thomas was said to be “of Carolina” so he must have moved his family there in late 1771 (the fifth child was baptized in Goochland County, Virginia in November 1771) or early in 1772. Hattie Poindexter says that he bought 443 acres from the County of Rowan in April of 1771, for £320 “lawful money of Virginia”. Other land grants were later added to his holdings there. The land lay in Surry County after it was cut off from Rowan, and another county line change placed the land in Yadkin, where it is now (2002).

This land is now called the Baillie Bottoms and is near the present town of East Bend. Thomas and Elizabeth are said by Brumfield to have built a log house on the west slope of the bluff, and there they lived with their large family.

Thomas was a member of the North Carolina Militia, which served with the Continental Army at times during the Revolutionary War, and is said to have fought at the Battle of Kings Mountain and at The Cowpens, battles that helped to turn the tide in favor of the Patriots in the southern campaign.

Mrs. Haden states that he was paid for expeditions against the Cherokee in 1775 and again in 1776.

Thomas Poindexter’s name can be found in ledgers relating to Revolutionary War pay, in the North Carolina State Archives in Raleigh. The dates I found were December 1776, when he was allowed £33 Specie; April 1777, £4 and 4 shillings Specie; and May 1790, £400 Specie. Since no genealogical information is contained in the ledgers, it seemed fruitless to search further.

298 See footnote with the biography of Person Number 76.
299 See footnote with the biography of Person Number 38.
300 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 309.
Thomas Poindexter died intestate on 1 January 1807, after which the Surry County Court ordered the property divided for Elizabeth and the children.

There is a copy of an 1817 document in his son Francis’ estate papers, in which some of the children petition against the others, including Francis’ heirs (because he is deceased) that the court appoint commissioners to lay off and divide two tracts of land possessed by Thomas Poindexter. Both tracts lay along the Yadkin River. The petition prays that the commissioners make a fair division of the land, as nearly equal in value as possible.

There are 97 documents in Thomas’ estate papers, all of which I copied from the microfilm. Some seem to me to be without importance. I have abstracted some of them and transcribed a few of them below, the estate inventory being the most interesting to me.

“Surry County, Feb. the 11th 1807

“An Inventory of the Estate of Thomas Poindexter Deceased as to the Perishable property, taken by the Administrators of said Estate—

1 Waggon Harness
8 Head of Horses
12 Head of Cattle
A parcel of Corn & Rye [rye?, rice?] the Quantity unknown
2 Stills and Worm Tubs
Still [illegible] Dipper & Chimney Shutters[?]
7 Singling Cask & A Quantity of Stands
Hogsheads and some other Casks
1 Anvil & Bick[?] Iron
1 Bellis [bellows?]Vice
4 Hammers
2 pair of Smiths Tongs & a few other small Articles Belonging to the shop
A parcel of Coles [coal or charcoal for use in the blacksmith shop?] the Quantity not known
A parcel of Cyder
4 gallons of Brandy
3 Scythes & Cradles
1 Scythe Blade
1 Cutting box and 2 Knives
1 Wheat Pan? [Fan?]
3 Feather bed & Furniture
3 Tables
1 Chest
1 Trunk
4 Flax Wheels
2 Cotton Wheels
5 pair of Cords? [Cards?]
1 Safe
1 Cupboard
1 Loom
Some Slays [Sleighs?]
2 Smoothing Irons
1 pair Stilliards
2 pair of Brass Scales
2 Coffee Pots
1 Tea Kettle
1 Tea pot
1 Coffee Mill
6 Cups & Sausers
5 Tea Spoons
1 Trivit
1 Spice Mortar & pessel
1 Hatchet
1 Set of Candle Moulds
3 Candle sticks
1 Lanturn
1 Case & 3 Tongs
1 Cannister
1 stone Jug
1 Cotton gin
1 Jointer
2 Bails or Boxes
1 Trumpet
1 stone Butter pot
2 Tin Tumblers
3 Earthen Jars
2 Do [ditto] Cocks
2 Do Dishes
2 Do Basons
6 White Plates
2 Do Mugs
9 Knives & Forkes
5 Tablespoons
3? Pewter Plates
2 Do Dishes
2 Do Basons
1 Tin Quart & Funnel
[illegible, crossed out]
1 Bottle
1 Decanter
1 Marking Iron
4 Gimblits
1 pair fire Tongs
2 Washing Tubs
1 Piggin
3 Iron Pots
2 Dutch Ovens
1 Fishpan
3 Pot Tramels
3 pair of Pot hooks
Heywoods Manuel Geography & some other books
2 Shotguns
2 wheat Riddle
1 Flour Sifter
7 Chairs
7 Fraims
1 Brass Cock [clock?]
1 Square Rule & Compass
2 Saw Files
1 Test[?] adds [adz]
2 Augurs
2 Chisels
2 Saw Files
1 half Bushel
1 half Peck
1 Spade
1 Plane
3 Harrow hoes
2 3 Gallon Cages [casks?]}
2 Broad Axes
1 Mortasing Ax
[crossed out, illegible]
2 Shovel Molds
3 pair of Hames
1 Crows [?]
1 hand Saw
1 Grind Stone
1 Drawing Knife
2 Clevises
4 Pole Axes
6 Hoes
1 Mad ax [?]
2 Wire sifters
1 Jack Screw
1 Tar bucket
1 horse bucket
1 Barrel with some T???
5 Stands of Bees
14 Empty hives
1 Branding Iron
1 honey Knife
1 Corking Iron & Taper bit
1 Piece of Iron
1 Wooden Square Standard
1 Cross Cut Saw
1 Log Chain
1 Powdering Tub
1 small Tub
1 Coopers Adds
1 Swingletree
1 Saddle
some flax in the straw
some Cotton
3 Iron Wedges
24 Head of Hogs
1 Pair of snuffers
2 Single Collers
2 Horse Collars
2 Cow Bell
2 Reap Hooks
1 Halter Chane
1 Pare of Sheep shears [not sold]
1 Curry Come not sold
18 Nigroes small and Great part of which are said to be given away
Also notes, accounts & obligations as follows [stated in pounds, shillings and pence]
Account against Tho’ Longino 1-16-6
One note against Booth Napper [?; then something about Rockford] 1-15-0
One note against Richard Bradly 18-?-?
One note against Lewis Conner 1-0-7
Obligation against Job Martin 315-2-[illegible word] August 27th 1772 Credit by ditto
[Job Martin] 141-3-10
Note against William Apperson 16-0-0, credit September 1st 1796 2-10-0

"[signed] Elisabeth Poindexter, Thos W. P. Poindexter, John George Poindexter,
Administrators"

[on the same paper as the above inventory] "Articles Laid out of the Widow by Nicholas Horn,
Job Martin & Isaiah Coe the 10th of March 1807:

to 20 Barrels of Corn
to ? Bu. of Wheat
to 300 Wt. of beacon
to 2 shotes
to 1 Cow & Calf
to 1 Beef
to 1 Bed & furniture sted & Cord
to 6 Pewter plates
to 6 spoons
to 1 dish
to 1 Bason
to 6 Knives & forks
to 1 pot & Dutch Oven
to 2 pair of pot hooks
to 1 pot Tramel
to 1 Table & 3 Chairs
[crossed out] cups & sausers
to 10 Gallons of Brandy
to 1 Washing tub
to 1 Mou[l] Sifter
to 1 Chest
to 2 hoes
the cotton & flax

"I certify the above to be Just & true."
A metes and bounds description of the real estate owned by Thomas Poindexter is also found, and there is evidence that the property was divided and that the children received portions as nearly equal as possible. One document mentions the “mansion house” that is part of Elizabeth’s dower.

Another document lists Elizabeth’s accounting of her provisions, plus expenses for attending court including miles traveled, “3 days to Germanton” and “9 days finding the Jury and Horses”. “Finding” seems to be used here as a form of the verb ‘to found’, meaning to provide food and accommodations. I’m fascinated by the obsolete and quaint English in these early-nineteenth-century documents.

A number of minor transactions between family members are documented in the court records. I infer that they were being exceedingly careful not to step on one another’s toes or that some of them sensed that the others were going after more than their share of the estate. The money amounts are small by today’s standards, but they may represent more value than I can comprehend.

During the February 1807 Surry County Court term, Elizabeth Poindexter, Thomas’ widow, paid eight shillings for her “adm on the estate of Thomas Poindexter dec’d.”

On 18 January 1810, Archie Poindexter signed the following:

“Rec’d of Elizabeth Poindexter on Acc’ of a bond which I had in my hands against Thomas Poindexter Dec’d for the sum of seventy one Dollars the sum of Twenty five bushels of Rise at five shillings hard money p[er] Bushel which there has been a Receipt given before which is lost or miss laid.”

The Surry County court, February term 1807, made the order below, signed by J°. Williams Clerk by William Williams, DC (Deputy Clerk).

“Ordered by the Court that Nicholas Horn Esq., Job Martin & Isaiah Coe lay out & allot off to Elizabeth Poindexter widow & Relict of Thomas Poindexter Dec’d one years maintainece agreeable to Act of Assembly & make report to next Court.”

The widow Elizabeth Poindexter’s actual signature appears on the following undated document:

“This day came Elizabeth Poindexter before [the court] and made oath that She has paid Theophilus Lacy Forty Shillings that She is not Receipted for on Acc’ of the Estate of Tho’s Poindexter Dec’d.”

The Surry County Sheriff signed a receipt for Elizabeth, for 1806 taxes. The amount of money can’t be read. Jesse Johnson gave Elizabeth an undated receipt for the tax due for 1807, the amount being 86-6, which is probably pounds and shillings, but could be shillings and pence.
A document spoiled by ink blots and partially illegible states that the amount of the sale of perishable property of the estate of Thomas Poindexter Dec'd sold March the 12th, 13th & 14th, 1807 is £462, 10 shillings and sixpence. The clerk’s list of the items sold and the names of their buyers didn’t find its way into the estate papers.

On 4 August 1798, Thomas Poindexter himself signed the following note, with William Poindexter as witness, which became a part of his own estate papers:

"With Interest from the Date I promise to pay or Cause to be paid unto John Coonrod or his Assigns the Just sum of Sixty Two Dollars and Sixty Four sent[s] the same being for Value Rec. of him. Witness my hand and seal the day and Date above written.

Interestingly enough, someone, presumably John Coonrod, in April 1802, writes in German, on the back of the paper, that he has received twenty five dollars on the note. Jacob Conrad writes his receipt in English on 6 May 1807, for twenty-eight dollars. In a third handwriting but unsigned, dated 23 February 1809, there is a receipt for thirty-three and a half dollars. ‘Coonrod’ is a fair rendition of what an English-speaker would have heard when Conrad said his own name in German. It may be possible to figure out the interest rate, since the dates and amounts of the repayments are known, but I didn’t try. Of the $86.50 that was repaid, $23.86 was interest, part of which was calculated over a period of about 1½ years.

I found the wording of the following particularly interesting. It is dated 1808, an illegible month, the 9th day, and signed by Thos. Williams Jun., with A. Hutchens as witness:

"Rec'd of Elizabeth Poindextor Six Dollars and three quarters [sic] in full of all accounts from the beginning of the World to this Day I Say Recd by me."

The following document was signed by N. Horn, Job Martin and Isaiah Coe on 10 March 1807:

"Agreeable to an order of Court to us, [illegible, partially covered by ink blot] we Nicholas Horn Job Martin & Isaiah Coe have proceeded to allot to Elizabeth Poindexter Widow, to wit to Twenty Barrils of Corn & three Bushels of wheate to three Hundred weight of Beacon [bacon] Two Shotes [shoats] to one Cow & Calf to one beef to all the Cotton & flax that Returned in the inventory to half Bushel of Salt one pound of pepper ten pounds of Shuger five pounds of Coffey one pound of Spice one pound of ginger together Stands of Rice[?]."

Elizabeth was evidently in charge of the farm and obliged to provide for the slaves, but had to get permission to use the supplies that were on hand when her husband died. These items, plus some non-expendable articles, are also mentioned in the estate inventory.

Joseph Williams, Clerk of the Court of Surry County, North Carolina, signed an order on the second Monday in February in the XL6th Year of Independence of the said State, Anno Domini 1822, addressed to the sheriff, requiring him to bring Isaac McCannon
and Daniel Scot to the courthouse at Rockford on the second Monday in May next, to answer Thomas William Pledge Poindexter and John George Poindexter, surviving administrators of the estate of Thomas Poindexter, to render to them a sum of money which they owe and unjustly detain. Elizabeth Poindexter, who had been an Administratrix, had died in 1816.

In 1991, Ben and I visited Miss Eugenie and Miss Catherine Poindexter, the fifth generation of Poindexters (according to Hattie Poindexter) to live on the Poindexter land in the Baillie Bottoms. They gave us directions for driving along the side of a pasture or field and parking near a barn, so that we could climb up the bluff to the cemetery where Thomas Poindexter lies buried. The path, fairly well marked when we were there, meanders up the side of the bluff, where ferns and other vegetation grow in abundance. The path itself was not overgrown, however, and we had no trouble finding the graveyard on the flat area at the top. Later we found that the cemetery can be reached without making this picturesque climb, from the home occupied (1991) by Kenneth and Kay Alley on Apperson Road about 3 miles east of East Bend, North Carolina, off Highway 67, between East Bend and the Yadkin River Bridge.

A military stone has been erected on Thomas’ grave. Surmounted by a cross, it reads,

"THOMAS
POINDEXTER JR.
REV. WAR
CAPT NC MILITIA
1733
1807"

Siblings, surname Poindexter; birth order uncertain
William, married Elizabeth Chisholm
Frances, married Vincent Tullock and Peter Apperson
[Thomas]
Bond Veale
Elizabeth, married Francis Pledge

See Illustration Number 306.

Parents are Numbers 616 and 617.

309 - Elizabeth PLEDGE, called ‘Bettie’, was born to William Pledge and his wife Ann Radford (but Elizabeth Donohoo in the family lore) about 1740 in Goochland County, Virginia.

I will first explore this whole ‘Cherokee maiden Elizabeth Donohoo’ story because I don’t want to leave anything out and don’t want anyone to think that I didn’t know the story. I am printing it in Courier typeface, to distinguish it from anything else in the book.
Brumfield\textsuperscript{301} writes,

"As a little child, she [Elizabeth Pledge] saw few white men, though her mother and father and grandmother were white (her father traded among the Indians). As a girl she saw her homeland fill up quickly with the white settlers."

A. H. (Hal) Jarratt, Jr., quoted in The Heritage of Yadkin County\textsuperscript{302} tells about Bettie’s Cherokee ancestry, reciting from family lore which seems to have been much embroidered upon with the passage of time.

Perhaps Bettie Pledge had Cherokee blood, but I’m afraid the story of her father’s marriage, as told by Hal Jarratt, is more fiction than truth. (Recall that William Pledge is said by Brumfield\textsuperscript{303} to have been a trapper and Indian trader.)

Jarratt thinks that it was on one of his trapping and trading trips that he encountered the family of the Indian Donohoo or Donnaha, and his wife, whose name is given as Elizabeth (sometimes Mary). Bill fell in love with their daughter Elizabeth, whom he married about 1735-39. No record of the marriage has been found, and Jarratt, quoted in The Heritage of Yadkin County\textsuperscript{304} believes that they were married in a tribal rite.

I am giving the Donohoo ancestry from the family lore here, but there is absolutely no truth in it as far as I know. I don’t want my descendants to think I didn’t know about it, in case there comes a time when more information comes to light:

\textbf{Tenth Donohoo Generation}

\textbf{618 William PLEDGE} [his marriage to Ann Redford is on record.]

\textbf{619 Elizabeth DONOHOO} is the name given for Bill Pledge’s wife. Nothing except lore is available concerning her life, and Brumfield\textsuperscript{305} believed that she lived with her family at a place where few white men were seen.

\textbf{Eleventh Donohoo Generation}

\textsuperscript{301} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 38.
\textsuperscript{302} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 76.
\textsuperscript{303} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 38.
\textsuperscript{304} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 76.
\textsuperscript{305} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 38.
1238 DONOHOO, son of a Cherokee Chief

1239 Elizabeth or Mary WENTWORTH. The Wentworth name has been latched onto because it was used for a middle name for Bettie’s son Thomas and has been carried down in the family.

Twelfth Donohoo Generation

2476 Chief DONOHOO, a Cherokee. Jarratt states that the Cherokees connected with Chief Donohoo were generally friendly with the whites. Hal tells that Edenton, North Carolina was besieged by hostile Indians, almost

"...to the point of being starved into surrender and probable massacre [sic]. A young Indian, a friend of Donohoo’s son, happened to come into Edenton to visit some of his white friends, and joined them in fighting the hostile Indians. When it was determined that they weren’t strong enough, the young man put on the warpaint of the attacking parties and slipped away to where Young Donohoo was with a hunting party nearby. Young Donohoo agreed to help and sent a runner to the main body of his tribe. Reinforcements rushed to the aid of Edenton, and it was saved."

Soon after that,

"...Young Donohoo succeeded in rescuing a young English woman from hostile Indians just before she was to be forced into a marriage to a very cruel young savage of that tribe. The only thing we know as to the identity of this lady is that her given name was Elizabeth (other sources give Elizabeth Wentworth)."

Hal goes on to tell that young Donohoo and Elizabeth (others say her name was Mary) were married in accordance with tribal laws, and produced, among others, the daughter named Elizabeth who married Bill Pledge.

The North Carolina town of Donnaha is supposed to be named for this man (either the father or the son), but it seems a bit far-fetched to me, since Donnaha in Forsyth County is a fairly long way, both from Edenton on Albemarle Sound and from Goochland County, Virginia where Bill Pledge seems to have found his wife. A family named Donnaha (or a similar spelling) has lived at or near this North Carolina village.

* * *

Mrs. Kay Haden, who researches the Pledges and Poindexters, states that William Pledge

[306]2002 data: Mrs. Karen Kay Adamson McKim Haden (McKim is her legal maiden name because she was adopted by her step-father), who is descended from Pledges both on the Poindexter line and
was married to Ann Redford, and she believes that Elizabeth was born to that couple, calling the Wentworth-Donohoo story “persistent”. Like me, she believes that the Cherokee blood could be from an earlier generation, but may never be proved.

There is no question about the Clingman family’s belief that they had Native American Ancestry, and these stories may contain a grain of truth, perhaps having been removed from their proper place in the family history and transferred to the Pledge line. Anyone looking at photographs of A. B. Clingman’s daughters Elizabeth Ann Clingman and Jane Poindexter Clingman would be convinced that they had Native American blood. Perhaps one day scientific evidence similar to DNA but better, will provide the proof that is lacking.

Excursus: Descendants have gone to a great deal of trouble and expense in an attempt to prove their Native American heritage, but their claims have been rejected. I have on file copies of the papers submitted during the 1890s by a number of descendants of Francis and Jane (Pattillo) Poindexter, stating that Francis Poindexter’s mother, Bettie Pledge, was of Cherokee descent. I believe it is the only official document connecting to the Clingman and Poindexter families, where I have seen Mary Jane Gamer’s name spelled out. Otherwise she has been M. J. Gamer, making her seem to be male (and if one didn’t know the whole story, one would think from the Cherokee claim document and others that Mary Jane’s maiden name was ‘Cross’, her mother’s second married name). The only proof that these people could offer was the family lore.

***

Bettie married Thomas Poindexter on 13 February 1760 in Goochland, her father giving consent, so she must have been a minor.

The five older children of Thomas and Bettie Poindexter were born in Virginia, the younger ones after they moved to North Carolina.

One has to conclude that Bettie was a hardy lady to have endured the frontier life she led while bearing and rearing a large family. Widowed in 1807, she was able to entertain her Granddaughter Ann Clingman and her husband after they climbed a mountain and attended a wedding, as related in an 1808 letter written by her daughter-in-law, Jane (Pattillo) Poindexter.  

Bettie died in 1816 and is buried near her husband in the Poindexter cemetery near East Bend in Yadkin County.

On 27 October 1991, the Jonathan Hunt Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, dedicated a marker for her grave, having proven her worthy by her performance of Patriotic Service to her country Revolutionary War. Her patriotic otherwise, lives at 508 Fairliewood Drive, Wetumpka, Alabama. Her husband, Robert D. Haden, is also a John Pledge descendant.

307 See Person Number 155.
service consists of sewing messages into her daughter Mary’s petticoat; she then sent Mary through the enemy lines, and Mary delivered the letters to the proper parties. Mrs. Haden asked for information about this, and received the information that the documentation is contained in the file of Daughter Number 494459. (DAR Patriot Service Index, p.539.). The following can be found in the DAR records:

“In Data File: Notarized Statement by Great Granddaughter [of Elizabeth Pledge Poindexter] given in 1916. She was the Granddaughter of Mary Poindexter Ridings - who was the little girl who delivered the letters. She was told the story by her grandmother.”

Ben and I were invited to the dedication but had made a trip to Yadkin County earlier in the year and were unable to return.

Siblings, surname Pledge
William Jr., married Ursely Woodson; issue
Francis, married Elizabeth Poindexter; issue
Archer, married first Christia (perhaps Christina) Ferrar; married second Ann or Nancy Woodson
Martha, married William Clarkson
[Elizabeth]

See Illustrations Number 309.

Parents are Numbers 618 and 619.

310 – Henry PATTILLO was born about 1726 in Scotland. From his own Journal, we know that his mother’s name was Jane; and his father’s name is believed to have been George. He came to America in 1740 with his brother George, according to George’s granddaughter, Mattie Janet Pattillo Miller (1829-1899), who wrote a family history citing statements made by her father, Rev. Samuel Pattillo.

Probably no ancestor among those in this book has written so much himself, or had so much written about him, as Henry Pattillo.

He began to write a journal when he was 28 years old, according to Durward T. Stokes, whose biography of Pattillo was published in 1961. Surviving fragments of that journal, along with two letters to his wife, his will, several notebooks, sermons and other manuscripts are among the Pattillo Papers in the library of the Union Theological Seminary at Richmond, Virginia.

He was born at the village of Balermic near the city of Dundee, according to Stokes, who writes,

---

308 Information from The Heritage of Yadkin County; see footnote to biography of Person Number 76.
"He had two brothers, George and William and several sisters. The parents were sufficiently prosperous to educate their children, but nothing more is known about them."

No reason for the Pattillo brothers' emigration has been found, but one James Pattillo was already an inspector of tobacco in Prince George County, Virginia in 1728, and he may have been related, his success in America influencing George and Henry to search for new lives here.

Some people believe that the brothers arrived first in Pennsylvania, then migrated to Virginia. Henry's first employment in Virginia seems to have been in a mercantile establishment, and he wrote about his disappointment with his occupation and his sense of the overwhelming power of temptation, which prevailed over his early instructions and pious resolutions. He then began teaching school, and later wrote in his journal,

"Here, by what means I cannot tell, it being so gradual, I got such astonishing views of the method of salvation, and of the glorious Mediator; such sweetness in the duties of religion; such a love to the ways of God; such an entire resignation to and acquiescence in the divine will; such a sincere desire to see men religious, and endeavor to make those so with whom I conversed, that after all my base ingratitude, dreadful backsliding, broken vows, frequent commissions of sin, loss of fervor, and frequently lifeless duties since that time, I must, to the eternal praise of boundless free grace, esteem it a work of the Holy Spirit, and the finger of God."

In a later entry in his journal, he writes about his call, about 1750, to the Christian ministry:

"...I can boast of but little success in these endeavors, yet my feeble attempts produced in me an indescribable desire of declaring the same to all mankind to whom I had access; and as I could not do this in a private station, I was powerfully influenced to apply to learning in order to be qualified to do it publicly."

The Rev. John Thompson, sent by the Presbyterian Synod of Philadelphia to visit churches in Virginia and North Carolina, convinced him that he should go to Pennsylvania to complete his theological studies, and he actually began the journey; but he succumbed to an attack of pleurisy after a few hours' travel, and remained in Virginia, the hand of fate (or perhaps the "finger of God") changing his plans considerably.

During Henry's convalescence, the Rev. Samuel Davies invited him to reside at his home and take up his studies with him, and he did so. Davies made a trip to England in 1753, and while he was absent, Henry fell in love with Mary Anderson. The couple wished to marry, but Davies thought the marriage should be delayed until Henry finished his education, which was to have been at the College of New Jersey, forerunner of Princeton.

They did marry on 23 July 1755, however, and Henry did not finish his education as he had planned. Mary is thought to have had some means of her own, and Henry supplemented the family income with his earnings as a teacher. Henry described their first residence,

"...a house 16 by 12 and an outside chimney, with an 8 feet shed—a little chimney to it."
The house was struck by lightning on 13 June 1757; Henry and Mary with baby Henry Jr., Mary’s sister, six students and a Negro boy were in the house, but no one was injured.

Henry continued to study with Davies, and on 29 September 1757, he was licensed as a minister. The requirements for this achievement were grueling, and I quote several paragraphs from Stokes in explanation; he writes,

“The presbytery met at Hanover on April 27, 1757, and Pattillo’s name appeared for the first time in the records of that body. The entry in the minutes read:

‘The Presbytery appoint Mr. Pattillo as pieces of Trial to be delivered at our next in June, a Sermon on Acts 10.43 first Part. To him gave all the Prophets Witness; and an Exegesis on that Question, Num Pena Inferorum sit deina?”

“Pattillo complied with his instructions, and when the presbytery met at the same place, June 8, 1757, the minutes read,

‘Mr. Pattillo delivered a Discourse upon Acts X. 43 according to Appointment.’

The presbytery adjourned until the next day, at which time the following entry was made in the record:

“They [the presbyters] also considered Mr. Pattillo’s Discourse, and approve it as a satisfactory Part of Trial.

“He likewise delivered an Exegesis from the Question Appointed, which was approved.

“The Presbytery having examined him at their last meeting as to his religious Experiences to their Satisfaction, proceeded to examine him extempore as to his Knowledge in Logic, and the Latin, Greek and Hebrew Languages; in which he gave such Specimens as were generally satisfactory.

“The Presbytery appoint him to compose a Sermon on Mark 16. 16, and appoint messieurs Todd, and Wright and Davies a Committee to hear it, and make farther Trials of him; to meet at Providence the Third Wednesday of July. Concluded with Prayer.

“The instructions of the presbytery were carried out, and on July 20, 1757, the committee and Pattillo met at Providence. The following minutes were recorded of the meeting:

“The Committee met according to Appointment, ubi post Preces sederunt, messieurs Todd, Wright, and Davies. Mr. Wright chosen moderator mr Davies Clark [sic].

“Mr Pattillo opened the Committee with a Sermon on Mark 16. 16, according to Appointment.

“The Committee, upon a thorough Consideration of Said Sermon, unanimously approve of it, as a satisfactory Part of Trial. The Committee proceeded to examine Mr. Pattillo upon Ontology, Pneumatics, Ethics, Rhetoric, natural Philosophy, Geography and Astronomy; in all which he discovered a very satisfactory Degree of Knowledge. And they Appoint him to prepare a Lecture on Daniel VII, 19-27, and a Sermon on the 27th verse of said Chapter.

“Pattillo carried out his instructions to the letter, and fulfilled the requirements of the committee before the presbytery when it met at Cub Creek, September 28, 1757. In spite of its thoroughness up to that point, however, the examination was not finished. The record continued:

310 There is a shortage of words and punctuation here: Mr. Wright was chosen moderator, and Mr. Davies was chosen ‘Clark’ (Clerk).
“The Presbytery farther examined mr. Pattillo in sundry Questions in Divinity, examined and sustained his Lecture and Sermon, and re-heard his religious Experiences: and upon a review of the sundry Trials he has passed through they judge him qualified to preach the gospel....And appoint the moderator to give him some Solemn Instructions and Admonitions with respect to the discharge of his office: which was done accordingly.

“That was the occasion on which the presbytery directed the certificate to be prepared, but the candidate was not then ordained. In April, 1758, the Presbytery ordered:

“Appointed that the next Presbytery meet at Captain Anderson’s in Cumberland. The 2d Wednesday of July, and that mr. Pattillo open the Presbytery with a Sermon on Isaiah LV-1, and that he deliver an Exegesis on this Question, Num, et quo sensu, quartum Praeceptum Decalogi sit morale? Both as Parts of Trial for Ordination.

“The presbytery decided at the same meeting that if Pattillo complied favorably with his instructions he should be ‘ordained to the holy ministry the Day following.’ That event took place as scheduled in September, 1758.”

A footnote to the Stokes biography notes that this last account is confusing, because the 1758 date was quoted “as the time of licensure instead of the ordination. The licensure took place in 1757. Licensing and ordination were two separate steps in the process of the approval of a minister by a presbytery. The Presbytery Minutes are accepted as correct in this case.” The second Wednesday was on 12 July 1758, and it seems to me that the ordination would have taken place on 13 July, the day following his successful preaching of the sermon on Isaiah LV-1, and delivering of the Exegesis on the stated question.

During the interval between his licensing and ordination, he was assigned to visit various Virginia and North Carolina congregations which had no ministers, and hold services. Stokes lists the following congregations that he ministered to: Mehenin, Nutbush, Hico, Eno, Chesterfield, the Byrd, Louisa, Amelia, at Halifax Courthouse, and in the Albemarle territory. On his second assignment he visited Willis’ Creek, the Byrd, Buck Island, Cove, Louisa, and Orange. It was during this time that daughter Ann was born in 1757.

He must have been well received, because when the Hico and Eno, North Carolina churches were established well enough to issue a call, they petitioned the Presbytery “particularly, for mr. Pattillo”, but he had accepted a call to preach at Willis, the Byrd, and Buck Island. It is not known exactly where the family lived while he served these churches, but this is where his daughter Jane (Person Number 155) was born in 1760.

Stokes writes,

“It was customary for one clergyman to minister to a group of churches located in the same general area, and that was the case with Pattillo’s first charge. After a stay of four years with those congregations, he requested and was granted a release from that group, giving insufficient support as his reason. He did not make plain whether or not he meant financial support, but that seemed reasonable in view of the fact that he was always able to maintain cordial relations with the other congregations to which he ministered.”
Henry next served a group of churches in Virginia from 1763 until 1765: Cumberland, Harris Creek and Deep Creek; for the next nine years, he ministered to Hawfields, Eno and Little River congregations in Orange County, North Carolina. He was one of the organizers of the new North Carolina Presbytery, having seen the need because of the hardship of traveling to Virginia for meetings. He worked in the Piedmont area of North Carolina for the rest of his life, where he came to be called ‘Father Pattillo’. He saw himself as a teacher as well as a preacher. He conducted a school in his home part of the time; for some nine years, he operated a school in Granville County after leaving the Orange County congregations, before accepting another call to a church.

He (with others) wrote letters to North Carolina officials including Royal Governor William Tryon when the Regulator movement threatened to erupt into war; but the letters didn’t carry enough weight with Tryon to make him rein in the oppressive practices of his tax collector Edmund Fanning; nor did Pattillo and his fellow letter-writers have enough influence to control the Regulators, and the Battle of Alamance occurred. He sympathized with the oppression experienced by the members of the Regulators, but opposed their methods. Later, he was called upon to give spiritual guidance to these Troops, but his sermon’s contents were not recorded. According to Stokes, the other clergyman who preached, the Anglican Rev. Micklejohn, “predicted dire consequences of the judgment of the Almighty against those who acted rebelliously toward their King”.

Stokes mentions that Pattillo’s name appeared on a petition to Governor Tryon for “a Publick Inspection” of tobacco at the Town of Hillsborough; in 1771 he was named a trustee for Queen’s College; in 1776, a trustee of Granville Hall; and he participated in “An Act to Establish Warrenton Academy. In 1774 he moved with his family to Bute County, and continued operating his school. He was a delegate from that county to the Provincial Congress, which met at Hillsborough in 1775. Stokes writes,

“His fellow delegates were Green Hill, William Person, Thomas Eaton, Jethro Sumner and Josiah Reddick. Among the acts of the Congress was one which read:

“We the Subscribers professing our Allegiance to the King, and Acknowledging the constitutional executive power of Government, so solemnly profess, testify and declare that we do absolutely believe that neither the Parliament of Great Britain, or any Member or Constituent Branch thereof, have a right to impose Taxes upon these Colonies to regulate the internal police thereof; and that all attempts by fraud or force to establish and exercise such Claims and powers are Violations of the peace and Security of the people and ought to be resisted to the utmost. And that the people of this province, singly and collectively, are bound by the Acts and resolutions of the Continental and Provincial Congresses, because in both they are freely represented by persons chosen by themselves....”

Stokes sees these grievances as essentially the same as those the Regulators had attempted to adjust, but evidently, the signers felt comfortable with their declaration because it rejected the violence of the Regulators.

Stokes goes on to say,

“The Congress went even further in its actions and agreed to protect any of the former Regulators who broke the oath to the Crown which they had been required to take by force and
appointed Richard Caswell, Maurice Moore, and Henry Pattillo to attempt to persuade them to break their vows and join the Patriots. This was asking a good deal of a minister who had joined his colleagues of the cloth in condemning the Regulator movement...."

So we find Henry Pattillo loyal to his King until his conscience dictated that he change his political opinion, but an exact date of his change of heart is not found, the process no doubt having been gradual as local conditions changed. Stokes found no evidence that he made this change because of possible personal gain for himself, "either through promotion in the political affairs of North Carolina or to improve his financial condition".

Pattillo was a member of the Bute County Committee of Safety.\(^{311}\) I first found his name among those ‘present’ on the list in the minutes of 5 January 1775. He must have been elected Chairman during that session, for he holds that office on 6 January 1775. The minutes indicate that on 28 June 1775, Rev. Henry Pattillo gives a sermon. These minutes mention names that are important in North Carolina history such as Sam Johnson and Richard Caswell. The County Committees of Safety were subject to orders from their District Committees as well as from the Continental Congress and the Provincial Council.

Henry is also listed as a member of the Halifax District Committee of Safety, serving with Allen Jones, James Leslie, John Bradford, David Sumner, William Eaton, Drury Lee, John Norwood, James Mills, William Haywood, Duncan Lamon, William Bellamy and John Webb. These Committee of Safety memberships qualify as Revolutionary War service for descendants who want to join such organizations as the Daughters of the American Revolution.

Rev. Pattillo’s name appears occasionally in the minutes of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions in Bute County, North Carolina. Life had to go on, even for those with lofty purposes. On 20 November 1774:

"James House acknowledged a Deed to the Rev’d Henry Pattillo and on Motion the same is Ordered to be registered."

16 February 1775:

"On Motion Ordered that the road leading by Owins’s Creek by the Rev’d Henry Pattillo’s plantation be turn’d beginning near said Creek, running along the Purchase Patent line, thence

\(^{311}\) According to John A. Schultz of the University of Southern California, writing in *Encyclopedia Americana*, "Committees of Safety carried on certain functions of government within the colonies during the early years of the Revolution. Appointed by the congresses (assemblies) of the colonies, they filled the role of the executive when the congresses were in session and possessed legislative as well as executive powers during congressional recesses. Successors to the committees of correspondence, the committees of safety usually represented the revolutionary leadership of the colonies and frequently were more powerful than the parent congresses. Sometimes, during the turbulent early days of the war, they were the only governing bodies in existence. ...Many congresses, fearing the committees, attempted to limit their tenure and authority, but the committees usually won the powers they needed to recruit and provision soldiers. On the passage of constitutions or the return of stability in a colony, the committees gave way to state executives or state legislatures...."
along the said Pattilloe’s fence as near as it can to the meeting house spring and when opened by the said Pattillo, that the same be then cleared by the hands working on the road as usual.”

11 May 1775:

“Ordered that the hands of John Tanner, Widow Jenkins, Joshua Mabry, Joseph Pardue, Askenas Williams, the Rev’d Henry Pattillo, Thomas Leach & Joseph Kimbell work on the road under Nimrod Williams overseer, and that they Immediately repair the said road, as is now laid off by the meeting house &c.”

12 February 1778:

“On the Petition of William Duke, Ordered that he have leave to turn the road leading by Mr Pattillo’s plantation, according to the prayer of his said petition.”

Later in 1778, Henry moved to Granville County, where he served the churches at Nutbush and Grassy Creek until his death in 1801. While he was there, he published, according to Stokes, “several books”, (information on the two following is from the Library of Congress):

Author: Pattillo, Henry, 1726-1801.
Title: Pattillo’s Geographical catechism, ed. by N. W. Walker and M. C. S. Noble

Author: Pattillo, Henry, 1726-1801.
Title: Sermons, &c. / by Henry Pattillo, A.M., of Granville, North Carolina

The catechism’s first question had to do with the meaning of the word ‘geography’. Stokes writes,

“After a journey around the world through questions and answers, the book ended with a description of America. The author said:

“We come in the last place to the freest, happiest, most plentiful part of the globe; and the farthest removed from tyranny.... A country in which religion is unrestrained; morality in repute; education promoted; marriage honourable, and age reverenced.

Q. 104. Pray, sir, where lies this terrestrial paradise?
A. Within the limits of the UNITED STATES; and the spot you stand on, makes a part of it....

Stokes mentions subjects of three of the sermons: “The Division Among Christians” in


which Henry plainly showed that he was concerned with denominational stress; "A Sermon on the Unity of the Christian Church", along the same lines; and "An Address to the Deists", in which he expressed his concern about that theory.

Hardback copies were sold at the price of $1.00, and paperbacks cost 25¢.

He also wrote what he called "Satirical Observations". Some examples:

"I don’t like a note folded like a cocked hat."

"He was a Helot & She was a Shalot."

"The company was not ‘picked’—but the pockets of visitors generally are."

"He is so confident of being right in everything that if he could he would set the Sun every day by his watch."

So, we see his sense of humor, although he usually wrote in a more serious vein. He has been described as a large man with a plain face. Stokes states that,

"... he was remembered by Mrs. John Holt Rice, who knew him in the prime of life, [and] pictured him as a heavy man with a large frame and coarse features, which were usually lighted with a cheerful smile. He had a loud, commanding voice, and his delivery was impressive. He was poor, but not unhappy with his lot, and extremely earnest in his work. Next to his ministry, his great love was books, a natural affinity for a scholar. Archibald Henderson related that Henry Pattillo ‘accepted with equanimity the burning of his house in his absence, so great was his relief on learning his books had been saved.’"

In 1787, he was honored by Hampden-Sydney College when it conferred upon him the degree of Master of Arts. He was no doubt gratified in two ways: It recognized his love of learning, and college President John B. Smith, whom he especially admired, signed the award.

Stokes found, in Connecticut Evangelical Magazine, Vol. I, No. 6 (December 1800) an article by Z. Lewis entitled Anecdote of Mr. Pattillo:

"The Rev. Henry Pattillo is seventy-four years of age, His white, trembling, palsied head is filled with sound and useful knowledge. He appears to be an eminently pious and faithful minister of the gospel; a kind and attentive husband; an affectionate and indulgent father; a cheerful and pleasant companion; and a polite, noble and generous friend. Mrs. Pattillo is an amiable and respectable woman. Long have this unfortunate pair travelled hand in hand the high road to heaven. Often on their way, have they been called to struggle with adversity. A long and tedious distance have they journeyed through the vale of extreme poverty. ‘Seven times have we eaten our last morsel; and where to look for more, but to heaven, we knew not. To heaven we looked; and before we were again hungry, we were furnished with sufficient & comfortable food. It seemed’, continued he, ‘it truly seemed as tho’ a kind Providence had poured it down from above...we are now, blessed be God! in comfortable circumstances; and our future earthly wants will be few.’"
Lewis concluded,

“Yes, grateful happy pair! Your wants on earth will hence be few. You will soon come to the end of your journey. You will soon enter through the gates into the City, and arrive in safety at your Father's house. With propriety may you adopt the language of the Christian poet:

“We'll soon be wafted o'er
This life's tempestuous sea,
Soon shall we reach the peaceful shore
Of blest eternity.”

The Pattillos' poverty in their old age came about because Henry lost his savings when son Anderson Pattillo's business failed. Stokes quotes a contemporary:

"Rev. Mr. Patillo [sic] endorsed notes for his son, who was extensively and prosperously engaged in the mercantile employment. By the unexpected failure of his principal debtors, the son was obliged to relinquish his business; and the father, as well as the son, was stript of his last farthing."

This explains the wording of his will, a transcription of which follows:

"In the Name of God Amen, I, Henry Pattillo, minister of the Gospel, Granville County, North Carolina, do make and constitute this my last will and Testament, knowing no other name for this writing, though I have no estate to dispose of.

"As the United Presbyterian Congregations of Grassy Creek & Nutbush, by their ruling Elders, purchased of Mr. Thomas Williamson & others a tract of three hundred acres of land on Spicemarrow\textsuperscript{314} creek, whereon I now live; and as the said Elders commissioned and empowered the late Colo. Samuel Smith, as their agent, to make a Deed in fee simple for the said land, to the said Henry Pattillo, which Deed was proved and admitted to record, by the court of Granville County, at their May term, 1784, on the express condition of my continuing till death or disability, the minister of said congregations. And it is my will and desire that my son John should possess this land, after my decease, upon condition that my beloved wife Mary Pattillo shall hold the undisturbed possession of it, during her natural life and my daughter Mildred lives single and chuses to reside there, shall keep possession other room; as far as I can dispose of a thing, that is not fully mine while I live, I give and bequeathe the said Three Hundred acres of land and appertenances, on the condition above mentioned, to my son John Franklin Pattillo and to his heirs forever.

"As all my effects were disposed of at public sales, except my book, book case and watch; and as a number of dear & very generous friends purchased nearly the whole, and left them with us, probably with no intention of ever demanding them again, unless the negro boy Peter be an exception, who was paid for by a subscription of kind friends; if the subscribers should demand their money, the negro must be sold, and payment made; If not, I give and bequeathe Negro Peter to my son John F. Pattillo, and to his heirs forever. And if any kind purchaser demand the commodity he bought at my sale, let them be restored with gratitude for the loan. The cattle must be an exception, for they are dead with the murrain.

\textsuperscript{314} Some have read this word as ‘Spewmarrow’. I believe that Spicemarrow is correct.
"As my debts live heavy on me at this time, every exertion must be made to discharge them. My horse, which I bought since the sale, I give her to my son Henry. My books, bookcase and watch (If the watch can be spared) and anything else that can be sold must be disposed of and payment made and if there is anything left within doors, let it be equally divided betwixt my son John, and my daughter Milly; I wish her also to have a cow or two, if they can be raised at this place.

"Humbly committing myself, my dear wife and children, & all my connections; the cause of religion, virtue and piety, to a gracious God through Christ Jesus and my Country to his Holy providence and protection, I subscribe with my hand, & seal this writing, the 19th December, 1800. If my books can be saved, my children will divide them among themselves.

"Published and declared by
Henry Pattillo as his last will
and testament in presence
of us
John Williams
Anne Smith"

There is a question about the wording of the second to last paragraph due to some words being inserted between the lines. Several people have offered slightly differing interpretations. I have considered the discrepancies, and concluded that the above is as nearly correct as possible, the horse being the only thing mentioned that could possibly possess gender and be referred to as "her".

(Murrain must have been a very serious disease of cattle, and there must have been a suspicion that its cause [virus, bacteria, spores] remained in the soil, for him to say, "if they [cattle] can be raised at this place." I don’t believe that it is Hoof and Mouth Disease, because during an outbreak of that disease in Great Britain in 2001, a good deal was written about it, and a statement was made that it had not been known in the United States until a certain year; I don’t remember the year, but do recall thinking at the time that it was well after this will was written.)

Henry went to Dinwiddie County, Virginia on an evangelistic mission in 1801, in spite of his feeble condition as described by Lewis. Before 25 August 1801 he died in Dinwiddie, and he is buried there; but his grave is unmarked or at least it has not been found. There has been some conjecture that he was visiting his son, Henry Pattillo, Jr., a physician; and there may be evidence that young Henry lived there. In any case, Stokes writes,

"Friends wrote back to North Carolina that his passing was entirely calm and peaceful. So the minister left this world, away from his home and family, but to the end preaching the Gospel to his fellowmen. His burial place is unknown to this day, but his life has remained an inspiration to North Carolinians for two centuries. Self-made minister, educator, and patriot, Pattillo showed what could be accomplished by work and will.

"The Reverend Drury Lacy conducted a commemorative service at the Granville churches of the departed pastor. His text was taken from Romans, 14: 7-8:
"That his life was a pattern of resignation and thankfulness has been remarked even by those who had a slight acquaintance with him...Thus he closed his life on a preaching tour, being far advanced in his 75th year, which doubtless does honor to his character, and should serve to stimulate all his younger brethren in the ministry to follow his example, and be willing to spend, and be spent in the cause of their Saviour, and in the cause of religion."

On 29 October 1967, the Granville County Historical Society placed and unveiled a Historical Marker near Highway 15, one and a half miles north of Stovall, North Carolina, in remembrance of Pattillo. Mr. Stokes, who had diligently researched all available records in order to write Henry's biography, was the speaker of the day. Included with the bulletin for the unveiling ceremony are pictures of Reverend Henry Pattillo's School House, 1784-1790; and of 'Somerset', the Pattillo home which was presented to him by the United Congregations of Grassy Creek and Nutbush Presbyterian Churches. At the time of the ceremony, the house was occupied by C. Julian Wilson. The inscription on the marker:

HENRY PATTILLO
1726-1801
PRESBYTERIAN MINISTER;
LEGISLATOR; AUTHOR OF
TEXT BOOKS; SERVED MANY
CHURCHES IN VIRGINIA AND
NORTH CAROLINA. HOME AND
SCHOOL, ONE FOURTH MILE WEST

Siblings, surname Pattillo; birth order uncertain
George, married
[Henry]
William
Sisters

See Illustrations Number 310

Parents are Numbers 620 and 621.

311 – Mary ANDERSON was the wife of Henry Pattillo. It is a pity that nothing has been found about her parentage. I'm not the only one who has searched, however, and no one has been successful. Her birth year is given as 1726, the same as her husband’s, but I have seen no documentation for this.

Stokes believes that she had some means of her own when she married Henry, and his income from teaching plus her own, together made it possible for them to live while he continued his education and pursuit of licensing and ordination. If she did have some money, it may indicate that her parents were already dead when she married. She must have been

---

315 It seems likely that after the home was no longer occupied by a clergyman, its name was changed from 'The Glebe' to 'Somerset'.
316 See footnote with the biography of person Number 310.
living in Hanover County, Virginia or nearby when she and Henry met, and they were married on 23 July 1755.

Their accommodations were not luxurious by any means, their house being tiny. When the house was struck by lightening, her sister was said to be present, the only reference I have seen mentioning her family.

She of course followed wherever her husband’s call to preach took him. The five eldest children evidently were born in Virginia, and the family was living North Carolina when the rest of the children were born.

In 1784, Henry’s congregation in Granville County purchased for the Pattillos, a tract of land on Spicemarrow Creek, and Henry and Mary Pattillo lived there the rest of their lives. They (or the congregation) named this farm and homestead ‘The Glebe’, a name often given to farmland with dwelling occupied by a clergyman (manse, parsonage, vicarage and rectory seem to be words that refer to the home of the clergyman when no farm is included).

Z. Lewis wrote, “Mrs. Pattillo is an amiable and respectable woman”. This token sentence in his ‘anecdote’ about her husband tells us in words what we already knew—that Henry Pattillo would have chosen a suitable wife with whom he could live peaceably. Mary must have been an undemanding woman, able to maintain the Pattillo household in a state of serenity that enabled her husband to achieve his calling of preaching the Gospel.

I cannot even imagine her horror when she received word that her life’s companion had died while on a trip to Virginia in the summer of 1801. I wonder how long it took the news to reach her, in that era of writing a letter, then waiting for the post.

When daughter Jane Pattillo Lanier Poindexter wrote to her daughter Jane who was staying at The Glebe with her Grandmother and Uncle John Franklin Pattillo and family in 1808, she exhorted young Jane to “be all the help and comfort you can to your dear old G-ma”. John had a wife by then and at least one child, the ‘Caroline’ mentioned in Jane’s letter. So Mary was not alone in her old age, although after having lived with a mental dynamo like Henry Pattillo for 46 years, widowhood must have required an unusual measure of adjustment.

Mary lived on until 1812, but her exact death date has not been found. She is probably buried near her old home, 1½ miles north and ¼ mile west of the present town of Stovall, North Carolina (1967 information about the location).

siblings, surname Anderson
Sister
Perhaps others

317 Some people reading the old hand-written records have seen this word as ‘Spewmarrow’ but I believe ‘Spicemarrow’ is correct.
318 Connecticut Evangelical Magazine, Vol. I, No. 6 (December 1800), article by Z. Lewis entitled Anecdote of Mr. Pattillo
Parents have not been identified.

314 – Peter KISER’s biography is printed as Person Number 306 above.

315 – Fanny ________’s biography is printed as Person Number 307 above.

356 – Swan RAMBO was born 19 October 1677 in Lower Dublin Township, now a part of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania to Peter Rambo and his wife, Magdalena née Skute.

His name seems to be an Anglicized version of the Swedish name ‘Sven’, probably pronounced about the same way. When his son, Swan, Jr.’s name was written in the court records created in conjunction with the settlement of Barbara Rambo’s estate, it was consistently spelled ‘Swain’ and I believe it should be pronounced ‘Swain’, rhyming with ‘rain’. Swan was probably named for his grandfather, Sven Skute. His name is spelled ‘Swen’ in his estate inventory papers.

He married first Ann Christian, daughter of Christian Thompson before 1701, calculating from the birth of their first known child. Eight known children were born to the couple before Ann’s death about 1718 or 1719.

Before 1720, again calculating from the estimated birth of the first known child, Swan married again to Barbara, whose maiden name is unknown. Swan became the father of five additional children with Barbara, from whom we descend.

Swan died in Robson Township in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania in 1730. (Robson Township, lying in the northeastern part of Lancaster, was cut off to become a part of Berks County in 1752.) His wife Barbara was the Administratrix of his estate. The Lancaster County Historical Society holds the inventory of his estate; some of the words are obsolete and difficult to interpret, misspellings complicating the reading. My transcription of the inventory follows:

“An Inventory taken and Apraisment made of the goods and Chattles of Swen Rambo of Gakuping [?] in the County of Lancaster Dissces”

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>4 Cows and a calf</td>
<td>£ 8-5-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 horses, to 2 mares &amp; 2 colts in the woods</td>
<td>13-0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A parcel of young Hogs</td>
<td>3-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A Negro Wench aged eight years</td>
<td>10-10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wheat &amp; Rye in the Straw</td>
<td>1-10 (?)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barly in ye Straw</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

319 The Swedes evidently did not fully abandon the patronymic naming system used in Sweden, but they modified it; Ann’s surname under the Swedish system would have been Christiansdotter (Christian’s daughter); the surname of her brothers, if she had any, would have been Christianson.

320 This may mean ‘Value assigned to’.
To Flax in ye Stalk 10
To oats in the straw 6
To 2 p' of Cowhide trases & Hames, To one _sh Coler, To 2 blind Halters 4
To 2 old plows & p' swingletrees 15
To 1 old horse 6
To grindstone & hammer in ye Possession of Jonathan Burden 15
To small grindstone & Timber chain 10
To 3 axes, 2 drawing knife, To 3 hatchets, To handsaws 2 adds 1-30
2 augers, To 3 plains, 3 chillels [?] 1 Hamer, To 2 squares & spike gimblet 14-6
To ? cutting knife mowlrings wedges & 3 forks, To 3 stone hamers & ? p' pinshers, To a parcel of old Iron & old sickles 1-10
To a Whipsaw & Crosscutt saw spades & Shovle 1-
To Hackney [?] saddle [?] side saddle 1-
To curtain rods spit & cosy back [lasy rack?], To 3 p' of pottracks 13-6
To 3 p' tongs & 1 p' bellows 5-6
To 4 iron pots and Kettles 16-
To 2 frying pans & Chaffing Dish 3-
To 5 [8?] brass pans Kettle & candlestick & Copper Can 2-

"To Caried over £47-3-6

[next page]
"To Brought Forward £47-3-6
To 3 old Feather Beds, To 6 Blankets & Coverlids 7-
To ? p' Curtains, To a looking Glass & p' stilliers 10-
To a parcel of Books scale & compass, To 3 razors [?] and a scale 1-
To Wearing Apparel 6-7
To a parcel of Stuff for apparel not finished 1-
To 3 Chests 15-6
To 2 spinning wheels 10-6
To 6 chairs 30
To 2 guns 1-
To 3 tups 4 cags ? tre a table Sled half bushels and riddle with a parcel of meat in one tup 10
To earthen Ward 2 pails 2 bucket Heelers &c. 6-6
To Iron Bar & [illegible] [value illegible]
To box Iron, pr Shears horse Rock [?] & standsh [value illegible]

£67-5-6

"Apraised this 21" of Jan'y 1730/1
By us
"James Lewis
his
Andrew X Burd mark"

Although no grave has been found, Swan is no doubt buried in present-day Berks County,

321 Probably means tubs and kegs.
Pennsylvania near his old home.

Siblings, surname Rambo

[Swan]
Brigitta born 10 March 1679
Peter born 20 December 1682
Andrew born 2 April 1691
Elias born 7 February 1694
Jacob born 28 March 1697
John born after 1697

Parents are Numbers 712 and 713.

357 – Barbara ______ is the name of Swan Rambo’s second wife and mother of Jacob, the direct-line ancestor in this book. Nothing has been found about her roots. By the time she married Swan about 1719 or 1720, some Germans had settled in the region, and ‘Barbara’ is a name often used by Germans; this may be a clue. Swan and Barbara Rambo had five known children.

Widowed in 1730, she was Administratrix of her husband’s estate. In 1731, she witnessed the will of Jonathan Burden in Lancaster County; it should be noted that a grindstone and a hammer belonging to Swan Rambo was in the possession of the same Jonathan Burden at the time Swan’s estate inventory was taken in 1730/31.

The Pennsylvania Genealogical Magazine published abstracts of wills of Philadelphia County, Pennsylvania, where the following appears:

“Page 178: #41: [Abstract of] Nun-cupative Codicil of JONATHAN BURDEN of Cacowson, Co. of Lancaster, in his Last sickness, at his last place of habitation 12 April last, Did declare these words following as his last will: That he wearing Cloaths might go to his brother Joseph, & he gave to his brothers Child Samuel his Bible & A black Stone Colt, To his wifes brother Lodwick 40 shillings to be paid in 12 months after his decease...All the rest to his wife Margaret...as witnessed by Thomas Cooper, his mark, Barbara Rambo, her mark. 21 Sep 1731 Thomas Cooper affirmed and Barbara Rambo on oath. Letters of admin. to Margaret Burden on est. of JONATHAN BURDEN 21 Sep 1731.”

I ordered the film of Philadelphia Wills that includes 1731, and did not find anything about Jonathan Burden’s estate. Perhaps nun-cupative Wills are filed elsewhere, because it is certain that the above paragraph was abstracted from something. From it we know that Barbara was not literate, and since she was willing to take an oath, we can be sure that she was not a Quaker (Thomas Cooper evidently was a Quaker, because he ‘affirmed’).

Margaret’s brother was Lodwick, which seems to be another indication of a German connection. Lodwick (is this his first or last name?) and Margaret Burden may have been Barbara’s siblings, but it is risky to assume anything, and she may have been only a neighbor conveniently

322 CDR Rambo’s book, see first footnote to the biography of Person Number 89, contains marriage information for these people.
present when a witness was needed.

Some time in the late 1730s or early 1740s, Barbara and her children moved south to Augusta County, Virginia, where Barbara died intestate in 1748. Her son Swan Rambo, Jr., was Administrator of her estate.

The following is found in the court records of Augusta County, Virginia, Will Book 1, pages 98 and 99:

"Know all Men by these presents that We Swain Rambo John Dobins and Andrew Bird are held and firmly bound unto James Patton the first Justice in the Comission of the Peace for Augusta County for and in behalf and toll[ed?] so to Us and behoof of the Justices of the said County and their Successors in the sum of fifty pounds to be paid to the said James Patton his Executors Administrators and Assigns to this which payment well and truly to be made We bind our selves and every of Us and every of our heirs Executors and Administrators jointly and Severally firmly by these presents Seald with our Seals dated this fifteenth day of february 1749.

"The Condition of this obligation is such that if the above bound Swain Rambo Adm'r of all the Goods Chattles and Credits of Barbara Rambo deceased do make or cause to be made, a true and perfect Inventory of all and Singular the Goods Chattles and Credits of the said deceased which have or Shall come to the Knowledge of him the said Swain Rambo or into the hands and possession of any other person or persons for him and the same so made do exhibit or cause to be exhibited into the County Court of Augusta at such a time as he shall be there unto required by the said Court and the same Goods Chattells and Credits and all other the Goods Chattles and Credits of the said deceased the time of his Death which at any time after Shall come to the hands or possession of the said Swain Rambo or into the hands and possession of any other person or persons for him do well and truly Administer acc[ording] to Law And further do make a just and true Account of his actings and doings therein when thereunto required by the said Court and all thereof and residue of the said Goods Chattles and Credits which shall be found remaining upon ye Admr's account the same being first examined and allowed by the Justices of the Court for the time being shall deliver and pay unto such person or persons respectively as the said Justices by their Order or Judgment shall direct pursuant to ye Laws in that case made and provided; and if it shall hereafter appear that any Last will & Testament was made by the said deceased and the Executor or Executors therein named to exhibit the same unto the said Court making request to have it allowed and approved and if the said Swain Rambo being thereunto required do render and deliver his Letters of Administration approval of such Testament being finished and made in the said Court Then this obligation to be void and of none effect or else to remain in full force and virtue.

"Sealed & delivered in presence of 
Swain Rambo (seal) 
John Dobehin [?] (seal) 
And Bird his mark (seal)

"At a Court held for Augusta County the 20th [?] day of february 1748 Swain Rambo John Dobehin and Andrew Bird in open Court acknowledged this their bond of ye s'd Swain Rambo's true and faithfull admin of the Estate of Barbara Rambo dec'd which Bond is ordered to be recorded."

When the Augusta County Court sat in April 1749, the inventory of the estate was recorded in Will Book 1, page 184. The values are in pounds, shillings and pence, and some unidentifiable (to me) marks separate the numbers. Each item is preceded by the word 'To', and I can only guess that it means 'Value assigned to'. I have not tried to place the figures in
a column, nor have I attempted to check the mathematics of the total.

"An Inventory of the Estate of Barbara Rambo dec'd taken by Us whose names are underneath Subscribed, being thereunto called by order of Court in Augusta County held ye fourteenth day of February 1749 and thereunto duly qualified according to the said Order & done the 8th day of April Anno Domini 1749.

"To a sorrel pacing horse 6-0-0
To a brown bay Mare & Yearling Colt 3-0-0
To a black Mare & Yearling Colt 4-0-0
To a bay Mare with a hollow back 2-10-0
To 2 Cows 3-0-0
To two 2 Year Old heifers 2-0-0
To 2 Yearlings 0-18-0
To a sorrel horse left by Robt Milsaps 4-0-0
To a strawberry Roan Mare & Colt 5-0-0
To a three Year old & two 2 Year old Colts 3-15-0
To two Ews & Lambs & a ram 0-14-0
To Wearing Apparrell 0-10-0
To Pewter and a box Iron 0-12-6
To a Pott frying Pan & Chain Rack & a brass Candlestick 0-11-6
To a pr of Stool Yards 0-3-0
To a Chain & other Coopers Ware 0-6-6
To a feather bed & Cloaths 0-10-0
To an Iron wedge and brand Iron & bell & Collar 0-7-0

Samuel Newman [Total] 37-17-9
Peter Scholl
John Ruddolloren

"At a Court continued and held for Augusta County the 23d day of August 1749.

"This Inventory and Appraisment of the Estate of Barbara Rambo being returned into Court is ordered to be recorded.

"Test."

Barbara is doubtless buried in Augusta County, but no grave has been found.

Parents have not been identified.

358 – Reuben ALLEN was the son of Joseph Allen and his second wife, Sarah Hull. He was born in about 1694 at Dartmouth in Bristol County, Massachusetts.

The Allen research was undertaken by Jack MacDonald323 and others, and was found (2001) on a Website maintained by him. He has good credentials according to a statement made by veteran Allen researchers Marcie Ward Richie and Ralph Jenkins.

323 See the Excursus within the biography of Person Number 179.
Reuben's older brother, Benjamin Allen, had gone to Cecil County Maryland by 1714, where he purchased 900 acres of land on 29 November. On 13 January 1719/20, he sold half of this land to Reuben, who must have gone there to join him.

It is believed that Reuben was probably married in about 1719 or 1720, because a deed dated 16 January 1720/21 mentions his wife Mary. It is not known for certain whether he married her before or after he arrived in Maryland, but some researchers believe they were married in Baltimore. This deed conveyed Reuben's one-twelfth interest in his half-brother, Josiah's, land to Benjamin Wilber after Josiah's death. Five years later, in June of 1726, Reuben sold his Cecil County, Maryland property. It was probably soon after that Reuben and Benjamin and their brother Daniel moved to Pennsylvania.

In 1734, Reuben and Mary moved south to Orange County, Virginia, settling near Mount Jackson in the Shenandoah Valley. Due to realignment of county boundaries, Mount Jackson is now in Shenandoah County, Virginia.

No absolutely certain list of his children has been found, and while the list of six found in the biography of Person Number 179 is believed to be correct, it may not be complete.

Reuben died intestate before 28 November 1741, the date that the court began estate-settlement proceedings. His son Reuben Allen, Jr., son-in-law Thomas Moor (Moore), and Benjamin Allen (presumably Reuben's brother because he is not known to have a son named Benjamin) were granted letters of administration. I found it surprising that Reuben Allen, Jr. was unable to sign his name, because a parcel of books was included in the inventory. Other articles inventoried in his estate papers indicate that Reuben, Sr. may have been a carpenter by profession.

From Orange County, Virginia, Will Book 2, page 179:

"Know all men by these Presents, That We Ruben Allin Thos. Moore and Benj. Allen are held and firmly bound unto Thos. Chess Gent the first Justice in the Comission of the Peace for Orange County, for, and in behalf and to the sole use and Behoof of the Justices of the sd County, and their successors, in the sum of two hundred pounds Current money, To be paid to the sd Thomas Chess his Exrs Admr and assigns To the which payment will and hereby to be made, we bind ourselves and every of us our and every of our Heirs, Exrs and Admr Jointly and Severally, firmly, by these presents. Sealed with our Seals. Dated this 28th day of November 1741.

"The Condition of this obligation is such, That if the above bound Ruben Allen Admr of all the Goods, Chattels & Credits of Ruben Allen Decd do make, or cause to be made, a true and perfect Inventory of all and Singular the goods Chattels & Credits of the Said decd which has or shall come to the hands, possession, or knowledge of him the sd Ruben Allen or into the hands or possession of any other person or persons for him and the same so made, do exhibit or cause to be exhibited into the County Court of Orange at such time as he shall be thereunto required by the said County and the same Goods, Chattels & Credits and all other the Goods, Chattels & Credits of the Deced, at the time of his death, which at any time after shall come to the hands or possession of the said Ruben Allen or unto the hands and possession of any other person or persons for him do well and truly Admr according to Law: And further do make a Just and true Acct of his Actings and doings therein, when therto required by the said Court, and all the and and [sic] residue of the said Goods, Chattels &
Credits which Shall be found remaining upon the sd Admrs Accounts, The same being first examined and allowed by the Justices of the Court for the time being, shall deliver and pay unto Such Person or Persons Respectively, as the sd Justices by their Order, or Judgment, Shall direct, pursuant to the Laws in that Case provided and made, and if it shall hereafter appear that any Last Will and Testament was made by the sd deced and the Exor or Exors therein [page 180] named, do exhibit the same unto the said Court, making request to have it allowed and approved accordingly, if the sd Rubin Allin being thereunto required to render and deliver up his Letters of Admin Approval of Such Testament be first in the said Court This obligation to be void and of none effect remain in full force and Virtue.

"Sealed and Delivered
in the presence of
Rubin [his mark] Allen (Seal)
Thos. Moor (Seal)
Benj: [his mark] Allen (Seal)"

The inventory of Reuben's estate begins on page 219 of the minutes. It is interesting to note that no slaves are included among his possessions, doubtless because his Quaker religion forbade slave ownership, and that he seems to have been quite prosperous without slave labor. The values are quoted in Pounds, Shillings and Pence, and since some are very difficult to read and I may have misread them, the totals may not add up correctly. I added zeroes for clarity where there were dashed lines in the values column on the original. "To" before each entry evidently can be interpreted as "Value assigned to". My transcription of the inventory follows, retaining original spelling:

"A True Inventory of all and Singular the goods and Chatties of Ruben Allen of the County of Orange in the Colony of Virginia decd, Appraised the Second day of February 1741 by Peter Shell, William White and Abraham Collect[?]:

"To 2 Bay Horses 15 years old 40-00-00
To 1 Black Mare 6 years old 40-00-00
To 1 Dark Gray Stallion 3 years old 40-00-00
To 2 Black 2 year old Colts 04-10-00
To 1 Mare Colt one year old 01-10-00
To 2 Dark Gray Mare 13 years old 03-00-00
To 1 Roan Colt 3 years old 04-00-00
To 1 Black horse 9 years old 06-00-00
To 1 Gray horse 6 years old 07-00-00
To 1 Black Pied Mare 13 years old 02-00-00
To 1 Mare Colt 1 year old 01-10-00
To 1 Pied Cow 3 years old 02-00-00
To 1 Brown Pied Cow 12 years old 01-15-00
To 2 Steers one Brown and the other Read 3 years old 05-00-00
To 2 Heifers one Brown and the other Pied 2 years old 02-10-00
To 1 Read heifer 2 years old 01-05-00
To 2 Calves one Black Pied and the other Read Pied one year old 01-00-00
To 5 Sheep 01-05-00"

324 The copyist's interpretation of his mark cannot be replicated on this keyboard. Evidently he created his own distinctive mark, perhaps indicating semi-literacy, although neither character looks like 'B' or 'A'.

325 Note that this date is stated by the 'Old Style' calendar, and New Years Day 1742 will occur in March; thus 2 February 1741, the date of the inventory, comes after 28 November 1741, the date that estate settlement was begun.
To 1 Plow and plow-iron 01-10-00
To 1 old plow and plow-iron 00-16-00
To 1 Iron Shod Wagon and Harness for two Horses 09-10-00
To a Pair of Small Iron Plow Chairs and iron to 2 Swingle trees 01-06-00
To 2 Grubbing Mattocks 00-10-00
To 4 Small Weeding hoes 00-06-00
To 2 Felling Axes 00-08-00
To 2 Small Axes 00-05-00
To 1 Stone Hatchet 00-02-06
To 2 old Spade 00-03-00
To 2 pair of Maulrings and one iron Wedge 00-04-00
To 1 Log Chain 00-07-00
To 2 handsaws & one Keysaw 00-15-00
To 6 Chisels and 2 Gauges 00-11-06
To 4 Augres 00-10-00

Carried over 75-16-00

Brought over £75-16-00

To 5 Turning Hooks 2 Chisels and 2 Augurs 00-07-00
To 1 Taper A[illegible due to bleed-through] 00-02-00
To 1 Carpenters Ads 00-03-00
To 1 Coopers brass[?], howel[?] and a pr of Shaw [?]Compass 00-04-06
To 1 Coopers Jointer 00-01-06
To 4 Carpenters Plaines 00-05-00
To 2 old Saddles 01-10-00
To 2 Drawing knife 00-02-00
To 4 Sows & 8 Pigs 01-10-00
To 4 Shoats 00-08-00
To 1 Grass Sythe 00-05-00
To 1 Stake Anvil 00-02-00
To 1 Small Stake Anvil & a Nail Anvil 00-04-00
To 1 Vise 01-00-00
To 2 Small Hamers 00-02-00
To a Smiths Butterdy & Iron Whimble Stick [?] 00-03-00
To 1 Large old ______ & Iron Pott 00-02-00
To a gun boring wheel & ____ Iron Work 00-05-00
To 1 Rifle Gun 03-00-00
To 1 small gun 01-00-00
To 1 Iron Kettle & a Brass Kettle 00-05-00
To 6 pewter plates 00-07-00
To Little pewter Basin 00-01-06
To 1 Small pewter dish 00-02-00
To Pott-rack, Tongs, Shovel 00-09-00
To 1 Looking Glass 00-02-00
To 8 Spoons & a pint Basin 00-01-06
To a parcel of Wooden Lumber 00-03-06
To 1 Small Trunk 00-03-00
To 1 Chest 00-03-00
Jno. Smith D. 326

326 D', means 'Due'; evidently John Smith owed Reuben £6 and 10 shillings, and I can't think of a reason why this was not included in the last entry to the inventory.
To 1 Loping Ax 00-02-06
To 1 Black Mare 3 years 03-00-00
To 1 Broad Ax Drawing Knife Augre & Chisel 00-03-00
To 12 pounds of Iron 00-03-00

Carried Up £103-04-06

Brought Up 103-04-06

To 3 old Sickles 00-01-06
To 1 old Warming pan 00-02-06
To a Sett of Shoemakers Tools 00-05-00
To 1 Spining Wheel 00-05-00
To 1 Box Iron 00-02-06
To a parsel of Books 00-03-00
To 1 Scythe 00-02-06
To 1 Bed & Bed Cloaths 02-15-00
To 1 D° 01-15-00
To a Box & Lumber 00-10-00
To a parsel of Leather 01-00-00
To 3 Belts & Collers 00-08-00
To 4 Tubbs & 1 Stone Jugg 08-00-00
To 5 New files & a Rasp 00-05-00
To 3 Sh plates & Taps 00-05-00
To Old Iron 00-04-00
To a Gun Boaring Augrer 00-05-00
To 1 Bed & Bed Cloaths 03-00-00

To money due in personal Belonging to ye Estate 45-00-00

Total Sum £160-07-06

"Reuben Allen Adm'
Peter Shell
William White
his
Abraham X Collect
mark

"At a Court held for Orange County on Thursday the 27th day of May 1742

"This appraisement of ye Estate of Reuben Allen Decd being returned into Court by Reuben Allen Adm' Is Admitted to Record

"Test Jonathan Gibson Cl Crt"

No funeral or burial information has been found.

Halfsiblings, surname Allen, from his father's first marriage to Sarah Holway
Abigail, married Edward Cottle
Rose, married Nathaniel Howland
Joseph, married first Rachel Gifford; married second Jenett Hay
John
Philip, believed to have died young.
William, married Elizabeth
Josiah, never married
Siblings, surname Allen, from his father’s second marriage to Sarah Hull:
- Benjamin, never married
- Tristram
- Ralph, married Amy Anthony
- Sarah, married Jeremiah Devol
- Hannah, married Richard Rundels
- Daniel, married Rebecca Newman
[Reuben]

Parents are Numbers 716 and 717.

359 – Mary, the wife of Reuben Allen, has not been identified with any degree of certainty as far as I know; I have seen the maiden name Jackson given, with the assertion that she was the daughter of Samuel Jackson and his wife Hannah, née Matthews. She probably married Reuben about 1720, either in Massachusetts or after he went to Cecil County, Maryland—some say they were married in Baltimore. The family is believed to have moved to Pennsylvania after the Cecil County land was sold in June of 1726.

The couple had at least six children; the list found in the biography of their daughter Deborah (Person Number 179) is believed to be correct but possibly incomplete.

After living in Pennsylvania for a few years, the family moved to Orange County, Virginia in 1734. Mary died in 1751 in Augusta County, which had been formed in 1745 from Orange; the place where the family actually lived is now located in Shenandoah County. No burial site has been found. The Augusta County records are difficult to read; those parts of the estate record that I found and was able to read are transcribed below:

"Know all men by these presents that we Jackson Allen, Joseph Allen John Dobbikin & Thomas Moore are held & firmly bound to Jno. Lewis gent the first Justice in the Commission of the Peace of Augusta County for and In behalf And to the sole and beh of the Justices of this County An their successors in the two hundred pounds Curr’ Money to be paid to the said John Lewis payment well & truly take _______ And every of us Our And every of Our heirs Executors Administrators jointly And severally firmly by these ____ Sealed with our seals Dated this 29th Day of May 1751.

"The Condition of this Obligation is such that if the above bound Jackson & Joseph Allen Admints of all the goods & Chattels and credits of Mary Allen Deceased do make or cause to be made a true and perfect Inventory of all and Singular the goods and Chattels and Credits of the said Deceased which has or shall come to the hand Possession or knowledge of them the sd Jackson & Joseph Allen or into the hands or possession of Any other person or persons for the And the same so made do ______ or Cause to be ______ into the County Court of Augusta at such time as they shall be thereunto required by the said Court And the same [?] goods Chattels & Credits and all other the goods Chattels And Credits of the said Deceased at the time of her death which at any time after shall Come to the hands possession of the said Jackson & Joseph Allen or into the hands & possession of any Other person or persons for them do well & truly Administer According to Law And further do make a Just and true Account of their actions & doings there when thereto required by this Court and ____ the Best and ____ of the said Goods Chattels & Credits which shall be found remaining Upon the said Admirs Accounts the same being first examined And allowed by the Justices of the Court for the
time being shall Deliver And pay unto such person or persons respectively as the Justices by their
Order or Judgment shall direct pursuant to the Laws in that Case made & provided And if it shall
hereafter Appear, that any Last Will And Testament was made by this decd, And the Executor or
Executors therein Named so exhibit the same into the sd Court making Request to have it Allowed
And approved accordingly if the sd Jackson & Joseph Allen being thereupon Required to render &
Deliver up their Letters of Administration Approbation of Such Testament being first had & made in
the sd Court then this Obligation to be Void of none Effect or else to remain in full force and Virtue.

“Sealed & delivered
in the presence of
James Cortens [?]

On 14 February 1752, acting as administrator of his mother’s estate, Jackson Allen sold
400 acres of land she had owned to Jeofry Beak, for thirty seven pounds and ten
shillings. The Augusta County deed records describe it as

“...one Certain Tract of Land in the aforesd County of Augusta on Mill Creek and Joining on
Charles Dotson & bound as followeth viz:

“Beginning at three pines by a sink hole thence North forty five degrees East three hundred &
twenty poles to three pines—thence south forty five degrees East two hundred poles near two
other pines thence south forty five degrees West three hundred & twenty poles near two white
oaks & a gum thence North forty five degrees West two hundred poles to the beginning
Containing four hundred acres together with all houses Edifices buildings Orchards Gardens
Pastures Common Woods Woodlands Waters Watercourses _____ minerals...”

The inventory ordered by the Court was dated 3 September 1751 and was presented to the
Court either the 7th or 17th of June 1752. What I am able to read is transcribed below, the
money amounts given in pounds, shillings and pence:

“A true Inventory of the goods & Chattels of Mary Allen decd Appraised by William White Daniel
Hotsman & John Ruddell September ye 3th [sic] 1751.

“To one Brown horse 7-0-?
To one Black Stallion 11-0-0
To one Brown Horse 3 year old 7-7-6
To one Redis[?] Coulored Cow & yearling 2-0-0
To another Redis Cow & Calf 1-15-0
To another Redis Cow & Calf 1-15-0
To a[?] sheep 1-0-0
To one Little Wheel 0-5-0
To one side saddle 1-0-0
To one wooling Wheel 0-2-0
To one pot & 1 Iron Kettel 0-15-0
To Pot Racks and fire shovel 0-4-6
To one frying Pan and warming Pan 0-8-0
To Pewter 0-6-0
To Wooden Ware 0-10-0
To one Little old copper skilit 0-2-0
To one old hackle 0-1-0
To one Bottle And funnel 0-1-0
To one Looking Glass 0-2-6
To one Trunk & basket 0-3-6
To one feather bed and bed cloaths & bed stead 4-0-0
To waring Cloaths 1-5-0
To one bed quilt 1-0-0
To two mares [?] 6-2-6

"William White
his
Daniel DH Holdman
mark
John Ruddell

"At a Court held for Augusta County this 7 day of June 1752 This Inventory & appraisement of the
Estate of Mary Allen decd being Returned into Court is Admitted to Record.

"Teste"

No grave has been located.

Parents have not been identified.

376 – Richard BORUM, Sr. was born in England, according to family tradition. The
following is found in the Willette-Gill book:

"It is highly likely, however, that he descended from the Borums who lived in the Matthews and
Gloucester County from early colonial days."

No birthdate has been guessed, and proof of his immigration to or birth in North America
has not been found. Richard married a lady named Judith, who may have been a Booker.
Assertions that her maiden name was Archer have been almost completely ruled out.

The following transcription of Richard’s will, dated 1785, is from Francis Gill’s Website,
and can also be found in the book; the spelling and punctuation may have been improved,
because few early wills were grammatically correct and spelling and punctuation were not
standard:

"In the name of God, Amen. I, Richard Borum of the parish of Nottoway and County of Amelia
being in perfect health and sound of mind and deposing memory, do make this my last will and
testament in a manner and form following:

“To my beloved wife, Judith Borum, all my estate both real and personal during her natural life and
after her death, I give and bequeath unto my son, Richard Borum, all my land and plantation whereon

See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 23.
I now live, also one negro boy named Jack, to him and his heirs forever.

"I give and bequeath unto my daughter, Elizabeth Hubbard, one negro wench named Beck, to her and her heirs forever. To my daughter, Judith Clay, a mulatto girl named Moll, one feather bed and furniture and cow and calf and a heifer. Also one bell metal skillet during her natural life and at her death I give the same together with their future increase as to the heirs of her body lawfully begotten forever and in case there be no such heirs or heir then I give the same together with their future increase as aforesaid to be equally divided among all my sons and daughters or their legal representatives, them and their heirs forever.

"I give and bequeath to my daughter, Martha Moore, one negro fellow named Cully.

"All the remaining part of my estate I leave equally divided among my daughters, Sara Foster, Joannah Vaughn, and Mary Smith and my sons, James and Richard.

"I appoint my beloved wife, Judith and my son, Edmund Borum, Executors of this my last will and testament.

"[signed] Richard Borum

"Witnesses:
John Pride
George Booker
James Hill"

The will was proved 1 October 1789, so it can be assumed that he died shortly before that. Since he trusted his son Edmund to serve as an Executor yet willed him nothing, it may be safe to guess that Edmund had already received his portion of his father’s possessions. Richard’s burial site is unknown; surely it is in Amelia County, Virginia, unless he was away from home when he died.

Parents have not been identified.

377 - Judith __________ was the wife of Richard Borum, Sr., and bore him ten known children. Two researchers, Libby Clay and John Pritchett, have tried to find her parentage. Libby states that she received information from the Archer Association, and wrote,

"...there was definitely a Judith Archer born 1723/24 to George Archer and Mary Beville in Amelia County, Virginia. They have no record of her marriage on file. Richard Borum was also in Amelia County and we know his wife was Judith so that is a good clue but not documentation."

Later, after continued research, she stated that she had pursued the Archer theory for some time and found no proof, but had come to believe that Mrs. Richard Borum, Sr. was Judith Booker, the daughter of Edward Booker and his wife Judith née Archer. A George Booker was a witness to the will of Richard Borum, Sr.

John Pritchett writes,

"I would love to be an Archer, but I think it very unlikely that Judith was an Archer. I have researched
all the Archers in Chesterfield and Amelia County.

"The names later found in the Borum and Vaughan families are not Archer names.

"I have always thought it more likely that Judith was a Booker as Judith was a very common name in that family, too. Some connection existed between the Bookers and Borums. Both families came from Gloucester. The Archers were from Chesterfield County.

"Unfortunately both the Bookers and Borums used the names Richard and Edmund so it is hard reach any conclusions from naming conventions.

"The Borums lived below Flat Creek in what was later Nottoway County while Judith’s brother John Archer appeared north of Flat Creek in the northern part of Amelia County only by 1763 when Judith would have been 40. I do not know how Richard Bomm and Judith Archer would have met.

"Other Archers were in Amelia County around the time of Richard Borum but they were not of the same Archer family as Judith. They descended likely from Gabriel Archer and lived in the eastern part of Amelia County.”

Conclusions: They have agreed upon a theory that Judith was a Booker, and Libby thinks that her mother was Judith Archer. John mentions another Archer family in the county, and Libby has not stated whether this Edward Booker married a Judith from Gabriel’s line or from the line that John would love to belong to (they must have been illustrious people). Nothing has been proven about Judith’s ancestry up to now.

Nothing is known about Judith’s death or burial place. Mention in her husband’s will indicates that she was still living when he made his will in 1785.

Unproven parentage is explored above.

378 – Matthew HILSMAN was born about 1715 in Amelia County, Virginia to Nicholas Hilsman and his wife, whose surname is not known.

He married Ann Gillentine probably about 1745-50. Eight children are named in his will, which he made on 29 December 1780. His wife is not named, so it can safely be assumed that she was no longer living on that date.

Matthew was too old to serve as an active soldier in the Revolutionary War, but found among the Public Service Claims for Amelia County, Virginia, is Certificate #242, a receipt dated 24 July 1780 for a contribution of thirty-one pounds of bacon to be used by the army. He was paid £74, 8 shillings and sixpence. This record is sufficient proof of Revolutionary War Patriotic Service, for those desiring to apply for membership in the patriotic societies.

From Amelia County, Virginia Will Book 3, page 27, the Will of Matthew Hilsman which was proven 27 March 1781, transcription found in the book328:

328 See the first footnote to the biography of Person Number 188.
"In the name of GOD AMEN I Mathew Hilsman being of sound mind and memory do make this my last will and testament, and first I desire that all my debts and funeral expenses be paid.

"ITEM I give unto my daughter Ann Hilsman my mare and saddle and one small trunk and half the hard money, I have; one bed and furniture and to have first choice. ITEM I give to my son John Hilsman one silver clasp, a sorrel colt, one bed and furniture and half my wearing apparel.

"ITEM I give unto my son James Hilsman half the hard money I have—one black colt, one bed and furniture and to have the second choice of the beds—also I give him my saddle and bridle and the other part of my wearing apparel and also I desire further that my L. 339 son James be maintained out of my estate and schooled two years ...

"ITEM I give the money arising from the sale of my pewter to be equally divided betwixt my sons Joseph, John and James and my daughter Anne Hilsman. ITEM The remaining part of my estate I desire may be sold by my Executor and the amount after my just debts is paid to be equally divided betwixt all my children; Joseph Hilsman, Sarah Boram, John Hilsman, James Hilsman, Mary Alley, Dianne Utley, Ann Hilsman, and Elizabeth Utley; and lastly I appoint my friend George Booker, Richerson Booker and Richard Boram, and my son Joseph Hilsman my Executors of this my last will given from under my hand and seal the 29th Dec., 1780.

"Published and declared in presence of Thos. Mumford MATTHEW HILSMAN (SEAL) Eford Booker"

The will was proved by the oaths of two witnesses, Thomas Mumford and Efford Booker in Amelia County, Virginia on 27 March 1781.

Matthew’s exact death date is not known, but he died between 29 December 1780 and 27 March 1781. His grave is certainly situated in Amelia County, but no gravestone has been found.

Siblings, surname Hillsman
    [Matthew]
    Mary, married a Mr. Ross
    John
    William

Father is Number 756.

379 – Ann GILLENTINE was born about 1719 in Halifax County, Virginia to Nicholas Gillentine, the immigrant, and his wife, whose maiden name was Echols and whose given name was likely Eleanor.

Excursus: According to Francis Gill 330 the Gillentine name was changed between the time it

329 In the book, it is suggested that the 'L' stands for 'Last'; it could also stand for 'Least', an expression used in parts of the South and elsewhere, meaning 'youngest'.
330 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
was written in England and the time it was written in Virginia. It had been Girlington in England.

***

Ann probably married Hillsman about 1745-50, and bore him eight known children.

She probably died in Halifax County, Virginia; she is not named in her husband’s 1780 will, so it can be assumed that she was already dead.

Siblings, surname Gillentine

Ellender (Eleanor?) married John Chism
[Ann]
John, married Sarah
Catherine, married Goran Brown
Elizabeth, married Joseph Collins

Parents are Numbers 758 and 759.

380 – William McGEHEE, Sr. is part of the McGehee family that was researched by Ethel Grider and written about in McGehee Descendants. Mrs. Patterson referred to to that work and to Prince Edward, Amelia and Cumberland County, Virginia land, marriage and probate records; Virginia and Tennessee census records; and William and Mary Quarterly when she wrote about William. She has shared the information below.

William was born to Jacob McGehee and his wife Eleanor née DeJarnette on 17 December 1740, either in King William County, Virginia, or that part of Amelia County that became Prince Edward County. He is sometimes called ‘Sr.’, because he had a son named William, but nothing has been found indicating that he called himself ‘Sr.’.

S. M. Fuqua of Rice Depot, Prince Edward County, Virginia, wrote a letter in 1875, in which he recorded his grandfather Jacob McGehee’s family. One Jacob McGehee of Richmond, Virginia owned the letter in the 1990s, and it has been printed in William And Mary Quarterly; the date of publication is unknown to me. Much of the information in this letter has been proven to be accurate, so one can assume with some confidence that Fuqua’s statement that William McGehee married a Miss Forrest is correct.

He married Miss Forrest, perhaps Martha or Joyce, before 1765. The couple had three children, among them the direct ancestor in this compilation, Abraham McGehee, before she died about 1769.

331 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
332 There is some question about the death date of his first wife. If she died at a later date, she was the mother of more of his children, he married Sarah later, and she bore fewer of his children.
After the death of his first wife, William married Sarah Walker about 1770. She was the widow of Skipworth Harris and the daughter of Wanen Walker and his wife Madalen née Burton. There is no known issue from Sarah’s first marriage. William and Sarah McGehee are believed to have had eight children.

Prince Edward County Deed Book 7, page 15, contains the following (abstracted by and printed in The Virginia Genealogist):

“1784, February 16, William McGehee, son and heir at law of Jacob McGehee, late of Prince Edward County to Joseph Trueman, of Prince Edward County; said William McGehee from the desire he has to fulfill his father’s intentions to make clear title to 400 acres of land to Said Joseph Trueman hereby conveys the said land on Bush River, Prince Edward County, patented by Jacob McGehee, February 5, 1753, and which is part of the tract said Trueman now lives on and being the whole of lands possessed by said Jacob McGehee by said patent, containing 400 acres on which the said Trueman settled and now lives.”

The Amelia County records mention the 1753 transaction in Book 32, Page 18. Prince Edward County was formed from part of Amelia later that year.

By occupation, William was a miller and a farmer.

William died on 19 or 21 September 1806. He was a member of Sailor’s Creek Baptist Church and may be buried there if there is a church cemetery. No gravestone is known to exist. William seems to have been literate, because his signature is written into the record and nothing is said about it being only his mark. My transcription of his will and estate settlement, found in Prince Edward County, Virginia Wills, Inventories and Accounts, Volume 3, page 495 follows:

“I William McGehe of the County of Prince Edward do make and declare this to be my last will and testament in Manner following to wit; Item 1st I give and bequeath unto my son Abraham McGehe three Negroes (Viz) named Molly, Ritter & Rachel. Item 2d I give and bequeath unto the three children of my son James McGehe, Betsy, Polly and Thomas McGehe two Negroes to wit named Dick and Nan Item 3d I give and bequeath unto my daughter Martha Morton two Negroes (Viz) named little Ben and Amy,—Item 4th I give and bequeath unto my daughter Elenor Pettus two negroes (Viz) named Hannah and Lucy,—Item 5th I give and bequeath unto my daughter Judith Walton one negro boy named Jack one woman named Dilse,—Item 6th I give and bequeath unto my daughter Mary Weaver one negro boy named Dick, one woman named Hamer and one horse to the value of twenty pounds Item 7th I give and bequeath unto my son Jacob McGehe one negro boy named Gidion one horse to the value of twenty pounds one feather bed and furniture Item 8th I give and bequeath unto my son William McGehe one negro boy named York one horse to the value of twenty pounds one feather bed and furniture.

[page 496] *Item 9th* I give and bequeath unto my son Elijah McGehe one negro named Charles [Charles?] one horse to the value of twenty pounds saddle and bridle one feather Bed and furniture Item 10th I give and bequeath unto my son John McGehe one negro boy named Sam one horse to the

---

333 This Sarah Walker was the granddaughter of Warren Walker who married Magdalen Burton; Warren Walker was brother or half-brother to Judith Walker, Person Number 383 in this volume, and the son of William and Judith (Baker) Walker.

334 The Virginia Genealogist credits The William & Mary College Quarterly for this material.
value of twenty pounds saddle and bridle One feather bed and furniture. Item 11th I give and bequeath unto my daughter Sarah Chappell McGehee two Negroes named Bety and Hays[?] one horse to the value of twenty pounds saddle and bridle one feather bed an furniture.—Item 12th My land whereon I now live I lend unto my wife during her natural Life and at her death to be divided between my two sons Elijah and John McGehe, it is my desire for the land to be valued by two disinterested men and if valued to more than five hundred pounds specie for them to be accountable to the estate for the overplus Jacob and William to have two hundred & fifty pounds in lue of land which money is to be raised out of the profits of my estate when they become of lawful age—Item 13th My Daughter Judith Walton to have as much money as will make up twenty pounds with a parcel of Tobacco she has had. Mary Weaver and the four boys and Sarah C. McGehe are to be furnished with cow and calf one heifer two sows and pigs two Ewes and lambs to each of them and if any of the Negroes that are willed should die before the legatees comes to have them in possession they must have another of equal value Martha Morton to have a negroe of Seventy pounds value which negroe with those I formerly lent to her at her death to be equally divided between her children, Item 14th I lend unto my wife Sarah McGehe after paying my Just debts and the money given in the above legacies all the balance of my estate not before given after death to be equally divided between Eleanor Pettus, Judith Walton, Mary Weaver, Jacob, William Elijah and John McGehe Sarah C. McGehe All that I have given I give unto them and their heirs forever and their increase and if any of my children should die before they come of age or marry then their parts should be returned unto my estate Item 15th And lastly I do appoint my friends William Walker Thomas Pettus Simion Walton and my son Jacob McGehe executors to this my last will and testament In Witness whereof I have hereunder set my hand and affixed my seal this seventeenth day of April one thousand eight hundred and six.

“Signed sealed and acknowledged in the presence of
George Brookes
John Weaver
Nelly[?] Foster”

Page 497:

“At a Court held for Prince Edward County October 20th 1806 This last will and testament of William McGehe deceased was presented in Court and proved by the oaths of George Brooks and John Weaver two of the witnesses thereto Ordered that the same be recorded. On the motion of Thomas Pettus one of the executors therein named who with Thomas Clarke and Joseph Ligon his securities entered into and acknowledged their bond for that purpose in the penalty of thirty thousand dollars and conditioned according to law and took the Oath required by law certificate for obtaining Probat thereof in due form is granted him and leave given the other executors therein named to take execution thereof at an other dan. [Written in a different hand] And at another Court held for said County March the 21st 1814 On the motion of Simion Walton one of the Executors named in this will be entered into bond with Benjamin Hawkins, William McGehee & William Hamblen his securities in the penalty of Ten Thousand Dollars conditioned according to law, and took the oath required by Law, Certificate for obtaining a Probat thereof in due form granted him.

Test
FWatkins CC336

335 I can’t give any explanation of what this means, but I noticed that in a few places, words which seem to have been omitted when the will was written into the record, have been inserted between the lines.
336 Initial may be T instead of F. CC probably means Clerk of the Court.
Siblings, surname **McGehee**

John
[William]
Mary, married Joseph Trueman or Truman
Elizabeth, married Larkin Anderson; married second Brackett Owen
Eleanor, married Jonathon Smith; married second __________
Ann
Martha, married James Alwood; married second __________
Anness or Annice, married Abraham F. Foster
Jacob, married Anne Weaver
Sarah, married George Cardwell
Drusilla, married Moore Weaver
Agnes, married Thomas Clarke

Parents are Numbers 760 and 761.

381 - Miss ________ **FORREST** married William McGehee before 1765, and bore at least three children to him before her death about 1769. Family tradition has ‘Martha’ as her given name. She was probably born about 1745.

S. M. Fuqua of Rice Depot, Prince Edward County, Virginia wrote to Mrs. Pattie Eudaily on 24 February 1875,

“Dear Cousin, Enclosed I send Uncle Jonnie the record of his grandfather’s family.”

The letter was in the possession of one Jacob McGehee of Richmond Virginia in the 1990s, but I don’t know its present whereabouts. It gives birth, death and marriage dates of Jacob McGehee and Eleanor DeJamette and their children. It also states that William McGehee’s wife was a Miss Forrest. Much of the other information in the letter has been proven to be accurate, so one can assume with some confidence that his statement that William McGehee married a Miss Forrest, is correct. She is thought to be the daughter of Abraham Forrest and his wife Judith, perhaps née Billups, who lived in Amelia County, but there seems to be no way to prove this.

Abraham Forrest’s 1757 Amelia County, Virginia, will names his children. No daughter is called Mrs. McGehee; however, if a daughter Martha received an inheritance at the time of her marriage, she may not have been mentioned. Another fact to consider is that the will may have been made before Miss Forrest married William McGehee, and there is an unmarried daughter Joyce Forrest, who is a perfect candidate for William McGehee’s wife except that descendants believed her name was Martha.

She died before William married again about 1770, in Prince Edward County, Virginia. No gravesite has been identified.

Siblings, surname **Forrest**, if she is Abraham’s daughter

Elizabeth, married Joseph Motley
George, married Frances Atwood
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

John
Abraham, married Judith
Richard, married Elizabeth Oliver
Mary, married George Foster

[Joyce; did she marry William McGehee?]
Sister, name unknown, married a Mr. Williams; issue named in father’s will

Following is a possible ancestry for Miss Forrest:

Tenth Forrest Generation

762 – Abraham FORREST died in 1759 in Amelia County, Virginia. His wife was Judith, and Mrs. Patterson believes that the couple married in Virginia, Judith being a Virginia native.

Abraham’s will, dated 10 June 1757 and proven 22 February 1759, is found in Amelia County, Virginia Book 1, beginning on page 139. The following abstract is found in *Amelia County, Virginia Wills* by Macon:


763 – Judith , the wife of Abraham Forrest, was probably born about 1700, perhaps in Gloucester County, Virginia. She was still living in 1759 when her husband’s will was admitted to probate. Mrs. Patterson believes that Judith’s maiden name may have been Billups, her father being George Billups. This has not been proven to Mrs. Patterson’s satisfaction (2000). The Billups name is mentioned in a land description in 1653 in connection with one Henry Forrest, but no connections are suggested.

Eleventh Forrest Generation

1524 – John Forrest
1525 – Ann Long

Twelfth Forrest Generation

3048 – Henry Forrest
3049 – Elizabeth Cheeseman

See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
3050 – Richard Long
3051 – Sarah English

Thirteenth Forrest Generation

6102 – Abraham English was in Virginia by 1638 and was called ‘alien borne’, meaning that he was not born in England or a British possession. He died in 1668 in Gloucester County, Virginia. He was a merchant.

6103 – , Abraham’s wife, no name given, was transported to Gloucester County, Virginia in 1642.

***

Early mentions of the above surnames were found by Mrs. Patterson in various colonial Virginia records. No links are to be inferred from the following: Sir Anthony Forrest came to Virginia in 1608, and additional Forrests came in 1657, 1658 and 1678; Richard Long received land in 1652; George Billups owned land in 1653; Edmund Cheesman bought land in 1640; and Abraham English was mentioned in Virginia records in 1635.

Unproven parentage is shown above.

382 – William PENICK, Jr. was born about 1737, probably in Amelia County, Virginia, to William Penick, Sr., and his wife Judith nee Pate.

He married Judith Walker about 1752-1760, probably in her home county of Cumberland, Virginia. The couple had fourteen known children, all of whom were living when William made his will in 1815. One son, William III, was apparently dead before his mother made her will in 1825; Nathaniel was not a legatee but was surely the Nathaniel Penick who witnessed her will and shared the duties of Executor with Josiah Penick.

William died between 26 April 1815 when he made his will, and 16 September 1816, when his will was presented for probate. The will was copied into a court ledger; therefore, actual signatures of the testator and witnesses were not found. My transcription of the will, found in Prince Edward County Will Book 5, page 127, follows; spelling, punctuation and capitalization retained:

"I William Penick of the County of Prince Edward, being by the blessing of God fully possessed of my reason and recollection, do hereby make this my last will and testament, and do devise of my worldly estate in the following manner,—First it is will and desire that all my jest debts be paid.—I lend to my beloved wife Judith during her widowhood, the land and plantation whereon I now live together with all my other lands, also the stock of all kinds, with all my household and kitchen furniture, together with all my plantation utensils, also the following negroes, namely Cato, Sharpener [?], Simon, Frank, Tamer, Amy, Hannah, Usley, Edy, Ishmael, Roland, Harry, George, Rachal, Booker and Betty, with all the young Negroes not mentioned in this will, together with all the debts due my estate Except one share in the upper Appomattox Company, and at her death or marriage, my will is that all that part of my Estate hereby lent to my wife except the land hereafter expressly devised, be equally divided among my fourteen children or their heirs, to them and their heirs forever,
I give and devise to my daughter Nancy one negro woman named Philis, which negro she has in possession and all her increase.—also one negro boy named Tim to her and her heirs forever. I give and devise to my Daughter Fanny, one negro woman named Aggy which negro has in possession, and all her increase, also seventy five pounds cash which money she has in possession to & her heirs forever.—I give and devise to my daughter Judith, one negro woman named Rose which negro she has in possession and all her increase, also seventy five pounds cash which money she has in possession to her and her heirs forever.—I give and devise to my daughter Lucy one negro Woman named Levina which negro she has in possession and all her increase, also seventy five pounds cash which money she has in possession to her and her heirs forever.—I give and devise to my daughter Betsey one negro Woman named Aggy which negro she has in possession and all her increase, also seventy five pounds cash, which money she has in possession to her and her heirs forever.—I give and devise to my son William three negroes named, Bob, Jack & Sam, which negroes he has in possession to him and his heirs forever.—I give and devise to my daughter Tabitha one negro man named Jack, also one negro girl called Olly and her increase which negroes she has in possession to her & her heirs forever. I give and devise to my son Nathaniel one boy named Anthony, also one moiety in my share in the upper Appomatox Company. I also give him after the death or marriage of my wife one hundred acres of land lying in the County of Cumberland called sandy ford tract, also two hundred acres of land lying in the County of Prince Edward deeded to me by Chappill and F to him and his heirs forever.—I give and devise to my Daughter Jerusha one negro woman named Patt which she has in possession and all her increase to her and her heirs forever,—

[page 128]

I give and devise to my daughter Polly W. one negro woman named Dinah which negro she has in possession and all her increase, also one negro boy named Manuel which negro she has in possession to her and her heirs forever,—I give and devise to my son Josiah one negro man named Jeffrey, also one moiety of my share in the upper Appomatox company, and after the death or marriage of my wife, I give him all the residue of my lands to him and his heirs forever.—I give and Devise to my Daughter Kezeah, one negro woman named Alice which negro she has in possession with all her increase, also one negro boy named Phill to her and her heirs forever.—I give and devise to my Daughter Hopy one negro woman named Crilly[?] which negro she has in possession with all her increase, also one negro boy named Eder, which negro she has in possession to her and her heirs forever.—I give and devise to my daughter Sally B., one negro woman named Becky with all her increase also one negro boy named Charles which negroes she has in possession to her and her heirs forever.—I give to my grand daughter Hopy W. Boatwright one negro boy named Davy one horse & saddle one bed and furniture which negro boy Davy, Horse & saddle, bed and furniture she in possession to her and her heirs forever.—

It is my will and desire that my Estate be neither appraised nor sold, and that my Executors may not be held to security.—I do hereby appoint my wife and my two sons Nathaniel and Josiah the sole Executors of this my last will and testament, In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & affixed my seal this twenty sixth day of April in the year of our Lord one thousand Eight Hundred and fifteen.—

“Signed sealed & acknowledged Wm. Penick in presence of

“Witness
John Tuggle
Susan T. Tuggle
Alexander Legrand, Jr.
Charles Fore
"At a court held for Prince Edward County September the 16\textsuperscript{th} 1816,—this last will and testament of William Penick dec\textsuperscript{d} was presented in court & proved by the oath of John Tuggle, Alexander Legrand Jr. and Charles Fore three witnesses thereto, ordered that the same be recorded, on this the motion of Nathaniel Penick and Josiah Penick Executors therein named they entered into bond (no security being required by the will) and the penalty of forty thousand dollars consideration according to Law and took the oath required by Law certificate for obtaining a probat therefor in due form is granted them.

"Teste
"T.B. Worsham, D.C."

The estate inventory can be found in Prince Edward County Will Book 5, page 147. The slaves are named in columns, but I have transcribed their names in manuscript form:

"Prince Edward County, An Inventory of the personal Estate of William Penick dec\textsuperscript{d} taken the 14th day of December 1816.

"Slaves: Males Cato, Sharper, Simon, Ishmael, Roland, Harry, George, Booker, Dennis, Peter, Robin Sifer[?], Joe, Billy

"Females Frank, Tamer, Amy, Hannah, Edith, Mosley[?], Rachal, Betty, Mahaley, Delilah, Nancy

"7 head of horses, 22 head of Cattle, 2 yoke of oxen, 36 head of sheep, 30 head of hogs, 6 Beds, Betsteads and furniture, 5 Plows and Gar [gear?], 2 new ground coulters [cultivators?], 9 hilling hoes, 3 grubbing hoes, 8 axes, 1 Walnut desk and 1 Walnut folding table, 6 Windsor chairs\textsuperscript{338} and 6 common spital bottom chairs, 2 pair of andirons 2 pair of smoothing Irons, 1 trunk and 1 Chest, 1 pine corner cupboard 1 pine safe, 1 small walnut corner cupboard, 1 still and womb, 1 clock the works principally of wood, 1 ox cart and 1 tumbler Cart, 6 pots and 3 dutch ovens, 1 bell mettle kettle, 1 Tea kettle, 3 sets of knives and forks, 7 pewter plates, 4 pewter dishes, 6 Earthen dishes, 2 doz do\textsuperscript{339} plates and 2 Bowls 1 case and 10 bottles, 2 Loom, 2 Coffee pots, 3 cider casks, 6 Cotton wheels, 2 flax wheels, 2 sets of coffee and one of tea cups, 11 silver tea spoons, 1_____ and Caster, 1 pewter ladle, 3 sugar dishes, 2 cream pots, 8 butter pots, 8 pewter basins, 2 Pitchers, 1 Looking glass, 1 tea pot, 2 tin waters, 5 water pales & piggins, 3 washing tibs [tubs?], 1 tin candle box, 2 brass candle sticks, 2 candle stand, 1 large family bible, 1 Walls Hymns & Psalms; 3 William Weatherspoon work, 1 Book title Christian Panoply and one Tisier Pelgine[?], 1 old wheat fan, amount of money due the Estate lends to the amount of £638:10. Open accounts estimated at £25 – 1 Cross cut saw, 1 old tub _?_ & 2 pair Iron wedges; 1 shot gun, 1 old musket, 1 pair steelyard, 1 drawing knife, 1 hand saw and 1 _?_, 1 grind stone, 2-600. 1-500. 1-350. & 1-300. stays with the harness, 1 Lock chain and 1 frying pan, 6 hogheads of uninspected Tobacco.—The above is a true Inventory as far as we know or believe.

"Nathaniel Penick } Executors of William
Josiah Penick } Penick dec\textsuperscript{d}

\textsuperscript{338} From the Internet Website of Ashlen Windsor Chair Company, Rick McClendon, owner: "Windsor chairs are believed to have originated in 18\textsuperscript{th} Century England during the reign of King George III. Legend has it, the King discovered the chair while foxhunting. He stumbled upon a cottage during a thunderstorm where he found a plain chair, known as a ‘stick chair’, that had spindles for its back and legs. As the story goes, King George ordered his carpenters to construct these ‘stick chairs’ for Windsor Castle. They soon became known as Windsor chairs."

\textsuperscript{339} do=ditto
"At a Court held for Prince Edward County December 16, 1816. This Inventory and appraisement of
the Estate of William Penick dec'd was presented in Court, ordered that the same be recorded.

"Teste
T.B. Worsham, D.C."

Siblings, surname Penick
Jeremiah, married Mary Price, a widow née __________.
Edward, never married, may have died in French and Indian War
[William]
Charles, married first Agnes Clark; married second __________
Jerusha married Pugh Price as his third wife; issue
Judith
Elizabeth

Parents are Numbers 764 and 765.

383 – Judith WALKER was born about 1743 in Goochland or Cumberland County, Virginia, to William Walker and his wife Judith née Baker. She is believed to have been called ‘Judy’, and is named ‘Judah Penix’ in her mother’s will in which she was bequeathed a “negro girl named Tamer”, likely the same Tamer named in William Penick’s estate inventory.

She married William Penick, Jr. about 1752-1760. They must have moved soon after their marriage to Prince Edward County, where they were living when their fourteen children were born.

Judy died between 26 April 1825 and 17 November 1828 when it was presented for probate. The will, found in Prince Edward County Will Book 6, beginning on page 523, was written into the court ledger, and her actual signature does not appear. My transcription of the will follows, spelling and punctuation retained:

"I Judith Penick of Prince Edward County being in a low state of health and weak in body But of sound and disposing mind do make this my last Will and Testament and dispose of my worldly Estate in the manner and form following (viz) First my will is that all my just debts be paid And further it is my will that the three slaves which belong to me (namely) Edy, Joe and Mahala be sold and the money arising from the sale together with all money and the proceeds of the crop or crops which may be in hand or due me at my death to be divided between my Eleven daughters in the following manner, one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter [page 524] Nancy Tuggle to her and her heirs forever one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter Frances Southerland to her and her heirs forever one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter Judith McGehee to her and her heirs forever one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter Lucy Boatwright to he and her heirs forever. one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter Elizabeth Bagly to her and her heirs forever, one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter Tabitha Morton to her and her heirs forever. one Eleventh part I lend to my Daughter

Charles left issue, but it is not known to me from which wife or from both wives.

I double checked the dates, and the wills of William Penick and his wife Judith were both signed on 26 April, exactly ten years apart.
Jerusha Boatwright and at her death I give it to be divided equally between her Daughters lawfully begotten of her body; one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter Polly W. Baldwin to her and her heirs forever; one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter Kezia Arnold to her and her heirs forever; one Eleventh part I give and devise to my Daughter Sally B. Sanders to her and her heirs forever; And whatever part of the stock of horses, Cows, sheep or hogs which may be thought to be mine at my death I give them to be equally dived between all the legatees agreeable to the last will of William Penick dec'd. And I do hereby constitute and appoint my sons in law John Morton and Charles Baldwin the whole and sole Executors of this my last will and Testament in testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal this twenty sixth day of April in the year of our Lord one thousand Eight hundred and twenty five.

"Signed sealed and delivered
in the presence of
Nath'l Penick
Willis W. Penick
Susan L. Tuggle
John Tuggle

"At a court held for Prince Edward County November the 17th 1828. This last will and Testament of Judith Penick dec'd was presented in Court and proved by the oaths of Nathaniel Penick and John Tuggle two witnesses thereto, ordered that the same be recorded on the motion of John Morton and Charles Baldwin Exors herein named, they with John Walthall and John Tuggle their securities entered into and acknowledged their bond for the purpose in the penalty of three thousand dollars, conditioned according to law, and took the oath required by law, certificate for obtaining a probate thereof in due form is granted them.

"Teste
B. T. Worsham, C.C."

Siblings, surname Walker

James, married Sarah
Warren, married Magdalen Burton; issue
William, married Drusilla Woodson
Joel, married Sarah [?] Bowen
Peter
Robert, possibly married Agatha; issue
Benjamin, married Sarah [?] Hudson
Henry
Lucy, married Alexander LeGrande
[Judith]

Parents are Numbers 766 and 767.

384 – Johann Heinrich BEKKER was the father of Johann Friedrich Bekker. He died on 13 May 1716 at Nienhagen, Schötmar parish, Lippe-Detmold at the age of 71 years; the

342 Sarah Walker, the daughter of Warren and (Magdalen Burton) Walker, married first Skipworth Harris; after his death she married William McGehee, Person Number 380 in this volume, as his second wife.
cause of death is not stated, and he was a widower.

His birth year can be calculated to about 1645. He was living at Nienhagen when his son was born about 1677.

His wife, Anna Ilsabein Bekker, died in Nienhagen on 12 October 1714 at the age of 57, placing her birth about 1657. It is not certain whether Anna Ilsabein was the mother of his known son, Johann Friedrich Bekker, who was called Meise after his marriage to the widow Meise. It is equally possible that Johann Friedrich was Anna Ilsabein’s son or Johann Heinrich’s issue from an earlier marriage.

Parents have not been identified.

394 – Johann SCHLICHTING married Ilsabein Mensenkamp about 1680, based upon the birth of a child in 1681. The family lived at Mackenbruch, Oerlinghausen parish, Lippe-Detmold.

There is a gap in Oerlinghausen parish death records between 1683 and 1725, and Johann’s death date is estimated, based upon the birth of a child in 1690, that he died between that year and 1725, as his death is not found after the records pick up again in 1725.

Parents have not been identified.

395 – Ilsabein MENSENKAMP was the wife of Johann Schlichting, whom she probably married about 1680.

Since her death cannot be found when Oerlinghausen parish death records begin after a 1683-1725 gap, her date date is estimated to be between her last known child’s birth in 1690 and 1725, when records are again available; the records have been searched after that date, and her death was not found.

Parents have not been identified.

396 – Johann Henrich EVERT married Ilsche Besten on 7 November 1691. The couple was living at Lämershagen, Westfalen, Preussen, when the birth of a son occurred in 1700.

Lämershagen was in the parish of Oerlinghausen, Lippe-Detmold. Since his death cannot be found in Oerlinghausen church records after 1725, when they begin to be extant, he must have died between 1700 and 1725.

Parents have not been identified.

397 – Ilsche BESTEN was confirmed in Oerlinghausen, Lippe-Detmold in 1681. She married Johann Henrich Evert on 7 November 1691, and bore him one known child in 1700,
perhaps more children.

She died on 4 September 1737 at Lämershagen, her age stated as 73 years, which calculates to a birth year of 1664. Interestingly, her name was listed as ‘Ilsche Evert Senior’ when the death record was written. Perhaps she had a daughter-in-law, sister-in-law or niece with the same name.

Some of the Besten family from Oerlinghausen parish were early immigrants to Louisiana.

Parents have not been identified.

400 – Johann HACHMEISTER was born at Hillegossen 6, Heepen parish, Westfalen, Preussen. He married Ilsche Ramsell about 1663-67, and the couple, dwelling at Hillegossen Farm Number 6, had two sons.

He died in December, 1694, at Hillegossen.

Parents have not been identified.

401 – Ilsche RAMSELL, otherwise Ramsel, Ramßel(l) and Ramsfeld, was born at Hillegossen 2, Heepen parish, Westfalen, Germany. She married Johann Hachmeister about 1663-67, and bore two sons to him.

Widowed in 1694, she died 27 May 1709 at Hillegossen 6.

Parents have not been identified.

402 – Johann Henrich MEYER ZU ELENTRUP was born at Sieker 1, Heepen parish, Westfalen, Preussen, to Johann Henrich Meyer zu Elentrup and his wife Ilsabein née Meyer zu Milse.

He married Trin, otherwise Anna, Meyer zu Hahlen in October, 1665, and the couple had two sons.

Johann died on 31 October 1731, at Sieker Farm Number 1.

Parents are Numbers 804 and 805.

403 – Trin [or Anna] Ilsabein MEYER ZU HALEN was born about 1667. She married Johann Henrich Meyer zu Elentrup in October 1665, and bore him two sons.

Widowed in 1731, she died at Sieker Farm Number 1, Heepen parish, Westfalen, Preussen on 10 February 1744.
Parents have not been identified.

404 – Johann Philip MEYER ZU BEXTEN was born about 1642 at Bexten, Schößmar parish, Lippe-Detmold, to Johann Meyer zu Bexten and his wife, Margarethe née Meyer zu Volkhausen.

He married Margarete Magdalena Meyer zu Olderdissen in October, 1679. The couple had two known children, perhaps others.

He died before 1708.

Sibling, surname Meyer zu Bexten
[Johann Philip]
Anna, name of husband unknown; issue

Parents are Numbers 808 and 809.

405 – Margarete Magdalena MEYER ZU OLDERDISSEN was born about 1657.

She married Johann Philip Meyer zu Bexten in October, 1679, and bore him at least two children.

She died on 21 October 1727 in Heepen parish, Westfalen, Preussen.

Parents have not been identified.

410 – Johann SCHLICHTING’s biography is printed as Person Number 394 above.

411 – Ilsabein MENSENKAMP’s biography is printed as Person Number 395 above.

412 – Johann Henrich EVERT’s biography is printed as Person Number 396 above.

413 – Ilsche BESTEN’s biography is printed as Person Number 397 above.

420 – Hans Friedrich DEPPING was born on 27 January 1692 at Laßbruch, Silixen parish, Lippe-Detmold, to Hans Depping and his wife Anna Catharine née Wehmann. He was baptized on 9 February 1692. Three baptismal sponsors are named: T. Deppings Meyer zu Bexten, one I cannot read, and Bernd Depping of Bösingfeld.

His confirmation at age 14 is recorded in the Silixen churchbook, in 1706.

He was a ‘host’ (innkeeper) in Laßbruch.
His status given as ‘widower’, he agreed to a marriage contract with “Amelia Hedewich Bexten” dated 2 October 1716 at the court in Schötmar. I didn’t attempt to document his earlier marriage(s). His 1716 marriage took place on 4 November at Silixen, and the bride’s name is given Ammalia Hedewig Bexten from Hörentrup in the marriage entry.

The couple had at least one child, Hermann Conrad Dietrich Depping, our ancestor. No effort was made to find other issue the couple might have had.

Hans Friedrich died on 16 December 1756; his age is given as 64 years and 10 months, a very close calculation for those days. Neither a cause of death nor a burial date is stated.

Parents are Numbers 840 and 841.

421 – Ammalia Hedewig BEXTEN was baptized on 16 January 1690. She was probably born the previous December 25. The 4 November 1716 marriage entry in the Silixen churchbook, when she married Hans Friedrich Depping, states that she is “from Hörentrup”. I read her father’s name as Comet zu Hörentrup (although her name is Bexten) in the marriage contract, dated 2 October 1716, in the Schötmar court records. The LDS extraction of the Schötmar parish birth records includes the Christening of a daughter, Amelia Hedwich zu Hoerentrup on 16 January 1690. Her father’s name is Comet zu Hoerentrup. Her status is ‘maiden’ on the marriage contract, which rules out widowhood as an explanation of the name discrepancy, but it isn’t unusual to find Lippe citizens using more than one name.

Sven Högermann of Oerlinghausen, a descendant, supplied her father’s name: Hans Barthold Bexten zu Hörentrup. He also found her mother’s name in some resource inaccessible to me: Anna Elisabeth Detering.

Ammaila Hedewig bore at least one child to Depping.

She died on 28 December 1756 at Laßbruch, Silixen parish, twelve days after her husband’s death. The death entry states that she lived 60 (or 66) years and three days; the age figure simply cannot be read. I went to look at the original churchbook at the Archives in Detmold, but they have only a microfiche copy, which is no more legible than the microfilm available from the Family History Library in Salt Lake City, Utah. If the original could be found, perhaps a better assessment of the figure could be made. In any case, after finding the baptism of Amelia Hedwich zu Hoerentrup on 16 January 1690, I’m certain I have found the right person, and her father’s title is indeed Comet (roughly a corresponds to the modern rank of first lieutenant). The age discrepancy can be explained by either a calculation error or the fact that the old style calendar, with the new year beginning in March, was in use.

Siblings, surname Bexten or Hörentrup

343 Jungfr.: Can be translated ‘virgin’.
344 This list is found in D 71, Nr. 597, Adolf Redeker Detmold 1972, on file at Staatsarchiv Detmold. I also found six (slight differences in name spellings) of these children on the International Genealogical
Anna Marie
Bernhard Heinrich
Philip Heinrich, married Luise Catharine Maria Amtsmeyer
Margretha Lovysa
Louisa Marie
[Amalia Hedewig]
Eva Maria

Half-siblings, surname Volkering, names unknown, three children born to her mother’s second marriage to Heinrich Eberhard Volkering.

Parents are Numbers 842 and 843.

422 – Johann Conrad WOLFF, Jr.’s birth year of about 1707 has been calculated from his age—it looks like 15—when he was confirmed 29 March 1722 at Bösingfeld. His parents were unquestionably Johann Conrad Wolff, Sr. (otherwise Wulff, Wolf etc.) and Anna Clara Marie Lorleberg. The absence of a birth/Christening record is due to a gap in the Bösingfeld church records during that period. I have designated the two Johann Conrad Wolff men “Jr.” and “Sr.” for clarification; at no place in the records I have researched are they so designated.

Excursus: While I lost track of my research notes and have been unable to fully reconstruct them, there is no question about his link to his parents.

I documented the births of three children to the Wolff-Lorleberg couple, born in 1702, 1703 and 1706. I documented the deaths of two, a match with the facts set forth in the obituary of Johann Conrad Wolff, Sr. In addition, I found Johann Conrad’s mother, Anna Clara Marie Lorleberg, widow Wolff, standing as sponsor to Anna Catharine Dorothee Wolff who was baptized on 24 July 1735. This child is known to be the sister to Catharine Dorothee Wolff, documented in marriage records where the two sisters married Hermann Conrad Dietrich Depping. (The other sponsors at that baptism were the baby’s other grandmother, Catharine Agnese Falckmann, married to Freund, and another Freund lady from Laßbruch.) Anyone who doubts my facts will be able to reconstruct them using the Bösingfeld church records. I am confident that my analyses are valid.

***

On 5 May 1733, Johann Conrad married Catharine Margarethe Freund at Bösingfeld. Two daughters were born to the couple, both of whom married Hermann Conrad Dietrich Depping. Additional issue of the couple was not sought when I researched them.

His wife having died on 23 August 1746, he remarried to the maiden Lucie Elisabeth Grupen on 21 April 1747. I did not research issue from this marriage.

Johann Conrad died of pneumonia on 16 March 1769 at Bösingfeld, his funeral and burial occurring on 18 March.

Index. Redeker confirms that Amalia Hedewig is our ancestor with the notation that she married “Depping, Hans Friedrich, widower and innkeeper of Laßbruch, Administrative Office Varenholz”. 
Siblings, surname Wolff
  One brother
  Two sisters

Parents are Numbers 844 and 845.

423 – Catharine Margarethe FREUND’s parentage is in question. Was she the daughter of Johann Henrich Freund, Conductor zu Maspe, and his wife Catharine Agnese née Falkmann (otherwise Falckmann)? The facts that I have been able to glean follow, along with conjectures and possible scenarios:

“Catrina Margret” Freund was confirmed at Reelkirchen, Lippe-Detmold on 25 March 1725, her name followed by the notation, “Conductor zu Maspes Tochter” — Conductor zu Maspe’s daughter. A confirmation age of about 14 can be assumed, pointing to a birth about 1711. No birth nor baptism of a child of Conductor zu Maspe Johann Henrich Freund and his wife Catharine Agnese née Falkmann was recorded in the Reelkirchen church books during 1710, 1711 or 1712. The Freund-Falkmann couple had other children: Anna Maria born in 1706 born where?; Johann Friedrich born in 1708 in Bösinfeld; Johann Christian born in 1714, Lucie Dorothee born in 1716, Johann Friedrich born in 1719, and Anna Sophia Dorothea born in 1721 in Reelkirchen; Johann Anton Henrich born in 1723 where?, and Christoph Moritz born in 1725 in Reelkirchen.

Two things come to mind that may be important to the solution of this puzzle. The long gap between 1708 and 1714 makes me believe that Catharine Margarethe belongs to this family and the pastor simply failed to record her birth. While no baptism is recorded in Reelkirchen for Johann Anton Henrich Freund, his death at the age of seven months and three weeks is recorded in 1724, exposing another possible occasion when the pastor was remiss about record keeping.

Perhaps the mother went elsewhere to give birth or happened to deliver these two babies while she was visiting somewhere. Perhaps the pastor was simply careless.

It is possible that our Catharine Margarethe’s Christening is found in the Reelkirchen church record: Christening of Catharine Margarethe, illegitimate daughter of Johann Henrich Falkmann and Ilsabe Mertens was recorded on 17 July 1711; Johann Henrich Freund, Conductor zu Maspe is listed first among the two godparents, and I can only read the first name of the other, Catrina __________.

Neither a death nor a confirmation for this child can be found in Reelkirchen nor in Horn where her father lived. A Catharine Margarethe Gröppers was confirmed at Horn in 1725, and a Catharine Margarethe Högetmann was confirmed there in 1726. Ilsabe Mertens probably married, and her daughter with Falkmann could have ‘gone by’ her step-father’s name.

If the Falkmann-Mertens daughter Catharine Margarethe was adopted by the Freund-
Falkmann couple, the long gap between births to them remains unaccounted-for.

If the Freund-Falkmann couple adopted Freund’s Goddaughter (who was the daughter of Fr. Freund’s brother) Catharine Margarete, the entire Freund ancestry is negated and persons Number 846, 1692, 1693, 3384, 3386, 3387, 6768, 13536, 13537, and 27072 must be deleted. Some of these people come into our ancestry in other ways, however.

Johann Henrich Falkmann was Conductor zu Horn; his marriage, and I failed to record his wife’s name, was childless as far as I was able to ascertain. His ancestry is the same, of course, as that of his sister, Catharine Agnese Falkmann, Person Number 847 in this compilation.

I have not sought ancestry for Ilsabe Mertens, nor do I know where to look.

Excursus: If the Freund-Falkmann couple adopted Catharine Margarethe, Fr. Freund’s niece, is she the reason that I feel incredibly enormous empathy with adopted persons who experience a burning compulsion to connect with their biological roots? After careful examination of myself over many years’ time, an adoption somewhere in my ancestry is the only explanation that comes to mind, for my obsessive interest in the subject. I’ve expounded upon this in my autobiography; see Lila Marie Niemann, Person Number 3.

***

As noted above, Catharine Margarethe Freund’s confirmation records states that she is the daughter of Johann Henrich Freund, Conductor zu Maspe. Her parents’ names are stated again in her death as recorded in 1746 in Bosingfeld (my translation from the German-mixed-with-Latin, punctuation added): 25 August is buried Catharine Margaretha Freund, wife of Johann Conrad Wolff; father Johann Henrich Freund, mother Cath. Agnese Falckmans, born 1711, died 1746. An illegible last word in this entry may state the cause of death.

Siblings, surname Freund
- Anna Maria, possibly married Johann Anton Hoecker
- Johann Friedrich
- [Catharine Margarethe]
- Johann Christian
- Lucie Dorothee, married Johann Herman Niemann
- Johann Friedrich, died age 16 weeks and 2 days
- Anna Sophia Dorothea
- Johann Anton Heinrich, died age about 5 months
- Christoph Moritz

Parents are Numbers 846 and 847, possible problem explored above.

---

345 If proof is ever found that she is Fr. Freund’s niece, the daughter of Johann Henrich Falkmann, and was adopted by the Freund couple, the Number 846 ancestry is negated, but since Falkmann and Fr. Freund are sister and brother, the Number 847 ancestry remains valid.
424 – Christoph KIEL was confirmed in at the age of 16 in 1701, his name being listed among “boys at Stemmen” in the Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold confirmation register. This points to a birth year of about 1685, but birth and baptism records are not available that year. Nothing has been ascertained about his parents.

He married Anna Catharina Blome on 17 October 1711; both were residents of Stemmen. The only issue of the marriage that I have documented is their son Jobst Henrich, our direct ancestor. They may have had other children.

Christoph died on 12 November 1752 at Stemmen at the age of 67, confirming the birth year of 1685 calculated from the confirmation age and date.

Parents have not been identified.

425 – Anna Catherine BLOME was among the “maidens at Stemmen”, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold, confirmed in 1702. She was 15 years old, which subtracts to a probable 1687 birth year. There are no resources available to me in which I might research her birth and baptism, thus finding parents’ names. Marriage contracts for Varenholz are not available as early as her marriage.

She married Christoph Kiel on 17 October 1711, and bore one known child to him. I did not try to find other possible issue.

Anna Catherine died on 3 March 1748 at Stemmen. Her age is stated as 60 years and 10 months, calculating a birthdate of about May, 1687.

Parents have not been identified.

426 – Hans Herman KIEL, also called DEPPING(S)(MEYER), was born in Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold in March 1711, to Herm Kiel and his wife, Maria Florken. Sponsors at his baptism were Arend Schieper, Tons Depping and Hans Kiel from Silixen. The record is not clear enough for me to guess that all three were from Silixen, or whether it can be inferred that the first two were local men from Stemmen because no places of residence were stated for them, only the third dwelling at Silixen.

He was confirmed by the pastor at Varenholz on 29 May 1724.

On 3 July 1742, the pastor at Varenholz recorded the marriage of Hans Herman Kiel and Sophia Stock, the widow of Christoph Wilkening, both of Stemmen. I did not research issue other than our direct ancestor, their daughter Anna Sophia Elisabeth.

The name Depping or Deppingsmeyer comes from Wilkening, who was also called Deppingsmeyer.
Hans Herman died at Stemmen on 24 October 1747, at the age of 37 years and 8 months. The calculation is a little wrong compared with birth entry in the Varenholz churchbook.

Parents are Numbers 852 and 853.

427 – Anna Sophia Elisabeth STOCK was born at Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold, in the time frame of February through June of 1724. Dates are obliterated in the tight binding of the Varenholz churchbook. Her parents were Johann Christian Stock (otherwise Stoock) and his wife, Anna Maria née Stock.

She was confirmed by the pastor at Varenholz on 29 June 1738.

Anna married Christoph Wilkening, also called Depping and Deppingsmeyer, in December, 1740; he died on 28 October 1741, and Anna bore him a posthumous son, Johann Conrad Wilkening, in January 1742.

She married our ancestor Hans Hermann Kiel, who was afterward called Depping or Deppingsmeyer, on 3 July 1742 and bore to him our ancestress, Anna Sophia Elisabeth Depping-Kiel in December, 1743

After the death of second husband Hans Hermann Kiel or Depping(s)(meyer) 24 October 1747, she bore him a posthumous son, Johann Hermann, in March, 1748.

She married Johann Henrich Stillwold of Stemmen on 16 May 1749.

She died at Stemmen on 3 February 1773 at the age of 49 years, outlived by her third husband Johann Henrich Stillwold.

Siblings, surname Stock

Simon Henrich Adolph
Johan Henrich
[Anna Sophia Elisabeth]
Johann Christian
Anna Marie Elisabeth
Johann Herm

Parents are Numbers 854 and 855.

428 – Herman Christoph ROSEMEIER, along with his twin brother Johan Peter, was baptized at St. Petri church in Herford, Westfalen, Preußen on 24 July 1714. His parents were Christophel Rosemeier, a Tambour (Drummer) in the Companie of Major (I can’t read his name), and Margaretha Becker of Almena. Johan Peter’s sponsor was Anna Liesabeth Prüßner of Uffeln, which was in the Prussian Province of Westfalen, across the River Weser from Lippe-Detmold, and Herman Christoph’s sponsor was Anna Margarethe
“Becker” of Almena, Lippe-Detmold.

Research Overview: Standard genealogical practice is to work from the known back to the unknown. Searching Almena, Lippe-Detmold church records, I found the birth of Herman Christoph’s son, then Herman Christoph’s marriage to Anna Ilsabean Hilcker. The next event to look for was his birth, but confirmation lists are easier to read, and a birth year can be inferred from confirmation date because confirmations are usually about 14 years old. If the confirmation was baptized in the same parish, guessing at a birth year is easier if his confirmation is found.

Hermann Christoph was one of four among 25 Almena 1728 confirmations with an extra note beside their ages. It looks like ein and I took it to mean that those four confirmations had come in to the Almena parish after their baptisms. I did, however, search Almena baptisms, and did not find him.

After I had reviewed the marriage entry and searched for and found his death in Almena, and still found nothing to indicate whence he had come into the parish, I thought I had reached the end of the line; because looking for someone in Germany when one doesn’t know his home town is like looking for a needle in a haystack.

Next, I looked at the International Genealogical Index, and a Hermann Christoph Rosemeier’s baptism was recorded at St. Petri in Herford, Westfalen in 1714, the right age to be my Hermann. I ordered the indicated film, thinking that I had nothing to lose, hoping but not really expecting to find anything in it to tie that baptism to my man in Almena.

The St. Petri, Herford, Westfalen did indeed tie both the mother and Hermann Christoph’s sponsor to Almena. My translation, with help from cousin Ursula Heinemann née Brandsmeier:

"Two local midwives have brought 2 children [to be baptized]. Their father is Christoffel Rosemeier, Drummer in Major ____’s Company here ____, [mother is] Margaretha Becker from Almena near Rinteln.

"[Sponsor is] Anna Liesabeth PruBner from Uffeln [for] Johann Peter [Rosemeier].
[Sponsor is] Anna Margaretha Becker from Almena [for] Herman Christoph [Rosemeier]."

The parents were married—the babies would have been identified as illegitimate if they had been unmarried. It seems clear from the fact that Herman Christoph was confirmed at Almena, that the mother died. The fact of the midwives bringing the babies to be baptized makes it seem likely to me that the mother’s condition was serious, and her husband must have been away with his Company. A widowed father in the Army would have been unable to rear his children. The sponsors at some point assumed their responsibilities, and Herman Christoph went to Almena.

No church records from Uffeln—not to be confused with Üffeln—have been filmed, so I haven’t been able to see if Herman Christoph’s twin, Johann Peter, was confirmed there.
‘Becker’ is not a surname found in Almena, so the name in the St. Petri churchbook is wrong; I suspect that it should have been written ‘Böker’, but it is too much of a stretch to try to document a mother when I don’t really know her name. I looked through what death records I could find for St. Petri in Herford, thinking that she may have died soon after the twins’ birth, but the recorded deaths seem to be those of prominent persons only.

* * *

In 1737, Herman married Anna Margarethe Dreyer, who died in childbirth on 2 May 1745. Surviving issue of the couple has not been researched.

Herman’s marriage to Alla Ilsabein Hilcker from Linderbruch, Bözingfeld parish, Lippe-Detmold is recorded in the Almena churchbook on 9 November 1745.

After I had found that couple’s son who became our ancestor, I did not try to find other issue.

Widowed in 1775, Herman died of pneumonia at Almena on 14 March 1783. The funeral and burial were on 16 March.

Siblings, surname Rosemeier
   [Herman Christoph]
   Johann Peter

Parents are Numbers 856 and 857.

429 – Anna Ilsabein HILCKER was born on 5 June 1713 at Linderbruch, Bözingfeld parish, Lippe-Detmold to Johan Hilcker, otherwise Hilker, and his wife Anna Maria née Brandt. Sponsors at her 13 June baptism were Ilsabein Schmidt, Anna Elisabeth ________, and Anna Dorothea Möllenburg. The Hilcker family’s home village is not named in Anna Ilsabein’s baptism entry, but I found two other children of the same parents, with the village of Linderbruch named elsewhere in the churchbook.

Anna’s 9 November 1745 marriage to Herman Christoph Rosemeier is recorded in the Almena churchbook. They may have had more children than the one I found who became our ancestor.

Having attended the school at Assmissen, Bözingfeld parish, Anna was confirmed in 1726.

Anna died of tuberculosis on 29 January 1775, with funeral and burial at Almena on 1 February.

Siblings, surname Hilker
   [Anna Ilsabein]
   Johann Herman
   Catharina Louisa
Parents are Numbers 858 and 859.

430 — **Herman Christoph Vogt** was born on 22 December 1699 at Hensdorf, Lüdenhausen parish, Lippe-Detmold, to Hans Vogt, called Frevert, and his wife, Trina Aagnes née Otenhausen. It is possible that the date given is that of his baptism; his sponsors were his mother’s father, Meyer zu Otenhausen, Korff and Kathér of Niedern Meyern (both names questionable because the handwriting is difficult).

Excursus: Herman’s birth date of 22 December 1699 is superscribed on his 1723 marriage entry in the Lüdenhausen churchbook. When I first began to find these notations, almost always in a different handwriting than the original entry, I thought that the church’s pastor was making them, having looked back through the books as he entered a current event. When I did some serious research at the Nordrhein-Westfalen Staatsarchiv in Detmold, I was very surprised to find some of these notations had been made with ball-point pens. I’m not sure when ball-points came into general use, but it was certainly not long before World War II. Many of the notations are modern. If whoever made them was not a competent researcher, they could be very wrong. In this case, the birth/baptism was found on the date shown on the marriage entry.

***

He was confirmed at Lüdenhausen on Easter Sunday, 1 April 1714.

The marriage banns having been proclaimed on 15 June 1723, Herman married Catharina Ilsabein Billstein (otherwise Bilstein) of Langenholzhausen, Lippe-Detmold on 22 June 1723. The marriage is recorded in the Lüdenhausen churchbook. Likely the couple had issue other than our ancestor, their daughter Anna Marie.

Herman died at Hensdorf on 14 January 1748 (that may be the burial date) at the age of 49 years.

Parents are Numbers 860 and 861.

431 — **Catharina Ilsabein Bilstein**’s baptism is recorded in the Langenholzhausen, Lippe-Detmold churchbook, with a date of 21 October 1699. This may be either her birth or baptism date. The name of four sponsors are given, but their names are poorly written. My guesses: The young Meyer’s wife, the old Nagel’s wife, the Kleinhofe, the young Holmeyer. These are all women, their names preceded by die, the German feminine article meaning ‘the’. Catharina’s father, Cord Bilstein is named in the churchbook entry; the mother is not mentioned. Another source names Cord’s wife, A. M. Domeyer.

Catharina was confirmed at Langenholzhausen in 1714, and she is listed as Trina Ilsabein Bilstein, implying a ‘call name’ of Trina.

Trina married Herman Christoph Vogt on 22 June 1723. The Lüdenhausen churchbook
entry states that she is from Langenholzhausen. Issue from the marriage, other than our ancestor Anna Marie Vogt, was not researched.

Widowed in 1748, Trina died at the age of 88 in 1786 in Hensdorf. Her funeral and burial were on 26 March 1786, recorded in the Lüdenhausen churchbook.

Parents are Numbers 862 and 863.

432 – Johann Cordt BÖKE was born about 1677, probably at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold.

It must have been after his marriage to Catharina Margreta Sülewald on 8 October 1710, that he began to use the Sülewald or Süllwald name. Both marriage partners were “of Stemmen”, recorded in the Varenholz marriage register. It seems likely that she was the heir to the Süllwald Hof in Stemmen.

I did not research issue from the marriage, other than our direct ancestor Jürgen or Johann Friedrich Süllwold.

The death entry in the Varenholz churchbook states that Johann Cordt Böcke alias Süwoldsmeyer of Stemmen was 74 years old when he died. The entry is dated 31 May 1751, but it isn’t clear whether that is his death or funeral date. Other death entries on the page give ages in years and months, and I infer from the fact that months are not stated, that he was almost exactly 74 years old. On the other hand, his family may not have known how old he was.

Parents have not been identified.

433 – Cathrina Margreta SÜLEWOLD was probably born about 1687. She was “of Stemmen” when she married Cordt Böke in 1710. The Süllwold name comes from her family. She bore at least one child to him, and I didn’t try to find other issue of the marriage.

Cathrina was “widow Süllwold from Stemmen” when she died in January, 1752. An inkblot obliterates the date. Her death age was 65 years.

Parents have not been identified.

434 – Johann Franz PLECKE was probably born at Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold, about 1696. He was confirmed there in 1710 at the age of 14.

He married Marie Ilsabein Hancke on 26 June 1721; both were “of Varenholz”. The couple had at least one child, our ancestor Sophia Ernestine Plecke, perhaps others. I did not try to find additional issue.

His wife died in 1741. His death is recorded in Varenholz on 22 March 1764; this could be
the funeral date. His age was 69 years.

Parents have not been identified.

435 – Marie Ilsabein HANCKE (the name rendered in the German feminine is ‘Hancken’) was born about 1698, probably at Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold. She was confirmed at Varenholz in 1712 at the age of 14.

She married Johann Franz Plecke on 26 June 1721, and bore him one known child, perhaps others.

She died on 2 May 1741 at Varenholz; this could be her funeral date. Her age is given as 40 years and nine months, which works out to birth in July or August 1700. I suspect that her age at confirmation is more nearly correct.

Parents have not been identified.

436 – Anton Christian SCHÖTKER or FLÖRCKE or FLÖRCKEMEIER was born at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold to Johann Schötker or Flörcke, otherwise Flörckemeier etc. and Dorothea Hedwig Grinert. His baptism is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook, and is dated 2 February 1703. This may be his birth or baptism date. His sponsor was Tönnies Schötker.

He was confirmed in 1719.

At Varenholz on 16 July 1728 he married Wilhelmine Louysa Meyer zu Volckhausen, otherwise Volck and Volckhausen, of Schötmar. The couple had two sons that I know of, perhaps other children.

A Website maintained (2004) by a Lippe family historian and researcher displays transcriptions of several Lippe “house inscriptions”, among them the following; spellings from the Website may or may not be accurate in all respects.:


Translation, 2004, by Veronika Timpe:

“Those who trust in God are well established in heaven as well as on earth. Anton Christian Flörke and Wilhelmine Louise Volckhuisen had this house built by M.346 Johann Brinkmann on July 14th, 1729."

It is interesting to note that the couple had been married only about a year when they built

346 M. means Meister, refers to the Baumeister (master builder) with whom they contracted.
this house. One can’t guess whether the date of 14 July is the date its foundation was laid, the
date of its completion, or simply the date that the carver finished the inscription.

Anton’s death is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook on 23 October 1743, which may be
his funeral date. He was a resident of Stemmen. His age is stated as 40 years and 9 months,
which when subtracted works out to a birth date about 10 days before his baptism.

Parents are Numbers 872 and 873.

437 – Wilhelmine Louysa MEYER ZU VOLCKHAUSEN (otherwise Volkhausen) was
born to Johan Berend Meyer zu Volckhausen and his wife, Sophia Elisabeth née Schemmel.
Her baptism is recorded in the Schötmar, Lippe-Detmold churchbook with the date of 9
February 1703, which could be either her birth or baptism date. Her sponsor was Louysa
Margarethe Schemmel. The family may have lived at the Volckhausen Hof in Schötmar
parish.

While it is possible that Sophia Elisabeth Schemmel was a later wife of Meyer zu
Volckhausen and not Wilhelmine Louysa’s mother, a Schemmel sponsor makes the
connection more than likely, and I have based my assertion that Wilhelmine’s mother and
Johan Berend’s wife was a Schemmel on that fact. An older sister of Wilhelmina was named
Sophia Elisabeth, likely for her mother, providing a small additional piece of evidence.

Schötmar confirmation records are not extant for the probable time, 1716-1719, that
Wilhelmine would have been confirmed.

She married Anton Christian Schötker who was called Flörcke or Flörckemeyer on 16 July
1728 at Varenholz. She bore him at least two sons, perhaps other children.

Widowed in 1743, she married Johann Hermann Staackmann on 3 July 1744. He was then
called Stackmann or Flörckemeyer.

Wilhelmine died on 30 November 1753 at Stemmen, her age stated as 50 years and 10
months. Calculated, this is near perfect when compared with her baptism date. She may have
been a week old or more when she was baptized.

Staackman or Flörkemeyer survived his wife by some five years, dying at the age of 52 years
and 6 months on 11 October 1758.

Siblings, surname Meyer zu Volckhausen
  Amelia
  Sophia Elisabeth, died young without issue
  Louysa
  [Wilhelmine Louysa]

Parents are Numbers 874 and 875.
438 – Johann Conrad MANNETTER was born about 1697 or 1698, probably at Stemmen, Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold. He was confirmed at Varenholz in 1712.

He was living at Stemmen when he married Anne Elisabeth Kuhlmann on 23 January 1728, their marriage recorded in the Varenholz churchbook. Perhaps the couple had more children than the one I researched, our ancestor Anne Marie Elisabeth Mannetter.

Johann Conrad’s death is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook. The date is 5 June 1767, which may be his death date or funeral date. His age is stated as 70 years.

Parents have not been identified.

439 – Anne Elisabeth KUHLMANN, in the Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold record of her 23 June 1728 marriage to Johann Conrad Mannetter, is “from Braacke” which is now (2003) Brake, Lippe-Detmold. The writing is quite clear, but the word could possibly be interpreted as ‘Bremke’.

After finding her death date and age and calculating her birth year to about 1698, I ordered the microfilmed Brake churchbooks, but the part of the film covering the likely time of Anne Elisabeth’s birth was too dark to read. There is a card index of Brake parish in the Nordrhein-Westfalen Staatsarchiv in Detmold. I found some similar names, but no person whose name and age were a near enough match to be convincing. I suspect that she did come from there, that one of the people I found is she, and that her age was incorrect when stated at her death.

Bremke is in Almena parish; I read the baptisms, but found no Anne Elisabeth Kuhlmann recorded there.

Anne Elisabeth’s death is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook on 13 June 1759, and may be her death date or the date of her funeral. She had been living at Stemmen, and her age was stated as 61 years.

Parents have not been identified.

440 – Hans Henrich FREITAG was baptized on 9 February 1696, the event recorded in the Talle churchbook. His father was Herman Freitag, although he is only called “Freitag at Rentrup” in the baptismal register. His sponsors were Johan Sölter, a blacksmith at Lemgo; Brakhage’s son at Rentrup, and the son of the innkeeper at Huxoll.

Jones states that this child was born of the marriage of Herman Freitag and Maria Lisabet Frevert; that is impossible, however, because the death (or burial) of Maria Lisabet Freitag, age 28, in Rentrup is recorded in the Talle churchbook on 15 December 1693. Herman obviously married again, but not in Talle, and a subsequent wife was Hans Henrich’s

347 See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 55.
Hans Henrich married about 1729, but his wife’s name is unknown. The couple had two known children, our ancestor Hans Henrich who was born in 1736, and Anna Cattrina Ilsabein who was born in 1740.

His wife, about whom nothing else is known, died before 23 May 1752.

Hans Henrich married on 23 May 1752 Greta Ilsabe Stock, a widow whose maiden name was Arning. His grandson’s marriage contract, drawn up in 1797, seems to imply that she was still living at that time; however I found the death of “Anna Catherina” Freitag of Rentorf, née Arning, recorded on 15 March 1785. The given name is not correct, but the fact that her maiden name was Arning makes it seem like she is Greta.

Hans Henrich’s death is recorded in the Talle death register. He died at Rentorf, his age stated as 66 years, and the entry is dated 6 October 1760. This may be either his death date or the date of his burial.

Father is Number 880.

448 – Hans Curt GUMBEL was born to Johannes Gumbel and his wife Anna Gertrud née Paulus at Niedermöllrich, Hessen. The church records do not make clear whether it his birth or baptism or both, are found recorded on 9 August 1716. He was confirmed in 1730.

The marriage document, an extraction from Niedermöllrich parish records, states that on 27 January 1741, Hans Curt Gumpel, surviving son of the late Johannes Gumpel, married Catharina Büchner, legitimate daughter of Johannes Büchner. Again we see the recurring phenomenon of non-standard spelling. Family research was not carried out; therefore I know of only one child born to the couple.

He died on 29 April 1751 at Niedermöllrich, his funeral and burial taking place on 2 May.

Parents are Numbers 896 and 897.

449 – Catharina BÜCHNER was born to Johannes Büchner and his wife Anna Catharina, née Büchner. The date recorded in the Niedermöllrich, Hessen, church record is 16 April 1719; this may be her birth or baptism date, or both. She was confirmed in 1734.

It seems likely that her parents were related to each other, but the relationship is no nearer than second cousins.

On 27 January 1741, she married Hans Curt Gumbel. She bore at least one child to Gumbel, likely more. If further family research has been undertaken, its result is unknown to me.

After Gumbel’s death in 1751, she married a widower in Niedermöllrich, Valentin Albrecht,
on 6 April 1753. Issue from that marriage is unknown to me.

Catharina died on 1 April 1761 in Niedermöllrich, her funeral and burial occurring on 2 April.

Parents are Numbers 898 and 899.

450 – Johann Adam GRIESEL was born 21 February 1704 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Conrad Griesel and his wife, Catharina nee Hansmann. He was confirmed in 1717.

On 19 April 1729, he married Elisabeth Trischmann. The couple had one known child, probably more. Result of any further family research is unknown to me.

He died on 28 January 1789 at Niedermöllrich, with funeral and burial on 1 February.

Parents are Numbers 900 and 901.

451 – Elisabeth TRISCHMANN was born to Curt Trischmann and his wife Catharina nee Gumbel at Niedermöllrich, Hessen. The church record is not clear whether her birth or baptism or both were recorded on 5 February 1702. She was confirmed in 1714.

She married Johann Adam Griesel on 19 April 1729, and bore one known child to him.

She died on 24 March 1753 at Niedermöllrich, with funeral and burial on 28 March.

Parents are Numbers 902 and 903.

452 – Caspar or Kaspar SCHEFFER was born about 1695 at Solms near Niederaula, Hessen, Germany.

He married Anna Elisabeth Reuter on 11 June 1722, and they had at least six children. He was the schoolmaster at Solms for 40 years.

He died on 7 August 1761 at Solms, and was buried there.

Parents have not been identified.

453 – Anna Elisabeth REUTER was born 24 October 1705 at Solms to Conrad Reuter and his wife Anna Gela Webert.

She married Caspar Scheffer on 11 June 1722.

She died 23 January 1785 at Niederjossa; since she was approaching 80 years old and had been a widow for a long time, one can guess that she was being cared for by one of her
children who lived there.

Parents are Numbers 906 and 907.

454 – Conrad ZULAUF was born 3 April 1713 at Solms, to Johannes Zulauf and his wife, whose name is not stated in the baptismal document. Conrad Klippert of Oberaula was his baptismal sponsor.

On 14 May 1734, he married Anna Martha Vaupel of Niederjossa.

Father is Number 908.

455 – Anna Martha VAUPEL is listed as being ‘from Niederjossa’ at her marriage to Conrad Zulauf.

Parents have not been identified.

456 – Dietmar RITTER was born at Lohre, Hessen on 19 November 1711 to Dietmar Ritter and his wife Anna Martha nee Ittal. He was confirmed there in 1726.

He married Martha Elisabeth Brenner on 5 March 1745 at Niedermöllrich. The couple had one known child, perhaps others.

He died on 13 March 1778 at Niedermöllrich, with funeral and burial on 15 March.

Parents are Numbers 912 and 913.

457 – Martha Elisabeth BRENNER was born 20 December 1722 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Johannes Brenner and his wife Guida, nee Bornkessel. She was confirmed in 1736.

She married Dietmar Ritter on 5 March 1745 and bore at least one child to him.

She died on 7 December 1761 at Niedermöllrich; her funeral and burial took place on 9 December.

Parents are Numbers 914 and 915.

458 – Adam RÖMER was born about 1724 in Wernswig, Hessen.

He married Anna Martha Trieschmann on 21 February 1747 at Verna, Hessen, and the couple had one known child. He was Kastenmeister, administrator of the church office there.
He died on 13 January 1794 at Vema, at the age of 70 years, his death age being used to calculate his birth year. He was buried there on 16 January.

Parents have not been identified.

459 – Anna Martha TRIESCHMANN was born about 1721 to Johannes Trieschmann and his wife Elsabetha née Ritter. She was confirmed in Vema, Hessen, in 1735.

She married Adam Römer on 21 February 1747 at Vema, and bore him one known child.

Death and burial data are unknown to me.

Parents are Numbers 918 and 919.

460 – Johannes VOLLMAR was born to Johann Heinrich Vollmar and his wife, probably in Wabern, Hessen.

He married Angelika “Engel” Wicke in August 1751, in Niedermöllrich, Hessen, and the couple had one known child.

He died on 9 April 1770 in Niedermöllrich, his funeral and burial taking place there on 12 April.

Father is Number 920.

461 – Angelika WICKE was born at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Johann Jost Wicke and his wife Anna Maria née Dam. The date found in the Niedermöllrich church records is 10 May 1731, which may be her birth or baptism date, or both. There is evidence that she was called ‘Engel’ as a nickname. She was confirmed in 1745.

She married Johannes Vollmar in August 1751, in Niedermöllrich, and bore one known child to him.

She died on 20 April 1796 in Niedermöllrich, with funeral and burial on 22 April.

Parents are Numbers 922 and 923.

462 – Conrad OTTO, the father of Maria Elisabeth Otto, lived at Harle, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

464 – Johann Heinrich NUHN was born to Konrad Nuhn and his wife Christina Eichmann on 18 January 1718 at Niederaula, Hessen, Germany, baptized there, and confirmed there in 1732. He was a shepherd. He married Elisabeth Öhm on 28 April 1752 at Niederaula, and
died there on 9 February 1782.

siblings, surname Nuhn

[ Johann Heinrich ]
Johann Heinrich born 1720, died in infancy
Anna Martha born 1700, died 1741; no issue
Johann Hermann born 1727, married 1750
Johann Niklas born 1735
Elisabeth born 1724 died 1726
Anna Christina born 1731 died 1734

Parents are Numbers 928 and 929.

465 - Elisabeth ÖHM was born 4 December 1726 at Niederaula to Valentine Öhm and his wife, whose name is not known. She was confirmed there in 1740, married Heinrich Nuhn in 1752, and became the mother of 4 known children. She died at Niederaula on 22 December 1814 at the age of 89 years.

father is Number 930.

466 - Johannes Barthold BIEBER was born 9 December 1732 at Niederaula, Hessen, Germany, to Johann Adam Bieber and his wife, Magdalena Zoll. He was confirmed there in 1747. He was the heir to the Erbgut (family estate), and was a farmer. He married Anna Martha Herwig on 30 May 1755 at Niederaula, and died there on 1 February 1808.

siblings, surname Bieber
Johann Barthol (twin) born 1729, died 1730
Johann Jakob (twin) born 1729, died 1729
Johann Bernhard born 1730, died 1733
[Johannes Barthold]
Magdalena born 14 June 1735, died 15 July 1736

Parents are Numbers 932 and 933.

467 - Anna Martha HERWIG was born 29 September 1737 at Niederaula, and confirmed there in 1751.

She married Johann Barthold Bieber on 30 May 1755 and bore him eight known children, the information found in a Bieber family register compiled from the Niederaula church records and archived at the Dekanat in Bad Hersfeld. I believe that if one had time to search for the Herwig family in these registers, or the actual Niederaula churchbooks, her parents’ names could be found. The number 1817, which may lead to the Herwig family, is given for Anna in the Bieber register.

She died on 12 April 1806 at Niederaula, and was buried there.
Parents have not been identified.

468 – Johannes THAMER was born about 1698 or 1699 at Mengshausen, Hessen, the son of Leonhardt Thamer, whose wife’s name is not mentioned in the birth record. He was confirmed there in 1712, and married there on 6 July 1728 to Martha Elisabeth Albert (the marriage record gives her surname as Albrecht, but her birth record, at the parish where she was born, says Albert). He was a farmer. He died at Mengshausen on 19 February 1785 about eleven o’clock at night, and was buried there on 22 February 1785. His death age is given as 86.

Father is Number 936.

469 – Martha Elisabeth ALBERT was baptized on 19 February 1705 at Unterhuhn, Hessen, daughter of Georg Albert. Her mother’s name is not given in the birth record. Sponsors were Nicolaus Mans and another whose name I can’t read, possible clues for finding her mother, because they may have been relatives. She married Johannes Thamer and lived at Mengshausen, where she died on 24 May 1764 at the age of 59 years. She was buried there on 26 May 1764. By the time of her death, the pastor at Mengshausen spelled her name ‘Albert’, using the feminine ending ‘in’.

Father is Number 938.

470 – Michael THIELEN “of Solms” (Hessen) is the name given for the father of Elisabeth Thielen when she married Franz Thamer in 1764, both in the church record and the marriage contract. We found a Johannes Thielen born 18 February 1716, but were unable to find a Michael.

Parents have not been identified.

472 – Johann Georg BÄTZ was born 2 January 1728 at Niederaula to Johann Heinrich Betz, as the name was spelled at that time, and his wife Anna Katharina Both. He was confirmed in 1741. His occupation is listed, but I am unable to read it. He married on 29 January 1753 to Katharine Gross. He died on 1 May 1791 at Niederaula, and was buried there.

Siblings, surname Bätz
  Johann Heinrich born 1706, died 1765 at Niederaula
  Anna Barbara born 1709, confirmed 1724
  Elisabeth born 1713, died 1768 at Niederaula
  Johannes, born 1717, married; died 1789 Niederaula
  Johann Peter born and died 1723 (twin)
  Johannes born and died 1723 (twin)
  [Johann Georg]
Parents are Numbers 944 and 945.

473 – **Katherina GROSS** was born 8 May 1726 at Niederaula, and confirmed there in 1740. She died there 28 August 1782. She married Johann Georg Bätz on 29 January 1753. I believe her parents’ names, and perhaps ancestry further back, may be found in the Niederaula church records.

Parents have not been identified at this writing.

476 – **Caspar or Kaspar SCHEFFER**’s biography is printed as Person Number 452 above.

477 – **Anna Elisabeth REUTER**’s biography is printed as Person Number 453 above.

478 – **Conrad ZULAUF**’s biography is printed as Person Number 454 above.

479 – **Anna Martha VAUPEL**’s biography is printed as Person Number 455 above.

480 – **Hans SCHILLING** lived at Schartau in the Altmark, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany. He was a farmer. Birth information has not been found.

On 15 September 1733, at Schartau, he married Sophie Dorothee Schilling. She died soon afterward.

On 19 September 1736, also at Schartau, he married our ancestress Anna Dorothea Mertens. The couple had one known child, likely more.

The above information was found in the *Ahnenpass* required by Hitler’s government, which was prepared by Pastor Pfeil for a descendant. If the Schartau church records could be examined, I believe that further information could be found.

Parents have not been identified at this writing.

481 – **Anna Dorothea MERTENS** was the wife of Hans Schilling, a widower whom she married on 19 September 1736. The couple lived at Schartau in the Altmark, now (2003) Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany, where she bore at least one child to Schilling.

I believe that further information could be found if the Schartau church records could be examined. The marriage date comes from an *Ahnenpass* that was prepared by Pastor Pfeil of Schartau, for a descendant, while Hitler ruled Germany.

Parents have not been identified at this writing.
482 – Friedrich Wilhelm LÜDERS lived at Hämerten, a village that now (2003) lies in Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany. He was a cooper. Nothing is known about his life except that he had a daughter, described as his “eldest daughter” born about 1746, so it can be inferred that he and his wife, about whom nothing is known, had more children.

The information above comes from an Ahnenpass that was prepared by Pastor Pfeil of Schartau, for a descendant, while Hitler ruled Germany. The pastor of the church in Hämerten told me in 1996 that he has church records going back to 1805, and that if earlier records exist, he doesn’t know where they are.

Parents have not been identified.

488 – Joachim SCHULZE was married, but his wife’s name is not known. Their daughter married in Schinne, and her marriage record states that her father was a farmer in Faulenhorst, a village that is now (2003) in Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

490 – Erdmann SEGER was married, but his wife’s name is unknown. When their daughter married at Schinne in the Altmark, now (2003) in Sachsen-Anhalt, Germany, her marriage record states that her father was a farmer, cottager, wheelwright and □artwright, presumably at Schinne.

Nothing further is known, but perhaps a search of the Schinne church records would produce death information and thus a calculated birth date.

Parents have not been identified.
Illustrations Numbers 308 and 309: The graves of Thomas and Elizabeth "Betty" (Pledge) Poindexter are on the east side of the Yadkin River in Forsythe County, North Carolina. Betty's stone was placed by the DAR in 1991, and the plaque in front of Thomas' stone was dedicated at the same time. Plaque detail below.

Illustration Number 309: Signature of Elizabeth "Betty" (Pledge) Poindexter on a document in her husband's estate papers, described on page 415.
Illustration Number 310: Twentieth-century photo of Henry Pattillo's school house in Granville County, North Carolina.

Illustration Number 310: Circa 1967 photo of the Pattillo home in Granville County, North Carolina. Called 'The Glebe' when it was owned by the Pattillos, it was later renamed 'Sommerset'.

Illustration Number 310: The Historical Marker is one and one-half miles north of Stovall, North Carolina on present-day (2002) Highway 15.

Illustration Number 372: Signature of Joseph Adair, Sr. from a 1779 Laurens County, South Carolina, petition. (Biography found in Generation 8.)
TENTH GENERATION

578 – Charles TAYLOR’s name appears in the baptismal records of North Farnham Parish in Fauquier County, Virginia, when a daughter Catherine, born 2 July 1707, was Christened. Unfortunately, his wife Anne’s maiden name is not mentioned.

Charles owned a great deal of land in Fauquier County, and gave his daughter Catharine Robinson and her children a home after the death of her first husband William Robinson. He died in 1740.

Nothing seems to be provable about his parents or where he was born. It is possible that there is a connection to President Zachary Taylor. Zachary’s daughter Sarah Knox Taylor was the first wife of Confederate States President Jefferson Davis.

Some say he is the son of Hannah, maiden name unknown, who married in succession George Harbin, a Mr. Taylor, John Hughes and Robert Port. She had issue from the first two marriages, and the last two were without issue.

Unproven parentage is explored above.

579 – Anne ________ was the wife of Charles Taylor, was married before 1707, gave birth to a daughter in 1707. She had at least one other child.
Nothing is known about her birth or death.

Parents have not been identified.

600 – John EASLEY, called “Sr.” to distinguish him from his son John, was researched by Dr. Virginia Easley DeMarce. She states that John was the oldest son of Robert and Ann (Parker) Easley, and was probably born about 1680-1688 in Henrico County, Virginia.

Excursus: Henrico County, first mentioned here, was the dwelling place of this Easley line and its antecedents as well as several ancestors on the Pledge line. Our branch of the family merged these two lines in 1850 in Arkansas, with the marriage of Dr. John Blassingame Robinson and Elizabeth Ann Clingman.

John is proven by court records in Henrico County, to have married Mary Benskin, daughter of Jeremiah and Elizabeth Benskin, before 20 August 1711.

Dr. DeMarce found several mentions of this John Easley in the Henrico County court records.

She quotes Henrico County Virginia Orphans’ Court Book 1677-1739, which seems to have been transcribed by Pauline Pearce Warner and published at Tappahannock, Virginia in 1963:

“page 106 [is this page 106 of Mrs. Warner’s transcription, or page 106 of the original court record?] Aug. 20, 1711. John Easly by his petition Setts forth that he has marryed the Daughter of Jeremiah Benskin and therefore prays order for her estate which is in the hands of John Bolling Gentleman, the said Bolling appears and assumes to pay on Account of the said Easly to Abraham Womack the Sum of five pounds five Shillings current money and also promises to pay the said Easly thirty Six pounds ten Shillings in goods at fifty per cent on the first Cost [?] or in Tobacco at one penny per pound, either of which payments is to be at the election of the said Easly, and in full Satisfaction for his wifes estate, to which the said Easly Consents.”

Dr. DeMarce lists a number of other court records, some of which tend to make me think that the young John enjoyed getting into minor disputes with his neighbors, eventually settling most of them out of court. He purchased 400 acres of land in Henrico County in 1735. He seems to have become a substantial citizen and taxpayer by that time; he was called upon in 1736 to work with two others, making an inventory of the property of Francis Dupray, and county records mention his payment of Quit-rents.

In November, 1739, along with his son John Jr., John “acknowledges a Deed with livery and Seisian endorsed to Warham Easly, then Joyce the wife of the Said John Easly Junior (She being first privately examined) relinquishes her right of dower to the land therein conveyd, all which is ordered to be recorded.” It can be inferred, since John Senior’s wife Mary (Benskin) Easley was not called upon to relinquish her dower rights, that she was no longer

348 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 75.
living.

John had died by the day the Henrico County Court sat in April, 1742, when “Warham Easly son of John Easly Chooses Warham [uncle] Easly to be his Guardian who accepts the Charge. Patrick Mullen Enters himself security.”

Court records show that the last Will and Testament of John Easley deceased was presented for probate by Warham Easley the at the May Court in 1742. The actual book recording deeds and wills has disappeared, but deeds and court records have proved that John Jr., William, Warham, Robert and Stephen are the sons of John Easley, Sr. and Mary nee Benskin. Dr. DeMarce believes that Daniel, who died in 1786 is probably their son and Thomas possibly their son. She has found marriages of several unidentified Easley women, some of whom may be the daughters of John, Sr. and Mary, but there is nothing in the record to indicate whether or not they had any daughters.

One of the deeds instrumental in proving these relationships is witnessed by, among others, a man named with a whimsical name: Olive Branch. Perhaps he was really Oliver.

No burial information has been found.

Siblings, surname Easley

[John, Sr.]
Warham, born about 1688, married Sarah (Raibone) Barnes
Margaret, born about 1690, married Thomas Dupray and James Watson
Elizabeth Haley married Philip Martin and a Mr. Kilpatrick
William married Mary Pyrant
Robert married Hannah Bates

Parents are Numbers 1200 and 1201.

601 – Mary BESKIN was born probably between 1680 and 1690, and probably in Virginia. She was apparently the only child of Jeremiah and Elizabeth Benskin.

She married John Easley, Sr. before 10 August 1711, when he appeared before the Henrico County, Virginia court, petitioning for his wife’s estate, which was in the hands of John Bolling, Gentleman. Proofs for her known children are mentioned in her husband’s biography above.

When John Easley Sr. and son John Easley Jr. acknowledge a deed endorsed to Warham Easly at the November Court in Henrico County in 1739, John Jr’s. wife Joyce relinquishes her right of dower; Mary should also have done so but is not mentioned, so it can be inferred, although not stated with certainty, that she was no longer living by that time.

Death and burial information are unknown.

Parents are Numbers 1202 and 1203.
602 – William ALLEN was born about 1692 purportedly in York County, Virginia. He may have been the son of William Allen and his wife Ann, whose maiden name is thought to have been Hudson because they named a son Hudson, and who lived in York County.

Our William’s parentage has not been proven, although there is ample proof that William and Ann Allen did have a son of that name. Major General Henry T. Allen, U.S. Army, researched the Allens and wrote an article entitled “Allen” published in the Kentucky State Historical Register in 1930, which should be consulted. Dr. DeMarce, the Easley researcher, believes, however, that there is not enough proof to link the Allens together as Gen. Allen has done.

Fenton Wicker, in The Allen Family makes the same link that Dr. DeMarce finds suspect. There is no question that William Allen the husband of Judith (who later married Abraham Ratcliffe and William Bailey/Bayly) had a son William who had sons William and Hudson. The question, as I see it, is finding proof that William the brother of Hudson is the same William who married Hannah nee and Mary Hunt, the widow of Robert Minge.

There is a faction among Allen researchers who believes that the following are William Allen’s ancestors; while I deem it likely, there simply isn’t enough proof. They are listed here and may form a basis for further research:

Eleventh Allen Generation

1204 – William Allen was born in 1671, in York County, Virginia to the immigrant William Allen and his wife Judith, whose maiden name is unknown. Nothing is known about his early life except that after his father’s death, which occurred between 10 January 1675/76 and 12 Nov 1677, his guardian was Ralph Flowers.

William probably married his wife Ann about 1691, because their son William was born in 1692. It was in that year, William having reached his majority, that he sued his guardian Ralph Flowers (fflowers) and his mother, for property due him from his father’s estate. He also petitioned the court for division of a tract of land which had been held by his mother, now Judith Bayley; and in 1697, sued Ralph Flowers for possession of a mare.

Judith, relict of William Allen deceased, and her husband William Bayley relinquished to him all their right to a certain parcel of land in York Old Field on 23 November 1698. She signed her name Judah Bayly according to the court minutes in York County, Virginia Book 11, page 126 (this reference has been cited by some researchers as Book 12). While she probably signed the document, what appears in the court minutes is a handwritten copy, and the “signature” is not actually her own handwriting.

William bought land in York County, and died there in 1713. William and Ann Allen had two sons, William and Hudson Allen. They also had four daughters, but their names are not known. William died between 15 June 1713 when he made his will and 21 September 1713, when it was admitted to footnotes.

See footnote to the biography of Person Number 75.
probate. Transcription of his will follows:

"In the Name of God Amen.

"I William Allin, Planter of York Hampton Parish being in god health of body and of Sound and perfect mind and memory Praise be therefore given unto Almighty God, but calling to mind ye uncertainty of this transitory life, that all flesh must yield to death when it shall please God to call, I do make and ordain this my present and last will and testament in manner and form following. That is to say First, Principally I Commend my soule into ye hands of almighty God that gave it, hoping through ye merits and death and passion of my Saviour Jesus Christ to have full and free pardon and forgiveness of all my Sins and to inherit Everlasting life among ye blessed. My body I Commit to ye Earth from whence it was Extracted to be decently buryed by my Executrix; And as touching all Such Temporal Estate as it hath pleased almighty God to bestow upon me I give and dispose thereof as followeth. Impris. I Will & desire that all my just Debts and funeral expenses be discharged & Satisfied. Item I give unto my Son Hudson Allin all ye Land that I have in King & Queen County in St Stephens Parrish if recoverable to him & his issue, then he is to have no part or share of Land lying in York Hampton Parrish. But if ye s'd Hudson Allin should not recover ye said Land in King and Queen County in St Stephens Parrish, then I Give unto ye s'd Hudson Allin Eighty acres of Land which I bought of Mr. Robt Reade & ye plantation that I now live on to him and his issue lawfully begotten of his body; But if ye s'd Hudson Allin should die without issue, then my Will & desire & meaning is that it shall descend to my Son William Allin & ye Same to be ye Survivor of it. Item I Give unto my Son Hudson Allin One Feather bed Valuable to Ten pounds or Ten Pounds. Item I Give unto my Son Hudson Allin Five Pounds in ready money. Item I Give unto my Son William Allin all ye Land that I bought of Tho: Flowers & Hu Allin & to him & his issue lawfully begotten of his on [sic: own] body. Impris. My Will & desire & meaning is, that if my Son Hudson Allin should recover ye Land in King & Queen County in St Stephens Parrish, then he is to return ye s'd Eighty Acres of Land which was bought of Mr. Robt Reade & ye plantation that his father lived upon to my Son William Allin. Item I give unto my son William Allin and the plantation that he now lives upon to him and his issue lawfully begotten of his own body. Item I Give & bequeath unto my Son William Allin One full Bible and One Feather bed ye value of Ten pounds or Ten pound in ready money. Item I give unto my Son William Allin five pounds in ready money. Item I Give unto my Son Wm Allin One Quarn 350 Mill. Impris. My Will & desire & meaning is that if Either of them should die without issue, that it should fall from One brother to ye Other both ye Land & Money that I give them. Item I live [leave] in ye hands of my dear wife Ann Allin & in her custodi four Negroes, Mengo, Ned, Moll and Morea: And all of ye rest & residue of my Estate both Real & Personal; Goods, Plate, Jewels, Ready money, Ware, Merchandise, Effects and whatsoever shall be found to be due, owing to ye time of my decease, & to remain in ye hands of my s'd wife during her widowhood onely. Item If my s'd wife Ann Allin should marry then ye s'd Negroes and personal Estate to be divided amongst my wife & four daughters then share & share alike: And if my wife Ann Allin should dye then it be Equally divided amongst my four daughters Share & Share alike. I would have no praisement upon my Estate during her widowhood. Lastly doe hereby nominate & appoint my deare wife Ann Allin to be Executrix of this my last Will to See ye Same duely & truly performed. And I do hereby annull renounce & make void all other Will or Wills declared in this to be my onely true last Will & Testament. In Testimony whereof I ye s'd Wm Allin have hereunto Sett my hand & affixed my Seale ye fifteenth day of June Anno Domini 1713.

350 James A. Michener, in his 1983 book Poland (Random House, New York), describes the quern mills that play a part in his story, seized by the Nazis to prevent the surreptitious baking of bread: "From cupboards, from places in the corner behind the stove, women with tears streaming down their faces brought forth the treasured querns: two round flat stones set in a box small enough for a boy to carry, each top stone with a hole in its upper surface into which a wooden handle could be placed, which, when turned in a tight circle, caused the upper stone to revolve and grind the wheat until it became flour sifting safely into the bottom of the box." He goes on to say that some of these stones had been in use for more than a century, the boxes sometimes being constructed from fine hardwoods.
"William Allin (SEAL)

"Signed, Sealed, Published and Declared
by ye Testator to be his last will in ye
presence of Us teste
Joshua Sledd
Phill Dedman
Basil 'X' Wagstaff"

William Allen’s burial place is unknown.

Siblings, surname Allen
[William]

1205 – Ann, the wife of William Allen, was still living when William made his will. Inasmuch as the couple named a son Hudson Allen, her maiden name is assumed to have been Hudson, but there isn’t any real proof as far as I know. Virtually nothing is known about her except that she married William Allen and bore him at least two sons and four daughters.

Twelfth Allen Generation

2408 – William Allen was born in England, probably in London, about 1630. Gen. Allen believes that William’s father was John Allen, but offers no proof. He writes,

“Christopher, Thomas, Hugh (and his sons Charles and Edward) and later William and Samuel Allen all settled on contiguous plantations and are definitely associated in the [York] county [Virginia] records. It appears evident that they were kinsmen.

“It may be stated young manhood was a characteristic of the immigrants, the age being about 21 to 30 years.”

Gen. Allen (see the biography of Person Number 602) believes that since William’s name first appears in the record of York County in 1666, that may be regarded as the date of immigration. His age was 36 years. He married Judith, whose surname is unknown, and it is not known whether they married in Virginia or in England. They lived in York Old Field in York County. This place is east of the present Yorktown, which was laid out in 1698 and lies about three miles up the York River.

William did the usual things to get his name mentioned in the York County Court records: He became a security, a defendant, a plaintiff, a witness, etc. He and Basill Wagstaffe (who would later witness his son’s will—or was it Basill’s son who did so?) entered into an agreement on 10 January 1675/76, for the division of 75 acres they had purchased jointly from Jeffrey Bow and adjoining Charles Allen.

Nothing further was found until 12 November 1677, when a commission of administration of the estate of William Allen was granted to Abraham Ratcliffe, but the entry in the York County, Virginia court record (Book 6, Page 19) was misinterpreted by Gen. Allen, who wrote:

“A Commission of administration of the estate of William Allen is granted to Abraham Ratcliffe as not
[emphasis mine] marrying with the descendant's [sic: decedent's] widow, the decedent's estate to be appraised before the next court by Mr. John Hothersall, Mr. James Miller, and Mr. Theodorus Sumner."

Thinking that the wording was awkward even for Seventeenth-Century English, I ordered the microfilmed record and interpret it as follows, the meaning considerably different (Book 6, Page 19):

"A Commission of Administration of the Estate of William Allen Decd is granted to Abraham Ratcliffe as int' marrying wi' the decd's Relict putting in Security to same the Court has _____ for performance of the said Administration, ord'd that some time between this [and] the next Court ord'd deed 5 Estate appraised according to Law by Mr. John Hothersall, Mr. James Miller and Mr. Theorodus Sumner being forsworn by Mr. Edward Mos[by?] the Appraisement to be returned to the next Court for confirmation."

In Book 6, Page 147, two thirds of the estate of William Allen is accounted for by Theodorus Sumner and Ralph fflowers, and "Judith Rattcliff" is mentioned, making it clear that Judith did indeed marry Ratcliffe as indicated when he was appointed administrator of Allen's estate. By the time her son was 21 years old, Judith was married to William Bayley/Bayly.

The inventory, made on 10 December 1678, includes a large amount of plantation equipment, livestock, tobacco, a slave, household goods and miscellaneous possessions. If proof is found that this couple are indeed our ancestors, transcribing the inventory might be interesting to a descendant. The values of the possessions are given in Pounds, Shillings and Pence.

William is no doubt buried in York County, Virginia, but no further information is available.

siblings, surname Allen

[William]

Several Allens were his neighbors, but their relationship if any, is unknown

2409 – Judith Allen, maiden name unknown, was the wife of William Allen. Her birthdate, birthplace and parentage are in question. She and William may have been married in England, or she emigrated from somewhere (the name Judith sounds English), or perhaps she was a Virginia native.

Only one known child was born to the marriage of William and Judith, William who was born in 1671. William, Sr. had died and she remarried to Abraham Ratcliffe before 12 November 1677, when Abraham petitioned the court to administer the estate of her late husband. If any research has been done on this couple, I am not aware of it. It is not known whether they had children.

(See General Allen's misinterpretation in her husband's biography for the reason that Judith's marriage to Ratcliffe is not mentioned by other researchers.)

Pointing up the helpless position in which women could find themselves in those early times, Ralph Flowers was appointed guardian of her son.

At some time before young William reached his majority in 1692, Judith had married William Bayley, so it is probably safe to assume that Abraham Ratcliffe had died. When William succeeded in wresting away control, from his mother and from Ralph Flowers, of his inheritance
from his father, Judith signed her name “Judah Bayly”. However, the document was copied into the court minutes, and the signature was written by the clerk. It appears that only a mark was made by both Judith and her husband William Bayley, but the clerk doing the copying does not indicate that in the usual way, by writing “his mark” and “her mark” with the written names.

Judith probably died in Virginia, but I know nothing further.

***

Next to nothing is known about our William’s early life.

William married his first wife Hannah, whose maiden name is not known, about 1712 (based upon their first known child’s birth 20 September 1713; her death on 22 March 1719/20 after the birth of their fourth child, Joyce, is recorded in the parish register of St. Peter’s Parish, New Kent County, Virginia.

William moved to Charles City County, Virginia where in 1721 he married Mary nee Hunt, born 15 May 1695 probably in Charles City County, the widow of Robert Minge. The couple had nine children. Gen. Allen presents ample proof of her identity, and in Tyler’s Quarterly Magazine, Vol XIII, Landon C. Bell presents unquestionable proof that Mary Hunt Minge Allen married third, Field Jefferson on 31 October or 1 November 1753. He was the uncle of President Thomas Jefferson.

It is from Gen. Allen’s article that I glean the following:

William received a grant of 400 acres on the south side of the James River on ffine Creek, formerly in the county of Henrico but later in the county of Goochland, which was organized in 1728. (This land now lies in Powhatan County; the “cutting off” a portion of one county and creating another from it makes it seem like people moved around a great deal more than they really did.)

He received a patent for an additional 400 acres, lying on both sides of the Slate River and Great Creek on 13 May 1735, again granted by Governor William Gooch.

He bought 100 acres in Goochland from William Barnes on 20 April 1737 “for 50”. This may mean £50 cash, and the sign was omitted; it is also possible that it means 50 pounds of tobacco.

On 17 September 1739, William paid 30 shillings for a patent granted by Governor William Gooch for 300 acres in Goochland, the land lying between Upper Manacan Creek and ffine Creek and adjoining his other land. If this was land previously granted to someone else and forfeited, the 30 shillings may represent the quit rent that the previous grantee had failed to pay.

---

Gen. Allen: “ffine Creek is a survival of the ancient form of indicating proper names. Before capital letters were invented they were indicated by doubling the initial small letter, as ffrench, ffine, llewellyn, lloyd, etc.” This is the most succinct, understandable explanation of this phenomenon that I have seen.
William Allen was a Gentleman Justice of the County Court, 1742-1744, and is on at least one occasion referred to as Captain William Allen.

In 1742, he was mentioned as being a witness at a wedding in Goochland County.

He bought 400 acres from Samuel Allen in the Parish of Southam for £24 on 19 March 1744/45. Later that year he sold his homestead on fine Creek and moved to his land on the Slate River acquired in 1735. He lived at that place the rest of his life. He and his wife Mary sold 800 acres on 16 September 1745 to John Baskerville, and he received another 300-acre grant from Governor William Gooch on 20 September 1745, for 30 shillings. William Cabell had been granted this land earlier, but forfeited it because he failed to abide by the terms of the grant.

Gen. Allen explains, “The usual requirement of a grant was that the grantee should pay a quit rent of one shilling per fifty acres yearly at the Feast of St. Michael the Archangel [29 September] and the cultivation of three acres per fifty acres within three years. Failure to keep these terms could involve forfeiture of the grant.”

William received another patent on 20 September 1745, a grant from Governor Gooch, for 140 acres, another tract forfeited by Cabell. In 1747, he received further grants from Governor William Gooch for 390 acres, 100 acres and 400 acres.

William received the contract for building the court house for the new county of Albemarle when it was organized in 1748. Scottsville, the county seat and site of the courthouse, was later situated in Fluvanna County after its creation.

In 1748, William deeded land to family members: 600 acres for £100, 390 acres for £110, 680 acres for £100. He also received 1,185 acres, granted by Governor Gooch.

There was an exchange of land between William and his son John on 9 August 1751, and on 15 August 1751, William made his will, adding a codicil on 7 November 1751. He evidently died shortly before his will was presented for probate on 11 June 1752.

Albemarle County, Virginia; Will Book A, beginning on page 33:

“William Allen’s will: In the name of God amen. I William Allen of Albemarle County being very weak in Body but of perfect mind & memory blessed be almighty God & knowing the Incertainty of this Life do make ordain publish & Declare this to be my last Will & Testament and first & principally I commit my Soul to almighty God that gave it surely trusting in his Mercy through the Merits of my Dear Redeemer Jesus Christ & my Body to the Earth from whence it was taken to be buried in Such decent & Christian like manner as my Exers hereafter named deem[?] meit [sic: meet] & Convenient & as for touching such worldly goods as God in his Mercy hath been pleased to bless me with my will & Desire is that the same may be disposed of in manner & form following: That is to say that my beloved Wife Mary Shall remain on the Planation whereon I now Dwell during her [page 34] natural Life & have Liberty to Cultivate and make use of any part of the said Land adjoining thereto such manner as to her shall [from?] time Seem meet & Convenient. Item I Give & Bequeath to my beloved son Phillip Allen the Plantation whereon I now Live with the
Six hundred & fifty acres of Land adjoining thereto to be laid off[f] in Such manner as my Self in my lifetime or my Executors after my Decease shall direct being the Remain[der] of all the Lands I hold adjoining to my Plantation after the Deed by me made to my son William Hunt Allen shall be Complied with to his heirs & assigns forever in case he shall have issue of his Body to Survive him, but in Case he Should die Seized of this Land having no Such Issue, then my will & Desire is that the said land Should be Sold by my Exors at publick Outcry to the highest Bidder & the money arising on Such Sale be equally divided amongst all my Surviving Sons. also I give to my beloved Son Phillip Allen one Negro named Gilbert or Lucy which of the two my Beloved wife pleaseth to be delivered to him when he is of Age, but if Lucy her & her increase. Item: I Give and Bequeath to my Son William Hunt Allen one Negro Boy nam[ed] Tom. Item I Give & Bequeath to my son John Allen one one [sic] Negro boy named Dick. Item I Give & Bequeath unto my son Valentine Allen one Negro boy named Peter also three hundred Acres of Land lying on the North of the Fluvanna River above fishing Creek in the County aforesaid & to his heirs & assigns in Case he has Issue [something appears to be stricken out here] of his Body to Survive him, but in Case he should die Seized of the said Land having no Such Issue, then my will & Desire is that the said Land should be Sold by my Executors at publick Outcry to the highest Bidder & the money arising of Such Sale to be equally Divided amongst the rest of my Surviving Sons provided that my said Son Valentine Pays to my Ex[ords] for the Use of my Estate twenty five Pounds, but in case my said Son refuseth to pay the said Sum of Money to my Ex[ords] then the said Negro boy is to return to my Estate. Item I Give & Bequeath to my Son George Allen one Negro boy named Jacob, also four hundred acres of Land whereon Hugh Maganoch now Lives with all the privileges thereunto belonging also four hundred acres of Land Lying on both Sides of Slate River & on the Great Creek with all the priviledges thereunto belonging to him his heirs & assigns forever in Case he should have Issue of his Body to Survive him but in Case he should [page 35] die Seized of the said Land not Leaving Such Issue My Will [&] Desire then is that the said Land Should be sold by my Executors at publick Outcry to the highest Bidder & the money arising of Such Sale to be Equally Divided amongst —all— my Surviving Heirs. Item I Give & Bequeath to my Grandson Charles Burton & William Easly four hundred Acres of Land lying [on] Joshua’s Creek in the County aforesaid to be Divided Equally between them both to them their Heirs & Assigns forever. Item I Give & Bequeath to my Daughter Hannah Scrugs one negro man named Champion also Item unto her four hundred Acres of Land Lying both sides of Slate River whereon James Scrugs now liveth During her natural Life & after her Death I give the said Land to her two Sons Will Scrugs & finch Scrugs to be equally Divided between them both to them & their heirs & assigns forever Item I Give to my Daughter Ann Spears one negro man named Dorcas being now in her Possession together with her Increase forever Item I Give & Bequeath to my Daughter Susanna Sublet one Negro Girl named Nanney & her Increase forever one feather Bed & furniture three Cows & Calves & a young Breeding mare. Item I give and Bequeath to my Daughter Mary Allen one negro woman named Bette one featherbed & furniture three Cows & Calves & one young breeding mare & there Increase forever Item I give & Bequeath to Son Samuel Allen one negro man named Jack provided he relinquish his right to one Negro Man named Champion which if he refuseth the same Negro Jack is to return to my Estate again Item Item [sic] I give & Bequeath to my Daughter Joice Chandler five Pounds to be paid out of my moveable Estate Item I Give & Bequeath to my Daughter Judith Burton five Pounds to be paid out of my moveable Estate. Item I leave to my beloved Wife mary allen one Negro man named Gilbert or one Negro woman named Lucy as above mentioned & one negro woman named Cate & her Increase during her natural Life & afterwards her

352 Gen. Allen calls this lack of the final 's' on the word 'Grandson' a scrivener's mistake. I see this not so much as the scrivener's mistake as his writing style, because further down in the will the following appears: "...my Daughter Anne Spears Susanna Sublet & Mary Allen..." where he might more clearly have written "Daughters". Note that these women are named his daughters elsewhere in the document.
Death to be Equally divided amongst the four Children hereafter named my Son Phillip Allen & my Daughter Anne Spears Susanna Sublet & mary Allen all the rest of my personal Estate or real I give to my beloved Wife Mary Allen to Dispose of it as she shall see proper or fit & I do hereby Constitute ordain & appoint my beloved Wife Mary Allen Executrix & my two Sons William Hunt Allen & John Allen Ex’s of this my [page 36] Last Will & Testament revoking & Disannuling all others by me heretofore made in Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & affixed my Seal this fifteenth Day of August one Thousand Seven hundred & fifty one my desire is that my Estate may not come to appraisement."

“Sign’d seal’d Published & Declared in the presence of William Allen (L.S.)
Adrian Anglin Peter Chastain Robert Goodwin”

“Memorandum That I do Acknowledge this to be a Codicil to my last Will & Testament I give & Bequeath to my Daughter Susanna Soblet an entry of land being & lying where St. Ann’s Chapel now Stands with all the Priviledges thereunto belonging to her & her Heirs, forever & also two Pounds ten Shillings in Cash”

“Witness my hand & Seal this 7th Day of Nov. 1751 William Allen (L.S.)
Sign’d Seal’d & published in the presence of
Adrian Anglin Stephen Ford Elis AE [his {sic} mark] Jones

“At a Court held for Albemarle County the 11th Day of June 1752.
This last Will & Testament of William Allen Deed & Codicil thereon Written were presented into Court by Mary Allen Widow Executrix & William Hunt Allen one of the Ex’s therein named the said Last Will & Testament was proved by the Oaths of Adrian Anglin & Peter Chastain two of the Witnesses thereto & the said Codicil was proved by two of the Witnesses thereto & Ordered to be recorded & on the motion of the said Mary Allen & William Hunt Allen who made Oaths according to Law Certificate is granted them & Obtaining a Probat thereof in Due form giving Security On which they with John Hunter and George Holmes givin their securities entered into & acknowledged their Bond for the said Ex’s true & faithful performing the said Will John Allen the other Executor therein named personally appeared in Court & refused to take upon him the Burthen of the Execution of the same.

“Test
John Nicholas Clk”

I have found no information about William’s burial place, but he is almost certainly buried in Albemarle County, Virginia.

Siblings, surname Allen, if he is indeed the son of William whose wife was Ann
[William]
Hudson
sister
sister
sister
sister

Unproven parentage is shown above.
603 – Hannah ________, the first wife of William Allen and the mother of his four eldest children, died in New Kent County, Virginia when her youngest child, our ancestress Joyce Allen, was only about two months old. The following appears in St. Peter’s Parish Register, New Kent County, Virginia, 1719: “Hannah wife of William Allen departed this life March 22.” One can guess that she would have been in her twenties. She is probably buried in the churchyard of St. Peter’s, but if a stone exists, no one has written about it.

Her maiden name is not known, and some conjecture has been made that she was a Watson. It is certainly possible, but there is no proof. Dr. DeMarce³³³ has suggested that the name Millington needs further research, due to her daughter Joyce (Allen) Easley’s having named a son Millington.

Parents have not been identified.

616 – Thomas POINDEXTER (called II by Poindexter researchers to distinguish him from his father and his son—but there is no evidence that he used the ‘II’ designation himself) was born about 1705 to Thomas and Sarah Crawford (otherwise Crafford) Poindexter. His age is stated as “about 60 years” in 1765 when he gives a deposition, transcribed below, in the Louisa County suit of Snead vs. Poindexter.

Thomas married a lady named Sarah about 1723; her maiden name is not known. People have guessed that it was Bond Veale or Bondeville only because Thomas and Sarah named a son Bond Veale Poindexter. There was a Virginia family named Veal (also spelled Veale). A man named Bond Veale belonged to that family, but I have scrutinized a book³⁵⁴ about this Veal/Veale family, and there simply is no Sarah of the right age to be ours.

A deed dated 7 March 1733 is recorded in Prince William County, Virginia, from Thomas Poindexter, house carpenter, of Hanover County, conveying land in Prince William County which had been bequeathed to him by Rev. James Brechin, late of Westmoreland County, by his will dated 19 August 1691. Brechin, of course, was the second husband of Sarah Crawford Poindexter, her first husband being the father of Thomas II. This is the only place I have seen mention of Thomas’ occupation, and this links Thomas to his parents.

The following transcriptions are from documents found the Louisa County, Virginia Chancery Court³⁵⁵ records, presently (2003) in the custody of the Virginia State Library in Richmond. The dispute was about land and slaves. The condition of the documents is such that not all the words can be read on the photocopy. They were repaired with transparent tape which caused further deterioration.

³⁵³ See footnote to the biography of Person Number 75.
³⁵⁴ Richard S. Hickman – Lydia Veal and Their Descendants by Paul and Alba Smith, 2420 Gantt Road, Alpharetta Georgia 30201; address current about 1999.
³⁵⁵ According to Black’s Law Dictionary, a chancery case is a cause of equity where “justice is administered according to fairness as contrasted with strictly formulated rules of common law”. A judge, not a jury, decided such cases.
"We the subscribers this Day met at Thomas Poindexters and took the Following Deposition present John Snee and Christian Poindexter.

"Thomas Poindexter aged about sixty Years Deposeth that he is Neither to gain or Lose by the suit depending between John Sneed & Christian Poindexter Thomas Poindexter & Rob't Anderson 356 Executor of John Poindexter deceased [several illegible words] John Poindexter deceased had purchased two Negroes [illegible words] for [illegible words] the said Sarah & John Poindexter [illegible] to settle the acct between them and in settlement of the acct about fourteen or fifteen Pounds was due to sarah Brechin after paying for the two Negroes [illegible] said Poindexter sayed it was [illegible] that that Money should go to Discharg her debt but Should be Layed out in a Negro which should revert [?] to heirs after her Death but after some [illegible words] and his mother he [illegible] she sayed [illegible] the work of the Negroes be as good as [illegible] four Hundred and Sixty pounds of Tobº she thought is was too Little but as he was her son she would take it and he signified that if she was not his Mother he would not give it and further sayeth that when the said

This further deposition in the same case is undated, but it does contain the actual signature of Thomas Poindexter, the deponent:

"John Sneed & Susanah his wife }
vs. } The Exec't of John Poindexter & others }

"The Further Deposition of Tho'. Poindexter, That this Deponent saith, That he Believes that he has heard his Brothe'r and Mother say: that their was Sixty Acres Land laid off for her use, Part of the Tract Land, sold to Coll. Wm. Merriwether Afterward. That this deponent saw some Chopt Trees, which he Understood to be some Part of the Line Between his Bro'r & Mother, and that his said Mother had a House upon the said Sixty Acres Land and Liv'd upon [illegible words] Further sayth that there was [illegible] the Apple Orchard that She made use of as she Pleased, and that her Son John, made use of the Other Tract as he Pleased, That this Deponent Further Sayeth that he heard, or understood, that his s'd Mother had left him a Legacy in her will, That he this deponent told the Said Sneed, that he Could not be a Witness Except he Received some Sattisfaction, upon which the s'd Sneed gave him three or four Yards of Virginia Cloth for his said Right to the Legacy left him in his said Mothers Will, and this Deponent Further Sayeth not.

"Thos. Poindexter

"Sworn to before
James Overton  [evidence of red sealing wax]
Sam Ragland"

Another deed was found in Louisa County dated 10 March 1777, from Thomas Poindexter of Louisa County to his son Bond Veale Poindexter. An additional deed was found in Louisa County in 1779, in which Thomas Poindexter and Sarah his wife of Trinity Parish, Louisa

356 The Anderson name later came into the family with the marriage of Francis Poindexter to Jane Pattillo, whose mother’s maiden name was Anderson (descendants believe Francis’ middle name was Anderson, but I have found no documentation for that) and Francis and Jane’s son Francis is called ‘Francis Anderson Poindexter’ in Francis (the father’s) estate papers, although he is elsewhere called Francis Alexander Poindexter. I have seen no conjecture about how this Robert Anderson happens to be a co-executor of John Poindexter’s estate. Could he be the brother or brother-in-law of Thomas Poindexter’s wife? While it has been thought that Bond Veal (various spellings) was Sarah’s maiden name, perhaps it was Anderson. If so, and there was a relationship with Rev. Henry Pattillo’s wife Mary Anderson, here could be another reason for Peter Clingman’s opposition to still another cousin marriage in the family.
Our Thomas II may be the Thomas Poindexter who was Justice of Louisa County in 1766 and 1773. He was “of Hanover County” in 1765 during the lawsuit, and was “of Louisa County” when he deeded the first land to son Bond Veale in 1777. This seems to point to a move after the 1765 suit and before the 1777 deed, so he could have made the move in time to be a Justice in 1766. He must have made a physical move, because Louisa County was created in 1742 and a boundary change could not account for this.

He would have been fairly old to serve as a Justice, and the Justice referred to may be his son or nephew.

Thomas died about 1777 or 1778 in Fredricksville Parish, Louisa County, Virginia. I searched carefully through Louisa County Will Book Two for several years either side of the time given for his death, and was unable to find any estate papers for him. His grave is not marked, as far as I know, but is no doubt in that parish.

Siblings, surname Poindexter
John, married Christian Gissage; issue
[Thomas]

Halfsiblings, surname Brechin, from his mother’s marriage to Rev. James Brechin
William
James
Susanna, married John Snead
Elizabeth, married Mr. Shresberry [Shrewsbury?]
Sarah, married Mr. Rice
Ann, married Mr. Rutherford
Jean, married Mr. Ireland

Parents are Numbers 1232 and 1233.

See Illustration 616.

617 – Sarah __________, born about 1707, was the wife of Thomas Poindexter II. People have consistently guessed that her maiden name was Veal or Veale or Bondeville or Bon de Ville, many variations. Sarah and her husband named a son Bond Veal Poindexter, the reason for these guesses. Richard S. Hickman – Lydia Veal and Their Descendants contains results of extensive research on the Veal family (all spellings) and there is simply no one in it that could be our Sarah. There is a man named Bond Veal, but the family lived in the northern part of Virginia. My best guess, if her name was really Veal or any of the variant spellings, is that our Sarah descends from a possible but unknown brother or uncle of Morris Veal, Bond Veal’s father and progenitor of that Veal family in colonial Virginia.

Statements that our Sarah is the daughter of Bond Veal and Elizabeth Gosling/Goslin

357 By Paul and Alba Smith, 2424 Gantt Road, Alpharetta, GA 30201 (1991 address).
are simply without foundation.

Recently I have seen conjecture in the genealogical community that Sarah's maiden name was McGehee, but without documentation. As long as guesses are being made, two that come to my mind are Anderson and Wentworth, otherwise unaccounted-for names used for given names among her descendants. I think it is possible that the whole Indian-maiden story supposed to be about Elizabeth Pledge’s ancestors really belongs to Sarah, but I have absolutely no documentary basis for this.

Sarah is likely buried in Louisa County, Virginia, near her husband, but no information is available. Estate papers have not been found, and it is unknown whether she or her husband died first.

Parents have not been identified.

618 – William PLEDGE was born almost certainly before 1712 to John Pledge, Jr. and his wife Dorothy, in Henrico County, Virginia, where his father was known to dwell as early as 1679. Dorothy’s maiden name is unknown. John died in 1720, and William’s brother-in-law John Johnson was granted 100 acres of land “in consideration of looking after my son John Pledge [III] for life” (one must infer from this reading of John’s will that John III was afflicted or handicapped in some way). There are several possible reasons for Johnson, instead of only able son William Pledge, being charged with the care of John III:

a. William was still a minor
b. Mary (Pledge) Johnson already had an established home
c. John III was used to being cared for by Mary, and wouldn’t have been able to cope with changes in his care-giver
d. William was temperamentally or otherwise unsuited to care for John
e. William was a trader who was away from home for periods of time

William married Ann Redford about 1737, calculated from the estimated birth dates of the children. The family of his daughter Elizabeth (see biography of Person Number 309) would have it that he had a Cherokee Indian wife before (or even during) his marriage to Ann, and that Elizabeth Pledge is his daughter from that relationship. Absolutely no proof exists, only an elaborate family lore. I happen to believe that Elizabeth is Ann’s daughter, and that the Cherokee connection, if there is one, comes from an unknown ancestor of William or someone else. The names of the wives of William’s grandfather John Pledge, Sr. and his (supposed) great-grandfather Nicholas Pledge are unknown.

In 1733, William was administrator of his mother’s estate, so he had surely reached his majority by then.

He was, along with William Redford, an appraiser of the Goochland County estate of Joseph Clark on 16 September 1743.
Called 'Bill' by his contemporaries, Pledge is said by Brumfield to have been a trapper and Indian trader. We cannot be sure that this is correct, because the lore may be a figment of someone's imagination, or may have been moved to William Pledge from another person.

Goochland County, Virginia, Court Records contain the following statement, but the witnesses' names, other than that of William Pledge, Jr., are illegible—one may possibly be Martha Pledge:

"As Thomas Poindexter & my Daughter Elisabeth has agreed to Marry I have given my consent as witness my hand and Seal this Twelfth day of Febry 1760.

"Wm Pledge"

Goochland County Court records also contain William's will and an inventory of his estate. The documents were written into the record by a clerk, so no actual signatures appear, and William himself signed with his mark. The documents are transcribed below; his will begins on page 322, Book 12:

"I William Pledge of the County of Goochland being 111 of Body but in mind & Memory fully equal to the undertaking do make this my last Will & testament respecting my outward affairs in Manner & form following and

"Firstly. My Will is that all my Just Debts be paid by Executors hereafter Named

"Secondly. Whereas I have lately made Deeds of Gift to my three Sons William Francis & Archer Pledge for fifty Acres of Land each to be laid off from the tract whereon I now Live in Manner & form as Express'd in the said Deeds, which I now confirm to them and each of them and their Heirs forever. at the same time reserving fifty Acres more or less which includes the whole, now my desire is that my Daughter Martha Clarkson may have the use of the sd residence or remainder during her Natural Life & after her decease that it may be equally divided between my two Sons Francis & Archer Pledge to them and each of them and their heirs forever.—

"Thirdly. Whereas I have lately enterd into a Verbal contract with my Son William Pledge, that he pay unto Charles Woodson, Thomas Underwood, John Shelton, John Payne and Thomas Pleasants all the Money I owe to each of them respectively & pay me fifty pounds Cash, besides the thirty-eight pounds he ow'd me at the making this Contract, for all which I agreed to make him a title to two young Negroes named David & Lidia, now if my said Son do faithfully perform the Contract on his part then my Will is he have the two Negroes aforesaid to him & his heirs forever exclusive of his equal shares of the remainder, but if he should hereafter refuse to comply therewith I direct the said Negroes to be added to and divided with the remainder part of my Estate as hereafter to be directed.

"Fourthly. I give to John Hampton of Bedford county one Negro Man named Jammy, to him & his heirs forever.

"Fifthly. I give unto Sarah the Wife of Henry Stratton one Negro Woman Named Chloe to her & her heirs forever.

358 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 38.
"Sixthly. I lend unto my Daughter Martha Clarkson the one fifth of all the remainder of my of my [sic] Estate during her life, but if she should hereafter bear Children the Estate I now lend her shall go to them after her decease, & their heirs forever, but on the contrary she dying without Issue, my Will is that the Estate now lent her shall return & be equally divided between the remainder of my Children & to their Heirs forever.—

"Seventhly. The remaining part of my Estate I give to be equal divided between my three Sons, William, Francis & Archer Pledge and my Daughter Elizabeth Poindexter, Share and Share alike, to them & their Heirs forever, and

"Lastly. I Constitute [sic] & appoint my three Sons William, Francis and Archer Pledge with my Friend Thomas Pleasants Executors to this my last Will & Testament revoking all & every other Will or Wills heretofore in anywise by me made In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & Seal the 22d day of October 1779.

"Signed Seal’d published and declared to the the last Will & Testament of William Pledge in Presence of us whose names are also Signed in Presence of us, whose names are also Subscrib’d in Presence of each other as Witnesses thereto.

"James Bennett
her
Eliza X Bennet Charity X Salmen
mark mark
her
Sus" X Woodson
mark

"At a Court held for Goochland County November 15th 1779 this Writing was prov’d by the oaths of James Bennett and Eliza Bennet Witnesses thereto, to be the last Will & Testament of William Pledge dec’d & was thereupon admitted to Record.

"Teste"

In December 1779, an inventory of William’s estate was presented to the Goochland County Court and is found in Deed Book 13, beginning on page 18. My transcription follows; the money is in pounds, and there are a few places where shillings are mentioned:

"In obedience to an order of Goochland Court, for the present Month We the Subscribers being first Qualified agreeable to Law have Appraised in Current Money the Estate of William Pledge dec’d to the best of our Judgments of which the following is an Inventory.

"Phillis a Negro Woman 700-
Jamy a do & Child Norris 2000-

359 He was literate, having signed a consent for his daughter Elizabeth to marry; his illness mentioned in the first paragraph of his will may have made him too weak to sign his name.
Flora a Girl, David a Boy, Charlotta a Girl 2200-
Lydia a Girl, Hannah a Girl, Jack a Boy 1300-
Jammy a Man £1200, Parrot a Man 1600=2800
Cloe a Woman 1000£, Robin a Boy 1000£=2000
Jammy a Boy 1000£, Robin a Boy 1000£=2000
1 Bed Boulster pillow, Rug, Counterpane, & sheet 150
1 Bed Boulster, Sheet & Blankett 120
1 Chest of Drawers, 1 Desk, 1 Large Table 95
1 Small do 5£ 1 Chest 15£ 2 Spinning Wheels=27
2 pr Cards 6£ 2 Juggs 6£ 1 ? Steel Yards=17
4 Sickle 2£ 2 Hackles 4£ 3 Hinges 2£=8
1 Knob Lock 5£ 4 Sides Leather 70£=75
3 Wheel Boxes 3£ 3 ? Money Scales 12£=15
2 ? Sheep Shears 2£ 1 Safe 20£=22
5 Basons 4 Dishes & 4 Plates (Pewter) 120
5 Earthen Plates & 1 Wine Glass 6
1 Coffe Pott & 1 Spice Mortar & pestle 35
3 pr Shares & 1 Candle Stock & mould, Box ? Heaters & ? Iron 8
4 Knives & 6 Forks 5
1 Shovel & Tongs & 1 Trivet 6
3 Augurs, 2 Hammers & 2 Bedpins 5
2 Butter Potts 8£ 1 Bible & prayer Book 10 £=18
84 ? [possibly yards] Virginia Cloth (Twilled) 50£=50
1 Currying knife 8£ 3 Iron Potts & Hooks 70£=78
1 Pott Rack & Hooks 7£ 4 Iron Wedges 7£=14
2 New Hides 25£ 1 Small Kettle Flesh Fork & frying pann 10£=35
1 large & 2 small plows 12£ 8 broad & narrow Hoes 15£=27
5 narrow & broad Axes 20
5 Swingle trees 1 pr Chain Traces & 1 ? Hames 15
4 Old books & 1 pigin 16s 1 Wicker Chair 1=1-16
1 Powdering Table & 1 old Pott 1-10
2 Cyder Casks 6£ 1 x cutt saw 20£=26
1 Flea Bitten Mare 100£ 1 Gray Colt 100£=200
19 Hogs of different sizes 424-10
18 sheep & the moiety of a Ram 361 145
11 Head of Cattle 535
1 Cart & 4 Open with Chain &c. 400
1 Bell 1 File 1 Gauge & other small tools 3
3 pieces sole Leather 1-10
A parcel of Corn supposed to be 70 Barrels 1400
54 feet Fodder in Stacks 54
6 Cocks Blades 54£ 1 Silver Spoon 9£=63
4 Razors 1 Hone & Strop 4
1 Parcell of Oats supposed 20 Bushels 60
[Total] amount of the appraisment £17,380 46?s

"Given under our hands this 17th Day November 1779

360 do=ditto.
361 William Pledge owned a half interest in the ram
“Tucker Woodson  Richard Sampson  
   John Payne Junr  James Bennett  

“1 Grindstone Stone 1 Hammer and Ads [Adz] 7  
1 Chisel 1 Plain 1 pair Pinchers 1 pr Snuffers 3-5  

“At a Court held for Goochland County December the 20th 1779 This Inventory was presented in Court, and ordered to be Recorded.  

   “Teste Val Wood Cl Co  
   Record’ by  
   G Payne, CIck”  

Since his will was presented to the court on 15 November, I believe that the funeral date of 24 November floating around among genealogical databases is wrong, and he must have died a few days before his will was presented for probate. I don’t believe that a grave marker has survived, but he was certainly buried in Goochland County, Virginia. 

Siblings, surname Pledge; birth order uncertain  
John  
Elizabeth, married Mr. Straing; issue  
Agnes  
Martha  
[William]  
Judith  
Ann  
Mary, married John Johnson  
Tabitha  

See Illustration 618.  

Parents are Numbers 1236 and 1237.  

619 – Ann REDFORD was almost certainly the daughter of John Redford and Martha Milner, and was born about 1716 in Goochland County, Virginia.  

No absolute link to her parents has been found; John Redford’s will does not mention her. The names that Elizabeth Pledge and her husband Thomas Poindexter gave their children are the only indication so far found, that Ann was John’s daughter. One son is Thomas Wentworth Pledge Poindexter, but I really wonder if that ‘W’ stood for Wentworth; there is some indication that Francis and Jane Pattillo Poindexter’s son T. W. P. (called “Uncle T.W.P.” by his nephew A. B. Clingman) was Thomas William Pledge Poindexter. So many names ‘match up’ with names from Ann Redford’s family, that I’m including the line here although the link is not absolute.  

Although no marriage information has been found in the records, Ann married William Pledge about 1737. She bore him five known children between about 1738 and 1750.
Ann is not mentioned in William’s will, so it is certain that she died before 22 October 1779, the date of its signing. She may be the Mrs. Pledge for whom Rev. Rev. William Douglas\textsuperscript{362} conducted a funeral on 3 December 1773. She is doubtlessly buried in Goochland County, Virginia in an unmarked grave.

Siblings surname Redford

John
Francis
Milner, married; issue
Mary
[Ann]
William, married; issue

Parents are Numbers 1238 and 1239.

620 – George PATTILLO, if we can be confident that Stokes\textsuperscript{363} was correct, lived at Balermic, near Dundee, Scotland. He was the father of three sons that we know of, and probably several daughters.

Stokes says that the family was prosperous enough to educate their children. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

621 – Jane was the wife of George Pattillo. Her maiden name is thought by some to have been Johnstone, because her two sons who immigrated to North America each gave a son ‘Johnstone’ as a middle name; proof has not been found.

She was living at Balermic near Dundee when her son Henry was born in 1726, possibly dwelling there her entire life. She was almost certainly still living in 1760 when her Granddaughter Jane was born, because Jane’s father Henry wrote in his journal that he named baby Jane “in memory of my aged mother”; if his mother had been already dead at the time, he surely would not have described her as ‘aged’. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

712 – Peter RAMBO was born 17 June 1653 to Peter Gunnarson Rambo and his wife Britta Mattsdotter, according to CDR Rambo\textsuperscript{364}, who researched the family. The Rambos lived in Lower Dublin Township, now a part of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

\textsuperscript{362} The Douglas Register, Detailed record of Births, Marriages, Deaths…as kept by the Rev. William Douglas, from 1750 to 1797, edited by W. Mac Jones.
\textsuperscript{363} See footnote with the biography of person Number 310.
\textsuperscript{364} See the first footnote to the biography of person Number 89.
Peter married Magdalena Skute on 12 November 1676. Seven children were born to the couple, their births found in the records of Gloria Dei Church\textsuperscript{365} in Philadelphia.

Peter owned a large amount of land; a 1684 list of landowners between the ages of 16 and 60, mentions 600 acres including twelve improved acres, as belonging to Peter. Their dwelling place on Pennypack Creek probably was on the twelve improved acres. Some land transactions that are listed in his father’s name are probably Peter’s; the name similarity makes record interpretation uncertain. He served as a representative of Philadelphia County at the Pennsylvania Assembly in 1709.

On 3 December 1727/8 he made his will, and both CDR Rambo and Dr. Craig state that he died on 12 December 1729. He had transferred much of his property to his sons earlier. CDR Rambo’s transcription of his will, which is recorded in Book E, page 133, and was proved on 13 June 1730, follows:

“In the name of God, Amen, the third day of December in the year of our Lord One Thousand seven hundred and twenty seven, I Peter Rambo of the lower Dublin Township, County of Philadelphia, and senior freeholder being very sick and weak of body but of perfect mind and memory thanks be to unto [sic] God, therefore calling unto mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die Do make and ordain this Last Will & Testament, that is to say, principally and first of all I give and recommend my soul into the hands of God that gave it, and for my body I recommend it to the earth, to be buried in a Christian like and decent manner at the discretion of my Executrix, nothing doubting but at the general Resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God and as touching such worldly Estate as it hath pleased God to bless me with in this life, I give, Devise and Dispose of the same in the following manner and form.

“Imprimis to my two sons Swen and Peter and my daughter Britta, I give and Bequeath to each one shilling silver.

“Item to my two sons Andrew and John Rambo I give and Bequeath out of my Real Estate in Land that lying between the river and the run before the doore and so along that run to the widow Boors line Containing forty-nine acres, to be Equally Divided between them both meadow and upland, together with three cows, a bed and furniture apiece to them their heirs or assigns and Note, that if either of these two shall decease before marriage or without assigns the Survivor shall have the deceased Estate, more to each of them I give one Shilling Sterling. Item to Jacob Rambo my son, I give and Bequeath my whole Estate now in my possession both Real and moveable (together with those Acres where the widow Gustenberrys house and [sic] stand) with all its appurtenances meadow Orchard and to him and his heirs or assigns forever. Note that if Jacob shall die before marriage then Andrew shall take his Estate and Andrew shall give up his before named to John. Last of all to Madlena my beloved wife whom I likewise constitute, make and ordain my only sole Executrix of this my last will and Testament I give sufficient suitable maintenance for time and term of life out of that part of my Estate given to Jacob and I do hereby utterly disallow, Revoke and disannull all and every other former Testaments will and Legacies, Bequests and Exec by me in any ways before this time named, will and Bequeathed, Ratifying and confirming that his and no other is my last will and Testament. IN WITNESS whereof I have herunto set my hand and seal the day and year above written.”

\textsuperscript{365} It is my understanding that this church was Lutheran when it was founded by the Swedes, but when they lost power and England came to rule, it became Anglican.
Peter is buried in the churchyard of Gloria Dei Church in Philadelphia.

Siblings, surname Rambo
- Gunnar, married Anna Cock; issue
- Gertrude, married Anders Bengtsson; issue
- Catharine, married Peter Mattsson; issue
- Anders (Andrew), married Maria Cock; issue
- John, married Brigitta Cock; issue
- Sister, died young
- Sister, married; died about 1693-1694

Parents are Numbers 1424 and 1425.

713 – Magdalena SKUTE was born 25 March 1660 to Captain Sven Skute and his wife, Anna Johannsdotter, probably at the Skute plantation on the west bank of the Schuylkill River, on the northeast side of Kvern Kill (Mill Creek).

She married Peter Rambo, Jr. on 12 November 1676. They made their home on Pennypack Creek in Lower Dublin Township (now Philadelphia), and had seven children.

Having been named Executrix of his will, she was living when her husband died in 1729. Her signature as Executrix could possibly be found if one had access to his estate papers. Her death date is unknown; she is likely buried somewhere in the Philadelphia area.

Siblings, surname Skute
- Johan, married Armegot; issue
  - Christina, married William Warner, Jr.; issue
  - [Magdalena]
  - Perhaps others

Parents are Numbers 1426 and 1427.

---

366 He was later called Andrew Bankson.
367 The surname became Schooten.
368 Armegot was the daughter of Mårtén Garretson; if they adopted the English system, her maiden name was Garretson; if they retained the Swedish naming custom, she was probably called Mårtensdotter; the surname later became Morton.
369 Previously a Gertrude who married John Stille was thought to have been Sven Skute’s daughter. It was later proved that Gertrude was a sister of Armegot and a daughter of Mårten Garretson.
716 – Joseph ALLEN was born about 1642 in New England. It is not certain where he was born, but it is likely that he was born at Sandwich in the New Plymouth Colony of Massachusetts. His parents were Ralph Allen and Susannah, whose maiden name is unknown. The Allen research was undertaken by Jack MacDonald and others, and was found (2001) on a Website maintained by him. He has sterling credentials according to a statement made by Marcie Richie and Ralph Jenkins, other learned Allen researchers.

Various records list Joseph’s occupation as wheelwright, husbandman and yeoman.

He married his first wife, Sarah Holway (otherwise Holloway) on 1 July 1662 in Massachusetts. She was the daughter of Joseph’s cousin Rose Allan and her husband, Joseph Holway. The couple had seven children, and Sarah died shortly after the birth of the last, about 1675. The family was of the Quaker faith, belonging to the Rhode Island Monthly Meeting of Friends.

Joseph married Sarah Hull, in Massachusetts, in about 1676. They probably lived in Dartmouth, now in Bristol County, Massachusetts, throughout much of their married life.

According to MacDonald,

“Joseph was one of the original proprietors of Dartmouth, owning a 1/3 share in the Township of Dartmouth. During the period 1695-1700, Joseph acted as agent for the Dartmouth Proprietors in a dispute with the towns of Little Compton and Tiverton.”

Joseph bought property in Monmouth County, New Jersey in 1697, and was building a home there when he died in 1704.

MacDonald writes,

“Joseph left two wills, one written in 1696 while he was residing at Dartmouth, and a second, written on 26 June 1704, which states that he was a resident of Shrewsbury in Monmouth County, New Jersey. Joseph died during the month of September 1704, probably at Shrewsbury. Both of Joseph’s wills were later probated on 11 October 1704 before Samuel Cranston, the Governor of Rhode Island. Joseph’s widow, Sarah, is believed to have died shortly thereafter in 1705.”

siblings, surname Allen
Philip
Benjamin
John, married Rebecca
[Joseph]
Ebenezer, married Abigail Hill
Increase, married Rachel
Zachariah
Mary
Patience, married Richard Evans

See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 179.
Parents are Numbers 1432 and 1433.

717 – Sarah HULL was born 30 March 1650 at Barnstable, Massachusetts, to Tristram Hull and his wife Blanche, whose maiden name is not known. She married Joseph Allen, probably about 1678 or 1679, based upon their first child’s birth about 1680. She bore at least seven children; she probably died at or near Shrewsbury, Monmouth County, New Jersey, about 1705, shortly after her husband’s death. No burial information is available.

Siblings, surname Hull

Mary
[Sarah]
Joseph, married Experience Harper
John
Hannah

Parents are Numbers 1434 and 1435.

756 – Nicholas HILLSMAN was born to John A. Hillsman and his wife, whose name is unknown. Mr. Hillsman has found evidence that Nicholas' brother John was born in Virginia, and that John is the eldest son; therefore, we stand on firm ground when we state that Nicholas was born in Virginia, almost certainly in York County.

Nicholas moved to Amelia County, Virginia before or after his marriage, which is evidenced by the fact that he names his children in his will, but nothing is known about his wife. She was evidently dead before he made his will on 8 November 1760.

The transcription that follows is from Tom Hillsman’s book; the will is found in Amelia County, Virginia Will Book 1, page 199:

“In the name of GOD, AMEN. I, Nicholas Hillsman being of sound mind and perfect sense and memory do make and constitute this my last will and testament in manner following, Viz:

“Item: I do give and bequeath to my son Matthew Hillsman all my household.
“Item: I do give to my daughter Mary Ross two plates and one porringer.
“Item: I do give to my son John Hillsman one desk.
“Item: I do give to my son William Hillsman one desk.
“Item: I do give to my son Matthew Hillsman six head of hogs and one cow and calf.

“I do appoint my son Matthew Hillsman executor of this my last will and testament. As witness my hand this 8th day of November 1760.

John Cook
John Hill

His

371 Jack MacDonald’s research; see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 179.
372 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
Nicholas died some time after he made his will on 8 November 1760 and before action was taken to probate it on 23 July 1761, and is doubtlessly buried in Amelia County, Virginia. No burial information has been found.

Siblings, surname Hillsman; birth order uncertain

John, Jr., probably never married
William, married first (almost certainly) Dianah Bennett, issue;
married second Elizabeth the widow of Mathias Henderson; no known issue
Mary, married William Garro (otherwise Garrow), issue; married second
a Mr. Thomas; issue
Elizabeth, married first a Mr. Clarke; married second James
Blackstone, issue; married third Edward Palmer; issue

Father is Number 1512.

758 – Nicholas GILLENTINE was born about 1676 in England, and had immigrated to Virginia by about 1710, when he married Eleanor Echols. Francis Gill writes,

"I am very confident of the information back from us [he brings some lines of descendancy lines down to the present {about 2000}, but our line enters the family with Richard and Sarah (Hillsman) Borum] to Nicholas Gillentine, because I have done the research myself.

"Nicholas Gillentine...seems to be the immigrant for the family. There are no others of the surname, or likeness of that surname, in Virginia earlier. His birth year does fit the second marriage of John Girlington [the man thought to be his father]....As with other cases in genealogy, a ‘leap of faith’ is required."

Two things make it certain that Nicholas Gillentine was the immigrant: Francis found no others of that surname or likeness of that surname, in Virginia, earlier than or contemporaneous with Nicholas; and Echols signed a family genealogy on 14 June

---

373 Lyndon Baines Johnson, the Thirty-Sixth President of the United States, descends from this William Hillsman.
374 Her father’s will states what appears to be an afterthought: “I too give unto Elizabeth Clarkstone to by [sic] her a ring”. It appears to me that the scribe became confused by her two married names: her first husband was a Mr. Clarke, her second was James Blackstone, and the two names were inadvertently merged into ‘Clarkstone’.
375 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
376 Milner is descended from an Elizabeth Milner who married first John Palmer and second James Echols. She is not the Elizabeth Milner, born about 1680, daughter of John Milner and Katherine, who is a sibling of Person Number 1239 in this compilation; the time is wrong by about 100 years. There was a Milner in Virginia by 1624 when he is found on a census, while John, the immigrant Milner in our line, arrived in North America in 1659.
1850, in which he writes in his own quaint style,

"Old English John Echols—had 3 Daughters which I would have inserted had Known enough about them to give any satisfactory account of them—I only Know they married Outlandish men—one an Englishman named Nicholas Gilington---of their family I know nothing...."

By “outlandish”, Milner certainly means that they were immigrants, although the term in today’s usage does not suggest that definition. Wading through Milner’s history is difficult and he gives no dates, but his outline of the family has been found to be surprisingly accurate by those who have followed his clues and used census records and state and county documents to prove his statements.

Nicholas and his wife were the parents of one son and four daughters. If there were other children, they have not been identified.

I have seen conjecture that after his wife Eleanor died, he married an Elizabeth Ricketts. I do not know whether this is correct.

A transcription of his will follows:

"In the Name of God, Amen. I, Nicholas Gillington of Halifax Co., being weak in body but in sound and perfect sense and memory, thanks be to God for same, Calling to mind that men must die and after that come to judgement, do consider that what of our affairs are not settled in this life cannot be settled hereafter, do make and ordain this, my last will and testament, acknowledging this to be my last will and testament, disannulling all other wills whatsoever, and to proceed, I shall give my estate as followeth, to-wit: I give to my daughter Catherine Brown one feather bed, to her and her heirs; to Elizabeth Collins I give one feather bed, to her and her heirs; to Elizabeth Chisum, daughter of John Chisum, I give one feather bed, to her and her heirs; to my son John Gillington I have given 400 acres of land which I intended should be his full portion, nevertheless, to take matters out of dispute, I give to his heirs five pounds cash. To John Chisum I give the land and plantation which I now possess in Amelia Co., containing 300 acres, to be at his own disposal for which reason he is to pay to Catherine Brown or to her heirs, -20. current money; to Elizabeth Collins or her heirs, -20.; to Ann Hillsman or her heirs, -20.; to Eleanor Chisum or her heirs, -20.; to Priscilla Hendrick, my granddaughter, or her heirs, -20.; and as for my negro woman Rose, she shall choose her mistress among my daughters, and they that she shall choose shall pay -20. to be equally divided among all my children now living and my two granddaughters, which is Elizabeth Chisum, wife of John Estes, and Jerushea, daughter of John Gillington, deceased. I therefore make and ordain John Chisum my whole and sole executor of this, my last will and testament, made in the year 1772, and on the 21st day of October.

"In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand.

"Nicholas Gillington

"Witnesses:
John Dyer
John Templeton
Elizabeth Lack"

377 A Short History of our family – from the first that landed in America till the present time, as far as I Can ascertain – by Milner Echols.
He died in 1774 in Halifax County, Virginia, and is buried there.

There is a hand-drawn picture on the outside of Nicholas’ will, believed to have been drawn by Nicholas himself, that purports to look like Thurland Castle in Yorkshire. Francis describes the drawing as bearing a remarkable resemblance to the left wing of the castle as it looks today.

There is no question that the name was earlier “Girlington”, and a Girlington family inhabited that castle, having been driven out during one of the revolutions there.

A ‘genealogy’ for Nicholas follows, which Francis Gill believes is accurate but requires a ‘leap of faith’, because it cannot be, or at least has not yet been proven; note that the name ‘Nicholas’ was in the family early:

**Eleventh Girlington Generation**

1516 – John Girlington, christened 9 July 1637 at St. Michael, Lancaster, England
1517 – Margaret Ducket

**Twelfth Girlington Generation**

3032 – Sir John Girlington, born about 1613, Thurland Castle, Lancaster England; married 1633
3033 – Katherine Girlington
3034 – James Ducket

**Thirteenth Girlington Generation**

6064 – Nicholas Gerlington, born about 1590 at Thurland Castle, Lancaster, England
6065 – Christiana Calton
6066 – William Girlington Christened 15 May 1589 in St. Martin’s, York, England

**Fourteenth Girlington Generation**

12128 – John Gerlington
12129 – Christiana Babthorpe
12130 – Josiah Calton
12132 – Nicholas Girlington was born in York, England
12133 – Jane Bayley

**Fifteenth Girlington Generation**

24256 – Nicholas Gerlington was born about 1530 in Hackford, York, England
24257 – Dorothy Mannel

24258 – William Babthorpe

24264 – Nicholas Girlington was born in York, England. He died before 1565.
24265 – Ann Askew was born in York, England

24266 – John Bayley

Sixteenth Girlington Generation

48512 – Nicholas Gerlington was born about 1508 in York, England. He died 10 Jan 1584.
48513 – Elizabeth Hansard was born in Kelsa Kelya, York, England.

48514 – Robert Mannel

48528 – Nicholas Girlington was born in York, England. He died in 1533.
48529 – Ann Partington was born in York, England

Seventeenth Girlington Generation

97024 – Nychctes Gyflyngton was born about 1450 in Dighton-j-Escrick, York, England. He died in 1509.
97025 – Margaret Methan

97026 – Sir William Hansard

97056 – William Gyrylngton was born in Dighton-j-Escrik, York, England.
97057 – Katherine Hilyard was born in York, England

97058 – Thomas Partington

Eighteenth Girlington Generation

194048 – Nicholas Gyrylyngton was born about 1426 in Dighton-j-Escrick, York, England. He died about 1466.
194049 – Elizabeth died after 1473.

194112 – Nicholas Gyrylyngton is the same as 194848, above.
194113 – Elizabeth is the same as 194049 above.

Nineteenth Girlington Generation

368096 – William Gyrylyngton was born about 1402 in Gyrylyngton Hall, York, England.
368097 – Johanna.

Twentieth Girlington Generation

776192 – John De Gyrylyngton was born about 1375 in Gyrylyngton Hall, York, England.
Twenty-first Girlington Generation

1552384 – Thomas De Gyrylyngton was born about 1350 in Gyrylyngton Hall, York, England.
1552385 – Matilda.

Twenty-second Girlington Generation

3104768 – Sir Robert De Gyrylyngton was born about 1315 at Gyrylyngton Hall, York, England.
3104769 – Amabelia De York.

Unproven parentage for Nicholas Gillentine is shown above.

759 – Eleanor ECHOLS was born about 1690 in Virginia, to John Echols and his wife Sarah or Mary, née Cave.

Milner Echols\(^{378}\) states that John Echols had three daughters, and they all married 'outlandish' men (immigrants), and that one married Nicholas 'Gilentine'.

Eleanor married Nicholas Gillentine about 1710 in Virginia and bore him five known children, one son and four daughters. She is believed to have died about 1772.

Siblings, surname Echols; birth order not absolutely certain
- John, Jr., married; issue
- Abraham, married Sarah Tamer\(^{379}\); issue
- William, married Sarah Turner; issue
- Joseph, never married
- Elizabeth, married William Murphy; issue
  [Eleanor]
  Ann, married George Marchbanks
  Richard, married Caty Evans

Parents are Numbers 1518 and 1519.

760 – Jacob McGEHEE was born about 1707 in St. James Parish in King William County, Virginia to Thomas McGehee and his second or third wife, Ann née Bastrop (otherwise Baytop—but I believe Bastrop is correct) or Margery Watkins.

Thomas McGehee's 1724 will bestowed upon Jacob McGehee fifty acres of land in King William County, being part of the 256 acres granted to him (Thomas) in 1702, located in Pamunkeny Neck. Pamunkeny is a river that runs through the county. This land lay on the west side of Nicaty Wance Swamp adjacent to lands of Holway,

\(^{378}\) See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 758.

\(^{379}\) “Sarah Tamer” who married Abraham Echols and “Sarah Turner”, who married his brother William Echols, may have somehow become confused. Handwritten imperfectly, the names could look exactly alike.
Andrews and Parker along Andrews Creek. According to the terms of the will, he was
to live with his brother Abraham until he reached the age of eighteen.

**Excursus:** It should be remembered that ‘Jacob’ is a variation of the name ‘James’,
lending credence to assertions that our Jacob’s immigrant ancestor was James
MacGregor (see the biography of Person Number 1520), and that Jacob was named for
him.

***

One Jacob McGehee, almost certainly our man, enlisted at Frederick, Virginia for
service in the French and Indian War. Edward McGehee, presumed to be his brother, is
found in the same record; Edward’s wife was Elizabeth DeJamette, sister to Jacob’s
wife.

In 1736, Jacob began accumulating land, buying 400 acres in Goochland County,
Virginia, on 8 September. He was granted 904 Acres in Brunswick County on 20
August 1745, land on both sides of the second fork of Licking hole; 500 acres of this
was patented 20 August 1744 and the remainder was virgin land that had never before
been granted. On 5 April 1748, he acquired 400 acres in Amelia County on the north
side of Bush River. An identical entry is listed on 5 February 1753. Additional mentions
include 1,036 acres in Amelia County on 16 August 1756 and 360 acres in Prince
Edward County, on both sides of the Great Sandy River on 16 March 1771. He
conveyed to Joseph Truman, for £40 currency, 100 acres of his land on Bush River in
Prince Edward County, on 17 February 1783.

He married Eleanor DeJamette on 30 October 1737 in Gloucester County, Virginia.
When his mother-in-law made her will in 1765, she appointed Jacob her Executor; he
was also the only heir named, which suggests that she made her home with Eleanor and
Jacob during her widowhood.

Fourteen children were born to Jacob and Eleanor McGehee. After her death on 14 June
1775, he married a woman named Ann; no children were born to the couple. She was
living when he made his will in 1781 and is believed to have survived him.

Too old for active service in the Revolutionary War, Jacob contributed supplies and is
listed as a Patriot by the Daughters of the American Revolution.

The following abstract of his 1781 will and information about its 1784 probate follows;
This was printed in The Virginia Genealogist, crediting William and Mary Quarterly,
original spelling retained:

“1784, March Court was probated the will of Jacob X McGehee [meaning that he signed
with his mark, ‘X’], of Prince Edward County, by which he bequeathed to sons William and Jacob
McGehee, mill with 4 acres adjoining, his still and all utensils thereto belonging, and a Negro
named Ceasar; and if son Jacob McGehee should die without lawful issue then his part of mill
and the 4 acres to testator’s son William McGehee; son William McGehee, negros named Lye,
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Gamer

Ben and Narrow; son Jacob McGehee, during life, plantation whereon testator lives with land adjoining, and should said son Jacob die leaving children said plantation to be equally divided between them; also lends to said son Jacob, for life, Negroes Sarah, Sue and Peter, and to said Jacob’s children should he die leaving issue, but should said Jacob die without issue the aforesaid negroes and their increase to be equally divided between the testator’s daughters, Elizabeth Owen, Eleanor Smith, Martha Collins, Annis Foster, Sarah Cardwell and Drusilla Weaver; to said son Jacob McGehee during life, two feather beds and furniture, and certain cattle, sheep and hogs, half of the pewter, and after his death to his children but if he should die issueless then to be equally divided between testator’s other children; to said Jacob McGehee, negro York, black walnut desk, to be at his own disposal; to daughter Elizabeth Owen, negroes Diner, Stephen and Amy, and a feather bed and furniture; to daughter Eleanor Smith, during her life, and to her husband Jonathan Smith, during his life, the negroes Jane, Phil and Hannah; and after the death of said Eleanor and Jonathan to any children of the said Eleanor, but should she die childless then the said negroes, by equal division, to testator’s other children; to said son Jacob McGehee, negro York, black walnut desk, to be at his own disposal; to daughter Elizabeth Owen, negroes Diner, Stephen and Amy, and a feather bed and furniture; to daughter Eleanor Smith, during her life, and to her husband Jonathan Smith, during his life, the negroes Jane, Phil and Hannah; and after the death of said Eleanor and Jonathan to any children of the said Eleanor, but should she die childless then the said negroes, by equal division, to testator’s other children; to said daughter [Eleanor Smith] a black walnut desk, to daughter Annis Foster, 400 acres in Prince Edward County, also negroes Gloster, Clovey, and Beck, and a black walnut chest; to daughter Martha Collins, and her husband William Collins, during their natural lives, 250 acres in Prince Edward County, and negro Mintor, Lucy, Kate and Dinah; the said land and Negroes are left in trust to testators’ three sons in law, Joseph Truman, Brackett Owen and Abraham Foster, for the support and maintenance of said Martha and William Collins during their lives and after their deaths to the children of said Martha Collins to be equally divided between them; to daughter Sarah Cardwell, 302 acres in Charlotte County, and negroes Rachel, Dick and Edmund, also half of stock on plantation in Charlotte whereon said Cardwell lives, half the working tools thereon, and one iron pot; to daughter Drusilla Weaver, 349 acres in Prince Edward County and negroes Nan, London and Fanny, and half stock of cattle on plantation in Charlotte County, and half the working tools, and one iron pot; to daughter Agness Clarke, the plantation in fork of Sandy River with land adjoining, and negroes Sam, Janey, Let, Rose and Winney, and a black walnut desk marked: ‘A.M.’; goods and chattels, and half of the pewter; testator lends to son in law Joseph Truman, plantation said Truman lives on during his life, and at said Truman’s decease, the said land and plantation to testator’s granddaughter, Mary Redd, also to said granddaughter 200 acres adjoining said plantation; but if said granddaughter [Mary Redd] should die issueless the land to be equally divided between all the testor’s children; to the said Mary Redd also eight negroes: Bob, Jude, Phil, Stepphen, Beck, Hannah, Bet and Susie; to Ruthey Ramsey, a black horse named Darby; ‘My will and desire is that if any one of my children grumble or make any disturbance, that their part be divided between all of the rest’; to wife Ann McGehee, a horse named Diamond, a cow and calf, 500 pounds of nett port, a black walnut chest, also one bed and furniture which she shall chuse; residue of estate to be equally divided between all of my children; executors, son William McGehee, and my friends Reverend Wm [Mr.?] M’Robert and Richard Burks. The will was dated May 8, 1781; witnesses, George Foster, George Pulliam, Thomas Crofford (Price Edward Records, Will Book I, p 346).”

Jacob died on 6 December 1773 in Prince Edward County, Virginia. No burial place has been identified, but he is certainly buried near his old home there.

Siblings, surname McGehee

William

Anna, married Mr. Butler

---

380 Emphasis mine.
Dinah, married Joseph Lipscomb
Abraham
Jacob
Samuel
Sarah
Edward, married Elizabeth DeJarnette
Mary, married Mr. Dickson

Parents are Numbers 1520 and 1521.

761 – Eleanor DeJARNETTE was born 5 September 1720 in Gloucester County, Virginia to Jean (John) deJarnette and his wife Mary, née Mumford.

Excursus: The name DeJarnette means ‘of the journey’, and is found as deJarno in France in 1454; one Antoine deJarno/Jarnaud is mentioned in French records, and in 1544, Marc deJarno received the order of Saint-Jean of Jerusalem which also bestowed nobility upon him. Eleanor’s father wrote his name ‘deNarnat’.

***

Eleanor married Jacob McGehee on 30 October 1737 in Gloucester County, Virginia, and bore fourteen children to him. His will (see his biography) makes it clear that he owned considerable land and slaves. She would have carried a wife’s share of the load in managing the plantation and its people, but no real facts are known about her.

She died on 14 June 1775 in Prince Edward County, Virginia, and is doubtless buried near her old home there.

Siblings, surname DeJarnette
Elias, married Elizabeth
John
Mary
Elizabeth, married Edward McGehee
Daniel, married Martha Ford
[Eleanor]
Mumford
Joseph, married Mary Pemberton

Parents are Numbers 1522 and 1523.

764 – William PENICK, Sr. (otherwise Pennick, Penix, Pennix, Penex) was born in 1694 and was christened 25 August 1694 in St. Peter’s Parish, New Kent County and James City Counties, Virginia. His father is Edward, but no mother is named. Edward’s son Edward was christened in 1682 in the same parish, with his mother’s name given as Elizabeth; she may or may not have been the mother of William also. Since it is not absolutely certain that the Edward the father of William, Sr., is the same Edward Pennick who died about 1721 In New
Kent County, I have not attempted to make any conclusions and have printed the tentative ancestry as a part of this biography. I believe it is correct.

He married Judith Pate between 1720 and 1730 in Virginia, and died before 21 September 1750 in Amelia County, Virginia.

The research on this family was done by Mrs. Patterson, who states that it contradicts some accounts, including a Bible record showing father of William as William, with mother Judith. She writes:

“The time frame for them does not work out and most current researchers agree that Edward and Elizabeth were the parents.

“No marriage record has been found for the wife of William but she was Judith in his 1750 will and named patterns make it safe to conclude she was the Judith Pate christened in the same church as William....”

Mrs. Patterson states that the earliest land ownership record found for William is in 1745 in Amelia County, Virginia, where he is also found in 1746 through 1749.

William left a will which was presented for probate on 20 September 1750, implying that he died shortly before that date; it is found on page 67 of Amelia County, Virginia Will Book 1. The ‘signature’ was written into the book by a clerk; there is no indication that he signed with a mark, so William must have been able to sign his name. My transcription, original spelling retained, follows:

“In the Name of God Amen I William Penix of Notaway Parish & Amelia County being Weak in Body but in perfect mind and Memory Thanks be to God for the same do make & ordain this my last Will & Testament making Void all other Wills & Testaments by me heretofor made by word or writing. First I Commit my Sole to Almighty God ye giver of it and my Body to be decently Enter’d at ye discretion of my Ex. hereafter Named and as for my Worldly Goods which it has please God to bestow uppon me I Give in manner and form following

“[illegible word, perhaps Imprimis] I Give & Bequeath to my son Jeremyah Penix One hundre & twentifive Acres of Land with ye plantation whereon I now live - being half ye Land I hold to him and his Heirs for ever. I allso Give to my Sa Son Jeremyah Penix One Negro Boy named Chester to him and his Heirs for ever

“Item I Give and bequeath to my Son Edward Penix one hundred and twentifive acres of Land being ye lower part of my Land to him and his Heirs for ever. I also give to my Sa Son Edward Penix One Negro to baught to him and his Heirs for ever.

“Item I desir and order y' my above Sa Sons Jeremyah Penix and Edward Penix Shall give fifteen pounds apeace to my two Youngest Sons Willm & Chals Penix to help them purchus One hundred & twentifive acres of Land apeace.

---

381 See the research overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
382 Executors.
"Item I Give and bequeath to my Son Will Penix One Negro to be bought to him & Heirs for ever.

"Item I Give and bequeath to my Son Chals Penix one negro to be bought to him & his Heirs forever.

"Item I Give and bequeath to my Daughter Jarushe Penix one negro Garl namd Jeny Likewise a father bed and furniture to her and her Heirs for ever.

"Item I give and bequeath to my Daughter Judah Penix one Negro Boy Sam Likewise a father bed & furniture to her and her Heirs for ever.

"Item I Give and bequeath to my Daughter Elizabeth Penix One Negro Garl Named Tamer to her and her Heirs for ever I likewise Give to my Sa'd Daughter Elizabeth one feather Bead & furniture after her Mothers Decese to her and her Heirs for ever.

"Item I Give and bequeath to my Beloved Wife Judah Penix my Plantation and one Negro Wench named Hannah during her life, All ye remainder of my personall Estate not already given I give

I give to my sa'd Wife Judah Penix and to be deposd of as she shall fitt.

"Item I make Ordain and constitute my beloved Wife Judah Penix & my Son Jeremyah Penix my whole and sole Executors of this my last Will and Testament.

"Item My Will is y' my Estate may not be apraised.

"Sign'd Published & Declar'd to be his last Will & Testament

William Penicks – O

"William Price
his
Rich'd R Tan
mark
Sam' Hancock Jun'.

"[illegible] At a Court held for Amelia County the 20th day of September 1750 The last Will and Testament of William Penicks was presented in Court by Judith Penicks who made oath thereto and proved by the Oaths of Sam' Hancock Jr. and Richard Tan two of the Witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded.

"Samuel Cobbs Clk"

We learn more about how a family lived when an inventory and appraisal of an estate is made, but it makes settlement of an estate take longer and be more troublesome to the survivors. William was doubtless trying to save grief for his executors when he ordered no appraisal; perhaps it is also an indication of his confidence that his heirs would not make trouble for each other.

Siblings, surname Penick
Edward
[William]
Eleventh Pennick Generation

1528 - Edward Penick died about 1721 in New Kent County, Virginia.
1529 - Elizabeth. No further information.

Twelfth Pennick Generation

3056 - William Penix was born in Wales according to tradition, died in 1695 in Hanover County, Virginia.
3057 - Judith, surname unknown. Tradition says that she was born in Ireland.

Unproven parentage for William Penick is shown above.

765 – Judith PATE was christened 4 July 1703 in St. Peter’s Parish, New Kent and James City County, Virginia—the parish spanned the county border. She was born to Jeremiah Pate and his wife (perhaps Jerusha), whose surname is not known. Mrs. Patterson\(^{383}\) states that her birthplace is said to be near Scotchtown, Virginia.

Excursus: The name of the publication is lost, but I have a photocopy of an article by Prof. J. B. Pate, and I quote here his explanation of how the surname came to be:

“When surnames were universally adopted, people who lived near the crossing places of rivers were called Fords; and people who were workers of iron, gold or silver were called Smiths; and garment makers were called Taylors; and such was the rule, with few exceptions. But not so with the Pates, as only one family adopted the surname, which in middle-English meant a bald head.”

Perhaps those of my descendants who are bald can blame heredity from the Pates for their baldness.

* * *

Judith married William Penick between 1720 and 1730 in Virginia and bore seven known children to him.

She died in Amelia or Prince Edward County, Virginia after 1767, when her name can be found on a tax list for Prince Edward County.

Parents are Numbers 1530 and 1531.

766 – William WALKER was born about 1694. He is believed to have married Judith, probably née Baker, in Virginia before 1734, but no record of the marriage has been found. William is believed to have become the father of ten children, and there is some conjecture that he may have had a wife earlier than Judith, who bore one or more of them.

\(^{383}\) See the research overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
Mrs. Patterson\textsuperscript{384} writes,

"Her [Judith’s] will calls all the males ‘my sons’ and it is felt certain she is the mother of Judith [Walker] Penick.

"The son Warren seems older and could be a first wife’s child. Warren could be his mother’s name or it could be a family name from one side or the other.

"Nothing has been proven for parents of William...."

Nothing is said in his will about his occupation, but it is clear from reading the items in the estate inventory that he was a farmer and bee keeper. A lot can be learned about the family’s activities when reading the inventory; for example, owning so many hoes, they must have raised cotton and tobacco (although no unprocessed cotton nor tobacco is included in the inventory, the executor’s settlement entry mentions ‘Tobo’ sold; and the inventory of his widow’s estate mentions “cotton in the seed”). Ownership of a flax wheel indicates that they probably raised and spun flax. The large inventory of livestock and other possessions makes it clear that the Walker family was quite prosperous.

William made his will on 22 April 1752, and an estate inventory was submitted to the court on 8 July 1752, so he died some time between those dates. His estate papers were found in the records of Cumberland County, Virginia. He was literate, but the will has been copied into a book, so the ‘signature’ is not his. The transcription of the will which follows does not mention the book nor page number, and the transcriber’s name is unknown to me. Nothing is know about his burial place, but it is doubtless in Cumberland County, Virginia.

"In the name of God Amen I William Walker of Southam Parish and of Cumberland County do make this my last will & testament as followeth my will & desire is that all my just debts be paid Item I give & demise\textsuperscript{385} unto my son James Walker his heirs & assigns forever three hundred & fifty acres of land with the plantation where James Spratlin now lives running from the back line of Edward Davidson to Appomattox river Item I give and demise unto my son Warren Walker his heirs & assigns forever four hundred acres of land together with the plantation where I now live Item I give & demise unto my son William Walker his heirs & assigns forever three hundred acres of land together with the plantation where John Duram now lives Item I give to my five sons Joel, Peter, Robert, Benjamin & Henry eighty pounds current money a peace Item I give to my two Daughters Lucy and Judy thirty pounds current money a peace to be raised out of my estate but if in case either or more of my five sons should dye before they arrive to the age of twenty one years their part to dye also my two daughters the same and my will & desire is that my well beloved wife Judy Walker should have a good maintenance out of the estate as long as she remains a widow or death which first should happen and I do leave my son Warren Walker in full power to take care of the negroes & personal estate to fulfill this my last will and my will & desire is that after these sums of money be raised the negroes & personal estate may be equally divided among my wife and children and my will & desire is that there be no appraisment of my estate and lastly I do appoint my well beloved wife

\textsuperscript{384} See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.

\textsuperscript{385} This word, used throughout the will, obviously should be ‘devise’; I don’t know if the error is on the part of the writer of the will, the copyist who wrote it into the Cumberland County records, or the transcriber.
Judy Walker & my son Warren Walker and Henry Macon to be Executors of this my last will & testament In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand & seal this 22\textsuperscript{d} day of April 1752

“William Walker  LS”

While William ordered no appraisal of his estate, the inventory was entered into the record, Cumberland County Will Book I, page 68 on 27 July 1752, having been taken 8 July 1752. The transcription below is by an unknown person, with handwritten notes apparently added to clarify uncertain words. These notes sometimes added to the confusion, which must have been caused by poor handwriting and spelling as well as the transcriber’s unfamiliarity with obsolete words.

“INVENTORY OF WILLIAM WALKER”

“A True Inventory of the Estate of Wm Walker Dec’d as we the Exeqr do find etc To wit,

“Nine negros, four Feather Beds of Furniture, two Chests, two trunks, one Cubbard, one Small Bed, seven Horses & Mares together, forty two h$\textsuperscript{d}$ of Cattle, ninety h$\textsuperscript{d}$ of Hogs, twenty three h$\textsuperscript{d}$ of Sheep, forty geese, three Pewter Dishes, six Plates, eight basons, eleaven Earthan Pans, five Stone Pots six stone Muggs, one Tea Kettle, one Tea Pot, six Cups, one small Bowle, two Earthen Porringer, two Earthan Chamber Pots, two Tables, one Water pale & Piggen, one ? Bed stead? Three Stone Juggs, four Iron Potts, one small Kettle, two Frying Pans, three pr of Pot Hooks, two Iron Wracks, one ground Stone, two Ladles, one Flesh Fork, one Fire Tongs & Shuttle [scuttle?] two Brass Candle Sticks, one Spill Morter & Pestle, one Pepper Box, four Canisters, one Funnell, one small looking Glass, two pr of Taylor Shears, one pair of Sheep DO, one pr of Scisers one pair of ?Seyllards? one pr of Large Money Scales, one Doz$^9$ knives & forks, two Spring knives, one Gunn, one Flour Sitter, one Sash DO, two Flax ?HO______, two Spinning Wheels, three pr Cards and Piercers, one candle snuffer, one Womans Saddle 2 Mens DO, one Nosering, three Bridles, one Cart, one Meat Tubb, one Nett? Grater, one Iron hook, one set of Wedges, one Cross Cutt Saw, one Hand Saw, one Cooper Addz, one ____ ____? Joynature, one Broad Ax, nine Narrow Axes, four ?grubbin? hoes, one ?foot? Addz, two augers, two Chysell, one Gouge, a set of Shoe Tools, two trowell Hoes, a set of Narrow Hoes, three doz ____ Spoons, four pair of Ha______, 2 pr of Trasses, $\frac{1}{2}$ Doz$^9$ Bottles, nine Book, one Course Wht Sifter, one Iron Pessell, nine Reap Hook, one pr Bush$^9$ Measure, fifty wt of Wool, one Gridd Iron, Twelve LB? Of Cotton, one piece of Irish Woolan? Containing 26 Yards, one Ditto 15 yards, 147 ells/rolls oznabrigs$^{387}$ 96 yards of Virgin Cloth, 10 yds of Negro Cotton, two pr of Plow lines, 4$\frac{1}{2}$ ells of Rolls, one Arithmetic Book, a Box of Wafers, one Pocket Book, forty Pound, thirteen shillings, & 1 Penny Curr$^9$ money, & accounts[?] in Sundry Persons Hands of twelve pounds fifteen shillings & seven pence Current Money 1 Branding Iron, 2 lbs of Feathers, 2 brushes, one Flame & Strap, 1 Pen Knife, 2 pr of Compasses 2 pr Knitting Needles, 1 Box Iron & ____ 1 Hatchett, 1 hammer, 2 Drawing Knives, one Trowel [or Frow], one Wooden Straner, one ½ round adds, 5 Bells, two bee hives, ten sides of Leather, two small Iron Hooks, fourteen Narrow Hoes, twelve Broad Hoes.

her

"Judy X Walker
mark
Warren Walker
Henry Macon"

$^{386}$ I wonder if this is the same thing that is spelled ‘Stylliards’ and Stillyards’ in other estate inventories found in this volume.

$^{387}$ Osnabruck, a cheap, coarse cloth used for a number of domestic purposes.
Due to the fact that some of the heirs were minors, some accountings can be found in the Cumberland County records, but they are so complicated that little is to be gained from trying to transcribe them. It appears that the estate was finally settled on 12 March 1759; the Executor’s Settlement is completely incomprehensible to me, except that the money amounts were fairly large for the time, e.g. £460 left to the sons and daughters.

Parents have not been identified.

**767 – Judith BAKER** is believed to be the correct maiden name of William Walker’s wife. She was born before 1720 and married William Walker before 1734, when she gave birth to a daughter Judy. Nothing is known about her parentage.

She is believed to have borne ten children to Walker, although there is some thought that the eldest and possibly the second may have been the sons of an earlier, unknown wife.

Estate inventories indicate that the family was prosperous, yet Judith would have carried a heavy load helping to manage a plantation and slaves, as well as rearing a large family.

Judith made her will on 19 August 1767, and it was presented for probate on 22 February 1768, so she died between those dates. Her burial place is unknown, but it is undoubtedly in Cumberland County, Virginia.

I do not know who made the transcriptions of the will and inventory which follow. They were supplied to me by Mrs. Patterson. Book and page numbers are not given for the will nor the inventory.

> "In the name of God Amen I Judith Walker of Cumberland County being sick and weak in body but of perfect mind and memory praised be god for the same do make constitute and ordain this my last will & testament in manner and form as follows.

> **Item I give and bequeath to my daughter Lucy LeGrand a negro girl named Patt and one feather bed and furniture to her & her heirs forever.**

> **Item I give and bequeath to my daughter Judah Penix a negro girl named Tamer and one feather bed and furniture to her and her heirs forever and my desire is that all my wearing cloths shall be equally divided between my two daughters before mentioned.**

> **Item I give to my granddaughter Judah LeGrand my riding saddle to her and her heirs forever.**

> **Item I give and bequeath to my son Benjamin Walker one negro wench named Sarah and one negro boy named Ned and likewise five head of cattle (viz one brindle heifer and a black one the rest young cattle to him and his heirs forever.**

> **Item I give and bequeath to my son Henry Walker one negro fellow named Bob and a negro girl named Fann and one bed and furniture likewise my horse and my desire is that he shall have a share of the crop that is now growing.**

---

See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
"I give and bequeath to Warren Walker and Benj’ a Walker all my hogs to be equally divided between them and likewise a bed and furniture to the said Benjamin only to him and his heirs forever.

"Item My will and desire is that the residue of my estate all my cash which I have upon interest and my crops that are unsettled shall be equally divided between my sons (Viz James Walker, Warren, William, Joel & Peter Walker by Matthew Nelson & James Allen.

"My will and desire is that if Henry Walker shou’d die before he arrives to the age of twenty one that what I have here given to him be divided between all my children that are now living.

"I order will and desire that my estate shall not be apprais’d nor My executor compel’d to give security for the matters herein contained and lastly I appoint my son William Walker executor of this my last will and testament hoping he will see the same duly performed as my trust in him is repos’d in witness I have hereunto set my hand and seal this nineteenth day of August one thousand seven hundred and sixty seven.

her
"Judith I389 Walker LS mark

"Signed seal’d and acknowledged to be her last will and testament in the presence of Matthew Nelson John Owen his mark Mack Goode.

"At a court held for Cumberland county the 22nd day of February 1768 this last will and testament of Judith Walker dec’d was proved by the oaths of Matthew Nelson and John Owen two of the witnesses thereto and by the court ordered to be recorded and on the motion of William Walker executor therein named who made oath according to law certificate was granted him for obtaining a probate thereof in due form.

"Test: Thompson Swann Clk."

Judith’s estate inventory indicates that she owned some articles such as thimbles that had not been mentioned in her husband’s inventory. While it may seem obvious that thimbles would be hers, it can usually be assumed that a married couple during the Eighteenth Century was one person, and the husband was the person. It seems a bit surprising to me that she had so many possessions that had not been included in William’s estate inventory.

"Inventory of the estate of Judith Walker
Five negros towit Sarah, Tom, Pat, Turner, and Ned one saddle & bridle 4 feather beds & furniture 2 tables one old safe 2 old chests 1 old leather trunk 1 small looking glass nine head of cattle 4 head of sheep 11 head of hogs—4 raw cow hides some tanned leather 2 iron pottracks 3 iron pots 1 pair of pott hooks 1 flax wheel one woolen wheel 1 flax hatchet? a parcel of old cards 1 small gilt trunk 5 old chairs 1 copper tea kettle 1 box iron 4 pewter dishes 3 basons 6 plates 4 knives and six forks 3 old iron ?hoes? 3 earthen vessels 2 brass thimbles 14 gilt buttons 16 needles 1 pair of sissars 1 pair of spectacles

389 Her mark looks like one block capital I on top of another block capital I, but with only one center cross bar.
526 The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

_1 vial chamber potts 1 spice mortar 1 washing tub & pail 6 pounds of goose feathers 1 small bed 40 yards of Virginia Cloth 13½ yards of white linnen 9½ ells of oznabriggs 35 pounds of brown sugar some small quantity of 11 pounds of pick cotton 43 pounds of cotton in the seed pounds of honey 3 stone jugs 3 stone butter potts 2 glass bottles five sh and sh a parcel of tea ware 1 chest lock 1 candle ticks and holders? a small remnant of yape? The whole volume of ?Fluvieres? forty two pounds 16 shillings & five pence curr money

"William Walker exo"
5 July 1768

“At a court held for Cumberland county the 25th day of July 1768 by William Walker executor & ordered to be recorded

"Test Thomson Swann clk"

Parents have not been identified.

804 - Jaspar MEYER ZU ELENTRUP married on 23 September 1648, in Heepen, Westfalen, Preussen, to Ilsabein Meyer zu Milse.

Parents have not been identified.

805 - Ilsabein MEYER ZU MILSE was the wife of Jaspar Meyer zu Elentrup. She bore one known child to him, and she died in January 1682 at Sieker Farm Number 1, Heepen parish.

Father is Number 1610.

808 - Johann MEYER ZU BEXTEN was born about 1616, at Bexten, Schötemar parish, Lippe-Detmold, to Bartold Meyer zu Bexten and his wife Anna Maria née Steven. He married Margarethe Meyer zu Volkhausen 16 June 1641 in the Administrative District of Detmold, Lippe-Detmold, and the couple had at least two children.

By occupation he was Amtsmeyer, a major farmer with special rights, in Bexten. He died in March 1676 in Bexten.

Parents are Numbers 1616 and 1617.

809 - Margarethe MEYER ZU VOLKHAUSEN was born before 1621 at Reetzen (otherwise Retzen) Farm Number 1, Schötemar parish, Lippe-Detmold.

She married Johann Meyer zu Bexten on 16 June 1641, and bore him at least two children. She died in 1691 in Bexten.

Excursus: The Meyer zu Volkhausen name is also spelled Volckhausen. I am almost
certain, but am unable to prove with research materials available to me, that this is the same family to which Wilhelmine Louysa Meyer zu Volckhausen, Person Number 437 in Generation Nine in this volume and her father Johann Bernd Meyer zu Volckhausen, Person Number 874 in Generation Ten, belong.

***

Father is Number 1618.

**840 - Hans DEPPING** was the father's name stated when Hans Friedrich Depping was born at Laßbruch, Silexen parish, Lippe-Detmold, on 27 January 1692. Hans had married Anna Catharine Wehrmann some time before that date.

The Silixen parish register records the death of Johann Depping in Laßbruch on 26 February 1725, with funeral and burial on 28 February. His age was 70½ years, working out to a birth date in approximately August 1654. Although death ages are often careless guesses, I am as certain as it is possible to be that he is the same man named as Hans Friedrich's father. He would have been about 38 years old when Hans Friedrich was born, not old enough to be the grandfather.

Parents have not been identified.

**841 - Anna Catharine WEHRMANN** was the wife of Hans Depping in Laßbruch, named when son Hans Friedrich was born in 1692.

"The old Depping wife in Laßbruch" (my translation) died on 14 June 1729, with funeral and burial on the 16th. Her age was "74 years lacking three months", which can be calculated to a birth date in September, 1655. This would make her age about 36 when son Hans Friedrich was born, easily within childbearing age parameters. While absolute proof is lacking, this "old Depping wife" is almost certainly Anna Catharine.

Parents have not been identified.

**842 - Hans Barthold BEXTEN or HÖRENTRUP**, sometimes called Bexten zu Hörentrup and Meyer zu Bexten, served at some time in the army and was called 'Comet', a cavalry rank roughly corresponding to the modern rank of First Lieutenant. Nothing is known about his early life. Can we assume that he was the son of Johann Meier zu Bexten whose wife was Margarethe Meier zu Volkhausen? This is not clearly stated in the genealogy given below, but I believe that Redeker, who did the research, implies that link. It is less clear that the remainder of the farm genealogy follows the blood line.

---

390 Coincidence: I was writing Hans’ biography on 28 February 2003, exactly 277 years after his funeral.
Johann married Anna Elisabeth Detering about 1682, according to Sven Högermann who researched this family, and the couple had seven children. He died about 1692.

Sven referred me to D71 Nr. 597 Adolf Redeker Detmold 1972, a book found in Staatsarchiv Detmold, about the Meier zu Hörentrup Family. Veronika Timpe found this history of Hörentrup and translated the genealogy portion below. Note that the genealogy seems to be a history of the farm’s leaseholders and does not state that the descendancy follows the bloodline; thus it cannot be assumed that this is a reliable source for determining our Hörentrup-Bexten ancestry. For what it’s worth, translation by Veronika Timpe:

"Genealogy"

"The farm of Hörentrup was bought in 1408 by Barthold Meier zu Bexten from Lüdeke zu Greiste. As administrators of the farm, partly as leaseholder, appear Johann Dust since 1590 and his descendants from Biemsen. They are also called Meier zu Hörentrup and the descendants are often found under the name Hörentrup. But they should not be confused with the Bexten descendants who had already been mentioned under the name ‘Hörentrup’ since the beginning of the Eighteenth Century.

"Owners of Bexten were:

1. Barthold Meier zu Bexten, lived around 1350.
2. Barthold Meier zu Bexten, died after 1427, his wife Susanna died after 1419.
3. Barthold Meier zu Bexten, his wife was called Mette
4a. Heinrich Meier zu Bexten, had no children, his wife was Margarethe.
4b. Barthold Meier zu Bexten, his wife was Hille, daughter of the Meier zu Heipke.
5. Barthold Meier zu Bexten, died 1564.
6. Hans Meier zu Bexten, died 1623, his wife was Anna, daughter of the Meier zu Heerse.
7. Barthold Meier zu Bexten, his wife was Anna Steven.
8. Johann Meier zu Bexten, his wife was Margarethe, daughter of the Meier zu Volkhausen; their eldest son took over Hörentrup.
9. Meier zu Hörentrup, Hans Barthold called Comet zu Bexten, born in Bexten, died in Hörentrup before 1693; married in Westervinnen around 1682 Detering, Anna Elisabeth born in Westervinnen, died in Hörentrup, buried in Schönmar 14 October 1727 (daughter of Bernd Detering zu Westervinnen and his second wife Agneta Ilsabein Barkhausen), she married for a second time in 1693 Volkering, Heinrich Eberhard, Captain, born ?, buried in Schönmar 25 January 1704."

Redeker found seven children born to Hans Bartold Meier zu Hörentrup called Comet zu Bexten and his wife Anna Elisabeth Detering, and I have listed them as siblings of Person Number 421.

Parents are Numbers 1684 and 1685.

---

391 Sven lives in Oerlinghausen (2005) and has proven to my satisfaction that he is a competent genealogist. He has provided help to me and other subscribers to Lippe-Forum, an Internet discussion group.
843 -- Anna Elisabeth DETERING married Hans Barhold, called Bexten or Hörentrup, about 1682. She was the daughter of Bermd Detering of Westervinnen, Schötmar parish, and his second wife, Agneta Ilsabein Barkhausen, and was likely born about 1657. What I know about her ancestry is found in her husband’s biography, above, gleaned from D71 Nr. 597 Adolf Redeker Detmold 1972.

The Detering name was also written ‘Deterding’ in early records.

She bore seven children to Bexten-Hörentrup before his untimely death about 1692. She married about 1693 to Hauptmann (a military or governmental Captain) Heinrich Eberhard Volkering, and the couple had three known children.

When I was at the Archiv in Detmold in 2005, I found in D 71 Nr. 597 Adolf Redeker Detmold 1972 the following about the Widow Volkering of Hörentrup, translation by Veronika Timpe, who states that she is able to make no sense out of the sentence in brackets that remains in the German language:

21 July 1707 - the widow of Volkering of Hörentrup sues for a tithe from Quemheim for her farm, according to the feudal duty of Paderborn. [Der Hörentrup Zehende genannt, welchen auch die Ahms er als Tappe, Tasche, Wichmann und Thuner zu Ahmsen zinsen lassen, wovon sie das reine Korn an den von Quemheim müßte ziehen lassen.] For a while they had paid 20 Reichsthaler each year for it, but they are now refusing to pay in kind. The date of arrest is acknowledged.

Anna Elisabeth was widowed the second time on 25 January 1704, and remained a widow until her death. Her burial is recorded in the Schötmar church records on 27 October 1727.

Parents are Numbers 1686 and 1687.

844 – Johann Conrad WOLFF’s vital information is found in his obituary. He was among those persons born at Bösingfeld, Lippe, during the gap in the church records. Whether no records were created or whether they were created and then lost is unknown to me.

Excursus: Fortunately for us who are descendants of the citizens of Bösingfeld, one of the Bösingfeld pastors, Caspar Wohlberg, wrote obituaries instead of just dates and places when he entered deaths in his church records; a number of these obituaries belong in our line, a great help in my pursuit of these Bösingfeld ancestors.

In addition, Erich Kenter studied the Bösingfeld Kenter ancestors and wrote Geschichte der Kenter aus Bösingfeld published, perhaps privately, and printed by Tolle & Company in Detmold in 1950. I own Number 381 from a press run of four hundred.

My research was carried out backward, linking a generation at a time, using the church records of Bösingfeld. The church records begin in 1652, and while I surmised that I knew

392 Translation: History of the Kenter family of Bösingfeld.
the answer, I asked on Lippe-Forum, a Yahoo discussion group on the Internet, for confirmation that Rev. Albert Neißwald and his wife Margarethe were the parents of Caspar Niewald. I was assured that this was indeed the case, and that the facts are documented in Kenter’s book.

In addition, Kenter clarifies the Krull-Niewald, Krull-Binder and Krull-Lorleberg ancestries.

Drawing upon resources not available to me, Kenter also found court, land and other records that mentioned others of our ancestors that connect to his Kenter family and to Bösingfeld. Henceforth, a number of footnotes will reference Kenter and this Excursus.

Veronika Timpe has translated a number of excerpts from that book. They are referenced to this Excursus as “Kenter”.

***

Kenter: “In 1713, the Bosingfelders were supposed to help with the ‘Friedrichsthaler works’; 37 of them stayed at home. Fourteen of these 37 people declared one more time they were free people, Wolff among them.”

***

Johann Conrad Wolff’s obituary, translated by Elfriede Wilde:

“8 May 1716 was buried Johann Conrad Wolff born 21 July 1673, his father was Caspar Wolff, dean of the church here [Bösingfeld] and elder, his mother was the deceased Maria Ilsabe Puwella from Herford, where she was born.

“He was conscientious and diligently worked for the school and for the church, with special interest for writing and arithmetic. He also went to Holy Communion and was confirmed.

“Then he went abroad for six years. He lived in Berlin and in Holland. When he returned, in the 29th year of his life, he entered into matrimony with Anna Clara Maria Lorleberg, who was a widow at that time. He lived with her in a Christian, peaceful and happy marriage for 14 years and 6 weeks. He had with her 2 sons and 2 daughters. One son and one daughter have already died.

“His Christian faith was complete and firm, his life an honorable one. He was loving, industrious, and careful in everything he did.

“The cause of death was consumption. Different medicines were prescribed for him, and there was no lack of good nursing care.

“The end of his life came 7 May in the afternoon between 2 and 3 o’clock. He died peacefully in Christ. His age was 43 years, less 11 weeks and 2 days.”

Notes by translator: I think he was instrumental in having writing and arithmetic taught in the school. It is really not clear, but I don’t think he was teaching it.

393 See my note in the biography of Anna Clara Marie Lorleberg, Person Number 845.
As to the Holy Communion and confirmation, confirmation always comes first, after a child was confirmed (usually at age 14) it was allowed to partake in Holy Communion. A person not confirmed could not do this. It states that he went to Holy Communion and was confirmed. I believe it was put in the record just to show that he was always associated with this church.

***

Parents are Numbers 1688 and 1689.

845 – Anna Clara Marie LORLEBERG’s life story—not very detailed—is found in her death entry in the Bösingfeld church register, supplemented by a few facts from her husband’s obituary. She was the daughter of Balthasar Lorleberg and his wife Anna Maria Krull. The words „educatio pio“ appear in the death entry; this may mean that she received a religious education, but that is essentially a guess on my part.

Her marriage and death ages point to a birth year of 1672 or 1673. No Lorleberg child’s baptism is found between 3 December 1671 and the gap in the record, which begins during March of 1674; perhaps she is the daughter born in 1671, or was born shortly after the gap began.

She married Johann Conrad Wolff at the age of 30 on 22 July 1702. The couple had two sons and two daughters, two of whom died early.

My interpretation: While Mrs. Wilde interpreted her husband’s biography in the Bösingfeld church record to say that Anna Clara Marie Lorleberg was a widow when he married her, I don’t believe that is what it says. I see the word „betrübten“, meaning to me that she was distressed and bereaved, and I believe it was written that way to make clear the fact that his grieving widow survived him.

***

She was a widow for 34 years, and died at the age of 77 on 22 March 1750. She is doubtless buried at Bösingfeld.

Siblings, surname Lorleberg
   Three brothers, among them possibly Eberhardt
   Two or three sisters
   Perhaps others

Parents are Numbers 1690 and 1691.

846 – Johann Henrich FREUND was born about December 1676, almost certainly at Bösingfeld, Lippe-Detmold, date calculated from his age of 72½ when he died on 28 June 1749. His parents were Bernhard (otherwise Berend, Bernd etc.) Freund and Anna Lucia Binders. A gap in the Bösingfeld Christening records between 1674 and 1683 makes research in that parish difficult, but I was able to link him to his parents because he was
mentioned in his mother’s 1718 obituary.

There is a gap from 1676 through 1692 in Böisingfeld confirmation records, so his probable
confirmation about 1690 is also undocumentable.

He married Catrina Agnese Falckman in Böisingfeld on 22 June 1704.

Kenter\textsuperscript{394} found a number of separate references to Johann Henrich Freund:

“All the goods [contained in it] and the ‘Hamelnsche Krug [inn]’ were possessed by Henrich
Herrmann and Johann Henrich Freund in 1708.”

“In 1713, the Böisingfelders were supposed to help with the ‘Friedrichsthaler works’, but 37 of them
stayed at home. Fourteen of these 37 people declared one more time they were free people, Freund
among them.”

“In the era of the Kleindiekschen Management (around 1714) the brewers sold the can they brewed
with. Those who had enough money bought a new one for themselves. Eight of them could not afford
a can for themselves. They had to give up their business. Only four brewers could continue: Wissmann and Freund [evidently a partnership], Falckmann, Bunte and Kenter.”

“At the same time, the number of free brewers increased. In 1720, there had been four free brewers
who did not belong to the regular brewers. In 1727, the brewers in Böisingfeld got for themselves and
their descendants a new privilege given by Earl [of Lippe] Simon Henrich Adolph. It included the
provision that except those who owned the privilege, nobody was allowed to brew beer any longer.
Johann Henrich Freund was one of eight brewers at that time. The privilege included a brew-tax of 80
Thaler per year. Furthermore, the quality of the beer was checked.”

“Around 1720, Meyer Johann Riecks alias Senke auf der Exter wanted to return the 60 Thaler his
ancestor Cord Meyer borrowed from Arend Roehr or Kenter (stepfather of Hermann Kenter, Sr.)
Furthermore, he wanted to have the land between Exter’s and Hagemann’s farm back. At first,
Kleindiek alias Kenter and his stepson Jobst Wilhelm Kenter agreed. Jobst Wilhelm Kenter had
leased the land to conductor Johann Henrich Freund at that time. Freund had built a house on
Hagemann’s property close to that land and wanted to buy it, too. He told Jobst Wilhelm about his
plan. In 1724, Jobst Wilhelm finally declared that his stepfather Kleindiek would not have had the
right to give Riecks alias Senke the land back. He would have been the heir and he would be older
than thirty years old.”

“Conductor Freund was a descendant of parish pastor Moritz Freund the Elder of Langenholzhausen
(died in 1638), a grandchild of the 1497-born Moritz Piderit, a preacher at the St. Nikolai church in
Lemgo. In 1629, Freund sold his inherited estate in Talle. His brother-in-law, Junker Henrich von
Grothe zu Niedertalle, bought it. Moritz Freund the Elder was Bernd Freund the Younger’s (born on
24 October 1647 in Ludenhausen) grandchild. Bernd Freund married his second wife Anna Lucia
Binder alias Moller, Hans Binder alias Möller’s daughter and Balthasar Lorleberg’s stepdaughter, on
12 December 1673 in Böisingfeld. They had a couple of children. One of them was Johann Henrich
Freund who became a conductor. In 1749, he died in Maspe and was buried under the Donoppischen
Prieche in the church of Reelkirchen. Maybe it was because of Freund that Jobst Wilhelm Kenter’s

\textsuperscript{394} See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in
Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
son (he was born in 1721 and Freund’s godchild) did not take over his parents’ possessions in Böisingfeld but became a conductor (just as his godfather)."

***

Johann Henrich Freund was “Conductor zu Maspe”, Paechter in modern German, defined as ‘estate tenant’; I infer that Maspe must have been a large, important estate, because ‘Conductor’ was apparently a position of responsibility and honor. His title is appended each time he is mentioned in the church records of Reelkirchen, where he lived. Maspe is described as a Donoppishe Gut in one churchbook entry, the German word ‘Gut’ meaning ‘Estate’.

The 28 June 1749 death entry (this could be the burial date) in the Reelkirchen churchbook indicates that Johann Henrich’s burial occurred in the evening at the church at Reelkirchen, and another burial place was prepared for his wife at that time. These burial places were ausgemauert unter den Donoppischen Prieche, suggesting to me that they had been plastered into the church wall or floor.

Excursus: An April 2001 visit to the church and a conversation with its historian convinced me (temporarily) that Freund and his wife had been buried in the churchyard. The Reelkirchen churchyard was really the cemetery for many years and many stones remain, a rather unusual situation for Germany. The historian related that some years ago a big machine had to be brought into the churchyard for a reason I didn’t understand, and some gravestones were removed. That was probably the place where the Freunds were buried.

I bought a copy of the church history. The fact that it has been prepared indicates to me that the people of the community are aware of history’s importance, and it seemed to me that they would at least have taken some pictures of the stones that the ‘big machine’ was going to destroy, but that seemed not to have occurred.

The book is a slim little volume, the words on the cover printed in Gothic type: Die Kirche zu Reelkirchen und ihre Geschichte…das sollte nicht in Vergessenheit geraten⁹⁵, a picture of the church on the cover.

As I began to decipher some of the book, I realized that sections were devoted to the Priechen and to the Totenkeller (crypt), and that the self-declared historian was wrong in what he told me. Veronika Timpe’s word-by-word translation to English:

“The balconies (Priechen)

“The interior of the church as well has undergone changes and thus, through restorations accompanied by an installation of subfloor heating, it was returned its original look. Most striking is the dismantling of the balconies, which had been built in because of the increasing population, which in turn caused an increase in the number of church attendees. Around 1880 they (the balconies) had been renewed together with the entire seating of the church; and were [later] removed, in the course of the above mentioned restoration, up to the present organ balcony in the Southern building. Parts of the old church pews with names carved into them are

⁹⁵ The church at Reelkirchen and her history…that it shall not be forgotten.
exhibited in the National Museum in Detmold.

“The discernible names show us that not just aristocratic families who lived on the manors which belonged to the parish, owned their personal pews, but that every other family owned one as well. It was the property of the church and had to be bought as a, so to speak, “feoff” (loan). This procedure was put on record in a special “pew index” that had just been started for this particular purpose. Nevertheless, there were often arguments over the church seats, which were due to the fact that the owner lost his right of ownership if he had not occupied his seat until the second song started.

“In general, the balconies (Priechen) were named for the parts of the parish where the church-goers came from. The choir section alone had a special name. Since it was closest to the linden, it was called ‘Beneath the Linden’. The ‘Wardrobe’ is another handed-down name for a certain seating.”

Since Freund and his wife were buried under the Donoppisch Prieche, they were doubtless buried under the floor of the church, under the balcony reserved for the parishioners from Donop. The historian got rid of me with his ‘big machine’ story.

Excursus: During the summer of 2005, I visited the Gumbel village of Niedermollrich in Hessen, and for the first time I was saw the interior of the church there. Its balconies remain in place, and I suddenly realized just how they were incorporated into the sanctuary. One must let his imagination roam into a different world and realize that the churches in Germany were built as monuments to God, and to last forever. Even in tiny villages, the structures are enormous, dwarfing by comparison churches in American towns. These towering, imposing structures contain plenty of room, between floor and roof, to accommodate spacious balconies on both sides and across the back.

* * *

Another section of the Reelkirchen church history is devoted to the Totenkeller, literally the ‘cellar for the dead’, or crypt. It is quite normal to find burials under the floor of a German church. Veronika Timpe’s translation:

“The crypt (Totenkeller)

“The room underneath the choir has experienced several changes and was used in different ways. Supposedly, it was built when the apse (semicircular chancel), that leads to the choir, was remodeled. When the choir part, and with it the room underneath were built, the foundation walls of the apse were destroyed. That’s why only the remains of it were found during excavations in 1975. They can be seen in the plan at the crossing bows toward the nave. [Illustrated in the book.]

“According to oral traditions, it used to be the crypt for the ‘von Mengersen’ family. Pastor Kurt Niewald (Reelkirchen 1954-1966) wrote about this: ‘Underneath the choir part there was a crypt. The perpetuated Superintendent Weßel told me about it. The bones found in the earth were buried at the cemetery.’

“According to Dr. Isenberg, the von Mengersen family was the only one, during the Reformation, that had the right to be buried within the church. The memorial slabs of the noble families ‘von Donop’

596 Perhaps ‘Superintendent Emeritus’ would be a more clear description of Wessel’s position.
and ‘Borkhausen’, ‘von Friesenhausen’ from Maspe and ‘von Grona’ from Freismissen were removed\textsuperscript{397} from the interior of the church in 1880.

“For a long time the room under the choir was empty, until they got rid of the church’s oven\textsuperscript{398}. Then the room served as the heating cellar for the oil heating system. Today it serves as a storeroom for additional chairs and benches. Besides, they installed the modern electric subfloor heating system there.

“According to a report in the archive of the National Church Office, 30,000 people were buried at the churchyard since the Thirty Years War. The churchyard was used as a cemetery until 1914. That would be about a hundred burials every year for three hundred years, a number which is not too high considering the great number of different villages which belonged to that huge community. Just more recently the different villages got their own cemeteries.”

Veronika continues, abstracting,

The text about “The graves” is mainly about how the graves were built with bricks. Most graves in the church are from the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries. The von Mengersen family was mainly buried there. The von Mengersens had lived in “House Reelkirchen” at the Northeast edge of town.

Older graves were probably destroyed when the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Century burials were made.

People often had special wishes where exactly they wanted to be buried, e.g. Heinrich von Bruchhausen wanted them to bury his wife right underneath her chair in the church.

Georg Philip von Bruchhausen was buried there on 8 November 1724. The Bruchhausens had borrowed [leased?] the crypt from the Mengersens around Easter in 1617 for 133 years. They paid 10,000 Thaler for it.

Ben and I drove over to Maspe in 2001—it was Good Friday and it was snowing—and took a look at what appeared to be the only major farmstead there, and it is indeed a large, well-maintained farm today.

Any memorial slab marking Johann Henrich Freund’s burial place and that of his wife, bricked out below the floor under the balcony that seated congregants from the village of Donop, was doubtless destroyed with the remodeling of the church.

**siblings, surname Freund**

[Johann Henrich]
Margrete Cathrina Elisabeth
Anna Lucia
Frantz Diedrich
Anna Maria
Simon Friderich

\textsuperscript{397} Why didn’t they tell where these memorial slabs went?
\textsuperscript{398} Early heating system?
(Four additional brothers and three additional sisters whose names are unknown due to the gap in Bösingfeld records; seven sons and six daughters were born to their mother according to her obituary.)

Parents are Numbers 1692 and 1693.

847 – Catharine Agnese FALKMANN (otherwise FALCKMANN) was Christened at Bösingfeld, Lippe-Detmold on 29 May 1688. She was probably born a few days earlier. Her parents were Johann Friedrich Falkmann and his wife Anna Sophia née Nettwald.

Falkmann/Falckmann surname: The Falkmann surname is found in Lippe records as early as 1610, although no link to our Falkmann line has been established.

Kenter 399. “In 1610 it was ordered that the Zehentkorn (a form of taxes paid in seeds) of Bösingfeld was not to be used as seed in Oelentrup because in and around Bösingfeld a lot of detrimental weed had grown, as well as yellow flowers. According to Falkmann it was probably the ‘rampant flower’, later on called ‘Schötmar flower’.” 400

***

No confirmation records exist for Bösingfeld for the probable year of her confirmation.

She married Johann Henrich Freund at Bösingfeld, Lippe-Detmold on 22 June 1704, and the couple lived at Bösingfeld when their second child was born (there is a gap in Bösingfeld records at the time of their first child’s birth), then moved to Maspe in the parish of Reelkirchen, Lippe-Detmold, perhaps dwelling elsewhere for a time between Bösingfeld and Maspe. She bore nine known children to Freund. They can be documented by confirmation and death records, although baptisms cannot be found for three of them.

When her husband died in 1749, a place was ausgemauert, ‘plastered out’ (bricked out) under the Donoppische Prieche (in the floor of the Reelkirchen church under the Donoppish balcony) in readiness for her eventual burial.

Her death is recorded in the Reelkirchen churchbook on 16 May 1759; I’m uncertain whether this is the death or burial date. The funeral was at 8 o’clock in the evening, in der Stille: without ringing the churchbells. It has been conjectured that the family somehow fell out of favor in the community, explaining the lack of churchbells. Her age was 71 years.

Siblings, surname Falkmann

399 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

400 Kenter gives its botanical name, Chrysanthemum segetum, and I found the following definition at Wikipedia online: “Chrysanthemum segetum is a species of the genus Chrysanthemum, native to the Mediterranean region, but widely naturalised elsewhere, where it can be an invasive weed of agriculture. It is also called the ‘Corn Marigold’ or ‘Corn daisy’.”
Margrete Magdalena
Johan Henrich
[Catharine Agnese]
Sophia Maria
Anthon Friedrich

Parents are Numbers 1694 and 1695.

852 – Herm KIEL was born about 1669, calculated from his death age of 70 in 1739.

He was “of Stemmen” when his marriage to Maria Flörcken was recorded in the Varenholz parish, Lippe-Detmold churchbook on 7 November 1704. Issue from the marriage, other than our direct ancestor Hans Herman Kiel, was not researched.

His wife died in 1720; I did not try to find a subsequent marriage.

Herm died on 6 February 1739 (or perhaps that was the funeral date) at Stemmen, his age stated as 70 years. The text used for funeral sermon was Psalm 89, verse 49.

Parents have not been identified.

853 – Maria FLÖRCKEN was the wife of Herm Kiel; she was probably born about 1676.

When the couple was married in 1704, the Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold churchbook entry states that she is from “Poltheim”. The couple made their home in Stemmen.

Research: Shtetlseeker is an Internet Website that is the standard source for locating European villages; its searches are enhanced by the Daitch-Mokotoff Soundex system. It suggested as a match for Poltheim, the village of Veltheim, very near Varenholz but across the Weser River. Maria may have come from there; Veltheim’s church records begin in 1725, too late to find her birth.

Maria’s death is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook on 5 May 1720, with a death age of 44 stated. The date may be either her death or funeral date. The funeral text was Hebrews 12, verses 5 and 6.

Parents have not been identified.

854 – Johann Christian STOCK, otherwise Stoock, was probably born about 1694, calculated from his death age of 80 years in 1774.

He was a Schiffmeister, probably meaning ferryman, in Varenholz when he married Anna Cathrina née Stock, widow Rhode, on 17 September 1717. The River Weser was an important waterway and bridges were few during those early times.
I can offer no explanation about how Stock and his wife happen to have the same surname. The marriage is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook. At least six children were born to the couple.

I scanned the Varenholz marriage records from the date in 1757 when Johann Christian Stock’s wife died, through 1762, thinking he might have married again, but found nothing. Johann Christian died at Varenholz on 12 January 1774 at the age of 80.

Parents have not been identified.

855 - Anna Catharina STOCK was probably born about 1692, calculated from her death age of 65 in 1757. I don’t know why she seems to have the same surname as her husband.

Her first known marriage was to a Herr Rhode; she was his widow and living in Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold when she married Stock on 17 September 1717 in Varenholz. She bore at least six children to Stock.

Anna Catharina’s death is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook on 11 September 1757, her age given as 65 years and one month, which works out to a birthdate in August, 1692.

Parents have not been identified.

856 - Christoffel ROSEMEIER was a Tambour—drummer—in the Army in the Companie of a Major _______ (I can’t read his name) when his wife Margarethe nee “Becker” gave birth to twin sons in Herford, Westfalen, Preußen in 1714. Inasmuch as two midwives brought the twins to be baptized, the father must have been away from Herford at the time of their birth, perhaps on army maneuvers.

The couple was married, because the baptismal record of the twins does not say that they are illegitimate. I searched Herford Münster parish for 1712, 1713, and 1714, but no marriage was found. Any other issue from their marriage is unknown.

One son, our ancestor Herman Christoph Rosemeier, was confirmed in Almena, his baptismal sponsor having been listed as living there at the time the twins were baptized.

Nothing further is known about Christoffel Rosemeier. I do not believe that he was a citizen of Lippe-Detmold because he seems to have been in the Prussian Army. The fact that the sponsor of Herman Christoph’s twin, Johann Peter Rosemeier, was from Uffeln may indicate that Christoffel Rosemeier’s roots can be found in that place.

Parents have not been identified.

857 - Margarethe “BECKER” is the name given as the mother’s maiden name when twins born to her and her husband Christoffel Rosemeier were baptized at St. Petri Church in
Herford 24 July 1714. She was “of Almena near Rinteln”; but there isn’t any family with the surname Becker in Almena. The two midwives who brought the babies to be christened in Herford perhaps misunderstood the name.

There is a family Böger in Almena, but since it doesn’t match, I didn’t research that family. The godmother was Anna Margarethe, also supposed to be a Becker in Almena. No doubt she had charge of Margarethe’s son Herman Christoph Rosemeier, the reason for him being in Almena at the time of his confirmation in 1728.

It is fairly certain the Margarethe “Becker”, the mother of the twins, died before Herman Christoph’s confirmation in 1728; her death may have been soon after the twins’ births. The fact that it was necessary for two midwives to attend her confinement may be an indication that the birth was difficult.

Parents have not been identified.

858 – Johan HILCKER was born about 1665, calculated from his death age, probably in Bösingfeld parish, Lippe-Detmold.

I found the baptism of an unnamed “little son” on 26 August 1666 recorded in Bösingfeld; his father was Heinrich Hlcker. I also found Heinrich’s marriage on 11 December 1664 at Bösingfeld, to Adelheid, Henrich Kuhleman’s daughter. It is very likely that this couple are Johan’s parents, but proof is not available.

Johan is believed to have married Anna Maria Brandt about 1710, and they lived at Linderbruch in Bösingfeld parish. At least three children were born to the couple.

Johan “from Hlckers’ Hof” died on 2 January 1746 at Linderbruch at the age of 65 years. His widow died five days later.

Unproven parentage is explored above.

859 – Anna Maria BRANDT is named as the wife of Johan Hilcker when their children were baptized; her maiden name was also stated in her death entry in the Bösingfeld churchbook. She was probably born about 1680.

She bore at least three children to Hilcker after their marriage, estimated to have taken place about 1710. The family lived at Linderbruch.

Widowed on 2 January 1746, Anna Maria died five days later on 7 January 1746 at the age of 65.

Parents have not been identified.
860 – Hans VOGT was baptized on 15 August 1669. His father was Martin Vogt of Hensdorf; his mother’s maiden name was Anna Catharine Frevert, although it was not recorded in the baptism entry in the Lüdenhausen churchbook. I believe that names of sponsors are given but I am unable to read them (or whatever else is written about his baptism).

Hans Frevert “alias Vogt” married Trina Aagnes Otenhausen on 3 November 1697, the marriage recorded in Lüdenhausen. Marriage banns had been proclaimed on 10 October. Our ancestor Herman Christoph Vogt is the only issue from the marriage that I researched; there may have been more children.

He may have used the Frevert name because his mother’s maiden name was Frevert. If she had inherited her family’s farmland, the family may have gone by the Frevert name. The protocol of changing one’s name permanently to a farm name and never again using his birth name seems not to have been firmly established until some years later.

Hans died in Hensdorf on 6 February 1716—this may be the burial date—at the age of 47 years.

Parents are Numbers 1720 and 1721.

861 – Trina Aagnes OTENHAUSEN is “from Amt—Administrative District—Detmold” on her marriage entry recorded in Lüdenhausen on 3 November 1697.

I was able to determine that four parishes belonged to the Administrative District of Detmold: Detmold, Horn, Haustenbeck and Heiligenkirchen. The Detmold parish baptisms begin in 1660, but I could not find Trina’s birth recorded; Horn’s baptisms have been extracted by the LDS extraction team, but Trina is not found on the International Genealogical Index; Haustenbeck’s church records begin in 1706, too late for Trina’s birth; Heiligenkirchen births begin in 1683, too late for Trina, but confirmations are recorded beginning in 1684 and Trina is not listed.

Inasmuch as the word Amt was used, I thought that the pastor probably knew about a marriage contract, knew that the Vogt family had gone to Detmold to sign it. No Detmold Eheprotokoll (marriage contracts) for 1676 have been microfilmed.

Trina bore at least one child to Vogt.

She died at the age of 60 on 5 December 1736 (this may be the burial date) in Hensdorf, Lüdenhausen parish.

Parents have not been identified.

862 – Cord BILSTEIN, otherwise Billstein, was born about 1655-1661, probably at Langenholzhausen, Lippe-Detmold.
He married A. M. (almost certainly Anna Maria) Domeyer, otherwise Dohmeyer and Dohmeier, on 22 August 1684 at Langenholzhausen. The couple may have had more children than our ancestor Catharina Ilsabein, whom I researched.

Cord died on 25 July 1722 at Langenholzhausen. I read his age as 67, in which case he was born about 1665. It could be 61, however, and in that case he was born about 1661.

Parents have not been identified.

863 – A. M. DOMEYER, otherwise Dohmeyer and Dohmeier, was the wife of Cord Bilstein. Her name, to have been abbreviated A.M., would almost certainly have been Anna Maria.

She bore at least one child to Bilstein, perhaps more.

I found something about Cord Bilstein in a 27 January 1730 death entry in Langenholzhausen, someone age 76. The person would have been born about 1654, a reasonable time for his wife to have been born, but the entry contains too many details to fit into what I know about the family. If Anna Maria died before her husband, her death may not be recorded at all, because no Langenholzhausen death records earlier than 1719 exist.

Parents have not been identified.

872 – Johann SCHÖTKER or FLÖRCKE(MEYER) was born about 1671.

He married Dorothea Hedwig Grinert on 17 May 1701, the marriage recorded in the Varenholz, Lippe-Detmold churchbook. Both were living at Stemmen. The couple had one known child, perhaps more.

He had been living at Stemmen when he died at the age of 73; the Varenholz church record is dated 3 April 1744 and there is no indication about whether this is his death date or funeral date.

Parents have not been identified.

873 – Dorothea Hedwig GRINERT was born about 1688.

She married Johann Schötker or Flörckemeyer on 17 May 1701, and the couple lived at Stemmen, Lippe-Detmold. The marriage is recorded in the Varenholz churchbook.

She died on 27 June 1742 at the age of 54; she had been living in Stemmen, and her death is recorded in Varenholz.

There seems to be only one Grinert family in the parish—the population had been decimated
by the Thirty Years War 1618-1638—so it is reasonable to assume that they were related. I found a Margaret Elisabeth Grinert who died on 1 April 1716 at the age of 29, a possible sister to Dorothea. Likely but unproven parents for Dorothea (and Margaret):

Eleventh Grinert Generation

1746 – Peter Christian Grinert; everything I know about him found in his widow's death entry in the Varenholz churchbook.
1747 – Anna Maria Grinert née __________. The Varenholz churchbook records her death (or funeral) on 24 November 1741. She had been living in Stemmen when she died, and she was the widow of the Medicus — medical doctor—Peter Christian Grinert in Hameln.

I infer from the statement in her death record that Dr. Grinert had lived and practiced in Hameln, and she and her unmarried daughter came to Stemmen to live with Dorothea and her family after he died. I may, of course, have put two and two together and surmised too much.

'Hameln' is the German spelling of the town name that is 'Hamlín' in English, the town of the Pied Piper. No microfilms of Hameln church records for the time of Dorothea's birth are available in the Family History Library.

Unproven parentage is shown above.

874 – Johann Berend MEYER ZU VOLCKHAUSEN was born about 1663, probably at Volckhausen, a large farm in Schötmar parish, Lippe-Detmold. He was Amtsmeier, a major farmer with special rights.

He married Sophie Elisabeth Schemmel, probably about 1692. Four known children, all daughters, were born to the couple, including our ancestor Wilhelmine Louysa. Early Schötmar birth-baptism records give only the father's surname, but when daughter Sophia Elisabeth died, her death entry stated her father's full name. Incidentally, her death age subtracted from her death date, matched her known birth date exactly. Knowing his given name provided enough information to link him to his wife using the data found in her death record.

When his daughter Wilhelmine Louysa married Anton Christian Flörke in 1728, the bride's stepmother, Sophia Agnesa was one of those concurring in the agreement to the marriage contract; I cannot find a subsequent marriage for Johann Berend, but this is proof that he married again after the death of his wife in 1723.

He died on 9 October 1727 at the age of 64, recorded in Schötmar.

Parents have not been identified.

875 – Sophia Elisabeth SCHEMMEL was the wife of Johann Berend Meyer zu Volckhausen. Her death is recorded in Schötmar on 20 January 1723, where she is Johann Berend Amts Meyer zu Volckhausen's wife. On the Family History Library microfilm, due to the tight binding of the book from which the film was made, I could read only the first digit of her age, a 5. In addition, I could not be sure whether the name was Schemmel or
On 11 April 2001, I went to the Nordrhein-Westfalen Staatsarchiv in Detmold seeking the Schöntmar Church records, where I hoped to be able to read her death age. My notes also told me to assess the mark over the first ‘m’ in Schemmel to see whether there could be a misplaced dot over an ‘i’, making the name Schimmel, or whether the dot was bleed-through or some incidental mark on the paper.

Her death age as seen in the original churchbook is 51 years, so she was probably born about 1672. The mark over the word was definitely not intended to be the dot over an ‘i’. The mark is pale brown on the original, although it copied very black from the microfilm and is almost as dark on the photocopy from the original book.

She married Volckhausen before daughter Wilhelmine Louysa was born in 1703, perhaps earlier. Meyer zu Volckhausen had other daughters born in 1693, 1695 and 1697, and Sophia may have been their mother, but Wilhelmine Louysa is the only one for whom there is a Schemmel sponsor, making it risky to assume that Sophia was the mother of all Meyer zu Volckhausen’s daughters.

The 20 January 1723 date may be that of her death or her burial.

Parents have not been identified.

880 – Herman FREITAG was born in 1660 to Herman Freitag in Rentrup. His baptism is recorded in the Talle, Lippe-Detmold churchbook on 14 April 1660; no sponsors are listed.

He married Maria Lisabeth Frevert of Niedermeien on 16 October 1687, the marriage recorded in Talle. The couple had a son, Hans Herman, born in 1691, the only issue found from this marriage. “Lisabet Freitag” age 28, of Rentrup was buried on 15 December 1693, recorded at Talle.

Herman married again after that date, but the couple apparently married in another parish, because their marriage is not entered in the Talle churchbook. His second wife’s name is unknown. Our ancestor Hans Henrich Freitag is the only known issue from this post-1693 marriage.

I did not find Herman’s death, nor did Jones' professional researcher.

Siblings or halfsiblings, surname Freitag

[Herman]
Anna Margreta Catharina
Lisabeth
Katrina Ilsabe
Anna Margreta Ilsabe  

401 See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 55.
Father is Number 1760.

896 – Johannes GUMBEL was born at Niedermöllrich, Hessen 25 November 1675 to Heinrich Gumbel and his wife Elisabeth, née Stieglitz. He was baptized on 5 December 1675, and confirmed in 1688.

He married Anna Gertrud Paulus on 10 October 1702 in Niedermöllrich, died on 2 April 1723 in Niedermöllrich, and was buried there.

Siblings, surname Gumbel

- [Johannes]
  - Catharina (Person Number 903 below), married Curt Trischmann; issue
  - Perhaps others

Parents are Numbers 1792 and 1793.

897 – Anna Gertrud PAULUS was born on 31 May 1680 in Niedermöllrich, Hessen to Johannes Paulus and his wife, Martha née Globes. She was confirmed in 1693.

She married Johannes Gumbel on 10 October 1702 in Niedermöllrich, and bore him one known child. She died on 13 June 1751 in Niedermöllrich, and was buried there.

Parents are Numbers 1794 and 1795.

898 – Johannes BÜCHNER was born at Niedermöllrich, Hessen on 7 February 1686 to Adam Büchner and his wife Margaretha, née Peter. He was confirmed in 1699.

On 12 July 1715 at Niedermöllrich, he was joined in marriage to Anna Catharina Büchner, who may have been related to him, but the relationship is believed to have been no nearer than second cousins.

Johannes died on 5 February 1751 at Niedermöllrich, and was buried there on 9 February.

Parents are Numbers 1796 and 1797.

899 – Anna Catharina BÜCHNER was born on 12 February 1688 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Herman Büchner and his wife Magdalena née Fiegehenn. She was confirmed in 1701. I cannot explain why she and her husband seem to have the same surname.

She married Johannes Büchner on 12 July 1715 and Niedermöllrich, and bore him one known child.

Parents are Numbers 1798 and 1799.
900 – Conrad GRIESEL was born on 28 March 1664 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Johannes Griesel and his wife Anna, née Diedrich. He was confirmed in 1676.

He married Catharina Hansemann on 28 October 1686 at Niedermöllrich.

He died on 12 October 1736 in Niedermöllrich.

Parents are Numbers 1800 and 1801.

901 – Catharina HANSMANN was born at Niedermöllrich, Hessen on 29 January 1679 to Hans Hansmann and his wife Elisabeth, née Gumbel. She was confirmed in 1693.

She married Conrad Griesel on 28 October 1686 at Niedermöllrich, and bore him at least one child.

She died on 20 May 1719 at Niedermöllrich.

Parents are Numbers 1802 and 1803.

902 – Curt TRISCHMANN was born 27 January 1667 in Harle, Hessen to Eckhard Trischmann and his wife Anna Gertrud née Schmied.

He married Catharina Gumbel on 13 December 1698 in Niedermöllrich.

He died on 9 July 1735 in Niedermöllrich.

Parents are Numbers 1804 and 1805.

903 – Catharina GUMBEL was born at Niedermöllrich, Hessen on 7 October 1679 to Heinrich Gumbel and his wife Elisabeth, née Stieglitz. She was confirmed in 1676.

She married Curt Trischmann on 13 December 1698 in Niedermöllrich, and bore him at least one child.

She died in Niedermöllrich on 18 May 1731.

Siblings, surname Gumbel

Johannes (Person Number 896 above) married Anna Gertrud Paulus; issue
[Catharina]
Perhaps others

Parents are Numbers 1806 and 1807.
906 – **Conrad REUTER** was born at Solms, Hessen on 30 April 1665.

He married Anna Gela Webert, and the couple lived at Solms when their daughter Anna Elisabeth was born in 1705. His occupation is given as shepherd.

He died on 23 February 1731 at Solms.

Parents have not been identified.

907 – **Anna Gela WEBERT** was born about 1676.

She married Conrad Reuter and was living at Solms by 1705 when she gave birth to a daughter. She died 29 September 1740 at Solms.

Parents have not been identified.

908 – **Johannes ZULAUF** is only mentioned in his daughter’s marriage document, and it is reasonable to assume that he as well as his daughter lived at Niederjossa.

Parents have not been identified.

912 – **Dietmar RITTER** was probably born about 1668, likely in Lohre, Hessen.

He married Anna Martha Ittal about 1705. He died on 18 December 1751 at Lohre at the age of 83 years, and was buried there on 20 December.

Parents have not been identified.

913 – **Anna Martha ITTAL** was born at Lohre, Hessen, to Johann Otto Ittal and his wife Martha, née Löber. The date found in the church record is 11 December 1681, which may be her birth date or baptism date. She was confirmed in 1694.

She married Dietmar Ritter about 1705, and bore him one known child. She died on 1 November 1741 at Lohre.

Parents are Numbers 1826 and 1827.

914 – **Johannes BRENNER** was born to Henning Brenner and his wife Elisabeth née Meyer at Niedermöllrich, Hessen. It is not clear whether the date found in the church record, 5 October 1690, is his birth date or his baptism date. He was confirmed in 1704.

He married Guida Bornkessel on 14 September 1714 in Niedermöllrich, and the couple had at least one child. Death information was not found.
Parents are Numbers 1828 and 1829.

915 – Guida BORNKESSEL was born to Johannes Bornkessel and his wife Gertrud, née Dieling, at Obervorschütz, Hessen. The date found in the church record, 14 September 1684, may be either her birth or baptism date or both. She was confirmed in 1697.

She married Johannes Brenner at Niedermöllrich on her thirtieth birthday, 14 September 1714. The couple had one known child. Death information was not found.

Parents are Numbers 1830 and 1831.

918 – Johannes TRIESCHMANN married Elsabetha Ritter on 11 February 1716 at Vema, Hessen. The couple had at least one child.

He was a miller by trade. Nothing further is known, except that Mrs. Habenicht\(^{402}\) writes “(nach Busse)” after “Vema” (the name of the village), when she gives the marriage date and place. “Busse” cannot be found on a modern map, and possibly describes the location of his mill.

Parents have not been identified.

919 – Elsabetha RITTER married Johannes Trieschmann on 11 February 1716, and bore him at least one child. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

920 – Johann Henrich VOLLMAR resided in Wabem, Hessen, across the River Eder from Niedermöllrich.

Parents have not been identified.

922 – Johann Jost WICKE was born on 22 September 1695 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Ernst Wicke and his wife Anna Catharina née Ritte. He was confirmed in 1709.

He married Anna Maria Dam on 3 June 1727 at Niedermöllrich, and the couple had at least one child.

The date 29 October 1739 appears in the Niedermöllrich death register, and it is not known whether this is his actual death date or his burial date.

Parents are Numbers 1844 and 1845.

\(^{402}\) See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
923 – Anna Maria DAM was born at Niedermöllrich, Hessen on 20 November 1703 to Alexander Dam and his wife Cecilia Otto. She was confirmed in 1717.

On 3 June 1727 she married Johann Jost Wicke, to whom she bore at least one child.

She died on 1 February 1761 at Niedermöllrich.

Parents are Numbers 1846 and 1847.

928 – Konrad NUHN was born about 1688 to Barthold Hermann Nuhn and his wife, whose name is not known, in Kirchheim, near Niederaula, Hessen, Germany. He was a shepherd. He married Christina Eichmann on 1 December 1716 at Niederaula, died there on 6 October 1738 and was buried there.

Father is Number 1856.

929 – Christine EICHMANN was born 10 March 1698 at Niederaula to Hans Heinrich Eichmann and his wife Elisabeth Wendel. She was confirmed in 1711, and married Konrad Nuhn on 1 December 1716. Her death date could probably be found in the Niederaula church records if one had time to search.

Excursus: The Eichmann name, according to the Niederaula book⁴⁰³, came into the Niederaula community shortly after the end of the Thirty Years War in 1648. Only eight persons were part of the Brauerschaft⁴⁰⁴ Niederaula in 1648, and Heinz Eichmann is one of those who came “later”, which I read to mean quite soon. Whether he came from a nearby place or from afar cannot be guessed: The Thirty Years War brought total devastation to the countryside, and complete upheaval on the part of the people, who wandered about, hoping to find a safe place where the necessities of life were available.

***

Siblings, surname Eichmann

[Christine]
Anna Katharina born and died 1701
Adam Heinrich born 1702, married 1728, died 1773
Johann Jacob born 1706, married 1744, died 1767
Anna Margarethe born 1709, died 1730

Parents are Numbers 1858 and 1859.

---

⁴⁰³ See footnote to the biography of Person Number 29.
⁴⁰⁴ The brotherhood of those entitled to the privilege of brewing beer.
930 – Valentin ÖHM’s name is written in the margin of the family register of Heinrich Nuhn and Elisabeth Öhm. It seems reasonable to assume that he is Elisabeth’s father. Nothing further is mentioned about him.

Parents have not been identified.

932 – Johann Adam BIEBER was born to the Erbstatbesitzer (occupant of an inherited estate) Johann Bieber and his wife Margarethe Heydenreich on 30 November 1708 at Niederaula. He married Magdalena Zoll on 25 November 1727 in Niederaula. “He went to war”, and died about 1735 as his widow remarried on 15 June 1736.

Excursus: I posted a query on the Internet, asking what war would have been in progress, in which Johann Adam might have been required to serve. The answer (paraphrased): There was no ‘big’ war at that time in Germany. However the times were not peaceful so that some battles between the more than 200 German and neighboring states happened any day. The Landgraf of Hessen was renting out his army constantly to other parties. In the later 7-years war more than 20,000 soldiers fought as mercenaries beside the Prussian army... Mercenaries from Hesse fought for England in the American Revolutionary War against the British Crown. So your ancestor might have been one of the rental personnel and could have fought throughout Europe, in Turkey or even in the British overseas properties...In Hesse it was common for ‘volunteers’ to be recruited while they were stark drunk from free drinks. Their ruler, not the mercenaries themselves, collected the fees for their services.

* * *

Parents are Numbers 1864 and 1865.

933 – Magdalena ZOLL was born 10 April 1711 at Niederaula to Johann Barthol Zoll and his wife, Magdalena Giesel. She was confirmed there in 1725, married Johann Adam Bieber in 1727, and he died before she married Philipp Lückhardt on 15 June 1736; no children are mentioned for the latter marriage. The facts and dates stated in the Niederaula church records are difficult to interpret. Four sons were born to the couple between 1729 and 1732, including twins. All died in infancy except Johann Barthold, the heir. A daughter Magdalena was born in 1735, and died on 15 July 1736; evidently her father’s death was calculated as having occurred before that, although Magdalena, the mother, had remarried a month earlier, so he was certainly dead before she remarried. There is a chance that the daughter Magdalena’s birth entry would tell whether her father was dead before she was born, but I have only seen the family register.

Parents are Numbers 1866 and 1867.

936 – Leonhardt THAMER of Mengshausen is named when his son Johannes was confirmed there in 1712. If the Mengshausen church records could be studied, it is likely that
other information could be found.

Parents have not been identified.

938 – Georg ALBERT lived at Unterhuhn, Hessen, Germany, when his daughter Martha Elisabeth was born in 1705. His wife is not named in the birth record. More information, at least a death, might be found if time could be spent with the Unterhuhn church records.

Parents have not been identified.

944 – Johann Heinrich BÄTZ was born on 20 July 1678 at Niederaula, to Hans Betz and his wife Barbara Rode or perhaps Bode. He was confirmed in 1688, and married 20 March 1705 to Anna Katharine Both. He died 4 January 1740 at Niederaula and was buried there.

Siblings, surname Bätz
   Elisabeth born 1660
   Female, name unknown, born 1662
   Katharina born 1666
   Margarethe born 1670
   Maria, birth not found, confirmed 1685, married 1704
   [Johann Heinrich; Hans Heinrich on birth]
   Martin born 1680 confirmed 1694, died 1711, unmarried
   Perhaps another female
   Johannes born 1684, confirmed 1698, married 1711, died 1756
   Elisabeth born 1687, confirmed 1702

Parents are Numbers 1888 and 1889.

945 – Anna Katharina BOTH was born in 1683 at Solms, and confirmed there in 1695. She married Johann Heinrich Bätz in 1705. A notation in the margin of the Niederaula church record made me think for a while that her father was Johann Both, but I have come to believe that Johann was her brother. Another possible brother is Konrad Both, Schoolmaster at Solms, whose son Johann Konrad was born in 1711. No siblings list has been compiled because these are not proven. She died at Niederaula on 6 October 1760, and was buried there.

Parents have not been identified.

954 – Conrad REUTER’s biography is printed as Person Number 906 above.

955 – Anna Gela WEBERT’s biography is printed as Person Number 907 above.

956 – Johannes ZULAUF’s biography is printed as Person Number 908 above.
Illustration Number 616: Signature of Thomas Poindexter from a deposition in the case of Sneed vs. Poindexter in the Chancery Court of Louisa County, Virginia. Undated.

Illustration Number 618: From his consent for his daughter Elizabeth to marry Thomas Poindexter (II), dated 12 February 1760, Goochland County, Virginia.
ELEVENTH GENERATION

1200 — Robert EASLEY is believed to be the immigrant. A number of people have published genealogies on the Internet in which a French ancestry is given for Robert. Since his land was in the Manakin Town settlement in Virginia, it has been assumed for years that he was a Huguenot. There were other non-Huguenots owning land there, however, and since he arrived 26 years before the Huguenots who settled in Manakin town, it seems unlikely that he was a Huguenot (although some Easley descendants have joined the Huguenot Society on the strength of this claim). A book by James Daniel Easley repeats apparent family lore, which says that Robert came from a family of Swiss silk merchants named Islyn. No one is able to offer proof that he was either French or a Huguenot or from the Swiss Islyn family. Dr. DeMarce believes that he was born in England. For a time I believed that the name was Ösli, and Robert came from the German-speaking part of Switzerland. I based my theory on the fact that, unable to write his name, he signed not with the usual X, but with O. Lately an Oesley family—could they have Swiss roots?—has been found in England, with connection to a Benskin family, believed to be a branch of the family Robert married into. Robert was probably born about 1655-1659.

Dr. DeMarce has ruled out a number of theories relating him to other colonial families, often on the basis of errors in reading the handwriting in colonial records.

405 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 75.
A Land Patent Book in Henrico County, Virginia records that Capt. Wm. Bird was granted 1,280 acres on 17 October 1673, for the transporting of 122 persons, including “Robt. Estly”. If there weren’t so many other references connecting Robert Easley to William Byrd, the name’s spelling in the transporting document would present a worrisome question about whether he was the same person.

There are references to Robin Easely in The Secret Dairy of William Bryd of Westover 1709-1712 which Dr. DeMarce includes in her chapter about the immigrant, but could apply to the immigrant Robert’s son Robert, who was born about 1696:

12 May 1709—“When I came to Falling Creek I had some complaints against Robin Easely, which seemed to be the effect of quarrelling. However I desired Mr. G-r-I to keep a watch on him.”

2 Oct 1709—“...By the way I met Will Bass who gave me a sad account of Robin Easely, who is a lazy fellow.”

6 Oct 1711—Concerning military exercises “Robin Easely got the prize in wrestling.”

It makes perfect sense to me that a young Robert would have been called Robin, to distinguish him from his father. Since Robert the immigrant pronounced himself weak of body when he made his will on 17 December 1711, it seems unlikely to me that he had been able to win a wrestling prize two and a half months earlier, when he was already past 50 years old. Of course, it is possible that he won the wrestling prize, then suffered an illness that left him weak.

In Pioneers and Cavaliers, Vol. III, page 204, Thomas Jefferson, Thomas Turpin, John Artcher & Robert Eseley, are listed as having been granted 1,500 acres in Henrico County for the importation of 18 persons. Dr. DeMarce indicates that this seems to have been a posthumous grant to the immigrant, which may be the case; however, the grantee may have been Robert the immigrant’s son.

We get on very firm footing by 18th Xber [December] 1680 when Robert Easly signed his mark “O” as witness to a legal instrument assigning right of title to 200 acres of land from Henry Trent to John Pleasant, recorded in Henrico County, Virginia’s Colonial Records.

Although Dr. DeMarce writes that he married between 1678 and 1684, first documentation of his marriage known to me occurs at the October, 1684 Court in Henrico County, when Robert Easley, Plaintiff was granted judgment against Mrs. Katherine Milner, Administratrix of John Milner deceased, defendant, “for 189 lbs. tobacco and cask, due by account, etc.”

Dr. DeMarce quotes the Henrico County Records, Deeds and Wills 1677-1692, Part 2,

407 Katherine, maiden name unknown, comes into the family on the Pledge line as Person Number 2479, the wife of John Milner.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner

by Lila Niemann Garner

page 286, Inventory of Estate of John Milner:

"These particulars following belonging to ye orphs. of Will Parker decd. being included in ye above
Inventory & Appriz.of their Guard. John Milner’s Estate were upon ye peticon of Mrs. Kath. Milner
ye Admx. & proof thereof by her made Ordered to be sett apart for ye use of ye sd. Orphs & ye sd
Admx shall not be charge wth them as part of ye estate of ye sd deced. Viz: One feather bed &
furniture belonging to Mary Parker, one feather bed & furniture & Gun belonging to Will Parker &
two new pewter dishes, one Iron pot & one pewter tankard belonging to one of ye sd Parker’s orphs.
now wife to Robert Easley."

The late Will Parker, of course, was Easley’s father-in-law.

Throughout colonial Henrico County records, Robert appeared both as plaintiff and a
defendant in different suits, as a witness, a jury member, a member of a committee charged
with making estate inventories, a purchaser at an auction, and a grantee of land tracts,
aquired both by purchase and grant, although Dr. DeMarce found that not all the land he
left to his children in his will can be accounted for in the extant grantee records. On 1 June
1692, Robert Easley was presented to the Grand Jury, accused of swearing.

He and his wife were parents of at least six children, named in his will. If there were other
children they are unknown.

Robert Easley died between 17 December 1711/12 and January 1711/12. A transcription of
his will follows:

"In the name of God, amen, I, Robert Esley of the parish and county of Henrico, being weak of body
but of perfect mind and memory praise be to God, do make and ordain my last will and testament in
manner and form following: First, I recommend my soul to God that gave it, hoping through the
mercies of Jesus Christ to receive free pardon and forgiveness of all my sins, and as for my temporal
estate I dispose of it as follows:

"Item. I give and bequeath to my son John Esley and to my son Warham Esley and to my daughter
Margaret Dupray, wife of Thomas Dupray, 500 acres of land lying upon Fine Creek to be divided
among them as followeth: 200 acres to one to be taken off the upper ends, to each of the other two,
150 acres each which said land I give to them and their heirs forever, but in case any of them died
before age and without issue, then to return to the survivor or survivors.

"Item: I give and bequeath to my three younger children, Elizabeth Esley, William Esely and my
youngest son Robert Esely 400 acres of land lying betweem Fine Creek and Mannakin upper creek to
them and to their heirs forever, two of which said lots to be upon Fine Creek and the other upon
Mannakin Creek, but in case any of them die before they come of age and without issue, then to
return to the survivor or survivors.

"Item: I give and bequeath to my loving wife Ann Esely all moveables, goods and chattels
whatsoever, and make her whole executrix of this my last will and testament, and I do hereby
make void all former wills by me heretofore made.

"Witness my hand and seal this 17th day of December Anno Domini 1711."
Robert ‘O’ Easely (seal)

Signed sealed and delivered
in the presence of
Philip ‘X’ Martin
Jno. Green”

Robert was involved as plaintiff in a suit against Giles Webb, which was dismissed when the Henrico County Court sat in January 1711/12, because the plaintiff was dead. When the court sat in March 1711/12, “Anne easley”, as Executrix, presented Robert’s will for probate.

A number of people brought action against Ann Easley as Executrix of Robert’s will. Math. Branch, Thom. Harris, Thom. Howlett and Henry Gee appraised the inventory of Robert’s estate at 36 pounds, 15 shillings and 3 pence, regarding which Dr. DeMarce writes, “which by comparison seemed to be about the size of the average estate at the time – it certainly was not large enough to indicate wealth”. The inventory included 4 cows and 1 bull, 5 yearlings and 1 three-year-old steer, 1 breeding mare, 4 sows and 10 shoats, 4 ewes, 5 lambs, and 1 ram, flax, a harrow and howt, 1 cart and wheels, 1 plow, and old horse harness for two horses, flax, an old loom, two feather beds, pots, barrels, a saddle, etc.

A great deal of tobacco is mentioned in connection with the estate. We are led to believe that the production of tobacco was impossible without slave labor, yet Easley seems to have owned no slaves.

Claims against the estate: Robt. Blaws for two pounds ten shillings (twenty-five shillings actually due); Jno. Woodson for one pound fifteen shillings (eighteen shillings actually due); Jno. Woodson four pounds; Abraham Womack, administrator of Allanson Clarke’s estate, five pounds thirteen shillings; Joseph Pleasants, thirty four shillings and sixthpence (fourteen shillings and sixpence actually due); William Byrd four pounds, eighteen shillings and fivepence and five hundred and thirty pounds of tobacco; William Byrd, forty nine pounds three shillings and four pence sterling; William Byrd, twenty-four pounds of tobacco. Although Dr. DeMarce doesn’t mention finding a claim by John Bolling for twelve hundred and twenty nine pounds of tobacco, it does show up in the court orders for payment.

Payments ordered by the court: To Jno. Woodson, eighteen shillings with Costs; to Jno. Woodson, four pounds with Costs; to Abraham Womack administrator of the estate of Allanson Clarke deceased, five pounds thirteen shillings with costs; to Joseph Pleasants, fourteen shillings and sixpence with Costs; to William Byrd the remaining unadministered sum of fifteen pounds eight shillings and a penny to settle his claim of forty nine pounds three shillings and four pence; to John Bolling to settle his claim for twelve hundred and twenty nine pounds of tobacco, the one thousand pounds of tobacco remaining in her possession.

A jury found for the defendant Ann Easely Executrix, against William Byrd plaintiff, who sued on his claim for twenty four pounds eighteen shillings and nine pence and five hundred and thirty pounds of tobacco.
It is safe to assume that Robert Easley was buried in Henrico County, Virginia, but no burial details are known.

Parents have not been identified.

1201 – Ann PARKER was probably born in or near Henrico County, Virginia about 1658-1664. She married Robert Easley between 1678 and 1684 and bore him six known children.

Because there was an early genealogy given for Ann Parker which Dr. DeMarce found to be in error, it is especially important that her work be consulted to resolve any questions that remain. I believe her documentation and analysis are indisputable.

Ann’s father is unquestionably Will Parker; there is some doubt as to whether she is the child of his widow Katherine or an earlier wife. Dr. DeMarce found enough documents in the Henrico County records to prove that she was Will Parker’s orphan, not enough to prove or disprove her being Katherine’s child. My own opinion is that she was not Katherine’s child, and I formed this opinion long before I discovered that Katherine was an ancestor of Mary Jane Gamer on another line.

Katherine, whose maiden name is unknown, married in succession Will Parker, John Milner and James Babbicum. It is from court records created after the deaths of both Parker and Milner, that Dr. DeMarce found the evidence of Ann Parker’s parentage and her siblings or halfsiblings. From John Milner’s Henrico County, Virginia 1684 estate papers, Dr. DeMarce’s transcription (the copy that I made from microfilm was not entirely legible):

“These particulars following belonging to ye orphs. of Will Parker decd. being included in ye above Inventory & Apprisz. of their Guard. John Milner’s Estate were upon ye peticon of Mrs. Kath. Milner ye Admx. & proof thereof by her made Orderd to be sett apart for ye use of ye sd. Orphs & ye sd Admx shall not be charge wth them as part of ye estate of ye sd deced. Viz: One feather bed & furniture belonging to Mary Parker, one feather bed & furniture & Gun belonging to Will Parker & two new pewter dishes, one Iron pot & one pewter tankard belonging to one of ye sd Parker’s orphs. now wife to Robert Easly.”

Both Mary and William Parker and/or their children are mentioned in the wills of Katherine and James Babbicum, but Ann Easley is not. Dr. DeMarce believes that while of course, there may have been a family quarrel accounting for Ann being left out, research needs to be conducted into the possibility of an earlier marriage for Parker, and why Katherine Babbicum seems to have a daughter Mary (Parker) Burton as well as a daughter Mary (Milner) Childers.

Ann (Parker) Easley died between 12 April 1720 when she made her will and 6 June 1720, when it was presented to the Henrico County court for probate, and proved by the oaths of Thomas Cardwell and Susanna Howlett, two of the witnesses. A transcription of her will follows:

“In the name of God Amen. In the year of our Lord God 1702 [sic: 1720] I Ann Easley in the County

408 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 75.
of Henrico being vary sick in body, but of perfect mind and memory, thanks be given unto God. Therefore calling unto mind the mortality of my body and knowing it is appointed for all flesh once to died, i do make and ordain this my last will and testament, that is to say principally and first of all I given and recommend my soul unto the hand of God who gave it and for my body commend it to the earth.

“(Item) I give and bequeath to my son Robert Easley one feather bed and 1 rug and 1 pair of blankets and one parcell of sheets and two iron pots one large and one small one, and 1 pair of pothooks, to 4 pewter dishes, 1 new, and 6 plates 3 new and one putore, and 3 cows and calfs and 4 young sows and the young mare that is called his and bridle and sadall and the clothe that is to make his clothes, and one chest and the remainder part of my crop after my part of all rent is paid and the charge of the funeral is paid, and my son Warham to have my servant girl and the money to buy from my son Robert the same being 4 pounds in a store and fodermore it is my will that my son Robert should be bound to John White to larn his traid and to larn him to rite and rede.

“(Item) I give and bequeath to my son Warham Easly 1 iron Tpot;

“(Item) I give and bequeath to my son John Easly 5 shillings current;

“(Item) I give to my 2 daftors my wearing clothes to be equally divided.

“(Item) I give to my son William Easley all the remainder of my estate and son William to be my full and holey Executor of my Estate.

“For witness my hand and seal this 12 day of April.

“Ann ‘X’ Easley (seal)

“Thomas Cardwell
Sussanna Howlett
Ann ‘X’ Hickley”

One might infer that John had received what amounted to his inheritance before his mother’s death, and it was normal for girls not to receive much of an inheritance. Robert, who it seems was still living at home, received a considerable list of things plus orders to be bound out in order to learn a trade and learn to read and write; Warham received a slave; and William the remainder. The question arises in my mind, about whether there was so much dispute or so many hurt feelings about this situation that came down in the family lore to John’s grandson, Robert Easley (Person Number 150), that he was led to express in his own will his “…wish and desire that no disputes may arise between my children after my death…”

Ann was unquestionably buried in Henrico County, Virginia. No gravestone or other evidence of her burial place has been found.

_Siblings (or halfsiblings), surname Parker_
Mary Parker married a Mr. Burton; issue
William Parker

_Father is Number 2402._
1202 – Jeremiah BENSKIN’s parentage, birthplace and date are unknown. He is first found in the records of Henrico County, Virginia on 1 October 1690, when he deeded land to William Drury for a sum of tobacco, the exchange medium of the time, “...part of the 780 acres granted to me 20 April 1690, in said [Varina] parish, on James River near Powhite Creek on south side of said creek...” Perhaps he was in Henrico long before that, but any earlier land acquisitions seem not to have been found by Weisiger, whose Henrico County, Virginia Deeds 1677-1705 is the definitive research source.

Jeremiah is on the list of persons presented to the Henrico County Court in December, 1694, by the Grand Jury. His offense was “2 oaths” (others were charged with from one to 65 oaths, two were presented for being drunk, and a number for swearing).

He disposed of more tracts of land on 1 April 1697, and his wife Elizabeth relinquished her dower rights to one of them. Documentation of their marriage date and place has not been found by Dr. DeMarce409, who researched these Easley antecedents.

The problems surrounding the will of Jeremiah Benskin are so intricate that I am quoting several paragraphs from Dr. DeMarce:

“Jeremiah Benskin, father of Mary Benskin, died c. 1703 in Henrico Co., Va., leaving a will in which he named his wife Elizabeth, his daughter Mary, and mentioned his wife’s mother (unnamed)410. According to the date on it, the will of Jeremiah Benskin was already drawn in 1670 [dated 13 April 1670], which would mean his daughter Mary, named in it, was already born by then.

“See Weisiger, Colonial Wills of Henrico Co., VA., Vol. I, “Henrico County Wills & Deeds 1697-1704,” p. 325. Will of Jeremiah Benskin of Varina Parish, planter Estate to be divided into two equal parts; ½ to wife Elizabeth, and ½ to daughter Mary Benskin. Wife to see to daughter’s portion until she is of age. Wife to be sole executrix. Dated April 13, 1670. Wit: John Goode, Ann Higgledey, Sam Bridgewater. Recorded June 1, 1703.

“NOTE: This Ann ‘Higgledey’ may well have been the Ann Higley/Hickley who in 1720 would witness the will of Ann (Parker) Easley.

“Others have suggested that it was possibly misdated for 1690, since a daughter born before 1670 would have been of age at her father’s death, while the orphan of Jeremiah Benskin is noted in the Warner edition of the Henrico County, Virginia, Orphans’ Court Book on p. 93, Aug. 20, 1705; p. 94-95, Aug 20, 1706, and p. 98, Aug 20, 1707, as being under the guardianship of Capt. John Bolling. If the will was not misdated, it is possible that a daughter named Mary who was alive in 1670 had died in the interval and Jeremiah had named a younger child for her.

409 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 75.
410 I believe this is a misreading of the will. Apparently the words “I Leave ...Disposall and Tutilage of my S[d] Daughter unto Elisabeth my wife her mother...” is what leads Dr. DeMarce and others to believe that Elizabeth Benskin’s mother is mentioned in the will. If the will had read, “I Leave ...Disposall and Tutilage of my S[d] Daughter unto Elisabeth my wife (her mother)...” it would have been more clear. At least we know for sure that Elizabeth is Mary’s mother, as opposed to being the daughter of an earlier wife of Jeremiah.
"However, this compiler [i.e., Dr. DeMarce] suggests a more simple solution lying in the simple transposition of numbers: that instead of April 13, 1670, the copyist should have written April 16, 1703. That date would make perfect sense in the context of all the other documents.\textsuperscript{411}

I have transcribed the will below (some words illegible):

"In the Name of God amen I Jeremiah Benskin of the parish of varina in the county of Henrico planter being very sick and weak of body and _____ by _____ and brought to Remembrance of the [previous 2 words written above the line] fragility and uncertainty of the Corporall [Temporal?] life and being of sound and perfect minde [?] and memory praise be to God therefor, do make and ordain this my last will and Testament in manner and form following

"First I Render [Tender?] my soul to Almighty god which created it in hope of his [compassion?] by the merits passion and intersession of his Son my Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ and my body to ye Earth to be decently Interred in the manner my hereafter named Executrix shall think fitt.

"Item As to the Disposall of the worldly goods which was provided of almighty God and I possess my will and desire is that it be divided into two Equall parts and after my death and funerall charges are discharged or deducted I give and bequeath the one moiety or half of all my goods and Chattel unto my beloved wife Elizabeth and this and the other half or moiety of all my goods and Chattles, unto my daughter Mary Benskin.

"Item I will and ordaine that all the horses Cattle Sheepe or other Creatures subject to mortality which fall to the part or portion of my Sd Daughter shall as soon as conveniently may be after my decease be Exposed to Saile by outcry or otherwise and account of the provender or produce [two or more words obliterated here] thereof to be given into Henrico County Court to be th _____ d and put upon the Bonds as is Customary in behalf of [minors].

"Item I Leave the government Dispossall and Tutillage of my Sd Daughter unto Elizabeth my wife her mother and also her portion of my goods She giving just Security for the Bond as is usuall in Like Case untill my said Daughter shall be of age or marries I also make and ordaine my said wife Elizabeth Benskin my whole and sole Executrix of this my Testam. In testimony of Confirmation whereof I have hereunto set my hand this thirteenth day of Aprill An: 1670.

"Signed and acknowledged in presence of

John Goode
Ann ‘A’ Higgledy
her mark
Sam. Bridgwater

The Henrico County records contain an account of the goods belonging to the estate of ‘Jeremy” Benskin, which were sold at outcry (auction) 20 July 1704. The list is not long:

\textsuperscript{411} On 21 Apr 1690 Jeremiah Benskin purchased land in Henrico County, Virginia located on the upper James River just north of present day Petersburg and about 15 miles south of Richmond. This seems to reinforce Dr. DeMarce’s opinion that the clerk copying the will into the court minutes transposed the numbers. It seems not at all logical that after he was already “very sick and weak in body” on 13 April 1670, he would be buying land 20 years later, then live for an additional thirteen years.

\textsuperscript{412} It is not known whether he was too weak to write his name or whether he was illiterate, but Weisiger seems to indicate that he also signed his mark to at least one land document. His mark as copied into the court minutes as the ‘signature’ to his will looks like a ‘B’ but it is facing down, and has a tail like a P. To create a facsimile, draw a straight horizontal line, divide it into thirds, and draw a hump on each of the left and center portions, leaving the right one-third trailing. After the so-called ‘B’, there is another mark something like this: |—|—|...
approximately the first half is illegible on the copy I made from a microfilm which is labeled “best available copy”. The entry just above the first one of which I am certain may be a horse:

"... 
1 Mare
5 Setts ??
2 Silver spoons 1 Do small box
4 Bar Corn
4 Ditto
Mr. _____ note"

The total came to £34, 5 shillings and 10 pence. A list of goods of the above said Estate unsold include, in addition to some money due

"2 featherbeds
5 ould Sows
1 Choat [shoat?]"

The grand total seems to be £49 plus some change, but I can’t decipher the division between shillings and pence.

Dr. DeMarce goes on to mention that Jeremiah Benskin received a posthumous land patent in Manakin Town in 1704 (at the same time as Robert Esley’s grant), and that Jeremiah Benskin’s widow Elizabeth is likely the Elizabeth Benskin who married Robert Williams on 12 Oct 1703 in Henrico.

If the latter supposition is true, it is puzzling to me that Capt. John Bolling had charge of Mary Benskin’s property by 20 August 1705, when Jeremiah had appointed his wife to see to the daughter’s portion during her minority. It seems probable that Elizabeth did marry Williams and she died before Bolling took charge, but it is rather surprising that it was Bolling and not Williams who was appointed. There is a Henry Benskin mentioned in the records, and this Elizabeth may have been his daughter or widow. This possible connection needs further research, but in any case, I believe that Elizabeth, the widow of Jeremiah Benskin, was dead before Bolling took charge of Mary Benskin’s property, which was already in his hands by 20 August 1705.

There are some unintelligible (to me) orders in the will that seem to say that the Henrico County Court is to have charge of the money realized from the sale of Mary’s portion of the livestock, and it is possible that the court appointed Bolling as a sort of trustee of those funds, that being the only way he was associated with the family.

If Jeremiah had any siblings, they have not been found. A Henry Benksin can be found in Henrico at the same time as Jeremiah; he is mentioned in the 1691 will of his father, frfrancis Benskin “of the parish of St. Martin in the fields in the County of Middlesex” (England), as being “of Virginia”. frfrancis Benskin’s father was John Bensky, a London vintner whose second wife (not frfrancis’ mother) was Katherine Oesley. Since Jeremiah is not mentioned in the will, it seems clear that he is not frfrancis’ son. Researcher Dr. Kevin Easley believes
that Robert Easley, whose son John Easley married Jeremiah Benskin’s daughter Mary, may have been connected to the English Oesley family of which Katherine is a part. Dr. Easley’s records show that Henry Benskin left two daughters in Virginia when he returned to England to claim his inheritance: Mary Benskin, who married William Harman, and Frances Benskin, who married William Marston. These are probably the Benskin women found by Dr. DeMarce, who states that some Benskin women’s marriages are documented in early Virginia records.

Dr. Easley writes,

“I know that a different Henry Benskin came to the Virginia colony much earlier, and I have often wondered if he was the father of Jeremiah. Perhaps the earlier Henry Benskin (whose history and ultimate fate I do not know) was a brother to John Benskyn the London vintner, for example? So far, though, I have been able to prove no connections at all.”

Parents have not been identified.

1203 — Elizabeth _______ was the wife of Jeremiah Benskin. Her life story is so entangled with that of her husband, q.v., that they cannot be separated. Her birthplace is unknown. She probably married Benskin in the late 1680’s for their daughter must have remained a minor when she married, so that her husband petitioned for her property on 10 August 1711.

It is fairly certain that Elizabeth married one Robert Williams after Benskin died.

One can infer from the fact that, while Elizabeth was to see to her daughter’s portion but John Bolling had charge at the time of Mary’s marriage, Elizabeth must have been dead, incompetent, or otherwise unable to serve, unless Bolling only had charge of the monies realized from the sale of Mary’s portion of the livestock.

Parents have not been identified.

1232 — Thomas POINDEXTER was probably born between 1665 and 1670, probably on the Channel Isle of Jersey.

There is family tradition of long standing that Thomas was born at Middle Plantation, New Kent County, Virginia, and that his father was George Poindexter, but there is simply no proof. Indeed, the dates do not work. When George Poindexter’s wife Susanna arrived in Virginia in 1673, she had with her “three children born beyond the seas”. Their names are given in the family tradition as John, Elizabeth and George, Jr. A son born to the couple after her arrival, say in 1674, would simply have been too young to marry in 1691.

Family papers often give 1675 as a firm birth date for Thomas, because it has been thought that he was conceived after his mother’s [i.e. George’s wife’s] arrival in the new world. This calculation was evidently made before firm evidence of his 1691 marriage date was found.
The Early Poindexters in America Research Committee (EPARC), in 2002 chaired by Edward Haviland Poindexter, Ph.D., has found no evidence that George Poindexter is Thomas’ father. They have come to believe that he may be a son of Jacob Poingdestre of Jersey. Jacob, brother of George the immigrant, did have a son Thomas who does not seem to be accounted for on Jersey, though his siblings were recorded recipients of George’s properties there. (Could this mean Jacob’s, instead of George’s, properties there?)

If Thomas the son of Jacob is ours, he was born on Jersey and likely immigrated to Virginia as a young man, perhaps stopping in England or elsewhere on the way.

The EPARC is studying old documents and will probably make some conclusions in the future. These research results should be sought. The Committee must do without the civil records of James City and New Kent Counties, which along with most Hanover County records, were destroyed during the Civil War. This makes their work more difficult and may result in an inability to draw absolute conclusions.

Thomas seems to have gone to New Kent County, where George Poindexter had built a country home later to be called Christ’s Cross; its name was corrupted and it was called Criss Cross Farm⁴¹³.

Thomas married Sarah, the daughter of David Crawford (otherwise Crafford) in 1691 in New Kent County, Virginia. The couple had two known children, Thomas and John, and perhaps more.

According to Virginia Laws (otherwise referred to as Hening Statutes) David deeded 500 acres of land to his daughter Sarah on 21 May 1691, presumably the time of her marriage to Thomas Poindexter.

A suit in Chancery Court in Louisa County, Virginia in 1767 further verifies the fact that Sarah was the daughter of David Crawford.

Thomas Poindexter died before 1707 in Hanover County, Virginia, after which his widow remarried and had more children.

He is likely buried in Hanover County, but his gravesite is unknown.

Unproven parentage is explored above.

1233 – Sarah CRAWFORD was born 12 May 1666 in Amherst County, Virginia to David Crawford and his wife, whose name may have been Jane.

⁴¹³ This home still stands; Harden DeV. Pratt, III wrote an article about it called The Restoration of Christ’s Cross, New Kent County, Virginia which might be sought out. While I have among my papers a copy of the article, the name of the publication where it appeared is not included. The house had deteriorated seriously before restoration was undertaken; and since so many additions had been made and it truly belonged to no one architectural style, original construction of each period was retained where possible. Restoration to its original Seventeenth-Century condition was not attempted.
She married Thomas Poindexter about the time her father deeded land to her on 21 May 1691. The couple had at least two children, perhaps more.

Two entries in Virginia Laws (otherwise known as Hening Statutes) concern Sarah and entailed possessions given to her by her father; the two abstracts below were found in Family Puzzlers Number 1457 and Number 1462 respectively.

**Virginia Laws 1723:**

"William Merriwether, Gentleman. DAVID CRAFFORD, Gentleman, deceased, of New Kent Co., owned 500 acres in St. Peter’s Parish, formerly in New Kent Co., but now in Hanover Co. By deed on 5-21-1691, ‘for natural love and affection which he had and bore to his daughter SARAH BRECHIN, widow’ Crafford gave the land to her. Sarah was ‘reduced to extreme poverty and want’ and had no Negroes to work this land. [Of course, in 1691, she was not ‘Sarah Brechin’, widow, but she was Sarah Brechin, widow by 1723 when the law was made allowing the entail to be modified and land exchanged for slaves.]"

"Sarah wanted to sell 200 acres of the land to WILLIAM MERIWETHER [sic] Gentleman of New Kent Co., in exchange for 5 slaves ‘of greater value’ and JOHN POINDEXTER, her eldest son and heir agreed. Because the remaining 300 acres, worked by the 5 slaves may be ‘sufficient for the maintenance and support of the said Sarah and her children’, the swap was allowed.

"The 200 acres on Pamunkey River, Hanover Co., running from the mouth of Herring Gut, to the river, must be marked and transferred to William Meriwether. Slaves Jack (18), Jenny (20), Sarah (20), Nanny (16), and Bess (16) would be vested in Sarah and her children."

**Virginia Laws 1732:**

"William Merriwether. DAVID CRAFFORD, of St. Peter’s Parish, New Kent Co., deceased, owned a neck of land in the parish, now cut into St. Paul Parish, Hanover, Co., containing 500 ac. ‘By his certain DEED POLL’ 21 May 1691, for ‘natural love and affection he bore his daughter Sarah’ gave her the land. After David’s death, Sarah occupied the land, married Thomas Poindexter, who had died, leaving a son JOHN POINDEXTER. Sarah m. 2nd JAMES BRICKEN [sic], now deceased.

"Sarah Crafford Poindexter Bricken by ‘her certain Deed poll’ 5 Nov. 1731, sold the neck of land, and her claims to her son John. John has sold his interest to William Meriwether, Gentleman of Hanover Co., in exchange for 10 negro slaves.

"John Poindexter had an 850 acre tract on Elk Creek, Hanover co., on which he proposed to use the 10 slaves, in lieu of the entailed land. Approved.”

Widowed before 1707, she married the Rev. James Brechin, an Anglican minister, with whom she had more children. I’m not sure which of her daughters were from her marriage to Poindexter and which were from her marriage to Brechin, who in effect frittered away the

---

4th An entail is literally a method of ruling from the grave, as the court had to approve any change made to ownership. The entail is no longer legal in this country. It did in some cases protect a woman if she married a man who would gain possession of her inheritance by marriage to her, then dispose of it without her consent.
family fortune so that she was poverty stricken in later life. She was so poor that she preferred (or was compelled) to live with her sister, Mrs. Merriwether. This all came out in a lawsuit in Louisa County, Virginia in 1767; I have seen the papers myself and can vouch for the fact that they exist and their purported contents are true, but photocopying all of them was not feasible.

A deposition by Sarah’s sister Elizabeth Merriwether, said to be 78 years old on its date of 9 August 1753, gives a little insight into Sarah’s character. Elizabeth, who signed with her mark,

“...Said that Sarah, told him the Negroes in dispute were entailed, she [Sarah] ‘answered that she would show them a trick for that, for one of the men was named Dick when he was brought Home but afterwards was called Lender so that he was hers for they might find Dick in the entail but no Lender’...”.

Sarah died in 1753 in Louisa County, Virginia. My transcription of her will, found in Louisa County, Virginia Will book 1, pages 27 and 28, follows:

“In the name of God Amen I Sarah Brechin of the County of Louisa being Sick and weak in body but of perfect Sence and memory blessed be the Almighty God for it, and considering the uncertainty of Life and that it is appointed once for all to Dy I do constitute and Ordain this my Last Will and Testament revoking and disannulling all and Every other Will and Wills whatsoever here before made by me, and I Do Declare this only to be my Last Will and Testament in manner and form following IMPRIMIS. first and [principally I give my Soul into the hands of Almighty God that gave [part of page torn off] [illegible words] through the Meritorious Death and Passion [illegible words] Redeemer Jesus Christ to Receive free Pardon and Remission of all my Sins, Secondly I commit my body to the

[page 28; transcription is line by line because the far right-hand side of the page is missing]

“Ground to be Buried in a Christian Decent manner acc[illegible] of my friends, and as to what estate it hath pleased the Almighty me with, be the same raial or personal, or in what nature [illegible] [illegible] Give and bequeath in manner and form following It I Bequeath my five negros By name Gonder Dina, Du [illegible] to be equally Devided between my Nine Children John Poindexter, Thomas Poindexter, William Brechin Susana Snead, Elisabeth Shrewsberry, Sarah [illegible] Rutherford and Gean Irland to them and their heirs for ever and further Give and bequeath to my aforesaid Heirs[?] all my hole and Sole right and Title to all the negros that property in which was of my father’s Estate Descending to me

413 I suspect that I may have misread the date on this, or it may possibly be misdated; the lawsuit didn’t commence that early, as far as I know. The Virginia State Library in Richmond has custody of the papers, but they are owned by Louisa County. They have not been microfilmed, presumably because Louisa County officials have not given their permission, and the State Library is not able to do anything with them except keep them safe. They are in serious need of paper conservation, having been repaired with transparent tape before archival adhesives were available to the persons making the repairs.
416 Could this be the “Lender” mentioned above, who was previously called “Dick”?
to them and their heirs and assigns for ever, that is to say [illegible]
Desire is that my Loving Daughter Susana Snead shall
Young negro to her Self before this Devision made and of
Rest to be equally devided amongst them all ITEM I Give
William Brechin my bed and furniture ITEM my Will
that all my Wairing Clothes shall be Equly Devided amongst
Daughters Lastly I Do appoint my son Thomas Poindexter
[illegible] John Snead hole and Sole Executors of this my Last W
ent In Witness hereof I have hereunto Set my and and
Day of June in the year of our Lord Chirst One thousand Seven
Fifty [illegible] her
Charles Carroll [or perhaps Parrot] his mark Sarah S Brec
[illegible] mark
Samuel Goss [?]

"At a Court held for Louisa County on Tuesday[417] this XXIII
March MDCLIII [1753]
This Will was this Day Proved in open Court by the Oath of Charle
of the Witnesses thereto, & by the Court admitted to Record a
"Test
[illegible signature of Court Clerk]"

No burial information is available, but she is surely buried in Louisa County, Virginia.

Siblings, surname Crawford; birth order uncertain
Sarah
Elizabeth, married Nicholas Meriwether[418]; issue
Judith, married Robert Lewis; issue
Angelina, married William McGuire
David, Jr. (Capt.), married Elizabeth Smith; issue
John, died young

Father is Number 2466.

1236 — John PLEDGE, Jr. was born about 1675 in Virginia, according to Mrs. Haden[419],
who collects data about this family and has graciously supplied me with much of the

[417] I believe that “XXIII” is incomplete, and should read XXVII; my sense is that the first two characters
that seem to be i’s are really a double-dotted ‘v’ missing its lower part, and two additional i’s on the right-
hand side of the page are missing entirely. A Tuesday in March, 1753 would have to be either the 20th or
the 27th, and the 27th seems to be correct.
[418] The explorer Meriwether Lewis of Lewis and Clark’s 1803 Voyage of Discovery is descended from
Elizabeth and Nicholas Meriwether as well as from Judith and Robert Lewis. Thomas and Robert Garner
are third cousins 7 times removed and fourth cousins 6 times removed to Meriwether Lewis. The two
ways they are related occur because Meriwether’s parents were cousins once removed to each other.
Lewis died under suspicious circumstances in what is now Lewis County, Tennessee, and one Thomas
Runyan (no relationship to the Runyan family of this compilation implied), was accused of his murder
some years after the crime. Evidence was based on a moccasin print and nothing came of the accusation.
[419] See footnote to the biography of Person Number 309.
information related here.

He married Dorothy, whose maiden name is not known, about 1696. ‘Dorothy’ is a name found in the Pleasant (the name is often written ‘Pleasants’) family, neighbors to the Pledges; if Dorothy’s maiden name was Pleasant, proof can’t be found\(^\text{420}\). The marriage date is an estimate based upon the children’s births; the birth dates, however, are also estimates. Their birth order is unknown; the order of the girls’ births is roughly that stated in John’s will, but where the boys fit in is impossible to guess.

Mrs. Haden found a definitive deed in Henrico County, Virginia, recorded on 1 September 1709, in which John Pledge sold to Nicholas Perkins, Sr., land in Henrico Parish on the north side of the James River, up Four Mile Creek, adjacent to the said Perkins and to John Cannon. The record reveals that “…50 acres descended to me as heir of my father John Pledge, dec’d, and another 50 acres was purchased of sd. Cannon”. Dorothy, wife of John Pledge, relinquished her dower rights. It is this document that proves the link to his father.

Another land transaction is recorded on 6 June 1715:

> "Joseph Pleasants, Henrico Parish & county, Gentleman, to John Pledge of same, planter for 30£, 300 acres north side James River; adj. John Redford’s line, part of patent granted to Pleasants on 13 Nov 1713."

I ordered the film in which John Pledge’s will should appear, but it was so light that I was unable to read it. In any case, the Wills were written into a book by a clerk, and ‘signatures’ were not actually written by those who signed.

Mrs. Haden writes, “John Pledge wrote his Will 22 November 1720”, and abstracts,

> “Items to daughters Agnes Pledge, Martha Pledge, Judith Pledge, Ann Pledge, and Mary now wife of John Johnson. Also daughter Tabitha Pledge. Wife to give what she can spare to my two grandchildren born of my daughter Elizabeth Straing, dec’d, now living with me. To son-in-law John Johnson, 100 acres off the upper side of land where I live in consideration of looking after my son John Pledge for life. The rest of my land, 200 acres, to my son William Pledge, but wife to enjoy plantation for her life. All the rest to my wife, who is to be executrix. Wit: Mary Hutchens, Hester Childers, Tabitha Childers, Joseph Pleasants. Recorded 6 Mar 1721.”

On 6 March 1721, Dorothy Pledge presented the will of John Pledge, and it was proved by the oath of Hester Childers and the affirmation of Joseph Pleasants, a Quaker. Dorothy refused to be Executrix, and was granted administration with John Redford and Joseph Pleasants. Amos Lead and James Nowlin furnished Security, and Thomas Wadly and Roger Carol were appointed to appraise the estate. On the petition of Dorothy Pledge, so much of her husband’s will as applied to her was declared null and void.

Dorothy presented the inventory of John’s estate on 3 July 1721.

\(^{420}\) The Pleasants were Quakers, and no Dorothy Pleasant of the correct age can be found in the definitive research source, William Wade Hinshaw’s *Encyclopedia of American Quaker Genealogy*.
Mrs. Haden writes,

"It isn’t particularly surprising that a woman of this time period would refuse to be the sole executor; most were illiterate and Dorothy did sign with her mark. She may have very well felt unequal to the task alone. John Redford and Joseph Pleasants were neighbors and no doubt trusted friends. The fact that she refused the bequests of her husband’s will has been cited as perhaps because she was of Indian descent and was afraid her property could be seized. I disagree with this interpretation. A widow was entitled under the law to refuse the husband’s will. If she agreed to the provisions and bequests of the will, she was also responsible for any debts of the estate. If she refused the will, she was still entitled to her 1/3 dower under the law and that dower was distributed before any debts were deducted from the estate. It’s possible for the widow to be better off by refusing a seemingly generous will.

Siblings, surname Pledge
   None known

Father is Number 2472.

1237 – Dorothy is the wife of John Pledge, as named in a 1709 dower relinquishment and in his will. She was probably born about 1676, and her maiden name is unknown.

She married John Pledge about 1696, and they had at least 2 sons and 7 daughters.

Dorothy was not literate. When she witnessed the will of Thomas Carter on 2 November 1726 (recorded in Goochland County 21 June 1738), she signed with her mark.

Mrs. Haden has explained (in John Pledge’s biography) possible reasons for her refusal of the bequests made to her in her husband’s will.

She died in 1733, and her son William administrated her estate.

I ordered the film which should have contained her estate papers, but it was poor quality and I was unable to find them. I was able to read enough of the film, however, to ascertain that Wills were written into a book by a clerk, and the ‘signatures’ were copied by the clerk as well.

She is doubtless buried somewhere in Henrico County, but no information is available.

Parents have not been identified.
1238 – John REDFORD, Sr. was born about 1674 to Francis Redford and his wife, Anne née Lawrence, in Virginia, probably in Henrico County.

John is named among those persons presented to the Henrico County Court in December, 1694, by the Grand Jury. His offense was “one oath” (others were charged with from one to 65 oaths, two were presented for being drunk, and a number for swearing).

He married Martha Milner on 20 May 1698 according to Mrs. Haden. The couple had at least six and perhaps more children.

(It should be noted here that while John Redford, Sr. is the subject of this biography, his son John, Jr. is not a direct-line ancestor and is only mentioned as his sister Ann’s brother. There is some question about whether Agnes, wife of Joseph Bondurant is the daughter of John, Sr., or John, Jr.; and whether Elizabeth Maxey, daughter of Susannah Maxey is married to a Redford son [name not found] of John, Sr. or John, Jr. An in-depth study of land ownership and legal descriptions might provide the answers.)

John’s name appears frequently in land records, because ‘metes and bounds’ were the standard legal land descriptions at that time and place; and each time there was a change of ownership of land bordering his, John’s land (thus his name) is given as one of the boundary definitions. The Henrico County land lay in the part of the county that was cut off from Henrico in 1727 and became Goochland County. Some land transactions found in the record occurred in 1702, 1725, 1735, 1752 and 1745, some of these having to do with John’s own buying and selling.

John witnessed a deed in Goochland County 18 March 1739.

John Redford’s will is dated 5 March 1752 and was proved in October, so he died in the interim.

I ordered the Goochland County, Virginia film on which the will should be found, but the film was so light that I could not read it.

He is likely buried near his home, but no grave site has been identified.

Half-sibling, surname Moody, from his mother’s marriage to Thomas Moody
  Samuel, married; issue
Siblings, surname Redford
  [John]
  Francis, died before his father’s will was probated in 1694

Father is Number 2476.

1239 – Martha MILNER was born before 1684 to John Milner and his wife Katherine in
Henrico County, Virginia.

She married John Redford in 1698 and bore him six known children and perhaps more (see his biography).

Comstock\textsuperscript{423} states that Martha (Milner) Redford died in 1752. No burial information has been found.

Stepsiblings, surname **Parker**
- Anne (Person Number 1201 in this book), married Robert Easley (Person Number 1200); issue
- Mary, married a Mr. Burton

Halfsibling, surname **Parker**, from her mother’s marriage to Will Parker
- William Parker

Siblings, surname **Milner**
- Elizabeth
- Mary, married a Mr. Childers
  - [Martha]

Parents are Numbers 2478 and 2479.

\textbf{1424} — Peter Gunnarson RAMBO has been researched in depth by both CDR Rambo\textsuperscript{424} and Dr. Craig.\textsuperscript{425} It is from their writings that I have gleaned the facts in Peter’s biography that follows, but their writings should be consulted for further interesting facts, their sources, and illustrations. All or almost all of the Rambos in North America are descended from the four sons of Peter and his wife Britta; in addition, two of their daughters lived to marry and have children.

From two sources we glean the fact that Peter was born in 1612: He was 27 years old and a laborer when he sailed in 1639-40 on the Dutch ship *Kalmar Nyckel*’s second voyage to the Swedish settlement in North America. Dr. Craig found, among the Amadus Johnson Papers deposited at the Balch Institute in Philadelphia, notes copied by the Rev. Nicholas Collin from the now-lost Gloria Dei church records, translated from the Swedish:

\begin{quote}
"Born in Sweden Peter Rambo of Hisingen, 85 years and almost 8 months old. Buried Jan.1698. Married 7 April 1647-12 Oct 1693 [the latter date is that of his wife’s death]. Had with Brita Matsdotter 4 sons and three daughters."
\end{quote}

\textbf{Dr. Craig:}

\begin{quote}
"Hisingen is an island off the west coast of Sweden. A section of it is today a part of the city of
\end{quote}

\textsuperscript{423} COMSTOCK-HAGGARD AND ALLIED FAMILIES, compiled by Mary Jane Comstock, Adams Press, Chicago, 1973. Much of this book is unsourced, and her information may have come from Dorothy Knox Brown’s book about the Poindexters, another book that is unsourced.

\textsuperscript{424} See the first footnote to the biography of Person Number 89.

\textsuperscript{425} See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 89.
Goteborg [Gothenburg]. On Hisingen is a bluff overlooking the Gota River named Ramberget. This fact and the discovery by Dr. Craig of the Collin note lend credence to the statement by Peter Rambo's grandson, Jacob Bengtsson that his grandfather was first called Peter Gunnarson Ramberg, but later changed it to Rambo.

Dr. Craig found evidence in one of the many sources he cited in *The 1693 Census of the Swedes on the Delaware* that, "Employed initially as a farm hand at ten guilders per month, Peter sent part of his wages home to his father, Gunnar Petersson." From this statement and the Swedish patronymic naming custom, we know that Peter was the name of Peter's father's father.

The Swedes settled in North America at the place where Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, is now situated. Peter's father was Gunnar, but nothing further is known about his ancestry. Ramberget is translated 'raven's mountain', and he apparently took his name from that place. 'Bo' in Swedish, means home or dwelling; it is not known whether he purposely changed from 'Ramberg' to 'Rambo', or if his name was so consistently misunderstood that he stopped trying to correct it.

Peter evidently prepared for the voyage, probably with the intention of remaining in the new world. The voyage itself was unpleasant. The ship sailed in September, 1639, but sprang a leak and had to return to port for repairs. It finally got underway on 7 February 1640, and after encountering, according to CDR Rambo, "severe storms that were great hardships for the people and cattle aboard" landed at the 'wharf of the stones', approximately the present location of Wilmington, Delaware, on 7 April 1640.

The new settlers first bought land from the Indians. CDR Rambo states that the deed was written in Dutch and signed by the Swedes and by the Indian Sachems who attached their totem. These Indians were from the Algonquin nation: the Delawares who sold land, maize, venison and fish to the settlers; and the Minquas, who traded beaver skins and called themselves the special friends and protectors of the Swedes.

Trade was the goal of the settlement, but the men planted vegetable gardens, grain (Peter had brought seeds from Sweden) and tobacco. Governor Printz arrived in 1643, and ruled the colony with an iron fist.

Dr. Craig writes,

"After becoming a freeman, Peter married Brita Matsdotter from Vasa, Finland, on April 7, 1647. Initially they lived in Kingsessing, but moved by 1669 to Passyunk on the northeast side of the Schuylkill."

The Kingsessing plantation lay near Cobbs Creek, and is now located in the west part of Philadelphia. In 1648, Peter's name was on a list of freemen, those who had fulfilled their obligations to the company founding the Swedish settlement.

In 1652, the colony suffered as a result of heavy rains, but Peter must have stored some grain and was able to sell the excess to the English; he was charged for this illegal sale by
Governor Printz. Twenty-two of the settlers, including Peter, signed a document in 1653 lodging eleven complaints against the governor; they charged among other things that their lives and property were not safe from dangers, that Printz imposed his will over that of the jury, prohibited settlers from trading with Christians or the savages, forbade the colonists from grinding their own grain at the mill, and withheld the use of rivers, woods and land needed for their sustenance. Printz regarded this as a revolt, and the leader, Anders Jonsson, was arrested, tried for treachery, convicted and executed.

CDR Rambo writes,

"On 30 August 1655, he [Peter] volunteered to proceed south by canoe to help defend New Sweden against the Dutch invasion. It is not known that he did go south, for on 7 September 1655 he was a member of the group of Swedes who met with Governor Peter Stuyvesant. On the 16th of September, he was present at a Council meeting where they agreed not to return New Sweden to Governor Rising."

Peter served almost continuously as a magistrate of the court from his election in 1658 until 1680 when he stepped down. In 1661, he petitioned Governor Stuyvesant to be discharged as a magistrate, claiming he “has to take care of a very large family and therefore cannot well, unless to his great disadvantage, spare the time to attend to the aforesaid office”. Although his resignation was accepted, he was again appointed in 1664. Some court sessions were conducted at the Rambo home, and he was reimbursed for entertaining the governor and other high-ranking officials.

Peter served, along with his son Peter’s future father-in-law Sven Skute, on Governor Rising’s ‘Council’; he continued on the Council during the Dutch rule from 1655 to 1664, and when the English assumed control from 1664 to 1680.

Throughout his lifetime, Peter testified in court about land and other disputes. In 1684, Peter Rambo, Peter Cock and Hance Monson gave testimony in a deposition of “Certain Ancient Sweeds Living on the West side of Delaware” regarding the establishment of New Sweden and its land acquisition:

"...In the year 1639. 10th March one of the abovesaid shipps returned with Peter Holland [Peter Holland Ridder] deputy Governour for the Sweeds, Peter Rambo426, Andrees Bown [Andreas Boon] & severall other Sweeds, who bought Land from an Indian king Named Kekesikkun from the abovenamed distance of a Cannon bullet shott as far as over against Mekaquatshoe eight miles above Burlington."

CDR Rambo relates that in the same document, they told of being sent by Governor Printz in 1651 to Colonel Lloyd, Lord Baltimore’s deputy in Severn (now Annapolis), Maryland. They were treated kindly during a stay of nine days, and were given a letter assuring Governor Printz that there was no claim on the Swedish settlements and lands.

Probably in consequence of his long years of trading with the Indians, Peter learned

426 There is a discrepancy here. Someone remembered the date wrong, but which date is actually correct is a matter of opinion.
enough of their language to be able to serve as an interpreter.

Peter acquired a large amount of land during his lifetime; CDR Rambo includes in her book a map, from about 1681, of the area; three separate Rambo tracts are shown. He surely planted the apple seeds that family lore says he brought along from Sweden, because a Rambo apple continues to be grown in the United States. CDR Rambo quotes an advertisement found in a nursery catalog:

“The Rambo has pale greenish yellow mottled skin with red strips. The flesh is firm, fine, tender and whitish. It is a subacid apple that begins ripening in early July here in Georgia. It is one of the very best for Jelly, pies and dried fruit. It dates back to the late 1500.”

Peter was one of the founders and was a longtime vestryman of one of the first Swedish Lutheran churches in America, at Wicaco. The church was known to be a log structure in the 1660s. Gloria Dei Church, its cornerstone laid in 1697, is at the site of the old log Wicaco church south of Penn’s Landing in Philadelphia.

In 1986, Dr. Richard Hulan received a copy of a letter written by Peter to his sister in 1693, when he was 81 years old. The original has been preserved in the Royal Archives in Stockholm. Dr. Hulan and Peter Craig translated the letter, and gave CDR Rambo permission to print it in her book. I sent a self-addressed, stamped envelope to Dr. Hulan’s address that is included with the letter in CDR Rambo’s book, asking for a copy, for I wanted Peter’s signature, and asking for permission to use it in this book. My letter must have been delivered, because it did not come back; but neither did I receive an answer.

Information received later makes me believe that the letter itself was written for Peter by Charles Springer, and perhaps Peter did not sign it himself. Since the letter is so important, I am including a transcription of its translation here. Its contents are self-explanatory. Full credit for its translation goes to Dr. Hulen and Dr. Craig:

“Highly honored Dear Sister: Greetings! by the power of God, your letter, dear Sister, came into my hands here the 23rd of May, dated Gothenburg, the 16th of November 1692; from which letter I understand your temporal condition; that you are still alive, God be praised, which makes me, my wife, and children glad at heart, that I might once again be permitted to hear of your condition and the Fatherland, before it pleases God to call me from this world.

“Inasmuch as I have also understood from your letter that you now, and for some years past, have lost your eyesight and hearing (which comes as a great blow for me to hear); and you write to me that I should support you with assistance in your poverty, which I should with all my heart to do, but there is now such discord, war, and naval warfare that there would be great doubt whether you should receive it or not. I have already sent you money several times, but I understand from your letter that you have received none of it. Therefore I beg you, Dear Sister, to have patience until I can hear from you again, and safer conditions may be found for my letters and what I send you.

“Now what concerns my trade and conduct, and what my life has been here in this land: after eight years I entered the state of Holy Matrimony with Britta Mattzdotter, who (God be praised) is still living; she also came from Sweden, from Wassa, whom I have lived with in harmony and
love for 46 years, and have had with her 4 daughters and 4 sons, but the one daughter when she was 8 years old fell asleep in the Lord. And so I have still 4 living sons and 3 living daughters; all are well provided for and live in plenty with their husbands, wives, and children, so that now from my lineage there are living 37 souls of my children’s children.

“And I have served faithfully, both the Swedish regime, the Holland Dutch, and now the English: I also sat on the court for 19 years, both in the Swedes and the Hollanders’ time; for the Swedes have a rule that no case should be decided at court unless the Swedes had their voice in it; but I am old and can no longer endure that toil. Our nations also live faithfully with one another both in harmony and affection. Our land is a very splendid fruitful land, so that we have no lack of anything on which the sustenance of our bodies and lives depends, for the nearby islands are fed by us with the land’s goods, with seed, flour, and beer. We have cause also to thank God that we live in harmony, affection, and faithfulness with the Indians, while the surrounding lands and neighbors have had great duress from the Indians; and I may truthfully say, that God has wonderfully preserved and shielded us and has shown a peculiar grace toward us in this heathenish land.

“Nothing more occurs to me to write this time, but my dear wife and children send greetings to you and all good friends who may or can be found living, hoping for and awaiting your reply by the first ship that can come. Commending you to the protection and care of God Almighty,

“Always remaining your most obedient brother until death,

“/s/ Petter Gunnarson Rambo”

Peter’s grandson, the son of John Rambo, was interviewed in 1749, only 51 years after Peter’s death, by a young Swedish traveler, Peter Kalm. Edited for clarity, a portion of Kalm’s writing is quoted here:

“30 January 1749. Mr. Peter Rambo, who lived down in Raccoon, New Jersey, related to me the following concerning the first coming of the Swedes, which he had heard from his father who died six years ago, and had at the time of his demise been very old. His grandfather’s name was Peter Rambo; he had been born in Stockholm [sic] had with others been hired to come here, and had gotten his freedom after three years to return to Sweden if he so desired. Several of these so hired had returned to their homeland, but he had remained. But those who had been sent here because of some misdeed had not been allowed to return.

“The first Peter Rambo landed here when the original settlers had been here for four years. He was then unmarried, and when he had been here a short while he married and had several sons of whom this Peter Rambo’s father was the youngest....

“The original Peter Rambo, when he emigrated, had brought apple seeds and several other tree and garden seeds with him in a box. He had also taken some rye and barley along. Later when the Englishmen came, he had often told them that his hands had been the very first to sow seed in the settlement, thereby announcing that the first Swedes had not brought these seeds with them, and consequently no European seed had been sown here before he upon his arrival had made a beginning.

427 Such as deserting from the army. Governor Printz complained that some of the settlers were inept and unskilled. One wonders how he thought it could be any other way, when he was dealing with persons who had been deported from Sweden for various crimes or misdemeanors.
"His grandfather had prospered, so that Governor Penn had often lodged at his house; and when the English first came here it had been rather difficult for some of them, so that Rambo not only helped them as much as he could, but for ten years gave to everyone that came to him free food and lodging. The old man was very kind, but liked to drink a bit at times."

Peter made his will on 3 August 1694, after the death of his wife. His son Andrew, whom he had named Executor, had died by the time the will was probated, so his son Peter Rambo, Jr., was named Executor. CDR Rambo’s transcription of his will follows:

"In the name of God, Amen. I Peter Rambo, Senior of the Countie of Philadelphia in the Province of Pensilvania in parts of America being in good health of bodiey in perfect sound mind & Memorie, praise be threfore given unto Almighty God, do make & ordain this my Last Will & testament in manner & form following: that is to say, first & principally I commend my Soul into the hands of Almighty God hoping through the merits, death & passion of my Savior Jesus Christ to have full satisfaction & forgiveness of all my Sins and inherit eternal life. And my bodie I commit into ye earth to be ______ decintlie buryed att ye urying place at Wicaco, att ye discretion of my dear son after mentioned; and as to touching the disposition of all temporal estate it hath pleased God in his Mercie to bestow upon me I give and Dispose thereof as followeth---

"First. I will that all debts & funeral charges be 1st paid and discharged. Secondly. I give & dispose unto my son Gunner Rambo three hundred acres of land in West-New-Jersey on Homons Creek. Thirdly. I give and bequeath unto my Son John Rambo the tract of land which he now liveth upon in West-New-Jersey aforesaid Lying on Little Mantua Creek. Fourthly. I give unto my Son Andrew Rambo the tract of land whear I now live Containing three hundred fiftie three acres of said land, marsh, and provits. As also twelve acres of Meadow ground Lying opposite to the Township of Passayunk, With all and singular rights priviledges & Appertenances there unto the said Marsh and privets belonging & containing to his Heirs and Assigns forever after my decease, further I give unto my Son Andrew all right title and interest in Costers Saw Mill, and further all my Moveables, Lands, good Chattells, besides what is particularie disposed of & I equallie give & Disppose thereof unto my Sons Gunner, Peter, and John Rambo & to Yertrude Bandson, wife to Andrew Bandson & Catherine Dalbo, wife of Peter Dalbo, all which Said Six persons I desire to be justifie equal & order not anie one to have any greater part or share in value than the other of the sd Lands, goods & chattells as aforesd mentioned, And unto this my Last Will and Testamt I ordain an Appoint my Son Andrew Rambo my full & sole exec to this my Last will and testam, Revoking Disanualling and making void absolutie by these presents all will & Wills or testamants whatsoever heretofore by me made either in words or writing and this & none other is to be taken for my Last Will and Testament. In Witness whereof I Peter Rambo have Set my hand and Seal the 3rd Day of Augut 1694.

"Witnessed by
Robert Langshore
Peter Dalbo
Matthias Holstein
Lasse Cock"

Peter died at the age of 85, and was buried at the Swedes’ log church at Wicaco, as he requested in his will, on 29 January 1698. Not wanting to move his grave, the churchmen decided to build the new Gloria Dei church over it, and the Gloria Dei’s sexton has stated that his grave is under its altar.

Sibling, surname Gunnarson (male) or Gunnarsdotter (female)
Sister, living in Gothenburg in 1693
Perhaps others

See Illustration Number 1424.

Father is Number 2848.

1425 – Britta MATTSDOTTER was born, according to Dr. Craig, at Vasa in Finland. Her birth year is estimated to be about 1620 to 1625.

Her husband wrote to his sister that she was also (like himself) from Sweden, from ‘Wassa’. Peter may never have seen written the name of the birthplace of his wife and may not have spelled it correctly, but he does say it is in Sweden. There is a village called Vasa in Sweden at the present time; of course, it may not have existed during Britta’s lifetime. I cannot account for Dr. Craig’s assertion that her home town was located in Finland, but he is so learned that I would not challenge him. There is a considerable language difference between the Scandinavian languages and the Suomi language spoken in Finland (the country itself is also called Suomi), which shares its roots with the Hungarian language.

No one has identified parents for Britta; her father was, of course, Matt or Matthias (she was Matt’s daughter).

CDR Rambo found that the early recruiters had made efforts to sign up skilled craftsmen “...and three or four men with wives who could cook, wash, sew and brew beer for the settlers....” I suspect that Britta was a daughter of one of these men, or perhaps came out with a brother or uncle.

Life in the early settlements in North America had to be difficult, but her husband seems to have been a good provider, although ‘he liked to drink a bit at times’. Britta was able to entertain the Governor and to feed anyone who was hungry, and provide lodging for the exalted and for the needy.

She bore eight children, one of whom died at the age of eight years. Mortality among infants and children was a serious problem, but young Scandinavian women of good family received rather intense home training which seems to have served Britta well, in that she lost only the one child.

CDR Rambo states that Britta was a witness in a defamation suit brought in the Upland court on 12 September 1682 by Harmon Enoch against her son-in-law Peter Mattson Dalbo.

See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 89.

Sigrid Undset’s Kristin Lavransdatter (Translation to English by Charles Archer and J. S. Scott ©1923 by Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., New York; original written in Norwegian ©1920 by H. Ascheroug & Company, Oslo) deals with, among other things, the home training in housewifery that young Scandinavian women received, two or more centuries earlier than Britta lived.
She lived to know at least 37 grandchildren.

After having been married to Peter for more than 46 years, Britta died at their Passyunk plantation on 12 October 1693. She is doubtless buried at Wicaco, her husband interred beside her, their graves lying under the altar of Gloria Dei Church in Philadelphia.

Father is Number 2850.

**1426 – Sven Svennson SKUTE** was the son of Swedish parents who lived at Kronoby in Finland. His father was named Sven, but there is no information about his mother. Sven married Anna Johansdotter in Sweden before his first voyage to America in 1643. These facts are stated by Dr. Craig, who has researched this family in depth. Dr. Craig has posted on the Internet an article that he wrote for publication in Swedish Colonial News. While his sources are not cited there, his credentials are impeccable and I have every confidence in his reliability. He makes the following points:

Sven was a veteran of the Thirty Years War (1618-1648), and before he came to North America (New Sweden) with Governor Printz in 1643, he had served as a lieutenant with the Åbo and Björneborg County Cavalry. He earned 40 guilders per month, which, according to Dr. Craig, was four times the wage of the common soldier or worker.

Dr. Craig writes,

"After arriving in New Sweden, Lt. Sven Skute was assigned the task of supervising construction of Fort Elfsborg in present Salem County, New Jersey. He was still there in 1644 when he fired on, and boarded, Governor Winthrop's ship from New England. In 1648, his name was prominent in leading the Swedish soldiers who barred Dutch settlement near Fort Beversreede on the Schuylkill River. In the summer of 1650, Governor Printz ordered Sven Skute to return to Sweden with letters to plea for more assistance for the colony. He arrived in Stockholm in early November 1650. In March 1651 he secured an audience with Queen Christina and reported that there were only 70 men remaining in New Sweden and that more settlers and supplies were desperately needed.

"Queen Christina was slow in responding to this plea. Finally, in August 1653, instructions were issued to Sven Skute to find 250 new settlers for the colony. Skute was also well rewarded for his past services. She promoted him to be a captain and on 20 August 1653, she issued him a patent for extensive lands in present South and West Philadelphia."

Sven recruited settlers from Västerås, Värmland and Dalsland, more than the Ship Eagle could carry on its voyage that left Gothenburg on 2 February 1654 under command of the New Governor, Johan Rising. On 16 April 1654, the ship made a call at St. Christopher in the West Indies, where fresh water and fruit were obtained.

---

430 That the parents were not of the upper class is evidenced by that fact that when he was commissioned, Sven was described as "noble and brave". Commissioned the same day, Governor Johan Rising, in contrast, was described as "noble and well-born".

431 See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 89.
After about five weeks, on 20 May, the ship reached Fort Elfsborg, but found it deserted and in ruins. The next day the ship arrived at Fort Casimir, which is now (2002) New Castle, Delaware. Sven, leading three squads of musketeers, captured the fort from the Dutch, who had run out of gunpowder. Dr. Craig writes,

"In June 1654 Skute presented Queen Christina's land patent to Governor Rising for confirmation. Rising, however, was unwilling to allow Skute to occupy land which had been previously settled and developed by freemen for the previous decade and ultimately ruled that it was dependent on his confirmation, which he never gave."

The Skutes lived at Fort Casimir, a fort built by the Dutch but called Fort Trinity after it was captured by the Swedes. Sven was assigned to rebuild the fort; he also served on Governor Rising's 'Council', the body that governed the colony and heard court cases.

The Dutch, on 30 August 1655, sailed up the Delaware with seven armed ships and 317 soldiers. Since the Swedes had only 50 soldiers divided between the two forts, they surrendered without fighting; they gave up Fort Trinity on 1 September 1655, and Governor Rising surrendered Fort Christina two weeks later.

Dr. Craig:

"Remaining at Fort Casimir (New Castle) under Dutch rule became intolerable for the Skute family. They sold their lots and grain in the spring of 1656 and moved to the west bank of the Schuylkill River, on the northeast side of Kvam Kill (Mill Creek), adjacent to Hans Månsson's Aronameck plantation, in the vicinity of present Woodlands Cemetery. There is a 1658 Dutch reference to 'Sven the miller', which is probably a reference to Sven Skute's occupation in his forced retirement. He also, however, was captain of the militia for the new 'Swedish nation'.

"Captain Sven Skute died at his Schuylkill plantation ca.1665...."

He is doubtless buried either on his plantation or nearby.

Sibling, surname Svensson

    Jacob
    Perhaps others

Father is Number 2852.

1427 – Anna JOHANSDOTTER was of course the daughter of a man named Johan, said to be Gustaffson, and Dr. Craig states that she married Sven Svensson, called Skute, in Sweden. Dr. Craig:

"...She took residence at Näsby in Dingtuna parish, Västmanland, and, with his brother Jacob Svensson, is reported to have collected money from his wages while he was in America."

Anna did come to North America, perhaps accompanying Sven on one of his later voyages;

432 See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 89.
the couple had three children whose names are certain and perhaps two more. Dr. Craig points out that historians have stated that the three Swanson brothers who were issued a land patent by William Penn were sons of Sven Skute; these men were the sons of Sven Gunnarsson, however; not Sven Skute's sons.

Anna probably died about 1665; her burial place is unknown.

A suggested ancestry for Anna can be found on the Internet; I have not ruled out its accuracy, but am concerned about the 'fact' that Britta Mansdotter Andersson, the wife of Johan Gustafsson, went to live with her daughter Anna at New Castle, Delaware. She may have died, however, before the Skutes moved from there to their Schuylkill plantation in the spring of 1656. I'm also concerned about the 'fact' that Mans Andersson would immigrate at the relatively old age of 54. The unproven ancestry follows:

Twelfth Johansdotter Generation

2854—Johan Gustaffson was born about 1608 in Kinnekulle, Skaraborg lan [or Lan] Sweden; immigrated to New Sweden where he died. His death date and burial place are unknown.
2855—Britta Mansdotter Anderson was born in Sweden, the daughter of Mans Andersson. After her husband's death, she went to live with her daughter Anna in Newcastle County, Delaware.

Thirteenth Johansdotter Generation

5708—Gustaf
5710—Mans Anderssen was born in Sweden probably about 1586 and arrived in New Sweden in 1640.

11420—Anders

Unproven parentage is shown above.

1432 – Ralph ALLEN was born about 1615 in England to George Allen and his first wife, according to Jack MacDonald, who has researched the Allen family. MacDonald states that it is known that he did not travel on the same ship as his father, and his arrival date in the Massachusetts Bay Colony is unknown.

Records refer to our Ralph as a planter and wheelwright.

Ralph's wife is believed to have been Susannah; it is not known whether he was already married when he came from England, or whether he married after his arrival in Massachusetts Bay Colony. The couple probably married about 1630-1635, and had eight children whose names are known.

---

433 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 179.
434 A different Ralph Allen, whose wife was Esther Swift, lived at Sandwich and was a mason by trade.
MacDonald writes,

"Ralph eventually settled at Sandwich in the New Plymouth Colony of Massachusetts where his father lived. In 1657, while residing at Sandwich, Quakerism began spreading throughout the Colony, and Ralph and six of his brothers and sisters were apparently among the first to be 'convinced'. Unfortunately, the adoption of Quakerism by the Aliens resulted in their being persecuted and fined for many years for practicing their faith. Their persecution was particularly acute for refusing to take the Oath of Fidelity which they felt was unlawful.

"During the years 1663 and 1664, Ralph purchased land at Dartmouth in the New Plymouth Colony (now within Bristol County, Massachusetts), which he later conveyed to his children. Even though he was living at Sandwich at the time of his death, it is believed that he and Susannah probably resided at Dartmouth for a few years. Ralph is mentioned in several deeds as being 'of Dartmouth', and in 1684 he was involved in an agreement with three others to build a gristmill there."

The Genealogical Magazine of New Jersey published this transcription of Ralph's Will, found in Barnstable County, Massachusetts Will Book 2, page 75. The copy that I made from the microfilmed records of Barnstable County, Massachusetts, was partially legible, and the published transcription doesn't read exactly like what I can read of the original; for example, the year 1691 was written out in words. I don't believe the meaning was changed, however. It was proven and recorded on 1 July 1698.

"This 18th day of Dec. 1691, I Ralph Allin of Sandwich County of Barnstable in New England being aged but of sufficient memory & understanding for ye settling of my outward estate do make this my last will and testament and by making void all other & former wills which hath been by me made both written and verbal.

"It is my mind & will is yt [that] after my decease my body be decently buried in my friends burying plait at William Allin's in Sandwich.

"2ly. That all my just debts be paid by my executors hereafter named.

"3ly. I give unto my son John two tables and to beadsteads.

"4ly. All ye rest of my movable estate I do give unto my five children namely my son Joseph and my son Increase and my son Ebenezer and my son Zachariah and my daughter Patience, it to be equally divided between them and that part of it which doth belong unto my son Joseph ye one half of it I do give unto his daughter Abigail.

"5ly. I having already given unto my daughter Patience one-quarter part of that share of land which I bought of Thomas Southward as by my deed to her will appear there remaining now at my disposing what shard is more in a third part of a share than a quarter yd with remaining part I do give unto my son Joseph.

"And I do make & appoint my son Ebenezer Allen to be my executor of this my last will and testament. And I do give and hereby empower my brother William Allen and Edward Perry to be ye overseers of this my will to see that it be truly performed and this my above written will I do confirm with my hand and seal ye day and year above written."
"Signed & Sealed in ye presence of

"RALPH ALLEN (seal)
Edward Perry
her
Mary M. X Perry
mark
Edward Perry, Jr.

"Edward Perry Junr appeared before Barnabas Lathrop Judg of probate ye 1st of July 1698 & testified & said that as he was in the presence of God he did see Ralph Allen sign so also and heard him declare ye above written instrument to be his last will and testament & that he did see his father Edward Perry set his hand as a witness and saw his mother Mary Perry make her mark as a witness whereunto his name is also sett as a witness.

"Examined compared and entered July ye first 1698.

"Attest: Joseph Lathrop, Regist.

Page 76 of Barnstable County, Massachusetts Will Book 2 contains an inventory of Ralph’s estate, with values assigned to his property. I compiled a list of the scribe’s letters and determined some words and names by comparing the letters in known words (the ‘e’ in ‘bed’, for example) with a problem word. There were a few words that I simply could not interpret. Original spelling is retained.

"An Inventoiy of Ralph Allen’s estate in Sandwich ye 19 day of March in ye year 1698 by us Ludwick Harie and Daniel Allen.

"It to Beds and Cookstove and one pillar and two coverlids and one Rugg and som wearing cloths at seven pound ten shillings 07=10=00

"And two chests with Beding and some new cloth and som old clothes and other Lumber at Two Pounds and more new cloth and other Lumber at one pound ten shillings 03=10=00

"More in money Eight pounds thirteen shillings 08=03=00

"And in money due from William Allin 5 pounds 3 s 05=03=00

"One warming pan at 4 shillings 00=04=00

"Ludwick Harie his mark
"Daniel Allen

"Ebenezer Allin sd as he was in ye presence of God that this above written was a true Invintory of ye Estate of his father Ralph Allen deceased so far as he knows _______

"Barnabas Lothropo judg of probate ye first of July 1698
"Examined compared and entered ye first of July 1698
Attest Joseph Lothrop Regis
“Barnabas Lothrop Esq[ire] commissionated by ye Governour and Counciltor ye Granting of probate of Wills and Letters of Administration within ye County of Barnstable in ye province of ye Massachusetts Bay in New England To all to whom these presents shall come or may concern Greeting Know you that on ye first day of July 1698 Before me at Barnstable ye Will of Ralph Allin Late of Sandwich deceased to these presents ________ was proved Approved and allowed who having while he Lived at ye time of his Death Goods Chattels Rights and credits in ye aforesd County ye Administration of all and Singluar ye Goods Chattels Rights and credits of ye sd deceased and his will in any manner concerning was committed unto Ebenezer Allen Son of sd deceased Executor in ye same will named well and truly to Administor ye same and to make a true and perfect Inventory of all and singular ye Goods chattels Rights and credits of ye sd deceased and ye same to Exhibit in to ye Registers office of sd County according to Law also to Render a true and plaine account of your sd Administration upon oath In Testimony whereof I have caused (?) unto sett my hand and ye seal of ye sd office Dated at Barnstable ye first day of July 1698.

“Barnabas Lothrop Judg of probate (seal)"

The columns were not added. My addition makes the total value of the estate £25.435

The above documents make it clear Ralph Allen died before 19 March 1697/98 at Sandwich, in what had by then become Barnstable County, Massachusetts Bay Colony. It can be assumed (that he was buried, as directed by his will, “in the Friends Burying place at William Allen’s in Sandwich”.

Siblings, surname Allen
   Rose, married first Joseph Holway; married second, William Newland
   John, married Christian
   [Ralph]
   Robert, never married
   George, married first Hannah; married second Sarah
   Francis, married Mary Besse

Halfsiblings, surname Allen from his father’s marriage to Katherine; list of probables
   Matthew, married Sarah Kirby
   William, married Priscilla Brown
   Henry, married first Sarah Hill; married second Rebecca Sherwood,
      widow of Robert Rose
   Samuel
   Gideon, married Sarah Prudden

Father is Number 2864.

1433 – Susannah is believed to be the name of Ralph Allen’s wife. She probably married him about 1630-1635, either in England or in Massachusetts Bay Colony, and bore at least eight children to him.

She is not named in his will, which was written on 18 December 1691, so she must have

435 Twenty shillings equaled one pound before the decimal system was adopted late in the Twentieth Century.
died before that date. Perhaps she died soon before, prompting him to make his will. He apparently didn’t make his will because he expected to die, because he didn’t die until about seven years later.

Parents have not been identified.

1434 – Tristram HULL was born about 1624 probably in Somerset or Northleigh, Devon, England, to Rev. Joseph Hull and his (probably first) wife whose name has been stated as Joanna. His birth year has been calculated from his age of 11 years, stated on Hotten’s List.

The head of the family on the list is Joseph “Hall” of Somerset, a “Ministr aged 40 year”. They departed from Waymouth, England on 10 March 1635, which Hotten found in the original as “really 1635/6”. Some of the children’s names are written in the original, according to Hotten, with a small ‘u’ above the ‘a’ in ‘Hall’.

Tristram married his wife Blanche, whose maiden name has not been found, about 1644, based upon their eldest child’s birth on 30 September 1645.

He died 22 February 1666/67 in Barnstable, Massachusetts.

Siblings, surname Hull

  Joane, married first Capt. John Bursley; married second Dolar Davis
  Joseph, died young
  [Tristram]
  Temperance, married John Bickford
  Elizabeth, married Capt. John Heard
  Grissell
  Dorothy, married first Oliver Kent; married second, Benjamin Matthews

Halfsiblings, surname Hull, from his father’s marriage to Agnis (Agnes)

  Hopewell
  Benjamin
  Naomi, possibly married Richard Sylvester
  Ruth
  Reuben
  Sarah
  Samuel, married Mary Manning

436 The Original Lists of Person of Quality; Emigrants; Religious Exiles; Political Rebels; Serving Men Sold for a Term of Years; Apprentices; Children Stolen; Maidens Pressed; and Others Who went from Great Britain to the American Plantations 1600-1700 Edited by John Camden Hotten, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc. Baltimore; 1983 reprint.

437 Probably male; I base this conjecture on the fact that he is supposed to have resided at Oyster River and removed to New Jersey. I don’t believe a woman’s moves would have been followed. I have no basis for my suspicion that ‘Hopewell’ is the name of the ship on which the family sailed to the New World, except that it makes me think of Speedwell, an early ship sailing between England and the North American continent.
Parents are Numbers 2868 and 2869.

1435 – Blanche is the name given for Tristram Hull’s wife. She married Tristram about 1644, estimated from their first child’s birth in 1645. The couple had five known children. She died after 1656, probably at or near Barnstable, Massachusetts.

Clarence Almon Torrey, in New England Marriages Prior to 1700\textsuperscript{138}, states that Blanche married William Hedge as her second husband, in Barnstable County, Massachusetts. He gives a birth year of 1645 for Hedge, making him young enough to be Blanche’s son.

Parents have not been identified.

1512 – John A. Hillsman was born about 1646. A great deal of Hillsman information is found in The Hillsman Family,\textsuperscript{439} in which a ‘first book’, which I have not seen, is mentioned by the authors. Some different assumptions about this family had apparently been made, some different conclusions drawn. More facts came to light before the Second Edition Revised was printed, and the material in it is probably as reliable as can be found. John is almost certainly the immigrant, and probably came from England.

John signed a deposition on 21 February 1684/5, in which the middle initial ‘A’ as well as a clue to his birth year, is found. He signed his name, but the ‘signature’ is written into the book by a clerk and an actual signature has not been found. York County (Virginia) Deeds, Wills, Orders; No. 7, 1684-1687, page 43:

“The Deposition of John Hillsman, aged Thirty and five years or thereabouts, sayeth, ‘That the boat that John Smith lett John Seaborne have to the best of my knowledge was not worth five shillings and further, sayth Not’.

“Signed
“John A. Hillsman

“February ye 21st 1684/5
“Sworn to before me Edw: Moss Recorded [not legible]”

The name of John’s wife is not known. Tom Hillsman states that he believes that John’s wife was Diana Bennet, but admits that proof is lacking. The couple lived in York County and had certainly three and probably four children, possibly more. John’s wife evidently died before John made his will on 16 November 1704, because she is not mentioned.

It is believed that John was a farmer.

The following transcription of his will, found in York County, Virginia, Records No.

\textsuperscript{439} The Hillsman Family, Second Edition Revised, by Thomas W. Hillsman, Naomi B. Hillsman and Edward L. Hillsman; Published May, 1996; Privately printed by McQuiddy Printing Company, 711 Spence Lane, Nashville, Tennessee.
12, Deeds, Orders, Wills, 1702-1706, page 288, was made for the Hillsman book:

"In the name of God, Amen the 16th day of November in the year of our Lord God 1704, and the third year of the reign of our Governing Lady the Queen Ann .... I John Hilsman being of perfect sense and memory, make this my last will and testament, in manner and form following: in which I give and bequeath unto Nicholoss Hilsman one feather bed and furniture, three mares and one horse; .... to be equally divided to William Hilsman, Mary Garro, and Nichloss Hilsman.

"Eight head of cattel also to be equally divided to William Hillsman, Mary Garro, and Nichloss Hilsman, also my horses and the rest of the estate to be equally divided to William Hilsman, Mary Garro, and Nichloss Hilsman. ....if it pleases God that either of the three should decease then to be returned to the survivor; .... and also I Desire that Mary Garro be the Executrix to this estate and that she get ten shillings.

"I too give unto Elizabeth Clarkstone[440] to by [sic: buy] her a ring.

His
John X Hilsman
Mark

"Witnesses:
William Garro
Her
Sarah X Foreman
Mark”

John died before 7 March 1704 (this is the Old Style calendar; New Year’s Day, 15 March 1705 would have been approaching as the court sat on 7 March) when the following is found in York County, Virginia Records Number 12, Deeds, Orders, Wills, 1702-1706, page 288:

"At a Court held for York County March 7, 1704 in adjournment from the 4th of July panel last, the above will was then proved in Court by the oath of William Garro and Sarah Foreman, and according to order is recorded.

"William Quinley
Clerk County Court”

Tom W. Hilsman makes a case in his book for William Hillsman being the father of John. It is entirely possible, but admittedly not proven.

Unproven parentage is explored above.

1518 – John ECHOLS was probably born about 1650, some believe at Wilmslow in Cheshire, England. According to Milner Echols[441] who wrote about him in 1850, he

440 It appears that Elizabeth is a daughter, but her legacy seems to be an afterthought, and there may be good reason; she may have received a gift at the time of one of her marriages. It is believed that she married first a Mr. Clarke and second James Blackstone. I believe that the scribe merged her two married names and wrote ‘Clarkstone’.

441 See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 758.
probably came from England,

"...to America about the end of the 16th or the beginning of the 17th Century and Settled in Caroline County Virginia and married a tall Redheaded woman named Mary Cave—& by her had 5 Sons & 3 Daughters...".

He meant to say the end of the 1600s or the beginning of the 1700s, of course, because John is believed to have been in Virginia when his daughter Eleanor was born about 1690.

There is evidence that a John Ecles immigrated to Virginia in 1635 at the age of sixteen. This man would be the perfect age to be the father of our John, but the facts, as Milner Echols states them, don’t add up if our John was indeed the immigrant.

Before ending his 14 June 1850 dissertation, Milner sets the record straight on this item:

"I onst wrote a short account of the family for John Glover Crane of Charleston & one for James M. Reeves in which I stated, that Old English John Echols- married Betsy Holcomb, but upon a further Examination I find that he married Mary Cave, and that my Greate Grandfather Walter Evans married Betsy Holcomb."

Milner doesn’t mention what he examined further, but he may have made some kind of chart or outline of the family to which he referred when writing; perhaps he updated this as he thought of additional facts. A few words of explanation, apparently written by Mary V. (Mrs. Rex C.) Outlaw but undated on the copy I possess, tell about Milner’s story, which runs to ten typed pages:

"The Short History Of Our Family’ written by Milner Echols was brought to Texas after the Civil War, probably by Thomas Jefferson Echols, son of Robert Milner Echols of Walton Co., Georgia, and Grandson of Milner Echols who signed the history in 1850. The original is in the possession of Mrs. Eva Echols Kelley of Breckenridge Texas. The copy of this history...has been kept as nearly exact to the original as is possible in transposing from script into type...."

"The name ECHOLS has had various spelling; Eckles, Eckols and Eckels."

There are many other variations for spelling the name, and some researchers believe that the name Exoll found in New Kent, County, Virginia records prior to the 1690s, refer to John Echols. The two early Virginia land grants below, called ‘patents’ use the ‘Eckholls’ spelling, which makes the name look as if it might be German:

"VIRGINIA PATENT TO SAMUEL CRADDOCK, JOHN CAVE, JOHN ECKHOLLS AND WILLIAM GLOVER

"To all etc. Whereas etc. Now know yee that I the said ffraunc' 442 Nicholson Esq. Gov. Etc. do with the advice & Consent of the Council of state accordingly give & grant unto Sam:" Craddock, John Cave, John Eckholls & William Glover Sixteen hund4 & twenty acres of Land lying on the branches of the Tuckahoe Swamp in the freshes of Mattapony river in King & Queen & Essex Counties begining at two red Oakes & a pine by the East side of Potobago path

442 See the footnote to the biography of Person Number 602.
thence East one hundred and eighty poles to a white Oake then thence South one hundred and ninety-eight poles to a white Oake on the side of a hill then thence South fifty degrees West fifty-two poles to two white Oakes and a pine by the North side of a branch of Tuckahoe Swamp then thence East five hundred and four poles to a pine and a red Oake then thence South twenty-four degrees West three hundred and seventy poles to two white Oakes on the West side—the head of the Dam then thence North Sixty Seven degrees and a half, West one hundred and four poles to a great red Oake on a hill then thence South seventy degrees West three hundred and forty poles to a red Oake in a valley then thence North Sixty eight degrees West one hundred and twenty-eight poles to a pine by the side of Potobago path then thence North thirty poles to two pines and a hickory by the old path then thence North twenty-six and a half degrees East four hundred and Seventy five poles to a Hiccory then thence North sixty-eight degrees West one hundred and twenty-eight poles to a pine by the side of Potobago path then thence North twenty-six and a half degrees East four hundred and Seventy five poles to a Hiccory then thence North sixty-seven degrees and a half West one hundred and four poles to a great red Oake on a hill then thence South seventy degrees West three hundred and sixty-six poles to a red Oake near the Dam then thence North Sixty degrees West one hundred and forty poles to the beginning the said land being due unto the said Samuel Craddock, John Cave, John Eckholls & William Glover by and for the transportation of thirty-three persons into this Colony whose names are to be in these records menconed under this patent. To have & to hold etc. To be held etc. Yeilding & paying etc. Provided etc. Given under my hand & the Seale of this Colony this 23rd day of October Dom 1703.

"ffr: Nicholson

"Patent to Samuel Craddock, etc "

"Sam: Cradock etc their patent for 1620 acres of Land in King & Queen & Essex Counties. C. C. Thacker Dep'y Sec'y.

"[Names of persons transported into the colony:]

| "Hugh Williams | Wm Kite |
| Eliz: Mask [?] | Mary Kite |
| Eliz: Doan | Mary Jones |
| Wm Whitton | Mary Jones |
| Samuel Carter | Marg' Upton |
| John Page | Jas [?] Babe |
| Isaac Landers [Sanders?] | Tho: Essex |
| Wm Haynes | Joseph Gregory |
| Rich'd Summers | Joseph Arch |
| Nicholas Neal | Wm Maddocks |
| Tho: Oakley | Fra: Bentley |
| Ralph Keeling | Rich'd Sheeter |
| John Royley | Robt. Marwood |
| Robt: Blake | Hugh Davis |
|Tho: Marlbro | Rich'd Hill |
| Nicholas Martin | Rich'd Burton |
| James Haly" |

"VIRGINIA PATENT TO JOHN CAVE & JOHN ECKHOLLS"

"To all etc. Whereas etc. Now, know yee that I the said ffrcis Nicholson Esq'. Gov etc. do with the advice & Consent of Councill of state—give & grant unto John Cave & John Eckholls Six hundred acres of Land lying back in the forrest in the freshes of Mattaponi river in St. Stephens parish in King & Queen County beginning at a white Oake being a Corner of Richards & Caves {

443 'etc' seems to mean the additional persons named at the top of the document.
Land — on East side of Potobago path — the said land being due unto the said John Cave &
John Eckholls by and for the transportaon of twelve persons into this Colony whose names are
to be in the records mentioned under this Patent. — Given under my hand & the Sale of the
Colony this 23rd day October annoq Dom 1703.

ffr Nicholson

‘Jn° Cave & Jn° Eckholls their patent for 600 acres of Land in King & Queen County.

“C. C. Thacker Dep° See°.

Daniel Doe Mary Glover
Peter Maryon Edward Cleeg
Hugh Hillson [?] Peter Baker
Margaret Wingall Wm Leigh
John Morgan John Right
Ronal' Wadeny [?] Tho: Dirks”

Here we see John Echols and John Cave as cooperating neighbors, so it is not surprising
that Echols had married a Cave girl—but circumstantial evidence, not proof, link Mary
Cave, or Sarah Cave as her name is believed to be in spite of Milner’s statement, to
John Cave.

John Echols and his wife had eight known children, five sons and three daughters
according to Milner Echols.

Descendants who have researched the family have looked in vain for John Echols’ will
or other estate papers.

John is thought to have been a farmer, and to have died about 1712. He is doubtless
buried near his old home in Virginia. He lived in King and Queen County, but the place
where he lived is believed to have become part of Caroline County when the division
was made in 1728.

Parents have not been identified.

1519 — Sarah or Mary CAVE was probably born about 1655 or soon after, and was the
wife of John Echols. Parentage, shown below, has been given for her, although proof has not
been forthcoming. It is certainly reasonable to guess that she is somehow related to the John
Cave who owned land adjoining Echols.

She is described by Milner Echols444 as being a tall; red-headed woman; it is Milner who
gives her name as ‘Mary’.

The family lived in King & Queen County, Virginia, in the part that was cut off to form
Caroline County. She bore eight known children to Echols, and probably was still living
when he died about 1712.

444 See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 758.
During the autumn of 2004, a discussion of the Cave-Echols family has occurred on the Echols mailing list sponsored by Rootsweb, and Internet genealogy service. The following ancestry is given for Mary Cave by Janet Green Ariciu, monkey@getgoin.net. Janet maintains a Website where she admits that her sources may be suspect.

Twelfth Cave Generation

3038 - John Cave was born about 1618-1620 in Great Leighs, Essex, England, to Samuel Cave and Rachel Kellogg. He died in 1721 in Stafford County, Virginia. He married Elizabeth Travers. John's siblings, surname Cave: Rachel, Phoebe, Mary, Nathaniel, [John]. This is likely the John cave who is found in Virginia records as early as 1638 according to Nugent.445

3039 - Elizabeth Travers was born about 1649 in Virginia, and died about 1693 or 1694 in Virginia. She was the daughter of Raleigh Travers and his wife Elizabeth. Elizabeth's siblings, surname Travers: [Elizabeth], John, Rawleigh, Giles (married Ann Waugh), Million.

Thirteenth Cave Generation

6076 - Samuel Cave was born about 1588 in Great Leighs, Essex, England and died there after 20 October 1666.

6077 - Rachel Kellogg was born about 1590 in Great Leighs, Essex, England, to Phillippe Kellogg and his wife. She died there 20 October 1666. Her siblings, surname Kellogg: Thomas, Annis, Robert, Mary, Prudence, [Rachel], Martyn (married Prudence Bird), Nathaniel, John, and Jane.

6078 - Raleigh Travers was born before 1625. He married Elizabeth about 1648 in Lancaster, Virginia, and died about 1670-71 in Virginia.

6079 - Elizabeth ________ was the wife of Raleigh Travers and bore at least five children to him. She died in Virginia.

Fourteenth Cave Generation

12154 - Phillippe Kellogg was born in 1557 in Debden, Essex, England to Thomas Kellogg and his wife. The couple had ten known children.

12156 - Rawleigh Travers.

Fifteenth Cave Generation

24308 - Thomas Kellogg was born in 1521 in Debden, Essex, England, to Nicholas Kellogg and his wife Florence, née Hall and died 12 March 1568. Thomas' sibling, surname Kellogg: William.

---

Sixteenth Cave Generation

48616 - Nicholas Kellogg was born about 1488 in Debden, Essex, England, and died 17 May 1558 in Debden.

48617 - Florence Hall was born in 1490 in Debden, Essex, England, to William Hall and his wife Florence. She married Nicholas Kellogg and bore at least two children to him. She died at Debden 8 November 1571.

Seventeenth Cave Generation


97235 - Florence _________ was the wife of William Hall, and bore him two known children.

Unproven parentage is shown above.

1520 - Thomas MACKGEHEE was born about 1639 probably in Scotland. He died in 1727 in King William County, Virginia. He married about 1678 in King William County, Virginia. Ann (mentioned below) was his second or third wife.

Conjecture about Thomas MackGehee was found on a McGehee Internet Website (2006). Much of it is to be found in Appendix 8.

The below list of Thomas’ children is doubtless from his will, dated 27 July 1727; the date of his death is unknown. His estate settlement is found in King William County, Virginia, and while I only have the abstract quoted, it evidently states his residence as being in St. John’s Parish.

“Son William 10 Shillings to buy a mourning ring
Dau Dinah and her husband Joseph Lipscomb 20 shillings
Son Abraham 96 acres part of land I live on, one negro, bed and furniture and a large chest
Sons Jacob and Samuel and Dau Sarah, when they come of age, 5 lbs each to be paid them by son Abraham
Son Edward 50 acres on land, one feather bed and furniture, one large chest, riding mare, saddle and bridle
Dau Sarah one feather bed, chest and drawers, sealsin trunk, 5 lbs. currency, her mother’s horse saddle and bridle
Dau Mary Dickson one feather bed, one pair blankets, desk, etc.
Cattle, sheep, hogs, etc., to be equally divided
Exs: sons Abraham, Edward and Samuel
Wts: Robert Bambridge, W. Craddock, J. Buckley”

The following is believed to be his ancestry:

Twelfth McGehee Generation

Unproven parentage is shown above.

1521 – One of Thomas’s wives, probably Ann Bastrop (otherwise Baytop) but possibly Margery Watkins, is the mother of our Jacob. Margery’s 1699 marriage in St. Peter’s parish lists her husband as Thomas ‘Meeke’ which is thought to be McGehee; and if this is so, Margery is Jacob’s mother.

Parents have not been identified.

1522—Jean DeJARNETTE was born about 1680, perhaps in Rochelle (otherwise LaRochelle), France. Mrs. Patterson provided information about the family, and states that they were Huguenots who dwelt in France until the Edict of Nantes was revoked in 1685, after which they went, along with many other Huguenots, to England. Since Jean would have been only about five years old, his parents or other family members surely went to England also, but nothing is known about them. Jean was among the group of Huguenots sent to Virginia by King William III in 1699.

Jean, called John in America, married Mary Mumford about 1703, but few Gloucester County records survive and no date has been found. The couple is believed to have had eight children, all born in Abingdon Parish, Gloucester County.

He petitioned for and was granted naturalization on 18 April 1705 in Gloucester County. He is said to have written his name “deNarnat”.

He died before, perhaps long before 24 April 1765 when his widow signed her will. His property must have been divided among his children, because his widow had few possessions, all of which were inherited by her son-in-law Jacob McGehee upon her death. No death or burial information has been found.

Parents have not been identified.

1523 - Mary MUMFORD was born about 1683 in Gloucester County, Virginia, probably to Edward Mumford and his wife Mary, née Watkins. She married John DeJarnette about 1703, probably in Gloucester County, and bore (probably) eight children to him.

When she signed her will on 24 April 1765, she was living in Prince Edward County, Virginia, presumably with her daughter Eleanor and son-in-law Jacob McGehee. Jacob was her sole heir and executor of her estate.

Mary died between 24 April 1756, when she signed her will, and 19 August 1765, when it was proved, in Prince Edward County, Virginia.

See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
Her will is recorded in Prince Edward County, Virginia Will Book Number 1, on pages 76 and 77. The transcription below is dated 1989 and is attributed to Carrie Karegeannes, who wrote a large block letter 'M' with some embellishments to represent Mary's mark. Mary may have been only semi-literate or too weak to sign her name.

"In the name of God Amen. I Mary Dejarnatt of the Parish of St. Patrick and County of Prince Edward widow being in perfect judgment and memory (Thanks be to Almighty God) Do make this my last Will and Testament in manner & form following.

"Imprimis I recommend my Soul to Almighty God who gave it in sure & certain hope of a Blessed Resurrection from the Dead, and my Body after ________ [illegible] to be buried in a decent and Christian-like Manner by my hereafter named Executors & as to my Personal Estate I dispose of it and bequeath it in manner and form following.

"Item I do give to my Son in Law Jacob McGehee and his Heirs forever my Feather bed, with the whole Furniture & bedspread as Likewise whatever belongs to me after my decease and I do hereby Constitute, & appoint the sd Jacob McGehee my Son in Law my Sole Executor of this my last will & Testament.

"signed Sealed & ______ authorized ______

by Mary Dejarnatt to be her mark

Last Will & Testament this 24th Day of April Annog [sic] Domini 1765

In Presence of

"Christ" Ford

Jas' Garden"

"At a Court held for Prince Edward County this 19 Day of Aug' 1765

"This last Will and Testament of Mary Dejarnatt dec'd was presented in Court by Jacob McGehee the Executor therein named who made Oath thereto according to Law & Proved by the Oath of Christopher Ford one of the witnesses thereto who also made oath that he saw Ja' Garden sign the same as a witness whereupon the said Will was Ordered to be Recorded.

"John L. ______ [?] CI. Court"

The following ancestry for Mary is from Mrs. Rebecca Patterson 447, who states that it is to be regarded as working information only, requiring further research:

Twelfth Mumford Generation

3046 - Edward Mumford
3047 - Mary Watkins

30092 - Capt. Thomas Mumford

Thirteenth Mumford Generation

447 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
6093 - Rebecca

6094 - Joseph Watkins, born in Virginia and died before 1679 in Virginia
6095 - Elizabeth, whose name may have been Pamall or Stafford, and who may have been the widow of a Christopher Stoakes.

Fourteenth Mumford Generation

12189 - Elizabeth Stoakes

Fifteenth Mumford Generation

24378 - Christopher Stoakes

Siblings, surname Mumford

Joseph, married Ann [Mary]
Edward
Daniel

Unproven parentage is shown above.

1530 – Jeremiah PATE was probably born in Virginia, but this is not absolutely certain. The Pate name is found among Virginia immigrants as early as 1637, but attempts to link the families together have not been successful. Assertions that all early Virginia Pates’ descent can be traced to Lord Pate of Leicestershire, England is disputed by current family historians.

Jeremiah married a woman said to be named Jerusha or Margery, whose surname is not known, before 1703 in Virginia. The couple had one known child, Judith, who married William Penick, Sr.

Mrs. Patterson writes (edited for clarity),


“Colonial Soldiers of Virginia by Echrode shows that in September 1758 in the militia of Bedford County were Anthony, Jacob, Jeremiah, John, Matthew and Thomas. The same men are shown in Hennings Statutes as serving in the French and Indian Wars from Bedford County.

“The will of Edward Pate is recorded on 19 November 1767 in Bedford County, with sons Mathew, Anthony, Jeremiah, John (deceased, widow Judith) and wife Martha (Tinsley?). Various marriages of this Pate family can be found in early Bedford County.

448 See the Research Overview within the biography of Person Number 23.
"A letter written in 1996 by a researcher into Edward Pate of Bedford County, states the belief that he was married to Martha Tinsley in Hanover County and removed to Bedford ca 1767. He possibly was born in 1713, but this researcher believes he might have been born as early as 1703. Other researchers say Edward had brothers Anthony and Matthew and they were sons of the Jeremiah Pate killed by natives, whose widow was Margery. This researcher did not make the connection to Judith Pate Penick but did not disagree with it."

It can be guessed that Edward, Anthony and Matthew may have been Jeremiah's sons, but there doesn't seem to be documentation. While the researcher mentions that the Jeremiah killed by natives left a widow Margery, the name Jerusha has come down in the family as Jeremiah's wife, perhaps because descendants were named Jerusha. It is possible, of course, that he had more than one wife.

Mrs. Jinks Lee, who researches the family, found references to Jeremiah's death in the *Calendar of Virginia State Papers*[^449]. Indexing is sketchy, and I didn't read the entire manuscript in an attempt to find references other than those noted by Mrs. Lee. I believe a more comprehensive index may be found elsewhere.

These early Colonial records were transcribed to the best of the compiler's ability, retaining original spelling. The 'long s' is often used, and the typesetter has used a character that looks like 'f' but without out the horizontal bar: *suspicious*. Inasmuch as that character is not available to me, I'll be using the normal 's'.

Page 117:

[In right margin] "October 29th Indian sent to jail.

"Hon'ble Sir, Yo're most obedient Humble Servant,

"NATH'L HARRISON.

"The Indian taken calls himselfe

Tom Robin.

[^449]: Edited and arranged by Dr. William P. Palmer.

[^450]: The word is spelled "Goal" in the book, but "Gaol" (jail) was certainly intended.
“To The Hon’ble Edward Jenings, Esq’,
President of her Maj’st Councill, &c.”

Page 126:

“[In left margin] The Council recommend that Mr. Benj. Harrison be reimbursed for expenses, attending the Tuscarora business

“By the Hon’ble Councill.

“Mr Speaker & Gentlemen of the House of Burgesses—It having been found necessary in the year 1708 to send certain messengers to the Tuscarora Indians to demand some of their nation who were suspected to have been concerned in the murder of Jeremiah Pate, of New Kent County, Coll. Harrison did, by order of the Council, pay the said messengers for their trouble; and also by the like order distributed Rewards to some of the Tuscarora Indians who brought in one of the said murderers, and paid the Guards that conveyed them to the Publick Goal [sic] at Williamsburgh [sic]. Which said charges having been expended for the immediate Services of the Country, and for preventing a far greater charge, which would have accrued by the calling of an Assembly at an unsasonable time, or proceeding against the Tuscaroras by way of Force. We can do no less than recommend his Claim to the consideration of your House, that he may be reimbursed what he has so laid out.

“By order of the hon’ble Council.

“WIL ROBERTSON,
“Clk. Gen’l Assembly.”

Jeremiah’s murder must have occurred shortly before 29 October 1707 when the Indian was jailed; nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

1531 – Jerusha and Margery _________ are names suggested for the wife of Jeremiah Pate, who was living in New Kent County, Virginia when he was murdered. Jerusha is a name is used often by descendants. Some sources state her name as Margery; I have not seen documentation for either name, and it is possible that Pate had more than one wife. I have never seen so much as speculation about her maiden surname.

The mother of his daughter, Judith, married him before 1703, when Judith was born. There were probably other children (see Pate’s biography). She was widowed when Judith was about four years old and it seems quite likely that she remarried, but nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

1610 – Hans MEYER ZU MILSE was born about 1588 at Bechterdissen Farm Number 1 in Lippe-Detmold. Depending on exactly where the farm was situated, its inhabitants may have belonged to either Oerlinghausen or Leopoldshöhe parish.
His first wife, whose name is unknown, was the mother of our ancestor; after her death, he married Anneke Luedeking on 29 August 1655.

Hans died on 1 June 1680 at Bechterdissen Farm Number 1.

Parents are Numbers 3220 and 3221.

1616 – Bartold MEYER ZU BEXTEN was born at Bexten, Schöltmar parish, Lippe-Detmold to Hans Meyer zu Bexten and his wife Anna née Meyer zu Heerse.

He married Anna Maria Steven on 10 December 1614 in Schöltmar. The couple had at least one child.

He died in 1636 at Bexten.

Parents are Numbers 3232 and 3233.

1617 – Anna Maria STEVEN was the mother of our ancestor by her first husband, Bartold Meyer zu Bexten. After his death in 1636, she married Johann Fortkamp on 21 April 1639 in Schöltmar. Her third husband was Bernhard Wilmerding, whom she married about 1672 in Schöltmar.

Anna died in 1678 in Bexten.

Parents have not been identified.

1618 – Bernd MEYER ZU VOLKHAUSEN was born before 1587 at Reetzen (Retzen) Farm Number 1, Schöltmar parish, Lippe-Detmold. No information about his wife can be found, although she bore him at least one child. He died about 1659 at Reetzen Farm Number 1.

Parents are Numbers 3236 and 3237.

1684 – Johann MEYER ZU BEXTEN. Only his name is found in D71 Nr. 597 Adolf Redecker Detmold 1972, translation to be found in the biography of Person Number 842.

Parents have not been identified.

1685 – Margarethe MEYER ZU VOLKHAUSEN. Only her name is found in D71 Nr. 597 Adolf Redecker Detmold 1972, translation to be found in the biography of Person Number 842.
The name Meyer zu Volkhausen is found elsewhere in our ancestry and is almost certainly the same family, but I do not have the resources, such as farm histories, to make the link.

Parents have not been identified.

1686 – Bernd DETERING, Meier zu Westervinnen. The little I know about him is found in D71 Nr. 597 Adolf Redecker Detmold 1972, translation to be found in the biography of Person Number 842. He lived at Westervinnen, Schötmar parish, Lippe and married his second wife, Agneta Ilsabein Barkhausen, about 1643 in the parish of Oerlinghausen, according to Rudolf Barckhausen.

Parents have not been identified.

1687 – Agneta Ilsabein BARKHAUSEN was born about 1628 in Barckhusen, Lippe to Christoph Meier zu Barchusen and his third wife, Marie Elsebein von Rinteln. The little I knew about her before I found the Website mentioned below is found in D71 Nr. 597 Adolf Redecker Detmold 1972, translation to be found in the biography of Person Number 842.

Excursus: The facts contained in this line (persons 3374, 3375, 6748, 6749, 13496, 13497, 26992, 26993, 53984, 53985, 107968, 107969, 215396 and 215937) were found at a Website that came online in 2005, titled “Archiv Rudolf Barckhausen”, http://www.barckhausen.com

A little recent information about the Barkhausen Hof in Lippe is found in a December 1937 letter from Alma Plaßmeyer to her brother Oscar Niemann (Person Number 6 in this book): “On the Rittergut [feudal estate] Niederbarkhausen they have hoof and mouth disease…”

***

Agneta married Bernd Detering before about 1643 and bore at least one child to him. She died 18 September 1710 in Westervinnen in the parish of Schötmar.

Halfsiblings, surname Barkhausen (various spellings)
Three children born between 1602 and 1608, names and genders unknown, from her father’s first marriage, wife’s name unknown

Halfsiblings, surname Barkhausen, from her father’s marriage to Margarethe Bexten
Anna
Christoph
Jobst Christian
Johann

Siblings, surname Barkhausen
Female, died age about nine years
Hans Henrich, died age about 22 in Hungary
[Agnete Ilsabein]
Parents are numbers 3374 and 3375.

1688 – Caspar WOLFF (otherwise Wulff etc.) was born in 1642, according to his obituary, to Rudiger (various spellings) Wolff and his wife, Catharina Müller. While no documentation can be found, Rudiger Wolff dwelt in the parish of Bödingfeld, Lippe, and it can be assumed that Caspar was born there.

Kenter\(^{451}\) found his name in early records, translations by Veronika Timpe:

“\[1659\] a new post was introduced in the district of Sternberg. It had the title “Civil Servant” and had an annual income of 40 Thalers. Kaspar Wolff held this office since Michaelis 1688.”

“Kasper Wolff was mentioned as Paßschreiber (literally translated it means “passport writer”) at Ottenkrag (either an inn or a town) \([1695/96]\).”

“In 1702, Kaspar Wolf is mentioned in the records as among the “Kirchendechen” (people who collect taxes in the name of the church).”

Obituary translation by Elfriede Wilde:

“\[14th June\ \[1716\]\] was buried Herrn Caspar Wolff from Bödingfeld dean of the church and elder here for many years, born 1642. His father was the deceased Rottger Wolff, his mother the deceased Catharina Mueller.

“He was diligent about the school and about the teaching not only of reading, but also of arithmetic and writing, also about Holy Communion for the confirmed.

“At the age of 26 years he married Maria Ilsabe Puwellen, daughter of the deceased Ludolf Puwellen, citizen and member of the city council in Herford. He lived with her in Christian faith in a blessed marriage. They had 6 children, 3 sons and 3 daughters, of whom only one daughter is still living. His Christianity, his life and the way he lived it was known as honorable.

“Besides this he should be praised for the many things he did for the church as church leader, especially for the building of the organ, and the enlargement of the church, as well as taking care of the church finances.

“The cause of death was a lame [paralyzed?] leg [foot?] which for many years changed often from being better and becoming worse again. At the end … for 18 weeks, and with this an internal belly weakness and continued severe colic. He died 11 June “ditto” \[1716\] at 5 o’clock in the morning at age 74, less 5 weeks.

Note by translator: There is a word near the bottom just before “18 Wochen” [18 weeks] that I cannot decipher. I looked everywhere in my books under different spellings, but found nothing. I am sure it means the old illness with the leg became acute, and then he developed these other problems. Seems like he might have had stomach cancer.

\(^{451}\) See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
It should be noted that his son Johann Conrad Wolff had died only a few weeks before Caspar’s death, doubtless constituting a heavy blow to him.

Parents are Numbers 3376 and 3377.

1689 — Marie Lisabeth or Marie Ilsabe PUELLEN was born about 1644 in Herford, Westfalen, to Ludolph Puellen and his wife, whose name is unknown.

She married Caspar Wolff on 28 October 1688 at Bösingfeld, Lippe. The couple became the parents of three sons and three daughters.

She died on 9 November 1700 in Bösingfeld, and is buried there.

Father is Number 3378.

1690 — Balthasar LORLEBERG was born about 1644 in Lügde, Westfalen, according to Kenter, but about 1636 if his birth year is calculated from his death age of 52 in 1688. His parentage has not been found, although Kenter found ancestry for him without documenting the link.

Identified as “Herm”, a title of respect, he married Anna Maria Krull on 16 October 1660 in Bösingfeld, and the couple had six or more children. Anna died in 1684.

Kenter mentions Lorleberg in three separate places:

“Originally, there had been two free brewers in Bösingfeld. But later on, the number of liberal brewers increased. According to files of Sternberg’s office, every year, the brewers paid taxes for the beer (from 1678 on).

“Wissmann and Lorleberg, who owned a Krug (inn) paid 18 Thaler.”

“In 1683, ten Bosingfelder [including Lorleberg] refused to implement the ordered duties near Lopshorn. They could prove they were freed from the job, so nobody could do anything against them.”

“Among his ancestors, Balthasar Lorleberg has the fürstlichen Landfiskal zu Hajen bei Grohnde Eberhard Lorleberg, the Licentiation utr. juris Amtsmann zu Sachshagen and Neustadt Rühenberge Henrich Lorleberg and the fürstl. braunschw. ligneb. Landrentmeister Heinrich Lorleberg, born in the 15th century in Langenholtensen close to Northeim. Ancestors of his wife Anna Maria Krull can be traced back another one hundred years.”

Unfortunately, Kenter does not establish a link between Balthasar and these ancestors.

---

452 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
On 22 September 1685 at Böisingfeld, the widowed Lorleberg married Anna Maria Bodigers (name in question) from Hameln. No children were found for this couple.

Balthasar died on 12 April 1688 in Böisingfeld, and is buried there.

Parents have not been identified, but his ancestry is explored above.

1691 – Anna Maria KRULL was born about 1626 in Böisingfeld, to Tonnies Krull and his wife Agnes, née Nueber. Both her birth/baptism and confirmation occurred before the Böisingfeld church records begin in 1652, and the pre-churchbook information about the Krull family comes from Kenter. Her first marriage was to Hans Binder alias Möller; she bore him at least one child, and he died on 7 September 1659 in Böisingfeld.

On 16 October 1660, she married Balthasar Lorleberg and bore him six or more children.

Excursus: Anna Maria Krull occupies a unique position because she is twice our ancestress. Her great-granddaughter from her Binder-Möller marriage, Catharine Margarethe Freund, married her grandson from her Lorleberg marriage, Johann Conrad Wolff.

Inasmuch as Catharine Margarethe Freund and Johann Conrad Wolff are of two different generations, the entire Krull ancestry occurs twice—and a third time because Tonnies Krull and Margarethe Krull, who married Albert Niewald (later Niewald), were siblings, placing our Niewald ancestry in the Krull line also.

Kenter Explanation: [Translation by Veronika Timpe, edited for clarity] “Being able to trace the Nueber ancestry back so far is due to the teacher Arnold Bulle, Prior in Bardowieck. On Laurentius Day 1548 he established a will, in which he determined college scholarships and legacies for the dowries of virgins from his father’s and mother’s lineages. The applicants had to prove their relationship by means of genealogical tables. Town clerk Dr. Max Burchard dealt with these will-files in his work Das Stadtarchiv zu Stadthagen (The Town’s Archive in Stadthagen), Leipzig 1927.

“At the beginning of the Thirty Years’ War Lügde was an entirely Protestant town. In 1624 it started to return to Catholicism. Members of the Nueber family became Catholic as well, and Kanonikus Melchior Nueber from Brünn, who had been born in Lügde, gave two houses to the Franciscan Order. These houses were the foundation of the Franciscan Order, built in the Eighteenth Century (From Aus Lügdes Vergangenheit (Lügde’s Past) by Gustav Siegel, Lügde 1924).

453 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
454 10 August.
"Balthasar Lorleberg and Anna Marie Krull are ancestors of the 'Dreve family from Sonneborn.' On 21 April 1693 Johann Diederich Dreves married Anna Ilsabein, daughter of Balthasar Lorleberg in Bösingfeld, who had been born in Bösingfeld in 1668. Anna Ilsabein Lorleberg was the widow of Stuckenberge (for more detail look in Deutsches Geschlechterbuch (German Book of Lineages), volumes 46 and 72).

"Dr. Dreves in Hannover was head of the kinship group 'Dreves' in 1939. It is thanks to him that I [Erich Kenter] received a copy of the Lorlebergs' genealogical table."

Inasmuch as I [Lila Niemann Garner] possess no documentation, birth dates etc., these ancestors traced by Bulle and researched Dr. Burchard will be referenced to this Kenter Explanation, which not only deals extensively with the Lorleberg ancestry, but also goes into considerable Krull detail.

* * *

Presumably her death occurred two or three days before her burial on 26 October 1684 at Bösingfeld. No cause of death is given in the churchbook entry, her age being stated as 58 years.

Siblings, surname Krull
[Anna Maria]
Anna Lucia, married first Cord Crop; married second Johann Wissmann

Parents are Numbers 3382 and 3383.

1692 – Bernd (otherwise Berent, Bernhard etc.) FREUND was born in Lüdenhausen, Lippe in October 1647 to Berent Freund, Jr. and his wife, whose name is unknown. He was baptized on 24 October 1647 in Lüdenhausen.

On 16 November 1669 in Bösingfeld he married Elisabeth, widow of Heinrich Bodiger or Botiger, Pulvermacher (gunpowder maker) in Bösingfeld, gaining not only a wife but the position of powdermaker in Bösingfeld.

Elisabeth, wife of "Berend Freund alias Pulvermacher" died on 30 November 1672 at the age of 47 (born about 1625). As far as I know, there was no issue from this marriage.

On 2 December 1673 in Bösingfeld, Berend married Anna Lucia, the daughter of Hans Binders. According to Anna Lucia's obituary, seven sons and six daughters were born to the couple during their "happy twenty-eight year marriage'.

The Lüdenhausen death register states that Anna Catharina, the illegitimate daughter of Berend Freund at Bösingfeld was buried on 21 September 1684. One can infer that Anna Catharina, since she had a name, had been baptized. Her baptism is found in neither Bösingfeld or Lüdenhausen, and her death age is not stated. Therefore no guess can be made
about whether she was born before or during Freund’s happy marriage to Anna Lucia.

See Kenter\textsuperscript{455}. While taking place before Bernd Freund became the powder maker at Böisingfeld, a little information about customs and laws of Lippe is revealed in this 1695/96 record:

"The Pulvermacher in the Pulvermill at Böisingfeld received a small appreciation fee/income of 1 Thaler."

"Originally, there had been two free brewers in Böisingfeld. But later on, the number of free brewers increased. According to files of Sternberg’s office, every year, the brewers payed taxes for the beer (from 1678 on)."

"Pulvermacher’ Berend Freund paid 10 Thaler."

"In 1683, ten Böisingfelder (including Pulvermacher [Freund]) refused to implement the ordered duties near Lopshorn. They could prove they were freed from the job, so nobody could do anything against them."

Excursus: On a visit to Germany during the summer of 2005, I explored Böisingfeld. The church is at the top of a hill, and I drove up and down the main street a number of times before I found a place to park. Each time, I noticed a street sign ‘Am Pulverberg’ (loosely translated, the ‘way to the powder hill’). As I made this trek, it occurred to me that the powder magazine had been located there, although reason told me that the powder mill itself had been located near a stream, a source for power.

Before I moved on to my next destination, I decided to walk to the top of Pulverberg, and fate intervened to provide a convenient place to park. Actually, the way to the top of the hill was short, perhaps ten yards, and the dead-end street ended with some private garages and other structures. I wondered what the powder magazine looked like, how it was fortified, how it was guarded and by whom.

The surface of the ‘street’ captured my attention. It is paved with dressed stones, shaped to fit the terrain, each pointing toward the bottom of the hill. I visualize (and this dreamed-up scenario may give the street’s status more value than it’s worth) that these stones were in place more than three centuries ago. It seems possible if not likely that Am Pulverberg was among the earliest of Böisingfeld’s streets to be paved, in order to provide a stable surface in any weather, for transporting the precious gunpowder from the mill to the magazine.

***

Bernd Freund’s burial is recorded in the Böisingfeld churchbook on 9 March 1701. His actual death date is not given, and his age is stated as 54 years and 4 months. This is a little ‘off’ from his Lüdenhausen baptism record, but these calculations are often somewhat careless.

\textsuperscript{455} See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
The death entry states that he was a native of Lüdenhausen, the clue that told me to look in Lüdenhausen for his birth.

Parents are Numbers 3384 and 3385.

1693 – Anna Lucia BINDERS, in spite of the 1652 birth year stated in her obituary, was probably born in 1651 to Johann “Hans” Binders alias Möller and his wife, Anna Maria Krull. Bösingfeld church records begin in 1652, and her baptism is not recorded during that year.

Her confirmation is recorded in Bösingfeld on 24 April 1664, her age given as fourteen.

She married the widower Berend Freund on 2 December 1673 at Bösingfeld, and bore him seven sons and six daughters, eight of whom, along with her husband, predeceased her.

Her obituary, found in the Bösingfeld church records, translation by Elfriede Wilde:

“21 January 1718 was buried Mrs. Anna Lucia Freunds from Bösingfeld, born 1652. Father was the deceased Johann Binders, mother was Anna Maria Krull.

“She was the widow of the deceased Bernhard Freunds, with whom she had a happy 28-year marriage. From this marriage were born 7 sons and 6 daughters. Four sons and 4 daughters have already died, the other 5 are still living. She was a widow for 17 years.

“Her life and the way she lived it was honorable, God fearing, for Christ, and peaceful. She spent several years in the household of her son [Johann Henrich Freund, Conductor zu Maspe] in Maspe near Blumberg [Blomberg], who supported her with advice and counseling.

“Until a few weeks earlier she was healthy, then was attacked with weakness of the body. She was in full capacity of her mind until the very end and bedridden only for four days.

“She died January 13th during the day between 11 and 12 o’clock. She was 66 years old.”

Notes from translator: “I did the best I could with Anna Lucia Freunds. The Latin dictionary was not much help. The ministers back then had to learn Latin at the universities, but some mastered it better than others, and some just spelled it like they wanted to, much like foreign students today do with the English language.

“She went to live with her son and she was there for several years “in his household.”

“I am pretty sure the date of death is January 13th. January 18th would have made more sense, because they usually buried them on the third day. But it is possible it took this long to bring the body back to Bösingfeld.”

***

\[456\] This is Hans Binders alias Möller.
Parents are Numbers 3386 and 3387.

1694 – Johann Friedrich FALKMANN otherwise FALCKMANN was born about 1658, calculated from his confirmation age of 14 in 1672 and his death age of 39 in 1697. His baptism is not recorded in Böisingfeld.

He was confirmed at Böisingfeld on the twenty-third Sunday after Trinity in 1672. Since Trinity Sunday fell on 12 June 1672, according to an Ecclesiastical Calendar, the twenty-third Sunday after Trinity was 20 November 1672.

The confirmation record states that he is Otto Falkman’s son, the only link to his family that has been found.

He married Anna Sophie Neiwald on 13 November 1683 in Böisingfeld. Five known children were born to the couple.

His death date, at the end of December 1697, was not stated when his burial was recorded on 1 January 1698; his age was given as 39 years.

Father is Person Number 3388.

1695 – Anna Sophie NEÜWALD was baptized on 30 December 1654, her birth probably occurring a few days earlier. Her father was Caspar Neuwald; her mother’s name is not mentioned in the baptism entry, but Anna’s obituary states that her mother’s name was Magdalena Eichrod. One sponsor is named, her father’s sister Anna Agneta née Neuwald, the wife of the pastor Johannes Reusseus.

She was confirmed on Easter Sunday, 1669 at the age of fourteen. According to an online Ecclesiastical Calendar, Easter fell on 21 April.

On 13 November 1683 she married Johann Friedrich Falkmann in Böisingfeld. She bore him five known children. He died in 1697 and was buried on 1 January 1698.457

On 30 October 1698 Anna Sophie married Diederich Niseaus. No issue was born of that marriage.

Her obituary, translated by Elfriede Wilde, restates many of the facts I ferreted out of the Böisingfeld churchbooks, and adds additional information:

"5 May 1712 was buried Anna Sophia, her father was Caspar Neuwald, her mother Anna Magdalena Eichrod. At the age of 28 years she entered into marriage with Joh. Friedrich Falkmann, lasting 16 years. They had 5 children, 2 sons and 3 daughters. 2 daughters are deceased.

457 It is clear that the new calendar was in use as early as 1698 in Böisingfeld, because the 1 January burial date of Falkmann is Number 1 on the list of burials."
"She was widowed one year. Then she entered into marriage with Diederich Niseaus\textsuperscript{458}, lasting 13 years. They had no children.

"The cause of death was dropsy. After having been ill for 22 weeks, she finally was released from earth 30 April. Her age 58 years."

Half-sibling, surname \textit{Neiwald}, otherwise \textit{Niewald}, from her father’s marriage to Ilsabei Brandes

Christina, never married

Siblings, surname \textit{Neiwald}, otherwise \textit{Niewald}

Trina

Three other sisters, names unknown

Parents are Numbers 3390 and 3391.

\textbf{1720 – Martin Vogt} was born about 1643. His father was also Martin, named in young Martin’s marriage entry. The Vogts lived at “Laßbruch”—it could be Loßbruch—according to the marriage record.

Those who dwelt at Laßbruch went to church at Silixen or Almena; churchbooks for 1643, the probable time of Martin, Jr.’s birth, are available for neither. Loßbruch, in Heiden parish was searched, and no Vogt births were found.

Martin married Anna Catherine Frevert, daughter of the late Arndt Frevert, on 1 April 1668 in Lüdenhausen, Lippe-Detmold. The marriage banns had been proclaimed on 23 March 1668. Issue from the marriage, other than our ancestor Hans Vogt, has not been researched.

Martin died on 19 November 1722—it could be his burial date—at Hensdorf, Lüdenhausen parish. His age was 79 years, indicating a birth year of 1643.

Father is Number 3440.

\textbf{1721 – Anna Catherine Frevert}’s baptism is recorded at Lüdenhausen, Lippe-Detmold on 16 October 1646. She was the daughter of Arndt Frevert and his wife Catharina née Homberg, although her mother is not named in the baptism entry. Two sponsors are listed but I can only read the name of Fr. Frevert in Hensdorf.

Anna Catherine married Martin Vogt on 1 April 1668 in Lüdenhausen, and bore at least one child to him, our direct ancestor Hans Vogt.

She died at the age of 82 on 11 April 1728 in Hensdorf (the date may be her burial date).

Parents are Numbers 3442 and 3443.

\textsuperscript{458} He was the son of Johann Nisäus called Kaskowsky (otherwise Katzkofski, Katschkoffsky etc.) who served the parish of Böisingfeld as its pastor from 1674 until his death in 1690.
1760 – **Herman FREITAG** was probably born about 1617 at Rentorf; he married before 1660.

The couple had had a son Herman baptized on 14 April 1660. The next baptism is almost four years later, and I suspect that young Herman’s mother died and his father married again. Herman was listed as the father when a total of five children were baptized; there isn’t any way of knowing for sure whether they all had the same mother.

The wife of Herman Freitag of Rentrup was buried on 17 February 1673, but her name is not given in the Talle churchbook, and it is not known whether this woman was our ancestor or a subsequent wife.

Herman’s death is recorded in the Talle churchbook. He was dwelling at Rentrup, his age was 70 years, and he was buried on 5 December 1687.

Mother is Number 3521; conjectures about her husband’s ancestry can be found in her biography.

1792 – **Henrich GUMBEL** was born in April, 1647, at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Heinrich Gumbel and his wife Eulalia. He was confirmed in 1658.

On 15 October 1674, he married Elisabeth Stieglitz at Niedermöllrich. The couple had two known children.

He died in Niedermöllrich; the death register does not indicate whether it was his death or his funeral and burial that occurred on 29 October 1739.

Parents are Numbers 3584 and 3585.

1793 – **Elisabeth STIEGLITZ** was born on 9 November 1652 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Johannes Stieglitz and his wife Anna. She was confirmed in 1665.

She married Henrich Gumbel on 15 October 1674, and bore two known children to him.

She died at the age of 27 at Niedermöllrich. The church record does not state whether it was her death or funeral that occurred on 17 December 1679.

Patents are Numbers 3586 and 3587.

1794 – **Johannes PAULUS** was born on 19 May 1651 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Werner Paul and his wife Anna, née Lötzerich. He was confirmed in 1665.
He married Martha (elsewhere Margarethe) Globes on 7 October 1675 at Niedermöllrich.

He died in Niedermöllrich, and it is not stated in the church record whether it was his death or funeral that took place on 20 April 1731.

Parents are Numbers 3588 and 3589.

**1795 – Martha CLOBES** was born on 1 March 1655 to Johannes Clobes and his wife Catharina nee Ebert, at Niedermöllrich, Hessen. Her name is given elsewhere in the church records as ‘Margarethe’. She was confirmed in 1667.

She married Johannes Paulus on 7 October 1675 at Niedermöllrich, and bore him one known child, likely more

The date found in the Niedermöllrich church records, 15 March 1719, may be her death date or funeral and burial date.

Parents are Numbers 3590 and 3591.

**1796 – Adam BÜCHNER** was born on 22 February 1657 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen to Herman Büchner and his wife Gertrud, nee Pippert. He was confirmed in 1670.

He married Margarethe Peter on 9 October 1679 at Niedermöllrich. One known child was born to the couple.

The date of 8 July 1725 found in the Niedermöllrich death register could be his death date or his funeral and burial date.

Parents are Numbers 3592 and 3593.

**1797 – Margaretha PETER** was born at Harle, Hessen about 1652, to Hans Peter and his wife, whose name is unknown.

She married Adam Büchner on 9 October 1679 at Niedermöllrich, and bore him one known child.

She died at Niedermöllrich; the church record doesn’t indicate whether it was her death or funeral that occurred on 4 December 1718.

Father is Number 3594.

**1798 – Herman BÜCHNER** was born on 14 May 1652 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Hans Büchner and his wife Anna. He was confirmed in 1666.
He married Magdalena Feigehenn, elsewhere Fiegehenn, on 23 September 1684 at Niedermöllrich. The couple had one known child.

His death—or funeral and burial—took place on 14 September 1712 at Niedermöllrich.

Parents are Numbers 3596 and 3597.

1799 — Magdalena FEIGEHENN (elsewhere Fiegehenn) was born at Lohre, Hessen, about 1660, to Johannes Feigehenn and his wife Catharina. She was confirmed in 1672.

She married Herman Büchner on 23 September 1684 at Niedermöllrich, and bore him one known child.

She died at Niedermöllrich; there is no indication in the death register about whether the date given, 3 August 1730, is her death date or funeral and burial date.

Parents are Numbers 3598 and 3599.

1800 — Johannes GRIESEL was born about 1623 to Hans Griesel and his wife Catharina.

He married Anna Diedrich on 23 September 1654 at Niedermöllrich, and the couple had one known child.

He died at Niedermöllrich. The date recorded in the church record is 8 December 1703, and that may be his death date or his funeral and burial date.

Parents are Numbers 3600 and 3601.

1801 — Anna DIEDRICH was born about 1635 at Deute, Hessen to Adam Diedrich and his wife Catharina.

She bore one known child to her husband Johannes Griesel, whom she married on 23 September 1654 in Niedermöllrich.

The date found in the Niedermöllrich death register, 5 April 1712, may be her death date or her funeral and burial date.

Parents are Numbers 3602 and 3603.

1802 — Hans HANSMANN was born about 1634 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Otto Hansmann and his wife. He was confirmed in 1647.

He was united in marriage on 30 August 1657 with Elisabeth Gumbel. One known child was born to the couple.
Hans died at Niedermöllrich; the dated stated in the death register is 23 November 1679, and there isn’t any way of knowing whether that is his death date or his funeral and burial date.

Father is Number 3604.

1803 – Elisabeth GUMBEL was born about 1642, at Niedermöllrich, Hessen to Henrich Gumbel and his wife Eulalia. She was confirmed in 1655.

She married Hans Hansmann on 30 August 1647, and bore him one known child.

She died at Niedermöllrich; the date stated in the death register, 14 April 1665, may be either her death date or her funeral and burial date.

Parents are Numbers 3606 and 3607.

1804 – Eckhard TRISCHMANN lived at Harle, Hessen, and died there before 1680. His wife was Anna Gertrud Schmied.

Parents have not been identified.

1805 – Anna Gertrud SCHMIED was the wife of Eckhard Trischmann, and bore him one known child.

Parents have not been identified.

1806 – Henrich GUMBEL’s biography is printed as Person Number 1792 above.

1807 – Elisabeth STIEGLITZ’ biography is printed as Person Number 1793 above.

1826 – Johann Otto ITTAL was born at Lohre, Hessen about 1654, to George Ittal and his wife Eslisabeth.

He married Martha Löber on 6 November 1676 at Lohre. The couple had one known child.

He died at Lohre; the date recorded in the church record, 14 December 1710, may be his death date or funeral and burial date.

Parents are Numbers 3652 and 3653.

1827 – Martha LÖBER was born about 1654 at Wabern, Hessen, to Georg Löber and his wife.
She married Johann Otto Ittal on 6 November 1676 at Lohre, and bore one known child to him.

The date in the church record, 26 April 1716, may be her death date or funeral date.

Father is Number 3654.

1828 – Henning BRENNER (elsewhere BRENDEL) was born about 1654 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Herberg ‘Brenger’ and his wife.

He married Elisabeth Voickel on 28 August 1678, at Niedermöllrich. Issue from that marriage is unknown, and she died on 8 November 1688.

On 12 November 1689, he married our ancestress Elisabeth Meyer in her home parish of Obervorschütz.

He died at the age of 60 at Niedermöllrich. The date of 1 January 1714 stated in the death register may be his death date or his funeral and burial date.

Father is Number 3656.

1829 – Elisabeth MEYER was born about 1664 at Obervorschütz, Hessen, to Johannes Meyer and his wife Trina, née Korumpf. She was confirmed in 1676.

She married the widower Henning Brenner (elsewhere Brender, Brenger etc.) on 12 November 1679 at Obervorschütz, and bore him one known child.

She died at the age of 50 at Obervorschütz. One date, 25 April 1714, is stated in the death register. It could be her death date or the date of her funeral and burial.

Parents are Numbers 3658 and 3659.

1830 – Johannes BORNKESSEL was born about 1660 in Obervorschütz, Hessen, to Johannes Bornkessel and his wife Anna, née Ditmar. He was confirmed in 1672.

By occupation he was a shepherd.

He married Gertrud Dieling on 15 November 1682 at Obervorschütz, and the couple had one known child.

Widowed in 1693, he married Martha Prior in Obervorschütz on 19 June 1694; issue from the second marriage is unknown.

Death and burial information was not found.
Parents are Numbers 3660 and 3661.

1831 – Gertrud DIELING was born at Böddiger, Hessen to Caspar Dieling and his wife Elisabeth née Wambach.

She married Johannes Bornkessel at Obervorschütz, Hessen on 15 November 1682 and bore him one known child.

Her death is recorded in the Obervorschütz church records; the date given, 16 October 1693, may be her death date or the date of her funeral and burial.

Parents are Numbers 3662 and 3663.

1838 – Johannes RITTER lived at Vema, Hessen. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

1844 – Ernst WICKE was born to Simon Wicke and his wife Catharina at Niedermöllrich, Hessen. The date in the record is 23 March 1657; this may be his birth date, baptismal date, or both. He was confirmed in 1670.

He married Anna Catharina Ritte on 9 September 1680, and the couple had at least one child.

The date recorded in the Niedermöllrich death register is 26 December 1721; it is uncertain whether that is his death date or the date of his funeral and burial.

Parents are Numbers 3688 and 3689.

1845 – Anna Catharina RITTE was born or baptized (or both) on 20 June 1658 to Curt Ritte and his wife Elisabeth née Riedemann, at Dorla, Hessen. The record states that she is “aus der Bickmühle in Dorla”. She was confirmed in Dorla in 1671.

She married Ernst Wicke on 9 September 1680 at Niedermöllrich, and bore him one known child.

She died in Niedermöllrich; the date in the record, 18 April 1724, may be her death date or funeral and burial date.

Parents are Numbers 3690 and 3691.

1846 – Alexander DAM was born about 1660 to Tiele Dam and his wife Anna née Weber,
probably at Obervorschütz, Hessen. He was confirmed there in 1677.

He married Cecilia “Zisa” Otto on 27 December 1693 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, and they had one known child.

The date entered in the death register, 27 November 1716, may be either his death date or that of his funeral and burial.

Parents are Numbers 3692 and 3693.

1847 – Cecilia OTTO was born on 1 November 1667 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Ebert Otto and his wife Anna nee Scheffer. She was confirmed in 1680.

On 27 December 1693 at Niedermöllrich, she married Alexander Dam, and bore one known child to him.

Widowed in 1716, she married Valentin Blum in 1724.

She died on 19 January 1742 at Niedermöllrich, and was buried there on 21 January.

Parents are Numbers 3694 and 3695.

1856 – Barthold Hermann NUHN lived at Kirchheim near Niederaula in 1688, when his son Konrad was born. I have been unable to find further information, including his wife’s name; if the church records were available on microfilm and I could spend many hours looking, perhaps there would be more data, such as whether or not he was living when his son married.

Parents have not been identified.

1858 – Hans Henrich EICHMANN was born 14 April 1670 at Niederaula and confirmed in 1683. His occupation is listed, but I’m not sure I can read it correctly; what I read is Baumeister (master builder, the skilled craftsman in charge of a construction project). He married Elisabeth Wendel on 22 October 1696 and they had nine or ten children, not all of whom lived to adulthood. When family registers were created from information found in the Niederaula churchbooks, no death date was found for him.

Siblings, surname Eichmann
  Walter married in 1680
  Christine born in 1658 and married in 1678
  Kaspar (?) born in 1655 and married in 1679
  Hans born in 1662, likely died young
  Güta born in 1663 and confirmed in 1677
  Johannes born in 1666 likely died young
Katharina born in 1669 likely died young
[Johann Heinrich otherwise Hans Heinrich]
Margarethe, no data
Martin, a question mark beside his name; may or may not belong in this family

Father is Number 3716.

1859 – Elisabeth WENDEL was born at Niederaula in 1668 to Jakob Wendel and his wife Katharina, and died in March 1732 at Niederaula at the age of 64 years. She married Hans Heinrich Eichmann in 1696.

Siblings, surname Wendel
  Christine born 1678, married 1700, died 1728
  [Elisabeth]
  Illegible, confirmed 1685, married 1701
  Heinrich confirmed 1684, perhaps married 1701

Parents are Numbers 3718 and 3719.

1864 – Johann BIEBER was born at Niederaula on 10 December 1671 to Anthonius Bieber, Besitzer of the Erbgut Bieber (occupant in charge of the inheritable lease to the Bieber estate), and his wife Hütta or Gütta Weissmüller. He was confirmed there in 1683, and married Margarethe Heydenreich on 2 June 1692. He was the heir to the Bieber Erbgut (inherited or inheritable estate) and had charge of it during his working life. He died at Hattenbach on 4 April 1722.

Siblings, surname Bieber
  Maria born 1668, confirmed 1679
  Hans, born 1670
  [Johannes]
  Barbara confirmed 1684
  Johannes, born 1677, confirmed 1688
  Kaspar born 1679, confirmed 1693
  Christian confirmed 1696 died 1700
  Unnamed son born 1683
  Anna Martha confirmed 1699
  Margarethe born 1689

Parents are Numbers 3728 and 3729.

1865 – Margarethe HEYDENREICH was born on 6 January 1672 (this could be her baptism date) at Niederaula, and was confirmed there in 1783. She married Johann Bieber in 1692 and bore six known children to him. She died at Niederaula on 17 January 1729, and the Family register states that she was 57½ years and two weeks old; the math doesn’t work.
Parents have not been identified.

1866 – Johann Barthol ZOLL is first found in the church records at Niederaula when he was confirmed in 1686; assuming age 14 at confirmation, he was probably born about 1672. His occupation is not known. He married Magdalena Giesel on 27 January 1701; his death was evidently not found by the person or persons who compiled family registers from information found in the church records.

Father is Number 3732.

1867 – Magdalena GIESEL was the wife of Johann Barthol Zoll. The Niederaula family register states that she was the daughter of Jost Giesel of Kalkobes, and if the church records of that parish survive, more information may be available. She bore four known children to Zoll.

Father is Number 3734.

1888 – Hans BETZ married Barbara Rode or Bode on 24 January 1660. I believe the family record of Niederaula states a death date before some date or other point of reference, but I cannot read it on my copy.

Parents have not been identified.

1889 – Barbara RODE or BODE married Hans Betz and lived at Niederaula when her children were born.

Parents have not been identified.
Illustration Number 1424: This is a photograph of a late-Twentieth-Century reproduction of the *Kalmar Nyckel*, the ship on which Peter Gunnarson Rambo made his journey from Sweden to the New World.

**FROM THE KALMAR NYCKEL WEBSITE:**

The *Kalmar Nyckel* was one of America’s pioneering colonial ships. Her historical significance rivals that of the Mayflower, yet her remarkable story has never been widely told.

The original *Kalmar Nyckel* sailed from Sweden to the New World in 1638, leaving her passengers to establish the first permanent European settlement in the Delaware Valley, the Colony of New Sweden in present-day Wilmington, Delaware. She made a total of four roundtrip crossings of the Atlantic—more than any other ship of the era. Her first voyage to the New World left twenty-four settlers of Swedish, Finnish, German and Dutch descent in the Delaware Valley. Joining them was a black freedman who sailed from the Caribbean aboard her companion ship the *Fogel Grip*.

The present day *Kalmar Nyckel* was built at Wilmington, Delaware in 1997 by a group of committed citizens to be a continuing witness to the courage and spirit of those individuals who undertook the mid-winter North Atlantic crossing in 1637-1638. Tours are available (2006). She is docked at the Port of Wilmington.

**Specifications:**
- Length 93 feet overall; 89 feet at water line, loaded; 141 feet sparred
- Beam 25 feet
- Draft 12 feet, 5 inches
- Displacement 298 long tons
- Sail Area 7,600 square feet

*****

Presumably the reproduction is similar in size to the original *Kalmar Nyckel*.
Inasmuch as there are no further illustrations, the remainder of the volume is printed without breaks between generations.

TWELFTH GENERATION

2402 – Will PARKER. There is evidence that Will Parker was in Henrico County, Virginia in 1664, when he purchased land from Robert Bullington. Court records beginning in 1677 deal with his orphans, so he was dead by that date. His widow was Katherine and she was almost certainly the mother of his son William and his daughter Mary, but an earlier wife was probably the mother of his daughter Ann, who married Robert Easley. Dr. DeMarce writes,

"There is no known documentation for the idea that the maiden name of William Parker’s wife was Katherine Warham: apparently, this hypothesis is pure extrapolation from the fact that Robert and Ann (Parker) Easley named a son Warham. This is not a safe assumption, given the apparent patron/client relationship that existed to some extent between the Byrd and Easley families. The wife of William Byrd was a daughter of Warham Horsmanden. If Mrs. Byrd had been invited to serve as a godmother to an Easley child, she might well have chosen the name."

In my opinion, it would be equally logical to guess that William Parker’s first wife’s maiden name was Warham, and her daughter Ann used the name for her son, so it wouldn’t be forgotten. It is even possible that the first Mrs. Parker came from the same roots as Warham Horsmanden, accounting for the relationship between the Easleys and the Byrds. These are only theories, and unprovable.

No parents or siblings have been found for Will. He is buried in a twenty-foot-square plot on the land he bought from Robert Bullington and Jane his wife in 1664. In Henrico Deeds, 2 September 1726, William Parker (Jr.) deeds to Edward Stratton the 100 acres his father purchased from Bullington in 1664. A memorandum excepts “twenty foot square where William Parker his father and Katherine his Mother & the said Parkers children are Buried”.

Parents have not been identified.

2466 – David CRAWFORD was born in Kilbinnie, Ayrshire, Scotland about 1623-25 to John Crawford and his wife, whose name has been lost.

Excursus: Ben and I were privileged to visit the Auld Kirk in Kilbinnie in 1990. We were given a personal tour by the Curator; the church is of sufficient historical import that a curator is employed, it being the oldest active church in Scotland. He told us that due to a dispute about some cattle, a woman congregant somehow obtained and burned the church records.

We sat for a few minutes in the Crawford pew, held the battered ancient baptismal font in

See footnote to the biography of Person Number 75.
our hands—David was doubtless baptized with water contained in that font—and saw several Crawford graves in the churchyard on a day of disagreeable weather unusual even for Scotland. Our umbrella turned inside out, and the host of our bed-and-breakfast accommodation that night declared that he had seen a tree's branches twirl in a tornado-like motion.

* * *

David came to America with his widowed father John Crawford in 1643, according to Thomas Barnett Lampkin, Jr., who wrote Descendants of John Crawford, 1643-1646. They settled in James City County, Virginia.

David married about 1649-1654 probably in James City County, but his wife’s name is unknown. Some researchers believe her name was Jane. The couple settled in St. Peter’s Parish, New Kent County, but in that part that later became St. Paul’s Parish when Hanover County was formed out of New Kent County, according to Lampkin.

Excursus: During the winter and spring of 2005, I researched the family of Duane H. Smith, DDS, whose mother was Ethel Marie Garner. Ethel was born at Bridgeport, Nebraska. Her parents were William E. Garner and Henrietta Mae Chambers, who had gone west from Thurston and Dakota Counties. I expected to merge the family with mine, but no Gamer connection was found. I networked, however, with Chambers descendant and researcher Larry Cornwell, who has written biographies of his Chambers ancestors and wrote in the biography of John Asher:

"On Apr 20, 1682, John Asher received a crown grant of 226 acres of land in New Kent County, Virginia on from 'Sir Henery Chickeley, Knight, His Majesty's Deputy Governor & c.' (Patent Book 7, p 132.) (Land Office Patent Book 7, 1679-1689, Patent 132, Archives Division, Virginia State Library.)"

"The grant was given 'to the said John Asher by and for the transportation of five persons & c.' These five were 'Wm. Alsop, Richd. Darale, Edwd. Broxam, Jon Shepard, George Binks.' (Nugent, Cavaliers and Pioneers, Vol. II, p 231.)"

"The surveyor’s metes and bounds description of the acreage was:

"Beginning at a Corner Hickory in a line of marked trees of David Crafford, upon the North branches of Chickahominy Swamp...""

Cornwell states that John Asher had a wife Mary whose maiden name is unknown. There seems to be some certainty that David Crawford and his father John Crawford immigrated to Virginia alone, so it is extremely unlikely that John Asher’s wife was a Crawford. The possibility exists that David Crawford’s wife, “possibly Jane” was an Asher. This is pure conjecture on my part. I would be delighted to connect with this wonderful family of Chambers descendants.

* * *

460 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 4932.
David granted 500 acres of land to his daughter, Sarah, when she married Thomas Poindexter in 1691. He is said to have been an extensive land- and slave-owner.

In 1692, he represented New Kent County in the Virginia House of Burgesses (legislature). Mr. Lampkin found no reference to him after 1697. He did find, in the 5 May 1924 edition of The Boston Transcript, an article stating that David had been an adventurous young man, having at some time drifted down the Ohio River to a point now a part of Illinois.

David is said to have been killed by Indians in 1710. He is doubtless buried in Virginia, but nothing further is known.

Father is Number 4932.

2472 – John PLEDGE (Sr.) was born about 1650, possibly to Nicholas Pledge and his wife, whose name is not known. Only one child is known to have been born to the couple.\footnote{Esther, who married John Cannon, is said by some to be the daughter of this couple. Mrs. Haden states that this is impossible if her birth date is correct, since the father would have been only 14 years old when she was born. She also states that she has seen no evidence that Esther Cannon’s maiden name was Pledge.}

He was an early land owner in Virginia. He was shown on a list of ‘tythables’ on 30 April 1679. He is taxed with 100 acres in Henrico County, Virginia in 1704.

Mrs. Haden\footnote{See footnote to the biography of Person Number 309.} found several interesting entries in the records:

“John Pledge was ordered to outfit one man for the militia for defense against the Indians in 1679 in Henrico County.

“A John Pledge is named in 1686 in the Henrico County court records, 1677-1692, page 361. Nicholas Perkins and Abraham Childers charged him with stealing pigs. [His son John, Jr. was only about 11 years old at the time.]

“His land was located on Spring Branch near Four Mile Creek in Henrico County, north of the James River. He was a near neighbor of John Cannon as cited in Cannon’s will - John Pledge and John Redford were appointed overseers of the will and witnessed it in 1696. At least 100 acres of this land was sold to Nicholas Perkins as Perkins’ will dated 13 Jun 1711, gave to his son Abram Perkins ‘the plantation I bought of John Pledge, 100 acres’ The books imply that the elder John Pledge had sold this land to Nicholas Perkins, but I found the following deed:

“HENRICO CO VA DEEDS 1706-1737,

“page 19/181 1 Sep 1709 John Pledge sold to Nicholas Perkins Sr., land in Henrico Parish on the North side the James up Four Mile Creek, adjacent to said Perkins and John Cannon. 50 acres descended to me as heir of my father John Pledge, dec’d, and another 50 acres was purchased of sd. Cannon. Wit: Wm. Frogmorton, Noel Burton, John Pleasant. Dorothy, wife of John Pledge,
relinquished dower rights."

It had to be John, Jr., who was selling this land, but it does give us information we need about John, Sr.'s land location; Mrs. Haden states that the land was probably in that part of Henrico County that fell into Goochland County when the county was divided.

He was living in 1704, and from the deed record, we also know that John, Sr. was no longer living on 1 September 1709. It is a safe guess that he died in Henrico County, Virginia or nearby. He is doubtless buried on or near his homestead along Four Mile Creek, but no researcher has mentioned a marked grave.

If any estate papers exist, I was unable to find them.

Unproven parentage is explored below.

Thirteenth Pledge Generation

4944 - Nicholas PLEDGE, a likely candidate for the father of John Pledge, Sr., was probably about 18 years old when he came to America from England in 1636, so his estimated birth year is 1618. He could have been a bit younger or quite a lot older. The following entry is found in Cavaliers and Pioneers63:

"William Clark, 1100 acres in Henrico County 6 May 1638 [a metes and bound land description] due in right of his now wife Dorothy Gardiner late widdowe to Edward Gardiner, to whom it was due for transporting 22 persons."

(Gardiner's name is given as Garner in another place, and a date of 29 September 1636, with an almost identical list of people. This is an English Gardiner or Garner, and I'm quite certain he is not connected to our Garner line.)

Nicholas Pledge is named among the 22 persons on the list.

He remained in Henrico County, married to an unknown wife probably in the 1640s, and had one known child, a son John. That part of Henrico where the Pledge land lay, on Four Mile Creek north of the James River, became part of Goochland County when Goochland was created in 1727. Ownership of the Four Mile Creek land is considered by some as proof that Nicholas is John's father. This extrapolation certainly is likely, and the certainty of relationship between Nicholas and John is almost irrefutable, but they could be uncle and nephew or less closely related.

Nicholas was almost certainly dead by 1704, because he is not listed in the 1704 Quit Rent Rolls.

No burial information has been found.

If any estate papers exist, I was unable to find them.

Parents have not been identified.

2476 – Francis REDFORD may have been born in England and come to America as a child with his parents. Mentioned in Burke’s American Families with British Ancestry is a Francis Redford who immigrated in 1635. If this 1635 immigrant is our Francis, the generations are as follows:

Thirteenth Redford Generation
4952 – Francis REDFORD the 1635 immigrant.

Fourteenth Redford Generation
9904 – Robert REDFORD of White Church, Devon, England.
9905 – Alice LEICH.

To assume that ‘our’ Francis is the 1635 immigrant, or his son or other relative, is risky. One John Redford, another candidate for Francis’ father, was found patenting land in Lower Norfolk County, Virginia in 1635. Our Francis named a son John.

I found in Henrico County, Virginia, a deed from Francis Redford and Judith his wife, the relict of Wm. Cocke deceased. The date appears to be 1647, but it is noted among documents of a much later date. This may be the Francis who is Person Number 4952 above.

Mrs. Haden\textsuperscript{464} did much research on the Redford family and its antecedents, and I thank her most sincerely for the work she has done and shared with me. She writes,

“The Court records of Charles City County are said to contain\textsuperscript{465} numerous references to Francis Redford, the first of which was 26 April 1656 when he was sworn in as Constable for Weynoke Parish.”

Before October 1656, Francis married our ancestress, Ann or Anne née Lawrence, the daughter of William Lawrence who is called ‘Capt.’ and his wife Mary. Ann was the widow of Thomas Moody.

Their marriage is documented by an October 1656 Charles City County, Virginia, court record:

“A probat of the nuncupative will of Tho. Moody dec’d this day proved in Court granted to Francis Redford who married the extrx of the sd will.”

The Redford couple had two known sons, John and Francis, Jr. Francis’ will mentions “my grandson in law Samuel Moody Junr.”, and in another place ‘my son in law Sam Moody”. The term ‘in-law’ in earlier times was used to mean what is now meant by ‘step’; Samuel Moody, Sr. was Anne’s son by Thomas Moody. The obsolete

\textsuperscript{464} See footnote to the biography of Person Number 309.

\textsuperscript{465} Before I was ready to print this, I found scanned books on the Internet, Virginia Colonial Abstracts, Volumes X, XI, 12 and 13, Charles City County Court Order, abstracted by Beverly Fleet. The years covered are 1655-1654, with fragments 1650-1696. Many mentions of the Redford and Lawrence families are contained in them.
terminology has caused confusion, some erroneously inferring that Francis and Anne Redford had a daughter, deceased by the time Francis made his will, who had married Sam Moody.

I found several references to Francis Redford in the Fleet abstracts:

Francis was appointed Deputy Constable for Weynoke Parish in April of 1656.

He was named in an April 1657 complaint by Mrs. Sara Hoe concerning some timber that she accused him of removing from her land, and he was held in the custody of the sheriff. The jury found “that fr Francis Redford hath trespassed on a parcel of Demised Land contrary to Lease. Itt is ordered that the sd Redford satisfie and pay all costs and charges expended or occasioned in any suite or suites about the premisesses...” No further mention was found in the court minutes, so we know nothing about the outcome.

Francis was later chosen to serve on a jury.

The Charles City County Court that sat on “ffebr. 25 1658” (this is ‘Old Style’: 1658/59) ordered “ffrancis Redford to pay Wm. Gillard 350 lb tobob per bill.”

By 3 August 1659, Francis had evidently not settled this debt, because the Court “ordered that the sherrf seize and cause to be Legally valued such cattell of fr Francis Redford as shall satisfie the debt for wh’h the sd Redford is imprisoned at suite [suit] of Wm Gillard and all costs thereof appending, and thereupon release the person of the sd prisoner.”

Mrs. Haden found a number of land patents in Pioneers and Cavaliers that place Francis in the neighborhood of William Lawrence. Explaining the locale, she writes,

“This series of patents places Francis Redford and the Lawrences in the same neighborhood at an earlier time. Weynoke Peninsula is not near the Henrico line but is North of the James River. Kittawaw Creek runs out of this Peninsula; Flowerdew Hundred Creek is across the James. This land is not the same as that near the Roundabout in Henrico County granted to Francis in 1659, but certainly the Redfords could have moved, or even owned two plantations as many did.”

On 5 August 1659, Francis Redford was granted 254 acres in Henrico County, Virginia, on the north side of the James River “nigh the Roundabout Slash”, adjacent to his own land, for transportation of five persons. One of those persons was his son John’s future father-in-law, John Milner. On 13 May 1673, he received a grant of an additional 93 acres adjacent to his own land, for transportation of two persons, both of whom were named in the earlier list. Mrs. Haden:

“There was tremendous fraud involved in presenting names for transport, so no real inferences can be made about exactly when someone was transported, or in some cases, even if they were

---

transported. There are lists of people in some grants that appear to have been taken directly from existing tax roles verbatim and contain names of people known to have been born in Virginia.

The grants received for importing people are the same lands inherited by John Redford. Mrs. Haden also found a number of land transactions near the Roundabout Slash in Henrico County between 1669 and 1687, mentioning Francis' land in metes and bounds legal descriptions of adjacent, neighboring real estate. She writes,

"The Quit Rent Roll of 1704 shows that John Redford owned 775 acres – the amount in the patent of 21 October 1687, which did include the 254 acres above."

It is clear that Francis was concerned about the condition, either physical or mental or both, of his son, Francis Jr., because he is uncertain whether the boy will be able to manage his own affairs when he comes of age. This is probably the reason he, unlike most, made his will long before he died.

Francis' will, presented for probate on 1 February 1694, is found on page 457 and 458 of the Henrico County, Virginia court records; the will was copied into a book by a clerk, and Francis actual signature does not survive. My transcription of the will follows:

"In the Name of god Amen May the 16 AD 1682 I ffrancis Radford being of perfect memory blessed be God therefore but considering the fragile Estate of all Mankind doe make Ordaine Constitute and appoint this my last Will & testam* in manner & form following

"[First] I bequeath my Soul to God who gave ye same hoping through the merits & mediation of my ever Blessed Saviour Jesus Christ to obtain pardon & remission for all my sins & to Inherit life Everlasting & my body to be buried decently at the Discretion of my Excuf and for such Worldly goods as it hath pleased Got to bless me with I give & bequeath in manner following Viz:

"Item I give & bequeath unto my Grandson in Law Samuel Moody Junr one Mare at his or his fathers choice.

"Item I desire all the rest of my personall Estate consisting in Servants Slaves household goods Stock of Horses Cattle Hogs & all other my personall Estate whatever to be equally divided in specie (& what possible may be) between my Wife Anne and my two Sons ffrancis and John to have & to hold to them their Equal portions for Ever, and if my son ffrancis shall be found when he comes of Age not of sufficient Capacity to manage his own affairs then I Give to my afores Wife Anne, all my s'd Sons Portion to have & enjoy the same for [some words crossed out] the Maintenance of my s'd Son during her natural Life, & if it please God she Die before my Son ffrancis that then my Son John (if he be of age) take him & his Portion, otherwise I leave the Tutelage & Care of my s'd Son ffrancis to my Son in Law Sam Moody after my s'd Wife her decease.

"Item I give unto my Loving Wife Anne afores for the better Support of her self & my son

---

467 Son-in-law was 17th-century terminology, meaning what we currently (2002) mean by 'stepson'.
ffrancis all that p[ar]cell of Land I now live on with all the standing Orchards Gardens fenced and Cleard Grounds & all other Conveniences, & all the rest of my Land not hereafter bequeathed to my Son John to have and to hold the same during the full terms of her naturall Life & afterward I bequeath all of ye s'd Tract of Land above mentioned unto my Son ffrrancis if he shall be Judged Capable when he Come of Age to have & to hold the same to him & his heirs for Ever, but if he shall be Judged otherwise I give and bequeath unto my Son John all my Lands, Tenements Hereditaments 468 I now have right or ought to have to him my s'd Son John to have & to hold the same to him & his Heirs for Ever but if my aforesd Son ffrrancis shall be adjudged of Sufficient capacity then I Give & bequeath unto my Son John only one half of my aforesd Lands to be taken together out of any part Except what was before mentioned to my Wife.

"I doe hereby nominate & appoint my loving Wife to be the sole Executrix of this my last Will & Testament & desire my Loving friends Lt. Coll John Tamar[?] Robert Bullington and Samuel Moody to be Overseers thereof.

"Lastly I declare this to be my last Will & Testament hereby forever revoking all other whither written or Verbal In Witness whereof I have hereto sett my hand & seal the Day & year first in these presents mentioned.

"Signed Sealed & dd as his last Will and Testament before us
William Byrd
ffran: Redford {Seal d with}
red Wax }
Vere Recordat
Teste James Cocke Cl Cor."

The estate inventory is found on page 491½ of the Henrico County, Virginia, Court records, June the first A.D. 1694. There are notes in the margins telling where the appraised possessions were found, but some of them cannot be read. The values are stated in pounds, shillings and pence. I didn’t attempt to reconcile totals with those stated, because many of the right-hand column figures cannot be read. I have dispensed with attempting to form columns and have placed the values immediately after each item, because the values are written in such a way that I couldn’t make columns work.

"Inventory of ye estate of Mr. Francis Redford, dec’d, as was apprized & divided according to order of Court this 9th day of March 1694

28 £ of new pewter 01=8=
9½ £ of old Pewter at 6d 00=4=9
1 old Flagon 00=1=6
1 old Tankard 00=1=6

To Redford 25½ of New Pewter 1=5=
8½ of old Pewter 0=4=
One old flagon 0=1=
3 old Sows 1=10=

468 Hereditaments: Heritable property. Does this imply that Francis expects a future inheritance, and that at least one of his parents is still living?
469 Delivered?
470 The use of red wax has been interpreted by some to mean that Francis was of the nobility. This is doubtful, in my opinion.
471 I believe that an illegible note in the margin here indicates that the widow is to receive the portion in the left-hand column, because the right-hand column is "To Redford", presumably John Redford the son.
1 old Salt & 1 old Cupp 00=0=6
1 old Cullender 00=0=6
3 old Sows 01=10=
1 Barrow 00=12=
2 Shoats about ¾ old 00=100
10 Barrows & Sows abt
1½ years old 00=10=
7 Sucking Piggs at 6d 00=3=6
7 Larger at 12d 00=7=
1 Cow with Calf by her Side 01=15=
1 Heifer or Cow with Calf
1 Steer 00=2=0=6
1 Bull abt 3 years old 00=15=
1 Black horse abt 12 years old 00=3=6
1 Holl'd Table Cloth & 6 Napkins 00=10=6
1 pr fine Holl'd Sheets best[?] 1=7=
2 old Holl'd Pillow cases 00=3=
1 old Canviss Sheet 00=4=
4 Silver Spoons 2=0=
1 Sack Cup of Silver=0=15=
1 Suit of old Printed Curtains
and Valentts of Callico 0=10=
1 Feather Bed Bolster 2 pillows &
1 Worsted Rug, blanket with Bed-
stead & Cord 4=5=
1 Very old feather Bed green Rugg
Pillow & Bolster blanket Bed-
stead & Cord 2=0=
1 very old Negro Woman 40=0=
1 Barrow 1½ years old 0=8=
2 Smallest Pigs 0=1=
2 high & 2 Low Leather Chaires 0=18=
2 large wooden Chaires 0=10=
3 small wooden Chaires 0=1=
4 Joynt Stooles 0=6=
2 Couches 0=10=
1 New Walnut Table & formes 2=7=
1 Large Chest 5 foot 0=10=
1 four foot Chest old 0=5=
1 Gilt Leather Trunk 0=10=
1 Cabinet Trunk Gilt Leather 0=2=
1 old Looking Glass ? ? Box ? 0=2=
7 old Imperfect[?] Books 0=7=

1 Barrow 0=12=
2 Shoats abt ¾ old 00=70=
10 Barrows & 4 Sows abt 1½ yrs old 4=00=
7 Sucking Pigs at 6d 0=3=
7 larger at 12d 0=7=
1 Work[?] Cow with Calfe 1=0=
1 old Cow with Calfe 1=0=
1 young Cow with Calfe 1=10=
1 Steer ap[?] 4 years old 1=5=
1 ditto 2 years old 0=15=
1 yearling Steer 0=10=
1 old Bay Horse 1=10=
1 Two year old Heifer 0=12=
1 old Canviss Sheet 0=4=
4 Silver spoones 2=0=
1 Turkey wrought Carpet 2=10=
1 Turkey wrought bed 2 bolsters 1 old
Rug & blanket with bedstead &
cords 3=14=
1 Little flock bed & Rug 0=2=
1 Molatto Man having abt 4 years
to serve 12=0
1 old Table & formes 00=10=
1 old Chest abt 4 foot 00=5=
1 Small old Chest 0=3=
1 old Carpet 0=3=
1 old Lanthorne 0=1=
2 Spice Mortar & Pestle 0=7=
1 old Copper Kettle 0=12=
1 Small driping Pan 0=12=
2 pr Pott hookes 0=6=
1 Iron Pott at 0=6=
1 Ditto Smaller 0=2=
1 pr Andirons 1=8=
1 Small Gun 1=0=
1 ffire Shovel & 2 pr Tongs 0=3=
1 Box Iron & 2 Smoothing Irons 0=5=
1 old brass Candlestick 0=1=
2 old Chamber Potts & 1 Lamp 0=2=
1 Grindstone with Iron Axle 0=5=
1 Plow Chain & Iron Worker for
Cart wheels 0=15=
37£ old Iron 0=9=

472 With calf means pregnant.
473 The word seems clear, but a steer would normally be butchered for meat long before he was six years
old. Possibly he was being trained as a beast of burden (ox).
474 Mostly illegible note here “Over ye brass ? ?”.
475 Written in the margin: “In the Cross Chamber”.
476 Written in the margin: “Over ye outward Room”.
477 Lantern.
1 brass Lad [illegible] 0=10=6
1 brass [illeg.] largest w[ith] ? 1=12=6
1 Skillet =6, Largest Spit 2=4 0=13=10
2 pr pott hooks, large Iron Pott 0=13=10
1 large dripping Pan old 0=7=6
1 pr Pott Racks 2=4 Grid irons 0=3=4
1 [illegible] Gun 0=10=
[Total] 45=4=9

John Radford to pay this part 00=3=
7 01=10=

The inventory continues onto page 492; there are notes in the left margin that I cannot read, and there seems to be nothing saying how these are divided; but if the previous page’s left-side entries go to the widow and the right-side entries to the son, perhaps it is safe to assume that the same applies to this page:

"32 £ New pewter 01=12=
19½ £ old Pewter 00=3=9
1 New flagon 00=10=
1 New Salt[?] 00=1=6
3 old Sows 01=10=
1 Barrow 00=12=
2 Shoats abt ¾ old ??=??=
10 Barrows & Sows abt 1½ years old 4=0=
7 Sucking Pigs at 6d 00=3=6
7 Larger at 12d 00=7=
1 Cow with Calfe by her Side 1=15=
1 young Cow with Calfe 1=10=
2 Bittis[?] 3=0=
1 Mare & Colt 5=0=
1 pr Holland Sheets fine wore 1=2=6
14 [illegible] napkins, [same word] tablecloth 0=7=2
2 Holl[and] Pillow cases old 0=3=
1 old Canvis Sheet 0=4=6
1 pr of old Course Holld Sheets 0=13=6
4 Silver Spoons 2=0=0
1 Drain Cup 0=5=0
1 Suit of Red Mild & Serg Curtaines & Vallants 4=0=0
1 ffeather Bed bolster, Pillow, yarne ??
Rug with blanket bedstead & cord 4=10=
One Molatto Woman having two years to serve 5=0=0
two high Chaires 0=10=0

"This Estate herebefore mentioned is by us the Subscribers appraised according to order of Court which ye Estate being by the Will to be Equally Divided In specie we have at the Request of Mrs. Redford and her Son John Redford divided the sd Estate according to the Will [illegible] to the best of

478 Milled?
our Judgmt this 25 day of March 1693 we not having time to performe the same the first day of March the Day by the sd Order Appointed

"The Appraizers Sworne before me Wm Hanar [?] Richard Cocke
Wm. Randolph Wm. Soane[?]

"Henrico County Aprill ye 2d 1694

"The aforegoing Inventoiy & division was presented to Court for the Administratrix with the will annext of the dec[ease]d who made oath that it was a true & perfect [illegible] of all the dec[ease]d’s estate who came to her knowledge and is Recorded on order of Courte.

Test James Cocke Clerk."

It is clear that Francis Redford, Jr., named in his father’s will but seemingly in fragile health, died between the date of the will and Francis’ death.

Francis must have died shortly before his will was presented for probate on 1 February 1694, and is no doubt buried near his home north of the James River in Henrico County, Virginia.

Unproven parentage is explored above.

2477 – Ann LAWRENCE (consistently spelled ‘Anne’ in her husband Francis Redford’s estate papers, but always ‘Ann’ in Charles City County, Virginia records naming her and her parents) was the daughter of William Lawrence and his wife Mary. Some believe that Ann was born in England and came to Virginia as a child with her parents. No proof comes to light.

In the Fleet abstracts, the following is found in the Charles City County, Virginia Court minutes, session beginning 4 June 1660:

"fferdinando Aston aged about 34 yeares and Ann Redford aged about 28 yeares both exaed [examined] and sworne Say That they the depts. [deponents] were present with mr. Richard Nicholas shortly before his decesse, and heard him deliv’r and declare a Nuncupative will in these or the like tearmes…”

The terms of the will are written out in the deposition, and Ann signs it with her mark, ‘A’. The document was copied into the minutes, and her actual mark does not appear. With these dates, Ann’s birth can be calculated to about 1632.

Before the 1660 deposition was found, Mrs. Haden told me about a Poindexter book that states that Ann was born in 1649. This is impossible, given that she married Thomas Moody and bore him at least one child, was widowed, and remarried to Francis Redford by 1656, as documented below in the Charles City County, Virginia court record of October, 1656. The implication is that her second marriage had occurred between that date and that of the prior

479 See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 1476.
480 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 309.
court session.

“A probat of the nuncupative will of Tho. Moody dec’d this day proved in Court granted to Francis Redford who married the extrx of the sd will.”

Mrs. Haden’s analysis below has been edited for clarity:

“Ann was likely married before March of 1655 to Thomas Moody. A deed of gift by Mary Lawrence to her children on that date implies that her daughter Ann was likely not living at home at that time. Mary was giving livestock to her children and stated ‘my daughter Ann to have her stock when she pleaseth’. Without doubt this does prove that William and Mary Lawrence of Charles City County had a daughter named Ann. William Lawrence left each of his children two sheep and there were legal difficulties involving the sheep. The widow Mary Lawrence remarried to Edward Fitzgerald and there is a 3 June 1658 Charles City County court record ‘Order that Edw. Fitzgerald pay Francis Redford in right of his wife 2 ewe lambs according to the will of Mr. William Lawrence’ This would seem to prove without doubt that Ann, wife of Francis Redford was the daughter of William and Mary Lawrence. On 4 Oct 1658 another order states, ‘...Edward Fitzgarrall forthwith render and deliver unto Francis Redford for the use of Tho. Moody ORPHANE nine breeding sheepe and one young ram belonging to the sd Moody.’ This I believe indicates the gift from Mary Lawrence to Ann which had never been claimed by Ann and had multiplied in the interim. Since Ann was married to Thomas Moody, the title to the sheep was in his name and therefore they were inherited by his orphan son.

“Now here are some of the facts as I interpret them. Francis’ will did mean what it said in light of the definition of the term son in law in 1682. He left a mare to his ‘grandson in law’ Samuel Moody Jr. who was the son of his stepson Samuel Moody. There had been a son of Thomas Moody and Ann Lawrence who was named Samuel. He would have been a child born before 1656 when Francis Redford was assisting his wife in settlement of her late husband’s estate. He was still an ‘infant’ in 1663, simply meaning he had not yet reached legal age, but could have anywhere between about 8 and 20. By 1682, Samuel Moody, child of Thomas and Ann, had married and had a child that he named Samuel Moody – hence grandson in law, Samuel Moody Junior. There’s ample time for this to have occurred and given the other evidence, I don’t see any other reasonable explanation. I have done the research in Cavaliers and Pioneers by Nugent myself, looking up all spellings of the pertinent names involved.

“I have not looked at the Charles City County Court Records - these are detailed in the Pettitt book and I’m assuming have been filmed. There is no reason to think they did not transcribe these to the best of their ability…”

The following, (perhaps we can infer something about Ann’s character and possibly that of her mother) is found in Charles City County court orders under date of 4 October 1658:

“Upon compl’t [complaint] & process of Edd fitzgarrald & his wife of some opprobrious words & languages uttered to them by Ann the wife of ffrancis Redford, Itt is ordered that the s’d Ann shall on her bended knees acknowledge the s’d offence before her mother the s’d Mrs. fitzgarrald & begge forgiveness for the Same, and that the sayd Redford pay all costs of suite als exec.”

Mrs. Haden also found the following in *Henrico County, Virginia Orphans’ Court Book 1666-1739* by Pauline Pearce Warner page 76:

“2 September 1695: It is ordered that Robert Morris who married the relict of Francis Redford late of this City dec’d who was Security for one of the orph.of John Salsbury in Custody of Samuel Moody do appear at the next Court and give new Security.”

Analysis by Mrs. Haden (edited):

“By that date Ann, relict [widow] of Francis Redford, was married to Robert Morris who was assuming responsibility for her security – because as a married woman she could no longer furnish the security for her son, who was serving as guardian of an orphaned child of John Salsbury.”

Someone has stated that when a man and woman married they became one person, and he was the person. The truth of this, deplorable by current standards, is borne out in these early court records.

Robert Morris, along with many of his contemporaries (some of them direct ancestors mentioned in this book) was presented by the Grand Jury to the December 1694 Henrico County Court “for swearing”.

To my knowledge, nothing has been uncovered about Ann’s death date or burial place.

Siblings, surname Lawrence

[Ann]
William
James
Arthur
Sara

Parents are Numbers 4954 and 4955.

2478 – John MILNER was born about 1640 in England; if a place in England has been identified, it is unknown to me. One might guess that his mother’s name was Mary, because he had a daughter Mary with his wife Katherine who already had a (presumed) stepdaughter named Mary.

His birth year is determined by three depositions given by Milner in the Court of Henrico County, Virginia, the first very hard to read:

“John Millner Aged about 38 or 39 years sheweth

“That sometyme the last Summer I was at ________ ford & there was ______ Richard Lygon & Abraham Womack & did make a hard race for 3 hundred pounds of tobacco & that ______ [same person who is named as the dweller at the ford] was both their ______ for ye payment of the tobo to them that won it, And ______ to the day they mett.

____ 2d January 1679 _______ Recordat [clerks name not legible]”
At the Courthouse at Varina in the County of Henrico this twenty-fifth day of May Anno Dmi 1681 [illegible Latin words, possibly having to do with the twenty-second year of the reign of King Charles II]

Jn° Milner aged about 41 years

Depoeth that about the middle of April last past in an Evening this deponent went on board a sloope which lay in James River against this courthouse, and asked of the the Seamen whose tobo: it was that was on board the said sloope, and allsoe what ship the sloope belonged to, And the Seaman answered to Esq. Cloue [?] And the next morning this Deponent went againe on board the said sloope at which tyme it rained & it had rained that night allsoe & when this deponent came on board he saw the tobo: on board the sloope Covered with a saile, & several of the hhds heads out & some of the tobo: fallen out of the said hhds and that which was covered with a saile was not secured (as this deponent apprehended [comprehended?] ) the saile being not braced out but lay fflatt soe that the water stood in it & drained through & allsoe some of the said hhds wanted hoops

"and further saith not

"John Milner"

---

John Millner aged about 43 or 44 years of Age

Deposes That Capt. James Crews[?] deceased did receive of Edw Hatcher then living at Varina a parcel of Deer Skins & Some Furrs whc I understood to be in part of paym' for Some Plate wch he had bought of ye Same Capt Crews and further Saith not.

Sworn in Court Jany 1683

Recordat Aug: 1683

---

Subtracting 38/39 from 1679, 41 from 1681, and 43/44 from 1683 lends consistency to a birth-year estimate of 1640.

These depositions were copied into the record by a clerk, and no actual signature is known to exist.

John’s name is among those on a list of persons imported by Francis ‘Radford’ (Redford) in 1659. A similar entry in 1673 would seem to pertain to the same person. (Milner’s daughter was later to marry Redford’s son, or perhaps his grandson).

Henrico County court records dated 20 March 1677/78 state that John Milner was “drunke”

---

482 tobo: = tobacco.
483 hogsheads = barrels.
and “attact Mr. Tho: Chamberlain and Mr. Bullington were fighting which may appeard at ye court by my ffather”. (Reading the record is difficult and I don’t know who “my ffather” is, but I suspect that it refers to William Randolph, Clerk of the Court, and that his son relieved him of some of the writing chores. I realize that the above quote is not a complete sentence. Another possible candidate for “my father” is Francis Epps, once Sheriff of Henrico.)

Enough of the record is missing that an exact date cannot be read, but sometime in 1677 the court in Varina, Henrico County, found that John Milner was due 160 pounds of tobacco as payment for being, “off upon the Co’s service.”

John’s name appears on a 1679 list of Tythables, as responsible for six men—this would include both sons and servants. For every forty men, a man and a horse along with arms, was to be provided, apparently to the militia. John was also responsible for notifying a group of men about this responsibility.

On 30 May 1679, Benja. Hatcher and John Milner were granted 350 acres in Henrico County, on the north side of the James River in the fork of Cornelius Run, “neare the maine branch along Beauchamp’s path etc.” for the transportation of seven persons. None of those persons seems to be connected to our family history.

John must have settled into American colonial life rather comfortably after his land acquisition, being well-enough regarded that he was appointed, along with Robert Bullenton, to take an inventory of the estate of John Cumber. Henrico records state that they took the inventory on 31 July 1679. Bullenton may have been the “Bullington” who was fighting with Thomas Chamberlain while John was “drunke” a couple of years earlier.

John married Katherine (maiden name unknown) about 1677-79. Katherine had a son, William Parker from her first marriage to Will Parker; she also had charge of Parker’s daughter Anne from a supposed earlier wife of Parker, and I believe that Mary Parker was from that earlier marriage, although Milner refers to her in a deed as “…my wifes daughter”.

He adapted to local customs well enough that he acquired Indian slaves; whether he captured or bought them is unknown, and while lamentable by current standards, either practice was normal for the Seventeenth Century. This document can found in Henrico County, Virginia Records, Orphans Court, 20 August 1683, deed dated 1 August 1683:

“For the good love & affection I bear unto my wifes daughter Mary Parker as well as for other good considerations” gift of an Indian girl, Sue, “now in possession of Me”.

John Milner and Katherine had three daughters of their own, Elizabeth, Mary and Martha; it is hard to believe that Katherine would name a second living daughter ‘Mary’ if Mary Parker had been her own child, thus my statement that I believe Mary Parker’s mother was not Katherine.

484 ‘The Company’ is probably the local company of militia.
First indication of John’s death found in the record is 13 August 1684, when the following appears in the Henrico County Court records:

“An Inventory of all & singular the Goods & Chattells of John Milner decd taken & approved by us the Subscribers this 13th day of August Anno domini 1684 according to order of Court dated the first of this month."

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item</th>
<th>Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Three Indian Boys</td>
<td>7500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One very old broke horse &amp; old bridle &amp; Saddle</td>
<td>0450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seven cows</td>
<td>2450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two Steers about 2 yrs old</td>
<td>0450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Bull (from home?) 3 yrs old</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One yearling heifer</td>
<td>0150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Three weanable Calves</td>
<td>0150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One feather bed, boulster, 1 pillow, Rugg, 1 blanket, Lot of</td>
<td>750</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>old Musquito Curtains &amp; old Bedstead</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One old feather bed, boulster, 1 pillow, Rugg, 1 blanket &amp;</td>
<td>570</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bedstead</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One featherbed, boulster, 1 pillow, Rugg, 1 Blanket &amp;</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bedstead</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One old featherbed, boulster, 1 pillow, old Coverlid, 1</td>
<td>480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>blanket &amp; bedstead</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One very old (????) small Canoe</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>??? old Rugg &amp; blanket</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two long Tables &amp; sourms</td>
<td>700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One old table &amp; sourm &amp; 4 joyn’t stools</td>
<td>210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two old Couches</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Six old leather Chairs &amp; 2</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Profer (made of pine)</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Three old Chests w/out locks</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brought from ye other side</td>
<td>16605</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Three old Iron potts &amp; hooks (one of them with holes in it)</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fifty Seven pds of old Pewter</td>
<td>285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One old small Pewter tankard</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 d° Saltcellar, 1 d° Candlestick, beaker, &amp; beaker flagon</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Six old tin pans, 1 old broken</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>looking glass &amp; 1 doz. gls.[?] bottles</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One old brass Mortar &amp; pestle</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 d. ladle, 12 Alch????? spoons</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 ??? fork &amp; brass thimble? (old)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 pr small Andirons with brass heads, 1 pr old small stilliards &amp; 2 Smoking Irons (old)</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One Spitt, one pr broken Andirons, 1 old frying pan, 1 pr pot racks &amp; other old hooks &amp; 2 pr old Tongs</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One small silver Tumber, 1 d° sackcup, &amp; 3 d° dramcups</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two old Gunns</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One p[air?]Course holland sheets &amp; 10 p. Canvas d°</td>
<td>685</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleven old Doreoles pillow bo? &amp; 1 d° Callise[?]</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One old Course holland table</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cloath &amp; 1 diaper d°</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

485 The value figures are run together so that I cannot determine how the pounds, shillings and pence are stated but I suspect that the first 2 figures are pounds, the second is shillings and the third is pence. Sometimes there are one or more dots before the figures. I have transcribed the original as nearly as possible. I did not attempt to total the figures.

486 Steelyards: A steelyard has a beam with unequal arms. The long arm has a weight suspended from it, which can be moved along the arm until equilibrium is obtained, the weight being indicated by graduations on the beam. The load is suspended from the short arm of the beam. Essential features of a steelyard are that the position of the weight along the beam varies according to the load, and the graduations are equally spaced. A major advantage of the steelyard is that only one weight is required to balance a whole range of loads. There are many variations on this principle, including ones with weights that slide on the beam, weights that swing over into two positions, and beams which slide and act as weights. They were used for shop scales, person scales, large warehouse scales and weighbridges.

487 The word does not appear to be the logical word ‘leaves’.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner
by Lila Niemann Gamer 633

One very old seal skin trunk ••40 | Nineteen old Napkins, (6 of course dorelas, 6 white & 6
One very old Copper bottle, •340 | brown Oznab & 1 diaper
2 brass d° & 2 old skillets w**out frames
Carried over 16605 | A small parcell of very old Lumber

“Sworn to in Court ye first day of October 1684 ?? Kath Milner Adm”
“Sworn this 13th day of Aug. 1684 before me John Hamar [?]”

There is a bit more to the statement at the end of the inventory, but other than the names of the appraisers, Wm. Randolph, Abell Gower and Fran. Epes, I am unable to read it. This paragraph, transcribed by Dr. DeMarce, follows:

“These particulars following belonging to ye orphs of Will Parker decd. being included in ye Above Inventory & Apprism. of their Guard John Milner’s Estate were upon ye peticon of Mrs. Kath. Milner ye Admx & proof thereof by her made Orderd to be sett apart for ye use of ye sd. Orphs & ye sd Admx shall not be charge wth them as part of ye estate of ye sd deced. Viz: One feather bed & furniture belonging to Mary Parker, one feather bed & furniture & Gun belonging to Will Parker & two new pewter dishes, one Iron pot & one new pewter tankard belonging to one of ye sd. Parker’s orphs. now wife to Robert Easly.”

John died intestate, probably shortly before the inventory of his estate was ordered 1 August 1684; his burial place is not known, but one can safely assume that he was buried in Henrico County, Virginia, the part that became Goochland County when it was created in 1727.

Parents have not been identified.

2479 – Katherine was probably born about 1637 in Virginia. Her maiden name is unknown. She married in succession Will Parker (between 1665 and 1670), John Milner (between 1677 and 1679) and James Babbicum (between 1685 and 1692). It is from court records created after the deaths of both Parker and Milner, that Dr. DeMarce found the evidence of the Parker children’s parentage; Katherine is almost certainly not the mother of Anne Parker (Person Number 1201 in this book, wife of Robert Easley) and very likely not the mother of Mary Parker.

Katherine’s maiden name has consistently been stated as Warham. Dr. DeMarce has followed every possible clue and found no basis for that assertion. Indeed, since Anne Parker is the only one of the children whom Katherine ‘mothered’ who gave that name to a son, and she was almost certainly not Katherine’s daughter, it is more likely that Warham, if it is a name from a maternal line, is from Anne’s own biological mother.

Dr. DeMarce supplies additional reasoning,

488 The word ‘frames’ is very clear, and someone has suggested that a skillet frame may be a device for supporting a skillet over an open fire in a fireplace.
489 See footnote to the biography of Person Number 75 (not in this direct line).
"There is no known documentation for the idea that the maiden name of William Parker's wife was Katherine Warham; apparently this hypothesis is pure extrapolation from the fact that Robert and Anne (Parker) Easley named a son Warham. This is not a safe assumption, given the apparent patron/client relationship that existed to some extent between the Byrd and Easley families. The wife of William Byrd was a daughter of Warham Horsmanden. If Mrs. Byrd had been invited to serve as a godmother to an Easley child, she might well have chosen the name."

One researcher mentions that Easley had to sue Byrd to get the land he deserved when he fulfilled his obligation, and Byrd wrote very uncomplimentary things about Easley in his diary, so it is rather hard to imagine that Easleys would ask Mrs. Byrd to be a godmother to their child. These indications of unfriendliness can be explained away, however, because the unkind words written in Byrd's diary about Robert Easley certainly pertain to young Robert "Robin", and the diary was secret, so the Easleys wouldn't have known what he wrote. Also, Robert Easley was prone to go to court over practically nothing, and I think he was impatient—he would have gotten his deed when Byrd got around to it.

In addition, people were inclined to select wealthy people to be godparents; they gave nice gifts for important occasions in the child's life. If the parents died, godparents who were well off might step in and give a better education or a better start in life than the parents would have been able to afford. It does seem like a stretch of the imagination, however, to think that the name Warham comes from Mrs. Byrd's father, and if the name is a surname from a maternal line, it is almost certainly from Ann Parker's biological mother's ancestry.

Katherine bore three daughters to John Milner before his early death, after which she married James Babbicum. No known children were born to the latter couple.

I ordered the film where Katherine's Will, either dated or probated 30 May 1721 in Henrico County, should be found, but I was unable to find it because the film was so light that it was impossible to read. Dr. DeMarce refers to Henry County for the Babbicum Wills, but Henry was not a county that early and is geographically 'off'; she means Henrico County.

Both Mary and William Parker and/or their children are mentioned in the wills of Katherine and James Babbicum, but the children of Anne Easley, who was already dead, are not. Dr. DeMarce believes that while of course there may have been a family quarrel accounting for Anne being left out, research needs to be conducted into the reason why Katherine Babbicum seems to have a daughter Mary (Parker) Burton as well as a daughter Mary (Milner) Childers. I believe that Mary (Parker) Burton, along with Anne (Parker) Easley are Parker's daughters from an earlier wife than Katherine, accounting for Katherine giving the name 'Mary' to her own daughter with Milner. Mary Burton may have been young enough to live in the Babbicum

490 Soon after he married Anne Parker, Robert Easley, Plaintiff was granted judgment against Mrs. Katherine Milner, Administratrix of John Milner deceased, defendant, "for 189 lbs. tobacco and cask, due by account, etc." The family may have fallen out over this matter.
household, a reason for her and her husband being remembered in the Babbicum wills, but Anne was already married to Easley before Katherine married Babbicum.

Dr. DeMarce also has considered the fact that Anne (Parker) Easley was dead before Katherine Babbicum made her will, although she did leave children who were not mentioned in the Babbicum will either, but a Burton grandchild was mentioned. If the family was on good terms, this may be accounted for by the fact that Anne was already married by the time Katherine married Babbicum and never lived in the Babbicum household.

William Parker must be Katherine’s own son with Parker, because she names him “my son” in her will, but this cannot be regarded as an absolute certainty.

Katherine is buried in a twenty-foot-square plot on the land Will Parker bought from Robert Bullington and Jane his wife in 1664. In Henrico County Deeds, 2 September 1726, William Parker deeds to Edward Stratton the 100 acres his father purchased from Bullington in 1664. A memorandum excepts “twenty foot square where William Parker his father and Katherine his Mother & the said Parkers children are Buried”. This seems to imply that Parker and Katherine had children together, children who died early, and seems to be another indication that William is Katherine’s son.

Parents have not been identified.

2848 – Gunnar PETERSON or PETERSSON is the name of the father of Peter Gunnarson Rambo, known because Dr. Craig found evidence that Peter Gunnarson Rambo sent part of his wages to his father, Gunnar Petersson, in Sweden. The family probably lived in what is now the northwestern section of Gothenburg (Goteborg). This place is called Ramberget (raven’s mountain), and it is believed that Peter took his name from that place. ‘Bo’ in Swedish, means home or dwelling. Dr. Craig gives a specific place name, Hisingen, for Peter’s birthplace, assumed to be the family home.

Father is Number 5696.

2850 – Matt or perhaps Matthias, is the father of Britta Mattsdotter (Matt’s daughter). Dr. Craig states that Britta came from Vasa, in Finland, so it is probably safe to assume that her parents lived there or at a nearby place.

Parents have not been identified.

2852 – Sven the father of Sven Skute is said to have been a Swede; he and his wife, name unknown but also Swedish, were believed to have been living in Finland, perhaps at Kronoby, at the time of their son Sven Svensson Skute’s birth.

491 See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 89.
492 See the third footnote to the biography of Person Number 89.
Parents have not been identified.

2864 – George ALLEN, the immigrant ancestor, was researched by Jack MacDonald, whom I will quote extensively. MacDonald believes that George may have been born in either Somerset or Dorset, in England, because Rev. Hull and many of the other families with whom George emigrated, were from those shires (counties).

MacDonald rules out two possible connections to George in England:

“Although one commonly sees postings and family write-ups that indicate that our George Allen is the George Allen who married as his second wife, Katherine Slarkes, on 5 November 1624 in All Hallows Church, Honey Lane, London, I know of absolutely no documentation that would support that this is the same George. On the contrary, there is fairly strong evidence that indicates that this George was still in London, England as late as 1640, when he is mentioned in his brother, Henry’s, will.

“In addition, it has also been accepted by some that our George Allen was the son of John Allen of Saltford in Somersetshire, England. As with the above assertion, there is absolutely no evidence that I know of to substantiate this. There is, however, strong evidence that indicates that this George was still residing at Saltford in 1638, when he was involved in a court case regarding tenements in the Tything of Saltford. By 1638, our George Allen was already well established at Sandwich on Cape Cod. Aside from the fact that a person named George Allen was identified in both cases, any connection to our George Allen appears to be more conjecture than reality.”

George married at least twice in England; the name of his first wife, our ancestress, is not known. The second wife, who accompanied him to America, was named Katherine and was born about 1605 (she was 30 years old on the 1635 passenger list). MacDonald writes about George’s children:

“Although the identities of all of George’s children have never been determined beyond doubt, the names of eight children [including our Ralph] have been verified through various documents. In addition to these eight, it is highly probable that three other individuals, namely John, Robert, and Francis Allen, are also sons of George. Aside from those children that are known and very probable, some researchers also believe that the Joan Allen who married Clement Briggs at Dorchester in 1630/31, and the Joshua Allen who married Mary Crowell at Yarmouth in 1671, are also George’s children. Even though this position is supported to a certain degree by circumstantial evidence, it was not convincing enough for this writer to include these two individuals in this genealogy at this time.

“It should also be mentioned that the ‘five least’ children that George referred to in his will have not been verified beyond doubt either. These children, interpreted by most authorities to be the children George had with his second wife, Katherine, are strongly believed to be Matthew, William, Henry, Samuel, and Gideon, however.”

493 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 179.
494 Comment by Lila Niemann Garner.
495 An expression never heard in Nebraska where I grew up, southerners and apparently others use the term ‘least’ to mean ‘smallest’ or ‘youngest’.
MacDonald writes about George Aliens's immigration,

"...arrived in Massachusetts Bay Colony from England on 6 May 1635. His name, along with the names of those he came with (106 in all), was found on a list of passengers who departed Weymouth, England for America on 20 March 1635. Unfortunately, the name of the ship they traveled aboard has never been determined. This party, which was under the leadership of the Rev. Joseph Hull, was granted leave to settle at Wessaguscus Plantation on 8 July 1635 by the General Court at Boston. Wessaguscus was soon given municipal rights, at which time it was renamed Weymouth, and its inhabitants were allowed representation in the General Court at Boston."

MacDonald believes that George and his family may have moved from Wessaguscus to the village of Saugus (now Lynn, Massachusetts), then in 1637 or 1638 to New Plymouth Colony, newly organized at Sandwich on Cape Cod.

George was a farmer. MacDonald writes,

"[George] was recommended for 'freeman' status in New Plymouth Colony on 5 March 1638/39, and was later admitted as such on 3 September 1639. George was subsequently sworn in as the Constable of Sandwich on 4 June 1639, and served as Surveyor of Highways in 1640. He also served as a Committeeman for the New Plymouth Court in 1640, 1641, 1642, and 1644. He must have died a day or two before his burial, which occurred on 1 May 1648 at Sandwich. Action to probate his will commenced on 7 June 1648, and Katherine furnished an inventory of his estate to the Court on 8 June 1648.

According to MacDonald, the George Allen’s will transcription that follows was taken from The Genealogical Magazine of New Jersey, which states that it was proved and recorded at Plymouth, Massachusetts, and can be found in Book 1 of Wills, page 84:

"The Last Will and Testament of Georg Allen, the elder, late of Sandwich.

"Imprimis. I give unto all my children twelve pence a piece.
lt. I give unto my sone Matthew one calfe and five shillings.
l. I give unto my wife the otild cow.
l. I leave my house and household stufe to my wife during the time that she continueth unmarried, but in case she marries again, my Will is that they shall be disposed of to be divided amongst my five least children.
l. I give unto my five least children a cow a piece.
l. I give unto my sone William the meadow I bought of Peter Gaunt, being in the 2cond division.
l. for my land and the rest of my meadow I give unto my sons Henery and Samuel.
l. for my adventure in the barque, I leave to my wife and five least children.

"Witness my hand,
GEORGE ALLEN

"In presence of

496 'Adventure' here evidently means 'investment'.
WILLIAM LOVERIDGE,
JOHN VINCENT,
RICHARD BOURNE.

“The above written Will and Testament of George Allen, deceased, was proven before the court held at New Plymouth, the 7th day of June 1648 upon the oath of Mr. WILLIAM LOVERIDGE,
RICHARD BOURNE,
JOHN VINCENT.

“George Allen did nominate his wife Katheren Allen to be his executrix and Ralph Allen and Richard Bourne overseers of this his will.

“Witnesses
RALPH ALLEN,
WILLIAM HOWLAND.

“The inventory of the goods of Georg Allen of Sandwich lately taken by Edward Dillingham and Richard Bourne the 22nd of September 1648 exhibited to the general court held at New Plymouth the eight of June 1649 upon the oath of Katheren Allen. Total 44 pounds 16 shillings.”

His widow, Katherine (not our ancestress) remarried to John Collins, a shoemaker in Boston.

Parents have not been identified.

2868 — Reverend Joseph HULL was born 25 April 1596 in Crewkerne, Somerset, England, and died 19 November 1665 in Accomanticus (now York County) Maine.

I have used Abadi typeface above, because while I am sure that Rev. Joseph Hull is Tristram’s father, and I am sure that the dates and places stated have been found in Crewkerne records, I’m not sure that Joseph of Crewkerne is Joseph the immigrant. Some proof may exist, but I have not personally seen it.

The following can be found in Early Families of Weymouth, Massachusetts (Edited: while using quotation marks because I want to make sure that he gets credit, I have spelled out some of Mr. Chamberlain’s abbreviations):

“Rev. Joseph Hull, son of Thomas and Joan (Peson) Hull, was born at Crewkerne, Somersetshire, near 1595; died at the Isle of Shoals, New Hampshire, 19 November, 1665. Thomas Hull and Johane Peson were married in the parish of Crewkerne, 11 January 1572-73. (Somerset Parish Registers, 5: 6.) At the age of 17 years he matriculated at St. Mary’s Hall, Oxford University, 22 May, 1623, and was admitted to the degree B.A. 14 November, 1614. His matriculation calls him ‘son of a commoner’. He was instituted rector of Northleigh (North Leigh) in the county of Devon, 4 April, 1621, on the presentation of Thomas Hull of Crewkerne, Somerset. He resigned there in 1632. In the vicinity of Crewkerne he gathered a

497 This Rev. Joseph Hull was the leader of the group that included George Allen, Person Number 2864.
company of 106 souls, who, under his leadership sailed from Weymouth in Dorset on or near 20 March 1634-35\(^{499}\). They landed at Dorchester on 7 June, 1635 (Thomas Holbrook’s deposition), ‘and Mr. Hull and Company went to the place that is now called Weymouth’. He was made a freeman of the Massachusetts Bay Colony 2 September, 1635. Under the date 8 July, 1635, John Winthrop wrote: ‘At this court Wessaguscus was made a plantation and Mr. Hull, a minister of England, and twenty-one families with him allowed to sit down there’.

“He was an Episcopal clergyman, and soon removed to Hingham where a house lot was granted to him on the ‘Lower Plain’. He was a deputy from Hingham to the General Court, 7 September 1638, and again, 13 March 1638-39.

“He received a grant of land at Weymouth, 12 June, 1636....In his diary Rev. Peter Hobart, minister at Hingham, wrote, under date of 5 May, 1639, that Mr. Hull preached his farewell sermon, either at Weymouth or at Hingham. He removed to Barnstable and was made a freeman of the Plymouth Colony, 3 December 1639. He was at Yarmouth in 1641 and at Barnstable in 1642 and 1643. He then removed to York, Maine, where he was recorded as minister 10 May, 1643. He returned to England in 1652 and was rector of St. Buryan in Cornwall. He returned to New England where his family had remained since 1635, and was the minister at Oyster River (now Durham), New Hampshire. He was not in favor with the magistrates of either Massachusetts Bay or Plymouth Colony. His first wife’s name is apparently unknown. His married (2)\(^{500}\), before 20 March 1634-35 Agnes, the mother of his seven youngest children.”

The family is found in Hotten’s List\(^{501}\) in which the name is ‘Hall’, but in two entries, there is a small ‘u’ over the ‘a’ in ‘Hall’. The name of the ship on which they sailed is not known. It occurs to me that, since the first child born in the New World was named ‘Hopewell’, that may be the name of the ship on which the family sailed. Agnis’ age is given as 25 in March 1634-35-36, when the record was written. The seven children ranged in age from fifteen years down to three years.

The list mentions three servants who accompanied the Hull family to the New World: Judeth French, age 20, John Wood, 20, and Robt Dabyn, 28.

The following Hull genealogy has been found. There seems to be proof of a Thomas Hull whose wife was Joanne Peson, and proof that they had a son Joseph. I’m not sure there is enough proof that he is the same person as the Rev. Joseph Hull the immigrant, but I deem it very likely:

**Thirteenth Hull Generation**

5736 – Thomas Hull was born about 1547 in Devon, England and died 29 December 1636 in Crewkerne, Somerset England.

5737 – Joanne Peson was born about 1546 in England and died 30 October 1629 in Crewkerne, Somerset, England.

---

\(^{499}\) Hotten (see the biography of Person Number 1434) saw this as 1635-36.

\(^{500}\) I don’t know if anyone has explored the possibility that Hull may have had more than one wife before he married Agnis, to whom he was married when the family sailed for the New World, but it ought to be looked into.

\(^{501}\) See the footnote to the biography of Person Number 1434.
Fourteenth Hull Generation

11472 – Richard Hull was born in 1515 and died in 1559.
11473 – Mrs. Alice Hull was born about 1515 and died in 1587 in Crewkerne, England.

11474 – Richard Peson was born about 1520 and died before 24 June 1588.
11475 – Mrs. Margery Peson was the wife of Richard Peson.

Fifteenth Hull Generation

22948 – John Peson was born about 1490 in England and died in Abbotsbury, Dorset, England.
22949 – Elizabeth Samways was born about 1495 in England and died in Abbotsbury, Dorsetshire, England.

Unproven parentage is shown above.

2869 – ________ ________ (Mrs. Hull) probably married Joseph Hull about 1619, based upon the fact that her oldest known child was fifteen years old in 1635. She died in England, and if one believes genealogies stating that her death occurred in 1632, it was probably at or soon after the birth of her daughter Dorothy, who seems to have been born that year. Her death place is sometimes stated as Crewkerne, Somerset, England.

I have seen her name given as ‘Joanna’, but without documentation. If it was guessed at because her eldest daughter was ‘Joane’, the guess rests on shaky ground, because that seems to have been her husband’s mother’s name as well.

Parents have not been identified.

3220 – Deppe MEYER ZU WISTINGHAUSEN called MEYER ZU MILSE was born about 1542 at Bechterdissen Number 1, Schöttmar parish, Lippe Detmold, had at least two wives. The first known wife was a Fr. Meyer zu Milse whom he married about 1562, whereupon he assumed her farm name as his surname; his children used the Meyer zu Milse surname. Whether this Fr. Meyer zu Milse was an unmarried woman or a widow is unknown to me. After her death which is stated as being “before 1587”, he married Annen whose surname is uncertain, may be Sanneke.

It is from this second marriage to Annen that our line descends.

He died about 1602-1610 at Milse.

Background information: Information about Deppe Meyer zu Wistinghausen and his descendants was supplied by Michael Ortmann; however, Michael did not supply any ancestors for Deppe.

Ancestors of Deppe Meyer zu Wistinghausen were posted on the Internet by Harald Deppe of Germany, who has copyrighted his information as of 2000. He wrote in response to my E-
mail message, saying that he had received his information from Wolfgang Bechtel in Detmold. I wrote to Wolfgang, asking about the source of his information, but he has not replied. Therefore, the ancestry of Deppe Meyer zu Wistinghausen is unsourced, and while I can offer no proof of the data for these supposed ancestors, I believe the Bechtel research is reliable. Finding proof can be a project for one of my descendants.

* * *

Harald Deppe gives his ancestry as follows:

**Thirteenth Meyer zu Wistinghausen Generation**

6440 Deppe Meyer zu Wistinghausen, born about 1520 at Wahrentrup, Oerlinghausen Parish; died before 1602
6441 Ilsche, born about 1520

**Fourteenth Meyer zu Wistinghausen Generation**

12880 Deppe Meyer zu Wistinghausen born about 1500, married about 1520
12881 Gese, born about 1500

**Fifteenth Meyer zu Wistinghausen Generation**

25760 Deppe Meyer zu Wistinghausen, born about 1475, married about 1500
25761 Metta Frohne, born about 1475 at Asemissen Number 2

Unproven parentage is shown above.

3221 - Annen __________. Wolfgang Bechtel (see explanation for his research at 3220 above) gives a possible surname of Sanneke for Annen (Anna), but he questions this name. He states she was born before 1567 and died after 1610.

Parents have not been identified.

3232 - Hans MEYER ZU BEXTEN was born about 1540 in Bexten, Schötmar parish, Lippe-Detmold.

He married Anna Meyer zu Heerse about 1548 in Schötmar, and the couple had at least one child.

Hans died 4 September 1623 in Bexten.

Parents have not been identified.

3233 - Anna MEYER ZU HEERSE was born in 1558 at Heerse, Schötmar parish, Lippe-Detmold to Barthold Meyer zu Heerse and his wife Anna, perhaps nee Meyer zu Ohrs.

Anna married Hans Meyer zu Bexten about 1548 in Schötmar, and bore at least one child to
him.

She died 17 March 1633 at Bexten.

Parents are Numbers 6466 and 6467.

3236 – Tönnes MEYER ZU VOLKHAUSEN was born about 1548 at Reetzen (Retzen) Farm Number 1, Schötmar parish, Lippe-Detmold to Bartold Meyer zu Volkhausen and his wife Ilse née Schiemeker.

He married Ermgard Stuckmann about 1568 at Schötmar.

Tönnes died about 1625 at Reetzen Farm Number 1.

Parents are Numbers 6472 and 6473.

3237 – Ermgard STUCKMANN was born at Biemsen Farm Number 1, Schötmar parish, Lippe-Detmold.

She married Tönnes Meyer zu Volkhausen about 1568 at Schötmar.

Ermgard died in 1623 at Reetzen Farm Number 1.

Parents have not been identified.

3374 – Christoph MEIER ZU BARCHUSEN was born about 1571 in Gohfeld, Oerlinghausen Parish, Lippe-Detmold, to Christoph Meier zu Barchusen and his wife, whose maiden name was Frohne.

His first wife, name unknown, whom he married about 1600 in Oerlinghausen, bore him three known children. After her death before 1610, he married Margarethe Bexten and the couple had four known children. She died about 1617.

He married our ancestress Marie Elsebein von Rinteln about 1620; three children were born to the couple.

He died before 1642 in Barckhusen, and was likely buried at Oerlinghausen.

Halfsiblings, surname Meier to Barchusen, from his father's marriage to Catharina Thilen
   Johann
   Georg
Siblings, surname Meier to Barchusen
   [Christoph]
   Ilsabein, married Menkhausen
Parents are Numbers 6748 and 6749.

3375 – Marie Elsebein VON RINTELN was born about 1600 in Bielefeld, Westfalen, Preußen.

She married Christoph Meier zu Barchusen about 1620 and born him one known child.

She died before 20 October 1676 in Barchusen, Lippe, and was likely buried at Oerlinghausen.

Parents have not been identified.

3376 – Rudiger WOLFF is named in Caspar Wolff’s obituary as Caspar’s father. He was born about 1601, calculated from his death age of 63 in 1664. His name is sometimes spelled Rottger, Rötger etc.

See Kenter502.

“In 1655 it was allowed to drive free pigs underneath oak trees to feed them in the region of Sternberg; Rötger Wulff was allowed to feed one pig this way... altogether 17 pigs were allowed.”

“Besides the forest warden who was in charge of the entire office there was the regional forest warden who, before 1700 was called the ‘wood servant’. The wood servant in Bösingfeld got, ever since the beginning of the Seventeenth Century, 4 Thalers every year taken from the coffers of the office. Rötger Wolf was wood servant for the Bösingfelder forest in the mid-Seventeenth Century.”

He married Catharine Müller, and the couple is believed to have had several children, but it is difficult to sort out the records of the persons named Wolff in the Bösingfeld churchbooks and I hesitate to guess.

Rudiger died 31 October 1664 and is buried at Bösingfeld.

Parents have not been identified.

3377 – Catharine MÜLLER was born about 1595, calculated from a death age of 92 in 1687. She married Rudiger Wolff and bore several children to him.

Her death entry in the Bösingfeld churchbook is on 13 November 1687, which may be either her death or burial date.

Parents have not been identified.

502 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
3378 – Ludolph PUWELLEN is named in the obituary of Caspar Wolff as the father of Wolff’s wife. He was said to be a citizen of Herford, Westfalen, and a member of the city council there.

His wife’s name is not known. At least one child was born to the couple, Maria Ilsabe, who married Caspar Wolff.

Ludolph was deceased before 11 June 1716, when his son-in-law died.

Parents have not been identified.

3382 – Tännies KRULL’s information comes from Kenter. He was born at Bösingfeld about 1579 to Jaspar Krull and his wife, Ilsabein nee Dehlendorf.

Kenter

He married Agnes Nueber about 1608 or 1609, and the couple had two known daughters.

He was a businessman, brewer, innkeeper and mayor in Bösingfeld, so mentioned in 1617 and 1619, and was mentioned in 1620 again, as an innkeeper. He had inherited the inn from his father in 1620.

He bought land from Pothoff in 1623.

In 1623 he paid 574 Thalers and four horses to Grafen Tilly, who marched through Lippe with his men, this during the Thirty Years War.

He died at Bösingfeld before 1652.

Parents are Numbers 6764 and 6765.

3383 – Agnes NUEBER’s vital statistics are found in Kenter. She was born about 1590 at Stadthagen to Johann Nueber and Catharine Basse.

She married our ancestor Tännies Krull about 1609, and bore him two known children.

After his death she married Dirich (Diederich) Bornemann, whose occupation of Vogt can be translated variously as Church Advocate, Protector, Governor, Steward, Bailiff.

Kenter

503 Kenter Explanation
504 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
505 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
506 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844.
"In 1642, Diederich Bornemann was beaten so heavily by [Heinrich] Kenter and wife that he had ‘bloody cheeks’. Before that, Bornemann, for his turn, had already insulted both and beaten his wife."

I'm not sure that this means that Bornemann had beaten his own wife or Kenter's wife. In any case, Bornemann did not marry Agnes Nueber that early, so his wife in 1642 was not our ancestress.

"Diederich Bornemann...said in 1660 as a witness that he was 67 years old by then; he died on 7 November 1666 at the age of 80 years in Bösingfeld. His wife Agnes Nueber, widow of Tönnes Krull, died on 22 February 1663 in Bösingfeld at the age of 72."

The Bösingfeld churchbooks confirm that Agnes died at Bösingfeld 22 February 1663.

Parents are Numbers 6766 and 6767.

3384 – Bernd FREUND, Sr. dwelt in Lüdenhausen, Lippe. His father was the Rev. Moritz Freund; his mother’s name is not known and his birthplace is uncertain.

He was married before 1647 and had at least one child with his wife, our ancestress, whose name is unknown. She died in 1653.

He married Catharine Bunten, the widow of a powdermaker at a place that cannot be read by me.

Bernd died on 23 February 1676 at Erder, burial recorded in the Lüdenhausen churchbooks. His widow died in May, 1676.

Father is Number 6768.

3385 – Fr. FREUND’s name is unknown, nor is her birthplace or date. She married Bernd Freund, Sr. before 1647, and bore him at least one child. Her burial is recorded on 8 March 1653 in the Lüdenhausen church record.

Parents have not been identified.

3386 – Johann “Hans” BINDER or MÖLLER lived at Bösingfeld. He married Anna Maria Krull before 1651.

He died at Bösingfeld on 7 September 1659.

Parents have not been identified.

3387 – Anna Maria KRULL’s biography is printed as Person Number 1691 in Generation
Eleven.

3388 – Otto FALKMANN (otherwise FALCKMANN) was the father of Johann Friedrich Falkmann according to Johann Friedrich’s 1672 Böisingfeld confirmation record. Nothing further is known about him.

While the Falkmann/Falkmann name was known before 1600 in Böisingfeld, neither Otto’s marriage nor the birth of his son Johann Friedrich, about 1658, can be found in the Böisingfeld church records. There is a younger Otto Falckmann who seems to be of an age to be Johann Friedrich’s brother.

I searched the Böisingfeld deaths from 1656 until 1740, and did not find deaths for either Otto or his wife. Those recorded are not the correct ages to be Otto the father of Johann Friedrich; it should be noted, however, that there are gaps in the records, and if he lived and died in Böisingfeld, he, and his wife, may have died during one of the periods when no records survive.

Parents have not been identified.

3390 – Caspar NEÜWALD otherwise NIEWALD was born about 1619, calculated from his death age, to the Rev. Albertus Neüwald and his wife Margarethe nee Krull.

Although Kenter mentions only Caspar’s marriage to Anna Magdalene Eichrodt, it is evident from the death entry of his daughter Christina Niewald, that Caspar had an earlier wife; Christina’s parents are named: Father, Caspar Niewald; Mother, Ilsabei Brandes. Christina died on 5 February 1710 at the age of 62, birth year calculated to 1648. Ilsabei must have died soon after Christine’s birth.

Caspar married Anna Magdalena Eichrodt before 1651 and the couple had at least four daughters and perhaps other children. Her death is not found in the Böisingfeld churchbooks and probably occurred during the 1674-1682 records gap.

His occupation was Chirurg, the early barber-surgeon who displayed a red-and-white striped pole to identify his establishment. The barber pole of today remains the last relic of that era when the barber bled his patient in an effort to cure any number of ills.

He died on 11 September 1703 at Böisingfeld.

siblings, surname Niewald
  Johann, married with issue
  Heinrich
  Christoph
  [Caspar]

507 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844.
Anna Agneta, married Rev. Johann Reusseus, issue
Perhaps others
Parents are Numbers 6780 and 6781.

3391 – Anna Magdelena EICHRODT married Caspar Neiwald, later Niewald, and bore him at least four daughters.

Excursus: The Eichrodt surname stems from an occupation and refers to one who roots up oak trees, clears the land.

* * *

There is a gap in the Böisingfeld churchbooks between 1674 and 1682, and she likely died during that time.

Parents have not been identified.

3440 – Martin VOGT is named as the father of the bridegroom when his son, also Martin Vogt, married Anna Catherine Frevert in Lüdenhausen, Lippe-Detmold, in 1668. The Vogts lived at “Laßbruch”—it could be Loßbruch—according the marriage record.

Dwellers at Laßbruch went to church at Silixen or Almena; churchbooks were searched, but no suitable Vogt family was found. Loßbruch, in Heiden parish was searched, also without success.

Parents have not been identified.

3442 – Arndt FREVERT was baptized in Lüdenhausen parish, Lippe-Detmold. The date recorded is 18 February 1621; this could be either his birth date or the date of his baptism. His parents were Heinrich Frevert and his wife, whose name is unknown.

Arndt married Catharine Homberg on 14 September 1645; the banns were proclaimed in August, but I cannot read the date. The couple had one known child, our ancestor Anna Catharine; I did not attempt to research other possible issue.

Arndt’s death entry is dated 25 March 1659, either his death or funeral date.

Parents are Numbers 6884 and 6885.

3443 – Catharine HOMBERG was the daughter of Johan Homberg, her father named in the Lüdenhausen churchbook entry when she married Arndt Frevert on 14 September 1645.

Catharine’s birth cannot be found in the Lüdenhausen churchbooks.
Arndt Frevert, Catharine’s husband and our ancestor, died 25 March 1659. Catharine may have married 24 July 1660 to Cordt Mosell. Cordt died 24 September 1676; Cordt Mosell’s widow died on 19 September 1678. If the 1660 marriage is indeed that of Catharine née Homberg, Arndt Frevert’s widow, then the death of Catharine is 19 December 1678. The record contains no indication of her death age so no birth date can be inferred.

Parents are Numbers 6886 and 6887.

3521 — ___________ ___________, the mother of Herman Freitag in Rentrup, was buried on 19 April 1660, probably in Talle, the parish seat. Jones gives a literal translation of the 1660 entry in the Talle churchbook death register:

"On the 19th of April, Herman Freitag, at Rentrup, had his old mother buried."

She had probably died a day or two earlier. Herman’s son Herman, our ancestor, had been baptized on 14 April. I find it rather touching to think that she lived to see this grandson, or at least know about his birth.

Jones’ professional researcher found a Barthold Freitagh who was a freeholder at Rentorf Number 46, as shown in the Land Tax Register of 1618. He is probably our ancestor and husband of the woman who was buried on 19 April 1660. Proof of direct-line descendancy is lacking, but the fact of Herman’s inheritance of the property is near-certain evidence of a relationship.

One “Dittrich Freitach” held the property when it was taxed in 1590 before it descended to Barthold; again, there is a good possibility that he was Barthold’s father. While this seems to be proof of a relationship, a father-son relationship is not proven.

Parents have not been identified.

3584 — Henrich GUMBEL was the son of Heinrich Gumbel and his wife, and was probably born at Niedermollrich, Hessen. He was dwelling at Niedermollrich when his death was recorded in the church record. The date given, 24 November 1666, may his death date or burial date, or both.

Other than the fact that his wife’s name was Eulalia, and the couple had at least one child, nothing further is known.

Father is Number 7168.

3585 — Eulalia __________, whose maiden name is not known, was born about 1616.

She was the wife of Henrich Gumbel and bore him one known child.

See the second footnote to the biography of Person Number 55.
Her death date, 15 February 1685, is found in the Niedermöllrich death register, but it is uncertain whether this is her death date or burial date, or both.

Parents have not been identified.

3586 – Johannes STIEGLITZ, for whom no birth information has been found, married Anna, whose maiden name is unknown, about 1640, and the couple had one known child.

He died in Niedermöllrich; the date in the death register is 18 March 1673, but whether that is his death date or burial date is unknown.

Parents have not been identified.

3587 – Anna _________ was born about 1616, but nothing is known about her parents or birthplace.

She married Johannes Stieglitz about 1640, and bore him at least one child.

She died at Niedermöllrich. The date in the death register is 26 July 1693, and that may be her death date or burial date or both.

Parents have not been identified.

3588 – Werner PAUL was born about 1618. Birthplace and parents’ names are unknown.

He married Anna Lötzerich 27 August 1650 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, and the couple became the parents of one known child.

His death is recorded at Niedermöllrich, with date of 1 September 1684. That may be his death date or burial date or both.

Parents have not been identified.

3589 – Anna LÖTZERICH was born about 1624, probably at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Otto Lötzerich and his wife, whose name is unknown.

She married Werner Paul 27 August 1650 and bore at least one child to him.

Her death is recorded in Niederrmöllrich under date of 25 March 1691. This may be her death date, funeral and burial date, or both.

Father is Number 7178.
3590 – Johannes CLOBES was born, probably at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, about 1625.

He married Catharina Ebert 19 July 1649 at Niedermöllrich, and at least one child was born the couple.

Johannes death is recorded in the Niedermöllrich church record on 8 April 1701. It is uncertain whether this is the date of his death or of his funeral and burial.

Parents have not been identified.

3591 – Catharina EBERT was born about 1625, probably at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Tile Ebert and his wife, whose name is unknown.

She married Johannes Clobes on 19 July 1649 at Niedermöllrich, and bore him at least one child.

She died in Niedermöllrich; the date in the church register 27 February 1677 may be her death date, funeral date, or both.

Father is Number 7182.

3592 – Herman BÜCHNER was born about 1617. He married Gertrud Pippert at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, on 24 June 1652. The couple had one known child.

Herman died at Niedermöllrich. The date recorded, 29 June 1684, may be his death date or funeral date.

It is possible that there is a connection to Hans Büchner, Person Number 3596 below, but I have not made the link.

Parents have not been identified.

3593 – Gertrud PIPPERT was born about 1627, almost certainly at Niedermöllrich, Hessen to Curt Piepert and his wife Catharina, whose maiden name is unknown. She was confirmed in 1640.

She married Herman Büchner at Niedermöllrich on 24 June 1652, and bore one known child to him.

Gertrud’s death is found in the Niedermöllrich church record. The date, 22 October 1678, may be her death date or funeral date.

Parents are Numbers 7186 and 7187.
3594 – Hans PETER dwelt in Harle, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

3596 – Hans BÜCHNER was born about 1621. He married Anna, whose maiden name is unknown, and their marriage date and place is also unknown. The couple had at least one child.

Hans’ death is recorded in the Niedermöllrich, Hessen church record under date of 22 April 1684. This may be the death date or the funeral date.

If there is a connection between Hans and the Herman Büchner who is Person Number 3592 above, the link has not been found.

Parents have not been identified.

3597 – Anna _______ is the name of Hans Büchner’s wife, but her maiden name is not known. She was born about 1625, and probably married Hans before 1652; one known child was born to the couple.

Anna died at Niedermöllrich, and her death is recorded in the church record. The date given, 20 June 1685, may be her death date or funeral date.

Parents have not been identified.

3598 – Johannes FIEGEHENN (elsewhere Feigehenn) was born about 1622 in Lohre, Hessen.

He married Catharina before 1660; the marriage date and place are unknown, as is her maiden name. The couple had at least one child.

He died at Lohre. The date recorded, 7 August 1681, may be his death date or funeral date.

Parents have not been identified.

3599 – Catharina ________ was the wife of Johannes Fiegehenn. Nothing is known about her birth date or place, or her parents. She bore at least one child to him.

Her death is recorded on 16 August 1688 at Lohre, Hessen. It is uncertain whether that is her death date or burial date.

Parents have not been identified.
3600 – Hans GRIESEL probably died about 1637. His wife was Catharina, and the couple had at least one child.

Parents have not been identified.

3601 – Catharina ________ was the wife of Hans Griesel, and bore him one known child.

Widowed about 1637, she married Hans Göbel on 24 June 1638. He died in 1660, and she remained his widow until her death, which is recorded in the Niedermöllrich death register on 6 June 1682. This date may be the death date or the date of her funeral and burial.

Parents have not been identified.

3602 – Adam DIEDRICH was a farmer in Deute, Hessen. He was probably born about 1604, married his wife Catharina about 1630, and died about 1689.

Parents have not been identified.

3603 – Catharina ________ was the wife of Adam Diedrich, to whom she bore one known child. Her death is recorded at Deute, Hessen, on 3 May 1689.

Parents have not been identified.

3604 – Otto HANSMANN died at Niedermöllrich, Hessen. The date recorded, 17 May 1660, may be his death date, funeral date, or both.

He and his wife, whose name is unknown, had at least one child.

The death of “Hans Hansmann’s widow” is recorded at Niedermöllrich on 13 September 1665. There is likelihood of a family connection; the woman could be Otto’s mother or stepmother, but the link is too tenuous to make any assumption.

Parents have not been identified.

3606 – Henrich GUMBEL’s biography is printed as Person Number 3584 above.

3607 – Eulalia _________’s biography is printed as Person Number 3585 above.

3612 – Henrich GUMBEL’s biography is printed as Person Number 3584 above.
3613 – Eulalia _________’s biography is printed as Person Number 3585 above.

3614 – Johannes STIEGLITZ’ biography is printed as Person Number 3586 above.

3615 – Anna _________’s biography is printed as Person Number 3587 above.

3652 – George ITHAL was born about 1601, probably in Lohre, Hessen. His occupation was “Schöffe”. Thode⁵⁰⁹ defines this, “member of (small claims) court; (lay) juryman; councilman”.

His wife’s name was Elisabeth, but no marriage information has been found. The couple had a child born about 1642.

George’s death is recorded at Lohre, with the date 25 February 1691. This could be the death date or funeral date.

Parents have not been identified.

3653 – Elisabeth _________ was the wife of George Ithal. She bore one known child to him about 1642.

Elisabeth died on 11 May 1675, or perhaps that is the burial date, at Lohre, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

3654 – Georg LÖBER lived at Wabern, Hessen. He was married and had a child born in 1654, perhaps other children.

Parents have not been identified.

3656 – Herberg BRENGER was born about 1615. The surname is spelled various ways, and ‘Herberg’ is questioned by Mrs. Habenicht⁵¹⁰, who found his occupation, “der Hirte”. Thode⁵¹¹ defines this as “herdsman; clergyman”, and I’m unable to make a guess about which definition applied to him.

Nothing is known about his wife, but he was married, with a child born in 1654.

---


⁵¹⁰ See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.

He died at the age of 64 years on 26 July 1679 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

3658 – Johannes MEYER was probably born at Elben, Hessen, but no birth data have been found.

His marriage to Trina Korrumpf took place on 10 June 1652 at Obervorschütz, Hessen. The couple had at least one child.

He died at Obervorschütz; the date recorded is 20 September 1681, and it may be his death date or burial date.

Parents have not been identified.

3659 – Trina KORRUMPFF was born at Dissen, Hessen to Jost Korrumpf and his wife.

She married Johannes Meyer at Obervorschütz, Hessen on 10 June 1652, and bore him one known child.

Trina died at Obervorschütz. The date written in the record, 20 January 1696, may be her death date or funeral date.

Father is Number 7318.

3660 – Johannes BORNKESSEL was born at Mosheim, Hessen to Hans Bornkessel and his wife Gelen, née Hofmann.

He married Anna Ditmar on 15 November 1649 at Obervorschütz, Hessen. The couple had at least one child.

He died at Obervorschütz, the recorded date of 4 September 1671 being either his death date or burial date.

Parents are Numbers 7320 and 7321.

3661 – Anna DITMAR was born at Obervorschütz, Hessen to Hans Ditmar and his wife, whose name is not known.

She bore one known child to Johannes Bornkessel, whom she married at Obervorschütz on 15 November 1649.

Anna died at Obervorschütz. The date written in the death register, 23 December 1685, may
be her death date or burial date.

Father is Number 7322.

3662 - Caspar DIELING was the son of Cyriacus Dieling, and lived at Böddiger, Hessen. He was a "Kirchenältester", which Thode defines, "church elder; presbyter; member of the church council".

I have a name, Elisabeth Wambach, on file for Caspar's wife, but it is not in the genealogy supplied by Mrs. Habenicht and I don't know where I got it. Her database contains the information that Caspar married before 1669. He and his wife had one known child.

Caspar died at Böddiger on 17 June 1702.

Father is Number 7324.

3663 - Elisabeth WAMBACH is the name I have in my records as the wife of Caspar Dieling. I did not invent this name, but it is not in Mrs. Habenicht's database, and I don't know where I got it. Elisabeth's parents were Jacob Wambach and his wife Elsa.

Elisabeth married Caspar Dieling before 1669, and bore at least one child to him.

She died at Böddiger, Hessen on 10 December 1715.

Parents are Numbers 7326 and 7327.

3688 - Simon WICKE was born about 1599, but birthplace and parents' names are not known.

He married Cecelia, maiden name unknown, and she died on 24 March 1654. Issue from that marriage is unknown to me.

On 9 October 1654, at Niedermollrich, he married our ancestress, Catharina, maiden name unknown, the widow of Heinrich Damen of Haddamar, Hessen. The couple had one known child.

He died at Niedermollrich, Hessen; the church record contains the date of 30 October 1679, which may be his death date or burial date.

Parents have not been identified.

513 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
514 See the excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
3689 – Catharina ________, whose maiden name is unknown, was born about 1612.

Her first known marriage was to Heinrich Damen, and they lived at Haddamar, Hessen. Issue from that marriage is unknown.

She married Simon Wicke, a widower, at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, on 9 October 1654, and bore at least one child to him.

She died at Niedermöllrich; the date recorded, 6 February 1688, may be her death date or burial date.

Parents have not been identified.

3690 – Curt RITTE was the master miller at the “Bickmühle” in Dorla, Hessen.

He married Elisabeth Riedemann on 2 October 1645 in Obervorschütz, Hessen. The couple had at least one child.

Curt died on 28 October 1669 at Dorla; the date could be his burial date.

Parents have not been identified.

3691 – Elisabeth RIEDEMANN was the wife of Curt Ritte in Dorla, Hessen. Information about her birth and parentage has not been found; Mrs. Habenicht's database contains the fact that she was from Schwartzenberg.

Widowed in 1669, she married Johannes Ebert on 14 February 1678 in Obervorschütz, Hessen.

Mrs. Habenicht did not find death information for Elisabeth.

Parents have not been identified.

3692 – Tiele DAM (elsewhere Diele) lived at Obervorschütz, Hessen.

He married Anna Weber on 16 July 1648 at Obervorschütz, and the couple had one known child.

He died after 1686.

Parents have not been identified.

515 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 28.
3693 – Anna WEBER was the wife of Tiele Dam. The couple married on 16 July 1648 at Obervorschütz, Hessen, and had one known child.

Anna’s death is recorded on 12 January 1686 at Obervorschütz. It is uncertain whether that is the date of her death or of her funeral and burial.

Parents have not been identified.

3694 – Ebert OTTO was born about 1635.

He married Anna Scheffer on 18 September 1661 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, and the couple had one known child.

The date found in the Niedermöllrich death register, 25 November 1681, may be his death or burial date.

Parents have not been identified.

3695 – Anna SCHEFFER was born 6 June 1644 at Niedermöllrich, Hessen, to Adam Scheffer and his wife Margaretha nee During. She was confirmed in 1655.

On 18 September 1661, at Niedermöllrich, she married Ebert Otto, and bore one known child to him.

Anna died at Niedermöllrich. The date in the church record is 21 December 1699; this may be her death date or burial date.

Parents are Numbers 7390 and 7391.

3716 – Heinz EICHMANN was born in 1620 and died 17 February 1708 at Niederaula, his age being stated as 87 years and 10 months. He was married on 22 October 1696 at Niederaula; his wife’s name is not stated in the church records; the couple had 9 or 10 children.

Parents have not been identified.

3718 – Jacob WENDEL was born about 1632 and died 6 February 1709 in Niederaula at the age of 76½ years. His wife was Katharina; the couple married about 1667 and had 4 known children. I believe his occupation is given as dressler, which means joiner or carpenter.

Parents have not been identified.

3719 – Katharina ________ whose maiden name is not known, was born about 1631
and died at Niederaula on 30 April 1707 at the age of 76 years.

She married Jacob Wendel and bore him at least one child.

Parents have not been identified.

3728 – Anthonius BIEBER was born in 1642 at Niederaula, and married there on 29 November 1664 to Hütt or Gütt Weismüller. He is the earliest Besitzer listed at the Erbgut Bieber, evidently having taken charge the same year as his marriage. The couple had 10 children.

On 17 June 1694 he married Ursula Scheffer; no children are mentioned for this couple. He died on 27 January 1712 at Niederaula, and was buried there.

Parents have not been identified.

3729 – Hütt WEISSMÜLLER was the wife of the Erbgutbesitzer Anthonius Bieber. Her birth, confirmation and death records are not found in Niederaula parish. She married in 1664 and bore 10 known children.

Her death occurred before 17 June 1694 when her widower remarried.

Parents have not been identified.

3732 – Johannes or Jost ZOLL’s name is written in the margin of the Niederaula family register, where Johann Barthol Zoll, who seems to be his son, married in 1701.

Parents have not been identified.

3734 – Jost GIESEL is mentioned as living at Kalkobes, Hessen, on the family register of the Niederaula parish where his daughter Magdalena was living. She was the wife of Johann Barthol Zoll whom she married in 1701.

Parents have not been identified.

THIRTEENTH GENERATION

4932 – John CRAWFORD was born about 1600 in Kilbirnie, Ayrshire, Scotland. He married there to a woman whose name is unknown; they had one known child, a son David,
who came to Jamestown, Virginia with his father in 1643. Mr. Lampkin is certain that John is the son of Malcolm Crawford and his wife, Margaret Cunningham.

Mr. Lampkin states that John had supported the Stewarts, and came with other Cavaliers to escape persecution in the revolution in England led by Oliver Cromwell.

Little is known of John’s life in Virginia until 1676, when he was killed in Bacon’s Rebellion. This event, as it concerns John, needs more study. John Crawford may have been killed as a result of the fire when Bacon returned from the Frontier to burn Jamestown. It seems highly unlikely that he would have been wielding a musket or a sword at the age of 76. I found a list of thirteen rebels executed by Governor Berkeley, and John Crawford was not among them.

He doubtless is buried near the place where he died in Virginia, but nothing further is known.

Research: Mr. Lampkin published a book in 1970 called Descendants of John Crawford, 1643. He relates that he joined organizations such as the Magna Carta Barons and the Sovereign Colonial Society of Royal Descent, apparently not so much because he wanted to be a member but to see if his research would hold up to scrutiny by those groups. He also mentions that Crawford descendants have the right to belong to the Descendants of Crusaders, although he apparently did not join that organization himself.

Lampkin seems to have accomplished his goal of getting past the membership committees, and although he doesn’t cite his modern (Seventeenth Century) sources, he gives a grand overview of the royal lines brought to the Crawfords by Margaret Cunningham, believed to be John Crawford’s mother. It is the absence of the burned Kilbirnie church records that prevents proving John’s parentage.

In addition, the Hessian Genealogical Society published in its newsletter Hessische Familienkunde the pedigree of Constance of Provence (986 - 25 July 1032), ancestress of the thirteen Capetian kings of France who ruled from 1031 until 1328. The release of this information became the first public and documented display of her reputed descent “...from the Egyptian Pharaohs via the counts of Flanders, princes of Aries, lower nobility of Armenia, and royalty of Persia back to the XIXth and later Egyptian dynasties”, according to Rev. Dennis A. Castens, who supplied the article to The Palatine Immigrant. If indeed Margaret Cunningham is John Crawford’s mother, our line ‘hooks on’ around the year 1000.

---

516 See biography of Person Number 2466.
517 The farmers on the Virginia Frontier, led by Nathaniel Bacon, revolted against Gov. Berkeley, who had refused to commission Bacon to fight against the Indians who occupied land wanted by the Frontier farmers. Berkeley opposed any attack on friendly Indians who acted as a buffer against Indians further in the interior. Bacon and his forces entered Jamestown and forced Berkeley to issue the commission. Bacon then fought against the Indians, and when Berkeley raised an army against the rebels, Bacon burned Jamestown.
to this ancestry back to the Pharaohs, with Ann of Russia, the daughter of Jaroslav the Halt, whose wife was a daughter of Olaf the Bald. Ann married King Henry I of France, whose parents were Queen Constance (Constance of Provence) and King Robert II of France.

I had fully intended to print here the ancestry of John Crawford, assuming (and the EPARC has received information stating that the link from John to his parents cannot be proved, notwithstanding the fact that Mr. Lampkin joined hereditary organizations on the strength of his research) that John is the son of Malcolm Crawford and Margaret Cunningham. I began entering his data into a genealogy program, but when I began to try to figure out how to transfer it to this book, I realized that it was going to print to hundreds of pages, and I hadn't even begun to get to the line backward from Constance of Provence.

Therefore, those of his descendants who wish to explore this alleged royal ancestry will be obliged to seek information in the Lampkin and Hessian Genealogical Society treatises and elsewhere. Documentation for our connection may one day be discovered.

4954 – William LAWRENCE has been said to have been born in England about 1625, but it was certainly earlier than that, because Charles City County, Virginia court records state that his daughter Ann was about 28 years old in 1660. Supporting that document, Ann is known to have been married and borne a child to her first husband Thomas Moody, been widowed and remarried by 1656. A 1605-10 birth is more reasonable for William. The surname seems to be English and the family dwelt among the English in Charles City County.

When orphans of William Lawrence are listed in the court records, Ann is mentioned first, implying that she was the eldest. This points to a marriage for William and Mary, whose maiden surname is unknown, about 1630. It is not known whether they married in England or after they arrived in Virginia.

Sheep being among William’s possessions, disputes about which made their way into the court minutes, it may be assumed that he owned a plantation. He and his wife received land grants for importation of people into the Colony, and may have owned a great deal of land before he died. Mrs. Haden addresses the importation issue in the biography of Person Number 2477.

William is named among those receiving land when the April, 1656 session of the Court convened. Sometimes these grants were posthumous, however, and it is not certain that he was living on that date. He died before February 1657/58, because the Court minutes contain this paragraph, Ms. Fleet’s abstract:

“Walter Salter ord to pay 1000 lb tobo for nonperformance of terms of lease granted by Mr Wm Lawrence ‘to Edward Fitzgerald who married the relict of the sd Lawrence’.”

Mention of probate of William Lawrence’s will has not been found, but there must have

520 Early Poindexters in America Research Committee.
been a will, because the court minutes order Fitzgerald to pay Francis Redford two ewe lambs “according to the will of Mr. William Lawrence.”

Nothing is known about William’s death and burial.

4955 – Mary _______ was the wife of William Lawrence. She is said to have borne six children to him, but the names of only five are known to me.

She married William Lawrence about 1630 in England or in Virginia. Ann, believed to be their eldest child, was born about 1632. William died about 1656 or 1657, and she married Edward Fitzgerald before the Charles City Court convened on 3 February 1657/58.

Fitzgerald got into a dispute about sheep with Mary’s son-in-law, Francis Redford. Ms. Fleet found and this in the Charles City County court minutes of 3 June 1658; her abstract:

“Order that Edw. Fitzgerald pay to Francis Redford in right of his wife 2 ewe lambs according to the will of Mr. William Lawrence.”

The 4 October 1658 court minutes contain the following, Ms. Fleet’s abstract:

“Ordered that Edw. ffitzgarrall forthwith render and deliver unto ffrancis Redford for the use of Tho: Moody orphane nine breeding sheepe and one young ramme belonging to the sd Moody, with costs als exec.”

The dispute became so heated that the court ultimately appointed “Capt Thos Stegge and Mr. Steph: Hamelin to settle dif. betw. Edw. Fitzgerald and Francis Redford”. No mention is made about how their differences were settled.

During the October 1858 court, the estate of Arthur Lawrence, William and Mary’s son, was also mentioned. His personal estate was to be inherited by his surviving brothers and sisters, but his lands were to go to his eldest brother only.

Later in the same session’s minutes the apology printed in Ann (Lawrence) Redford’s biography, was ordered by the court.

Edward Fitzgerald was dead before the Charles City County court convened on 3 February 1658/59. Ms Fleet abstracts the minutes (some punctuation would have been helpful, but the clerk used none):

“Com. of Admr. to Mary ffitzgerrald widdo of the estate of her late husband Edward ffitzgerrald decd.

Now twice widowed, Mary had married Peter Plummer by the time the court convened on 10 September 1659. The following appears in the minutes—Ms. Fleet’s abstract:
“Whereas Arthur the orphane of mr Wm Lawrence dec’d having certeine chattels in his mothers hands to be de’r’d at his full age and departed this life in his minority not possest of any the premisses; Itt is therefore the opinion of this Co’rt that the sd chattels do and shall belong to Peter Plumer who married the relict and ex’rix of the sd mr Lawrence.

Plummer appeared in the same court in a dispute with John Drayton, and Mr. Tho Drewe was appointed to settle their differences.

The February 1662 court of Charles City County mentions a deed of gift dated 3 November 1652, in which John Freme deeded to Arthur Lawrence, William Lawrence and James Lawrence, sons of William and Mary, 300 acres, “which Land is parte of a tract of Land Containing 1198 [acres] by patent granted to me Septr: 1, 1643: up fflorida hundred creeke this three hundred acres of [land] Lyeth betwenee the Crosse Creekes Mouth and the runn which come[s] into fflorida hundred Creeke and runneth South and by east unto the woods”. Thomas Moody was a witness to this 1652 document.

William Lawrence (Jr.) assigns his whole interest in the above land to William Panton 20 January 1662/63.

The matter seems to be finalized on 3 April 1663, when William Lawrence makes an “indenture” with William Panton, mentioning this same land.

Some believe that Mary Lawrence, after Peter Plummer’s death (or at some time when she was without a husband) was also married to one John Freme. There is a Mary, widow of John Freme, mentioned in the court minutes, but before Lawrence died. It seems unlikely that he was a first husband, because all of Mary’s children seem to be with Lawrence. This issue requires study. I found nothing to support a marriage for Mary after Plummer’s death, but it is certainly possible that someone else has done so and has failed to publicize his sources. I suggest the possibility that Mary was a sister to John Freme, and he deeded this land to her sons, his nephews. I have no proof.

Ms. Fleet has abstracted existing fragments of Charles City County court orders between 1650 and 1696. This entry is found under date of 19 January 1650:

“page 274: Abstract. Entry marked out ‘this order is void being mistaken in the entry’. It is an order that admr be granted to Mary Plum’er on her husband’s est, who died intestate on testimony of Mr Henry Randolph.”

It seems likely to me that Peter Plummer did predecease Mary, and the entry was simply made in the wrong ledger book, voided, and rewritten in a book that is now lost. It is possible, of course, that this man was Peter’s father or uncle whose wife’s name was also Mary.

Nothing is known about Mary’s death and burial.

521 Beverly Fleet made this comment at Peter Plummer’s name in the index: “If you had ever known a man with this name you would never forget him.”
Parents have not been identified.

5696 – Peter ________ was the father of Gunnar Peterson or Petersson. His name is known only because of the Swedish patronymic naming custom; his son, whose name Dr. Craig found in documents relating to the Swedish settlement in North America, was Peterson (Peter’s son).

Parents have not been identified.

6466 – Barthold MEYER ZU HEERSE was born at Heerse, Schöctmar Parish, Lippe-Detmold.

He married Anna, perhaps née Meyer zu Ohrsen, before 1541. He was “Amtsmeyer”, a major farmer who enjoyed special rights.

Barthold died in 1584 at Heerse.

Parents have not been identified.

6467 – Anna, whose surname is uncertain but may have been Meyer zu Ohrsen, was born at Ohrsen Farm Number 1, Lage parish, Lippe-Detmold.

She was the wife of Barthold Meyer zu Heerse, and bore him at least one child.

She died between 1601 and 1604.

Parents have not been identified.

6472 – Bartold MEYER ZU VOLKHAUSEN was likely born at Volkhausen (otherwise Volckhausen), Schöctmar Parish, Lippe-Detmold, Germany.

He married before 1526 at Schöctmar, and died after 1568 at Reetzen (Retzen) Farm Number 1, Schöctmar Parish.

Parents have not been identified.

6473 – Ilsa SCHIERNEKER was the wife of Bartold Meyer zu Volkhausen. She bore at least one child to him. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

6748 – Christoph MEIER TO BARCHUSEN was born about 1539 in Barchusen,

\[522 \text{ "to" is apparently an early German rendition of the modern preposition ‘zu’.}\]
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner

by Lila Niemann Garner

Lippe to Jobst Meier to Barchusen and his wife Ilse or Ilsabel Tofall, and was likely baptized at Oerlinghausen.

He is described as Amtsmeier, a major farmer with special rights. He married Catharina Tihlen about 1566, and the couple had two sons. Although the Barckhausen Website gives a death date of 1584, she is believed to have died by 1570, when he remarried. A divorce is possible, of course, but extremely unlikely, because the couple did have children.

About 1570, Christoph married our ancestress, a woman whose maiden name was Frohne, who bore him one son and one daughter. She died about 1593.

He took a third wife, name unknown, in 1593; no children were born to the couple.

Christoph died about 1608 at Barchusen, and is likely buried at Oerlinghausen.

Siblings, surname **Meier to Barchusen**

- Johann
- [Christoph]

  Susanne, married Jobst Meier tho Wistinghausen

Halvesibling, surname **Meier to Barchusen**, from his father’s marriage to __________

  Bechterdissen

  Adolph, Ratsherr (town councilman)

Parents are Numbers 13496 and 13497.

**6749** – __________ FROHNE, wife of Christoph Meier to Barchusen, was born about 1540 in Menkhausen, near Barchusen, Lippe.

She married Barchusen about 1570 and bore a son and a daughter to him.

She died about 1593 and is likely buried at Oerlinghausen.

Parents have not been identified.

**6764** – Jasper KRULL was born about 1549 to Martin Krull and his wife Mettke née Begemann, a middle-class family in Lemgo, Lippe, Germany. His Information from Kenter; see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

He is said to have come to Bosingfeld with his father around 1550 while he was still in diapers.

Jasper had one son and six daughters with his first wife, Ilsabein née Delendorf, our ancestress, whom he married in 1573.

From his second (1615) marriage to Christine Kellermann he had two children.
The reason is unclear to me, but Jasper Krull was also called Jasper and Caspar Kramer (otherwise Cramer) and Johann Kramer. It is possible that he was using farm names, but that seems unlikely, because he was involved with occupations other than farming.

Kenter (translation by Veronika Timpe):

“In 1585/86, Jasper Krull alias Kramer bought with Johann Kenter 2 Molt and 3 bushels of peas for thirteen and a half Thalers. The following years, they bought products like barley, buckwheat etc.”

“Henrich Kenter couldn’t maintain his inherited property. In 1585 he had already sold a building site to Johann Kramer who then built a house on it. In the Salt book of 1591 house and farm were mentioned as belonging to Kramer and Krull. The entry says: Jasper Krull gives to our lord one mark [old currency] additionally to the treasury of Michaelis, in addition to the Land treasury he hasn’t given anything yet. He gave taxes like the grass tax and money for his animals, gave no chickens, says he was free and had bought the house and farm of Kenter Henrich…”

“Later on it was written on the margin: he shall additionally give 5 Groschen [small coins].”

“Johann Kramer” etc. bought the building site from Henrich Kenter with the approval of our lord etc. “Said he was free and gives our lord the [proceeds from the?] wine selling.”

“[Upon purchasing land] they had the land measured by a surveyor who, for every single acre, got one penny. As a rent for the land…Krull had to pay four and a half bushels and also some other means of payments. From 1597/98 on, he had to pay this rent every year.”

Earl Simon and noble Lord of Lippe asks for his subjects to have the right to brew beer in a more economical way. Casper Cramer [Jasper Krull], Nolten etc. were brewers and belonged to the guild of brewers for whom he asked. They were instructed to adhere to the beer purity regulations. Casper Kramer had – besides the Hamlin inn – another pub that he brewed beer for. The petition stated here that they obviously wanted to levy a fine or punishment for him because he had two pubs.

Kenter.

After he bought Henrich Kenter’s possessions, Jasper Krull was a liberal brewer at the “Hamelnscher Krug” (inn where beer is served). That was confirmed by a special privilege from 24 May 1605, authorization for another Krug in Bösingfeld. Later on, Cord Krop was the liberal brewer in Kenter’s Krug. One part of this Krug was owned by Heinrich Müller. Everyone paid the shares of one half of the pub. Later on, Wissmann became the owner of Krop’s part, and Müller’s part became Freund’s. In 1663, Sonneborn native Johann Wissmann married Anna Lucia Krull, Krop’s widow. All the goods and the “Hamelnsche Krug” were possessed by Henrich Herrmann and Johann Henrich Freund in 1708. In order to an order of Detmold’s office 7 July 1620 to the district court judge of Sternberg, Paul Bissmarck, an investigation of the liberals was taken. They had to present the exhibits for the freedom of death claim. Bissmarck reported that Krull bought Kenter’s goods and that these were free of debts. In 1620, Tönnies Krull had already inherited the Krug of his father, Jasper Krull.

Jasper Krull died in 1615 at Bösingfeld.

523 While this makes little sense in modern culture, it is interesting from a historical perspective. Salt was such an important commodity that it was used for the payment of taxes; the English word ‘salary’ derives from the same root.

524 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844.
Parents are Numbers 13528 and 13529.

6765 – Ilsbein DEHLENDORF was born in 1550 in Linderbruch. She died before 1615, according to Kenter. See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

She married Jasper Krull about 1573 and bore him one son and six daughters.

She died about 1615.

Parents have not been identified.

6766 – Johann NUEBER was born to Michael Nueber and his wife Anna, née Krug, probably in Schrobenhausen, Bavaria, where Michael was Bürgermeister (Mayor), according to Kenter⁵²₅.

The reason for his move to Lippe is unclear, but Johann was later a citizen of Lügde and secretary to the Earl of Gleichen and Spiegelberg in Pyrmont.

He married Catharina Basse in Hameln on 7 May 1587. Death information is unknown to me.

Parents are Numbers 13532 and 13533.

6767 – Catharine BASSE was born to Jobst Basse and his wife Margarete née Hesehus in Hameln. She married Johann Nueber. Ancestry found in Kenter, the Bulle-Burchard research.

Parents are Numbers 13534 and 13535.

6768 – Reverend Moritz FREUND, Sr. was born to a Herr Freund and his wife, née Piderit.

He likely served churches in Lüdenhausen and elsewhere, and his death is recorded in Langenholzhausen in 1638.

The name of his wife is not known.

Parents are Numbers 13536 and 13537.

6774 – Tönnes KRULL’s biography is printed as Person Number 3382 in Generation⁵²⁵ See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844.
6775 – Agnes NUEBER’s biography is printed as Person Number 3383 in Generation Twelve.

6780 – Reverend Albertus NEÜWALD otherwise NIEWALD was born about 1579-1583, presumably in Lippe. His parents’ names are not known. He is believed to have had a sister, because reference has been found to his brother-in-law, Konrad Niebecker (otherwise Neubecker), who was legally both doctor and the Earl of Lippe’s chancellor in Detmold. Another one of his relatives was Hermann Kenter senior, who was Kirchendeche (a church officer) under Neüwald.

Neüwald was described as a “junior civil servant” when he succeeded Anton Tospann as Bötingfeld’s pastor in 1606. Tospann, a Lutheran, resigned because he didn’t want to adopt the Reformed teachings.

Pastor Neüwald married Margarete Krull, and the couple is known to have had four sons and a daughter, perhaps more children.

Kurt Riebe, a member of Lippe-Forum, an Internet Lippe discussion group, found the following:

Salbuecher der Grafschaft Lippe from 1614-1620, Salbuch des Amtes Sternberg von etwa 1614, mentioning Böwingfeld Kleine Kotters (small cottagers), page 356, entry 2629, referring to Jasper Krull, that he is giving “3 Schfl. Haberen” to Pastor Niewalt.

Jasper Krull, of course, was Neüwald’s father-in-law. ‘Haberen’ is a rather obsolete form of the word Hafer, meaning oats. Riebe estimates that a Lippische Scheffel might be at least twenty kilograms.

During the Thirty Years War, 1618-1648, Neüwald certainly carried heavy responsibilities.

Excursus: In spite of war conditions, a bronze churchbell was cast for Böingfeld in 1633. In use today, it carries the inscription,

"Dextra Dei nos proteget"  
[The right hand of God protects us]

ANNO 1633 ALBERTUS NEÜWALT PASTOR

MESTER JOHAN KLEIMANN ZU LEMGO"

(Kleimann, of Lemgo, was the master metalsmith who cast the bell.)

The Bövingfeld pastor told me during the summer of 2005 that the cemetery at one time surrounded the church, and that Pastor Neüwald and his wife, along with hundreds of other
Bösinfelders, are buried there.

The pastor printed some church history for me, and included a sketch of the present church. So many changes have been made over the years, however, that it likely bears no resemblance to the structure that was in place during Neüwald’s tenure as its pastor; therefore, I have not included the sketch as an illustration.

The old, wooden church in Bösinfeld, the earliest parts of which dated from 1424, sustained fire damage during the Thirty Years War, and rebuilding began in 1633. The chancel is believed to have been retained from somewhat earlier, perhaps from the Catholic time.

* * *

About 1652, Johannes Reusseus arrived to serve as Neüwald’s Adjunctus, an assistant to whom Neüwald was entitled because of his advancing age. Reusseus, who married Neüwald’s daughter Anna Agneta, wrote the earliest surviving church records for the parish. He succeeded to the pastorate upon Neüwald’s death.

Pastor Neüwald died on 28 May 1657, having served the parish of Bösinfeld for fifty-one years and thirty-one weeks, according to his death entry in the Bösinfeld churchbooks. He was 78 years old.

Parents have not been identified.

6781 – Margarethe KRULL was born at Bösinfeld about 1578 to Jasper Krull and his wife Ilsabein nee Dehlendorf.

She married Albertus Neüwald, perhaps about 1610, and is believed to have borne him three sons and one daughter, possibly other children.

Kenter526:

On November, 10th 1666, Margareta Krull, the widow of parish pastor Albert Neuwald, demanded that Hermann Kenter be allowed to brew for her when it was her turn to do so. From various cities, reports were obtained concerning her demand. Although Margareta Krull possessed one of the oldest brew-privileges of Bösinfeld, she could not brew by herself. She did not have the products to do so. It is true that the brewers shared a can they brewed with, but every single brewer had to possess the other products by him or herself. Originally, there had been two free brewers in Bösinfeld. But later on, the number of free brewers increased. According to files of Sternberg’s office, every year, the brewers paid taxes for the beer (from 1678 on).

I have been unable to find out what action was taken on her demand.

Widowed thirteen years before, she died on 16 December 1670 at the age of ninety-two.

Siblings, surname Krull

526 See the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844.
Tönnies, married Agnes Nueber; issue
[Margarethe]
Catharina, married Arend Bertram
Anna, married Heinrich Knese; issue
Agnesa, married first Nikodemus Billerbeck; married second Anton Hespferdt(?)
Ermgard, married Meister Hans Ebell or Bernd Steinhage (or both?)
Elsabein, married Johann Bunte

Parents are Numbers 13562 and 13563.

6884 – Heinrich FREVERT was buried 19 December 1678 at Hensdorf, Lüdenhausen Parish, Lippe-Detmold; he is described in the churchbook death entry as “The old Heinrich Frevert” (my translation). His age is not stated. His wife had been buried just six days earlier. There is no proof that he is ‘our’ Heinrich, but the very small population at that time makes it seem very likely.

Parents have not been identified.

6885 –  the wife of Heinrich Frevert of Hensdorf was buried 13 December 1678 at Lüdenhausen, Lippe-Detmold. No churchbook entry tells her name, nor is her death age given. The small population at that time makes it seem unlikely that a Frevert couple other than our Arndt’s parents would have been living in the community.

Parents have not been identified.

6886 – Johan HOMBERG was buried 19 April 1672 at Lüdenhausen, Lippe-Detmold. He is linked to his daughter Catherine, our ancestress, by mention in her marriage record of 14 September 1645. Nothing further is known.

Parents have not been identified.

6887 –  the wife of Johan Homberg was buried 29 April 1658 at Lüdenhausen. Her own name was not stated in the Lüdenhausen, Lippe-Detmold death entry, nor was her age.

Parents have not been identified.

7168 – Henrich GUMBEL died in Niedermöllrich, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

527 Person Number 3382 in this book.
Otto LÖTZERICH was born about 1599. He served as a Godfather in Niedermöllrich, Hessen, in 1661. He died in Zennern, Hessen 7 October 1687 at the age of 88 years.

Parents have not been identified.

Tile EBERT lived in Niedermöllrich, Hessen; he died before 1649.

Parents have not been identified.

Curt PIEPERT married Catharina before 1638; he died in Niedermöllrich, Hessen 5 July 1673.

Parents have not been identified.

Catharina, the wife of Curt Piepert, died 26 January 1661 in Niedermöllrich.

Parents have not been identified.

Andreas DIEDRICH resided in Deute, Hessen about 1628.

Parents have not been identified.

Henrich GUMBEL’s biography is printed as Person Number 7168 above.

Henrich GUMBEL’s biography is printed as Person Number 7168 above.

Jost KORRUMPH lived in Dissen, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

Hans BORNKESSEL lived in Mosheim, Hessen, before his marriage, was likely born in Mosheim. He married Gelen Hofmann 4 September 1627 in Obervorschütz, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

Gelen HOFMANN, the wife of Hans Bornkessel, was born in Obervorschütz.
Father is Number 14682.

7322 – Hans DITMAR lived in Obervorschütz, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

7324 – Cyriacus DIELING lived in Böddiger, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

7326 – Jacob WAMBACH lived in Wagenfurth, Hessen, died before 1679.

Parents have not been identified.

7327 – Elsa ____________, the wife of Jacob Wambach, was born about 1612. She died 27 November 1769 in Wagenfurth.

Parents have not been identified.

7390 – Adam SCHEFFER married Margaretha During 24 June 1638 in Niedermöllerich, Hessen. He died 2 January 1662 in Niedermöllerich.

Parents have not been identified.

7391 – Margaretha DURING otherwise DOERING, the wife of Adam Scheffer, died 29 October 1668 in Niedermöllerich.

Father is Number 14782.

FOURTEENTH GENERATION

13496 – Jobst MEIER TO BARCHUSEN was born about 1512 in Barchusen, Lippe, to Cord Meier to Barchusen and his wife, Sophie “Fige” née Tofall. He was baptized soon after his birth at Oerlinghausen. His occupation was Amtsmeier, a major farmer with special privileges.

Before 1529, at Oerlinghausen, he married our ancestress Ilse or Ilsabel Tofall. Her possible relationship to his mother is unknown to me. The couple had three known children.
After her death, he married a woman whose surname was Bechterdissen; she bore him one son. She was in Herford, Westfalen when she died in 1593.

Jobst died on 20 January 1575 in Uflen, Lippe, with burial on 22 January 1575 in Salzuflen (Bad Salzuflen 2006).

Siblings, surname MEIER TO BARCHUSEN

Ilse

__________, female, married a Menkhusen

__________, female, married George (Gerke) Meier tho Menkhusen

Adolph, Canonicus (priest)\(^{528}\)

[Jobst]

Johann

Parents are Numbers 26992 and 26993.

13497 – Ilse (Ilsabel) TOFALL was born about 1512 in Oerlinghausen or Barchusen, Lippe.

She married Jobst Meier to Barchusen before 1529 at Oerlinghausen, and bore him three known children.

She died about 1549-51 at Barchusen, and is buried at Oerlinghausen.

Parents have not been identified.

13528 – Martin KRULL was born about 1515-1520 in Lemgo, Lippe, Germany. He married Mettke Begemann in 1545 in Lemgo. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

13529 – Mettke BEGEMANN was born in 1515/1520 in Rinteln. Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Father is Number 27058.

\(^{528}\) Martin Luther nailed his Ninety-five Theses to the church door in Wittenberg in 1517 and organized the Lutheran church in 1522. Although its tenets were accepted throughout much of Germany, the spread of Lutheranism took many years, and Lippe and the surrounding regions remained Catholic for more than a century.
13532 — Michael NUEBER was probably born at Ried in Bayem (Bavaria), where his father, Hans Nueber lived with his wife, Margarete née Wendtlein.

Michael married Anna Krug, from the same region in Bavaria. At some time he served as Mayor of Schrobenhausen in Bavaria.

Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents are Numbers 27064 and 27065.

13533 — Anna KRUG was probably born at Schrobenhausen, Bavaria, to Wolfgang Krug and his wife, Anna Gerbelin. She married Michael Nueber. The couple lived at Schrobenhausen.

Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents are Numbers 27066 and 27067.

13534 — Jobst BASSE was a Knockenhauer, butcher, in Hameln. His wife was Margarete Hesehus.

Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

13535 — Margarete HESEHUS was born to Barthold Hesehus and his wife Margarete née Bulle of Herford.

She married Jobst Basse, and the couple lived in Hameln.

Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1681.

Parents are Numbers 27070 and 27071.

13536 — Herr FREUND was born about 1540. He married Frl. Piderit. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844.
Parents have not been identified.

13537 – Frl. PIDERIT was born about 1540 to Rev. Moritz Piderit and his wife, whose name is unknown. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844.

Father is number 27074.

13548 – Jaspar KRULL’s biography is printed as Person Number 6764 in Generation Thirteen.

13549 – Ilsabein DEHLENDORF’s biography is printed as Person Number 6765 in Generation Thirteen.

13550 – Johann NUEBER’s biography is printed as Person Number 6766 in Generation Thirteen.

13551 – Catharine BASSE’s biography is printed as Person Number 6767 in Generation Thirteen.

13562 – Jaspar KRULL’s biography is printed as Person Number 6764 in Generation Thirteen.

13563 – Ilsabein DEHLENDORF’s biography is printed as Person Number 6765 in Generation Thirteen.

14642 – Hans HOFMAN lived in Obervorschütz, Hessen.

Parents have not been identified.

14782 – Johannes DURING

Parents have not been identified.

FIFTEENTH GENERATION
26992 – Cord Meier zu Barchusen was born in Barchusen, Lippe, Germany in 1470, to Cord Meier zu Barchusen and his wife, whose name is unknown.

He married Sophie “Fige” Tofall in 1509 in Oerlinghausen, to which parish Barchusen belongs.

He died in December 1532 in Barchusen and was buried in Oerlinghausen.

Parents are 53984 and 53985.

26993 – Sophie “Fige” Tofall was born about 1475 in Lügde, Westfalen, Germany.

She married Cord Meier zu Barchusen in 1509, and bore him six known children.

She died after 1532 at Barchusen, and is buried in Oerlinghausen.

Parents have not been identified.

27058 – Jasper BEGEMANN was born in Rinteln. He died after 1564. He married Mettke Grotekop in 1515. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

27059 – Mettke GROTEKOP was born in 1490/1495 in Rinteln. She died after 1564. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents are Numbers 54118 and 54119.

27064 – Hans NUEBER. Hans married Margarete Wendtlein. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

27065 – Margarete WENDTLEIN. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.
27066 – Wolfgang KRUG. Wolfgang married Anna Gerbelin. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

27067 – Anna GERBELIN. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

27070 – Barthold HESEHUS. Barthold married Margarete Bulle. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

27071 – Margarete BULLE. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents are Numbers 54142 and 54143.

27074 – Rev. Moritz PIDERIT. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

27096 – Martin KRULL’s biography is printed as Person Number 13528 in Generation Fourteen.

27097 – Mettke BEGEMANN’s biography is printed as Person Number 13529 in Generation Fourteen.

27100 – Michael NUEBER’s biography is printed as Person Number 13532 in Generation Fourteen.

27101 – Anna KRUG’s biography is printed as Person Number 13533 in Generation Fourteen.
27102 – Jobst BASSE’s biography is printed as Person Number 13534 in Generation Fourteen.

27103 – Margarete HESEHUS’ biography is printed as Person Number 13535 in Generation Fourteen.

27124 – Martin KRULL’s biography is printed as Person Number 13528 in Generation Fourteen.

27125 – Mettke BEGEMANN’s biography is printed as Person Number 13529 in Generation Fourteen.

SIXTEENTH GENERATION

53984 – Cord MEIER ZU BARCHUSEN was born about 1445 to Hartwig Meiger van Barchusen and his wife, whose name is unknown, at Barchusen, Lippe, Germany.

He married about 1470, and had with his wife one known child.

He died about 1523, and is buried at Oerlinghausen.

Father is Number 107968.

53985 – __________, wife of Cord Meier zu Barchusen, was born about 1445, married Cord about 1470, and bore him one known child.

Parents have not been identified.

54118 – Hermann GROTEKOP was born about 1465-1470 in Rinteln. He married Alheit in 1490. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

54119 – Alheit __________. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
Parents have not been identified.

54142 – Henrich BULLE. Henrich married Ilsabe Vagedas. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents are Numbers 108284 and 108285.

54143 – Ilsabe VAGEDAS. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents are Numbers 108286 and 108287.

54194 – Jasper BEGEMANN’s biography is printed as Person Number 27058 in Generation Fifteen.

54195 – Mettke GROTEKOP’s biography is printed as Person Number 27059 in Generation Fifteen.

54200 – Hans NUEBER’s biography is printed as Person Number 27064 in Generation Fifteen.

54201 – Margarete WENDTLEIN’s biography is printed as Person Number 27065 in Generation Fifteen.

54202 – Wolfgang KRUG’s biography is printed as Person Number 27066 in Generation Fifteen.

54203 – Anna GERBELIN’s biography is printed as Person Number 27067 in Generation Fifteen.

54206 – Barthold HESEHUS’ biography is printed as Person Number 27070 in Generation Fifteen.

54207 – Margarete BULLE’s biography is printed as Person Number 27071 in Generation Fifteen.

54250 – Jasper BEGEMANN’s biography is printed as Person Number 27058 in Generation Fifteen.
54251 – Mettke GROTEKOP’s biography is printed as Person Number 27059 in Generation Fifteen.

SEVENTEENTH GENERATION

107968 – Hartwig MEIGER VAN BARCHUSEN was born at Barchusen about 1410 and baptized in the parish of Oerlinghausen, Lippe, Germany. His father was Martin Meiger van Barchusen, but his mother’s name is unknown.

He married about 1435, but his wife’s name is not known.

He died after 1497 at Barchusen, and was buried at Oerlinghausen.

Father is Number 215936.

108284 – Arndt BULLE. Arndt married Geske Struckholt. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

108285 – Geske STRUCKHOLT. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents are Numbers 216570 and 216571.

108286 – Herr VAGEDAS married Fräulein Wobbekinck. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

108287 – Fräulein WOBBEKINK. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Father is Number 216574.
108390 – Hermann GROTEKOP’s biography is printed as Person Number 54118 in Generation Sixteen.

108391 – Alheit_________’s biography is printed as Person Number 54119 in Generation Sixteen.

108414 – Henrich BULLE’s biography is printed as Person Number 54142 in Generation Sixteen.

108415 – Ilsabe VAGEDAS’ biography is printed as Person Number 54143 in Generation Sixteen.

108502 – Hermann GROTEKOP’s biography is printed as Person Number 54118 in Generation Sixteen.

108503 – Alheit_________’s biography is printed as Person Number 54119 in Generation Sixteen.

EIGHTEENTH GENERATION

215936 – Martin MEYGER THO BARCHUSEN was born about 1375 in Barchusen, parish of Oerlinghausen, Lippe.

He married about 1410 to a lady whose name is unknown, and they had one known child.

He died after 1435 at Barchusen, and is likely buried at Oerlinghausen.

Parents have not been identified.

216570 – Diderich STRUCKHOLT. Diderich married Alheid Merhoff. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

216571 – Alheid MERHOFF. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.
Parents have not been identified.

216574 – Beneke WOBBEKINCK. Information from Kenter: see the Excursus from the biography of Person Number 844 and the Bulle-Burchard research details in Kenter Explanation within the biography of Person Number 1691.

Parents have not been identified.

216828 – Arndt BULLE’s biography is printed as Person Number 108284 in Generation Seventeen.

216829 – Geske STRUCKHOLT’s biography is printed as Person Number 108285 in Generation Seventeen.

216830 – Herr VAGEDAS’ biography is printed as Person Number 108286 in Generation Seventeen.

216831 – Fräulein WOBBEKINCK’s biography is printed as Person Number 108287 in Generation Seventeen.

**NINETEENTH GENERATION**

433658 – Diderich STRUCKHOLT’s biography is printed as Person Number 216570 in Generation Eighteen.

433659 – Alheid MERHOFF’s biography is printed as Person Number 216571 in Generation Eighteen.

433662 – Beneke WOBBEKINCK’s biography is printed as Person Number 216574 in Generation Eighteen.

***
Notes:
Book One:

The Living Generations
(Generations One and Two)

The two brothers' four-generation pedigree chart is Appendix 1.

For reasons of privacy and the threat of identity theft, names only, no data, have been published on the Internet for these first two generations, all of whom are living (2007) except Person Number 2, Bennie Fay Garner.

This printed version is complete.
The Two Brothers, Thomas Earl Garner and Robert Paul Garner

October 1963, by an unknown Illinois photographer.

Tom left, age 3. Bob right, age about 2½ months.

13 November 1965, by an unknown Guam photographer.

Bob left, age 2.
Tom right, age 5.
FIRST GENERATION

1a – Thomas Earl GARNER son of Bennie Fay Garner and Lila Marie Niemann was born at nine o’clock a.m. Central Daylight Time on August 1960 at St. Elizabeth Hospital in Belleville, St. Clair County, Illinois. He weighed eight pounds, nine ounces and was twenty inches long. The family lived in the Cahokia Community at that time, with a mailing address at 143 Amelia Drive, East St. Louis, Illinois.

He was baptized by the Rev. Dr. Alfred F. Schroeder on 31 July 1961 at Christ United Church of Christ in Belleville. Sponsors were his father’s brother and his wife, Orvelle and Doris Mae (Wolfe) Gamer. He was confirmed at Friedens United Church of Christ in Seward, Nebraska on Palm Sunday, 7 April 1974, by the Rev. Robert Jeambey.

He was a not-very-happy infant and didn’t sleep well. After he learned to crawl, he was much more contented and became a happy, charming baby. Throughout his childhood, he was plagued by ear infections until the problem was solved by a tonsillectomy when he was about thirteen.

Tom began his school career at the Navy Kindergarten on the U.S. Naval Station, Guam. During the school year the Gamers moved to Long Beach, California where Tom finished Kindergarten and started First Grade. Before that school year was complete, the family moved to Seward, Nebraska, and Tom finished First Grade there. The family’s last move came during the summer of 1967, to Milford, Seward County, Nebraska, where Tom graduated from high school in 1978.

He attended Kearney State College (later The University of Nebraska at Kearney), during the fall semester of 1978, but decided very quickly that college was not for him. In January of 1979 he started work at the Farmland Co-op service station in Milford. He worked mostly in the tire department. In 1992 he became the manager of the service station, which included responsibilities for the petroleum department.

On a warm winter Saturday, 10 January 1981, at Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska, Tom married Susan Lorraine Jorgensen of Curtis, whom he had met while she was a student in the Commercial Art Department of Southeast Community College in Milford. Sue was born August 1960 at McCook, Red Willow County, Nebraska, the daughter of Loren Rasmus Jorgensen and Lorraine Regina nee Stohlmann. Appendix 2 outlines her ancestry.

Tom and Sue’s first child, Brandon Thomas Garner was born on February 1985 at 8:17 a.m. Central Standard Time at Memorial Hospital in Seward, Nebraska. He weighed eight pounds, six and three/fourths ounces, and was 22 inches long. He was baptized at Good Shepherd Lutheran Church, Tom and Sue’s church home in Milford, on 17 March 1985, by the Rev. David F. Burgess. Brandon was confirmed at Good

529 By the time Tom and Sue got married, Nebraska law permitted that a marriage license issued in any county was valid anywhere in Nebraska. Their license was issued in Seward, County.
Shepherd 9 May 1999, and graduated from Milford High School on 17 May 2003. When anyone looks at the list of his ancestors, it will appear that Brandon was named for his Great-great-great-great grandfather, Alexander Brandon Clingman, but the fact is that none of us knew about ABC, as we call him, until much later. Tom and Sue report that they just liked the name.

On December 1988 at 4:54 a.m. Central Standard Time, Lauren Renee Garner was born to Tom and Sue at Memorial Hospital in Seward. She weighed eight pounds six ounces, and was 21¼ inches long. She was named for her Grandfather Jorgensen, the spelling having been altered to be more feminine. She was baptized at home on a miserably cold day, 4 February 1989, by the Rev. Gregg Hein, the pastor of Good Shepherd Lutheran Church in Milford. She was confirmed at Good Shepherd on 18 May 2003. Her graduation from Milford High School will occur on 12 May 2007.

When Brandon was not quite a year old, Tom and Sue bought an older house at 512 Fifth Street in Milford, which has become a lovely home under their care; it is the only home Brandon remembers and the only home Lauren has ever had.

After the mergers of several nearby Cooperatives, Tom became the Energy Department Manager for Dorchester Cooperative in 2001. After another merger with a neighboring Cooperative he became the Energy Department Manager at Farmers Cooperative. His office is currently (2007) in Wilber, Nebraska. Sue is also employed by Farmers Cooperative, and her office is in Dorchester.

Sibling: Robert Paul Garner, Person 1b, page 695.

See Illustrations Number1a, including family, beginning on page 689.

Compiled with input from Tom.

530 Lauren's baptismal certificate states in error that she was baptized at the church.
Illustration Number 1a: Tom Garner, age one or two days, St. Elizabeth Hospital, Belleville, Illinois.

Illustration Number 1a: Tom Garner, First Grade, 1966, Hawaiian Gardens, California.

Illustration 1a: Tom Garner, Fourth Grade, 1969, Milford, Nebraska.

Illustration 1a: Tom Garner, 1978 Graduation picture, Milford High School, Milford, Nebraska.

Photo by Randy's Studio, Milford.
Illustration Number 1a: Tom Garner with his bride, Susan Lorraine Jorgensen, 10 January 1981, Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska.

Bill Willson Photography, North Platte.

Tom at the top, Brandon and Sue in the center, and Lauren underneath.

Photo by Randy’s Studio, Milford.
FIRST GENERATION

1b – Robert Paul Garner, son of Bennie Fay Garner and Lila Marie Niemann was born at 3:31 p.m. Central Daylight Time on August 1963 at St. Elizabeth Hospital in Belleville, St. Clair County, Illinois, weighing seven pounds, twelve ounces. He developed a breathing problem shortly after his birth as well as suffering a broken collarbone during delivery, but he recovered quickly and became a calm, contented infant.

Bob was baptized at Christ United Church of Christ in Belleville, Illinois on 8 December 1963 by the Rev. Dr. Alfred F. Schroeder; his sponsors were his father's brother and his wife, Orvelle “Pat” and Doris Mae (Wolfe) Garner. He was confirmed at Friedens United Church of Christ in Seward Nebraska by the Rev. Don D. Hartman on Palm Sunday, 19 March 1978. After more than twenty years of study, Bob formally converted to Judaism in May of 2001.

The family moved to Guam in 1964 and returned to the United States mainland in 1966. Bob attended a preschool while the family lived in Hawaiian Gardens (suburban Long Beach), California, and his Kindergarten through High School years were spent in Milford, Nebraska; he graduated from Milford High School in 1981. On 21 December 1985, he was graduated from the University of Nebraska at Lincoln with a Bachelor of Arts degree in Political Science.

Following college, he went to work as a civilian with the United States Department of Defense, where he continues to work (2007).

Bob married Sally Ruth Pitluck on 1 August 1987 at Pasadena United Methodist Church in Pasadena, Anne Arundel County, Maryland. Sally was born August 1957 at Spokane, Spokane County Washington, to Harry Harvey Pitluck and his wife Ruth Lucille, née Underwood. Sally is also employed by the Department of Defense. Appendix 3 outlines her ancestry.

Jacob Louis Garner was born to Bob and Sally on October 1992 at 5:04 a.m. Eastern Daylight Time, at Mercy Medical Center in Baltimore, Maryland. He weighed eight pounds, four-and-a-half ounces, and was 20½ inches long. Jacob was born on the Five-hundredth Anniversary of Columbus' discovery of the New World. He was called to the Torah as a Bar Mitzvah on Saturday, 15 October 2005 at Temple Beth Shalom in Arnold, Maryland, Rabbi Ari Goldstein officiating.

Joel Robert Garner was born to Bob and Sally at 11:25 p.m. Eastern Daylight Time on October 1993, at Mercy Medical Center in Baltimore, Maryland. He weighed six pounds three ounces, and was 18¼ inches long; he was about five weeks premature. On Saturday, 7 October 2006, Joel was called to the Torah as a Bar Mitzvah.

531 The sponsors were unable to be present and were represented by Mr. and Mrs. Glenn Bertram as proxy sponsors.
at Temple Beth Shalom in Arnold. Rabbi Goldstein officiated.

The family lived at Pasadena, Maryland until 1996, when they moved to Mililani, Hawaii, because of Bob and Sally’s employment. In 2001, they returned to Maryland and lived at Severna Park until the summer of 2006, when they were transferred back to Hawaii, again buying a home in Mililani.

Sibling: **Thomas Earl Garner, Person Number 1a, page 687.**

See Illustrations Number1b (includes family) beginning on page 697.

Compiled with input from Bob.
Illustration Number 1b: Bob Garner, age about 60 hours, St. Elizabeth Hospital, Belleville, Illinois.

Illustration Number 1b: Bob Garner, Milford Elementary School, Grade 6, Fall 1975.

Illustration Number 1b: Bob Garner, 1981 Graduation picture, Milford High School, Milford, Nebraska.

Photo by Randy’s Studio, Milford.
Illustration Number 1b: Bob Garner and his bride, Sally Ruth Pitluck, 1 August 1986, Pasadena, Anne Arundel County, Maryland.

Illustration Number 1b: Jacob (left) and Joel, sons of Bob and Sally Garner. Hawaii, 1998.

Illustrations Number 1b: Signatures of Bob and Sally Garner, ca 1993.
Illustration Number 1b:

Illustration Number 1b: Bob and Sally’s son Jacob, born 12 October 1992, photo Spring 2002.

Illustration Number 1b: Bob and Sally’s son Joel, born 11 October 1993, photo Fall 2001.
SECOND GENERATION

2 - Bennie Fay GARNER was born on Tuesday, 18 December 1928\(^{532}\) to Jessie Claude Garner and his wife, Neva Ann née Dafford. The family lived in Clark County, Arkansas, on what was called “the Burns place” near Amity when he was born, eventually moving to Amity.

The Garner family was of the Baptist faith, and he was not baptized until 4 December 1960, at Christ United Church of Christ in Belleville, St. Clair County, Illinois, by the Rev. Dr. Alfred F. Schroeder.

Ben was deprived of some of the things I took for granted: he didn’t know the nursery rhymes I’d memorized before I can remember, and as far as I know there weren’t any books except the family Bible in the house. His Grandmother Garner, who had let his older siblings cut pictures out of her magazines, died before Ben could remember. He recalled having a toy tractor that was his very own.

His childhood was a dangerous one. He described himself as a little kid at the time of this incident: he remembered something not going to his liking, and that he was going to put his arms up against a porch support and pout. He must have closed his eyes, because he missed the support and fell from the high porch, breaking his left arm. It healed, but not straight, and he never was able to put a coat on like other people did. He had a unique way of manipulating that arm. I never heard him complain of pain in it, however.

On another occasion, he and some other kids were playing “Tarzan”, crawling out on a tree branch to reach a vine from which they could swing. He got out on the limb, lost his foothold, and was hanging by his hands. His brother Vance crawled out to rescue him, clamped his legs around Ben, lost his grip, and both fell to the ground, Ben’s ribs clamped between Vance’s legs. He was put to bed on a pallet in the center hall of the house (it caught a summer breeze) because he couldn’t breathe when he stood or sat upright. After some time he got better, but in later years, when he had to undergo medical scans, there was a place at the lower left ribcage that showed evidence of scars; as one radiologist described it to me, “It lights up like a Christmas tree.” I suppose his ribs were crushed in the fall and their growth was complicated as a result.

His elementary school record states his birthdate as 18 December 1928. He was an average student, receiving mostly B and C grades. Spelling and Arithmetic were his strong subjects. He was absent a lot—he had pneumonia four times during his childhood—perhaps accounting for the fact that he got a D in Arithmetic the first semester of fourth grade, but A+ second semester. He received a score of 28 on the Otis Psychological Test which was administered in September, 1943. I am unable to interpret the significance.

\(^{532}\) The date is questionable, the problem to be addressed throughout his biography.
His high school record, something apparently scrutinized by neither of us during his lifetime, gives his birthdate as 18 December 1927. Again, his grades were average, but he received A’s in physical education. Not reflected on the form, but from his personal recollection: he was ill and absent while the basics of Geometry were being taught and he failed that course, making up for it by taking Home Economics so that he would have enough credits to graduate. He recalled that the class sewed little boys’ overalls to be sent to a refugee camp.

A cute little guy in an early school picture, Ben became a tall, very thin teenager. His platinum blond hair earned him the nickname “Cotton”. He was naturally athletic and was named in the yearbook “Best boy athlete” in his high school graduating class. During his childhood he played baseball for fun, and by the time he was old enough, he played first base for the town baseball team. He was also a starter on the Amity High School basketball team.

A scout for the old St. Louis Browns American League baseball team evidently saw him in action and he was invited to try out, but his mother kept the letter from him until after the deadline for responding. She excused this by saying she was afraid he would drop out of school. By the time another invitation arrived, he had lost interest and didn’t reply, perhaps because he knew that a right-handed first baseman wasn’t too likely to succeed in the major leagues.

Ben’s age is listed as thirteen when the 1942 school census was taken, but the actual date of the enumeration is unknown.

During his teen years, he had surgery for appendicitis at the hospital in Arkadelphia. The surgery itself was uneventful, but the operating room staff somehow let ether get into his eyes, a complication that prolonged his hospitalization and recovery.

He received his diploma from Amity High School at its graduation ceremony on 24 May 1946.

Boys reaching manhood during World War II were confronted with the specter of the draft, and Ben was no exception. I suppose it was during that time that his need to prove his birthdate arose; the registration of births in Arkansas became a requirement in 1914, but compliance with the law was not complete for a long time after that. On 6 May 1944, his mother signed a delayed Birth Certificate that states his birthdate as 10 December 1928. She would have been intimidated by the bureaucracy, and since the office was probably overwhelmed by the need to issue delayed birth certificates and understaffed because of the war, mistakes are understandable. The zero in ‘10’ is so small in comparison with the one, that I wonder if an ‘8’ was really written, but the writing is so pale that only the lower half shows up. This didn’t present a problem until Ben was ready to apply for a passport in 1989; his birth certificate birthdate did not match his driver’s license and other documents. The Department of State was willing to accept an early school record that contained his name and birthdate and parents’ names
as proof that he was who he said he was, and the passport was issued. He made sure he renewed it before it expired, so that he wouldn’t have that problem again.

After Ben died and I began to get my life back together, I realized that I had World War II draft registration forms for both his father and my father, and I decided to send for Ben’s form. Surprise doesn’t begin to describe my emotion when the form came. It is dated 20 December 1945, and gives his birthdate as 18 December 1927. Vital statistics include age 18, height 6 feet, approximate weight 150 pounds, eyes blue, hair blonde, complexion light, no other obvious physical characteristics that will aid in identification. He signs “Bennie Fay Garner” and affirms that he has verified the answers to the questions asked on the form, and that they are true.

A ledger was kept, listing draft registrees in Clark County, and I sent for that from the National Headquarters of the Selective Service System, but it contains nothing of interest. His classification was I-A at the time of his registration: “Available for military service”.

Perhaps ten years before Ben’s death, his brother Vance had asserted in my presence and the presence of several other family members, that Ben was a year older than he said he was, so the discrepancy niggled at me until I found everything else that I could think of that might prove or disprove his birthdate.

The next thing I ordered was Ben’s Application for Social Security Account Number. It gives his name as Bennie Fay Garner, but he signs “Bennie Faye Garner”. He states his age as 15, date of birth 18 December 1927, and the form is dated 15 June, but the year is stated. I suppose it would have been between 1942 and 1944. The remainder of the information on the form is correct—parents’ names, birthplace—and he was unemployed at the time of his application. Perhaps there is a way to find the year, knowing the Social Security Number that was issued; there was surely some sequence in the issuance.

I always told him that it was romantic, that his social security number and my own ended with the digits “35”. Another thing we had in common was the use of the space bar while typing. It is recommended that the right thumb be used for the space bar, but that if it is natural to use the left, one shouldn’t try to change. Both of us used the left thumb. Another coincidence: both of us found it easy to make the reach to type the numbers without looking at the keys.

The Garner family was enumerated on 1930 Federal Census for Clark County, Arkansas. The census was taken on 24 April 1930 but was to have been ‘as of’ a target date of 1 April 1930. Bennie Fay’s age was stated as one and three-twelfths, making a perfect calculation to a birth of 18 December 1928.

After seemingly going to the trouble to prove his age so that he would not be drafted until after he graduated from high school, he was finally examined for military service and was classified as IV-F, “Rejected for military service; physical, mental or moral
reasons”. He knew that his rejection was because he didn’t pass the physical examination. No specific reason was forthcoming, although some men did demand to know and were told: my mother’s cousin Frank Gumbel was IV-F, the reason being that he was such a small man that standard uniforms would have been too large. Perhaps Ben’s extreme thinness was the reason for his rejection.

After high school, Ben worked at sawmills in the community, and one summer he set out with some other young men who planned to follow the wheat harvest, working their way from Texas to North Dakota. They arrived too early for the wheat harvest but found temporary work loading hay bales. They didn’t have gloves and didn’t last long at the job.

The Arkadelphia [Arkansas] Southern Standard reported on 10 October 1946 that, “The car driven by Roy Dale Hall over-turned Saturday after one of the tires blew out. Bennie Fay Garner and Randolph Robertson were in the car with him. The boys received only bruises.”

Ben, along with two other boys, decided they would go to the Pacific Northwest, where there was said to be work available at the shipyards. The Southern Standard dated 30 January 1947 states, “Joe Burchfield, Bennie Fay Garner and Curt Burchfield have gone to Seattle, Washington.” When they got there, a strike was in progress, and after waiting for a while for it to end and finally coming to the end of their resources, Ben made his way to Fresno, California, where his brother Willard came to the rescue and lent him enough money to buy a bus ticket back home. Others of Ben’s siblings sought Willard’s help, too, when faced with life’s misfortunes.

Back home in Amity, he worked as a block setter for Barksdale Lumber Company. His official Navy record states that his salary was $37.00 per week and describes the duties of a block setter: “Rode on carriage. Set dogs to hold logs, set levers according to the thickness logs should be cut. Turned logs & set logs up for saw.” From my own conversations with him, I know that this position required decision-making skill—he had only a split second to decide how to set the levers in order to optimize each log’s lumber-production potential while minimizing waste. The carriage moved back and forth above the saw mechanism, and the block setter rode the carriage.

Ben chummed around with friends who decided they would all join the Navy. He wasn’t interested in doing so, but they began to call him “chicken”, and he thought, “Well, I was IV-F for the Army [after his physical examination], and the Navy has stricter requirements, so I’ll go along and sign the papers, they won’t call me ‘chicken’, I won’t pass the physical, then I can come home and continue as before”. His reasoning backfired, as it were, because he did pass the physical and was soon on his way to San Diego for Basic Training.

His official record, using the 18 December 1928 birth date, was begun with his enlistment on 14 October 1946. That date, apparently from his own statement, was used throughout his career.
His hair was still platinum blond, and he was called “Whitey” in the Navy. He reported for his military haircut, later describing the barber as a kid just out of boot camp and without barbering skills. The kid told him he had beautiful hair, and asked him if he’d like to keep it. Naturally he replied that he would like to, and the barber said, “Hold out your hands.” The hair, of course, came off.

Gleaned from his Navy Record, either at time of enlistment or shortly thereafter:

His hobbies were baseball, hunting, fishing and movies.
He ‘qualified’ in baseball (presumably means that he would play baseball on the team of the unit to which he was assigned). “3L HS” is stated on the form, and I take this to mean that he was awarded three athletic letters during his high-school baseball career.
He was right-handed.
His vision was 20/20 in both eyes.
He was a “Qualified Swimmer Class III.”
He was 5 feet, eleven inches tall, weighed 145 pounds, eyes blue, hair blond, complexion ruddy. Scars are listed. Ant: “S½” forehead; OPS3” rt abdoman [sic]; S½” forehead. Post: VSLA; PS rt scapula.

A troop transport took him to his first duty station after boot camp, Guam, which in 1947 was still seething in the aftermath of World War II. He was invited to go hunting with a local man, but they returned to the base quickly when they were shot at by Japanese soldiers who didn’t know the war was over. It was there that two separate events shaped his career: he got badly sunburned standing in the chow line, and someone in authority discovered that he knew how to type. The earliest reference to his typing ability in his official record, while he was in basic training, states that he could type 25 words per minute. Staying out of the tropical sun was essential, and an office was the perfect place to do it. He became a Yeoman, was promoted to Yeoman Third Class on Guam, eventually attaining the rank of Yeoman First Class.

His record shows that he was in the U. S. Naval Hospital on Guam for seventeen days in the fall of 1948. I believe this was when he had surgery to remove a goiter and a portion of his thyroid gland.

He was awarded the Good Conduct Medal as soon as he was eligible, and every three years thereafter. For each subsequent award after the first, he was authorized to wear a bronze star on the ribbon representing the medal.

---

533 He was very fair-skinned, and I cannot imagine how anyone thought he was “ruddy” unless he was sunburned.
534 I know of only one scar on his forehead. He and some of his siblings were sailing a tin bucket lid in the manner that a plastic Frisbee is thrown, he missed when he was supposed to catch it, and it cut his forehead and into his left eyebrow. The abdominal scar was from his appendectomy.
Returning to the mainland from Guam, he was stationed at the Naval Air Station, Moffett Field, California, from 27 October 1949 until he reported to the Naval Air Station at San Diego, California on 21 April 1950; his enlistment expired on 12 October 1950. The Korean conflict had begun by then, and those whose enlistments were supposed to expire were involuntarily extended on active duty indefinitely, at the convenience of the Government. Consequently, Ben reenlisted, reasoning that he'd receive a reenlistment bonus if he did so, no bonus at all if he remained on involuntary extension for an indefinite period of time.

The shipping articles Ben signed on 13 October 1950 contain the first official reference to his tattoo, “Eagle, chest” which is listed among “Marks and Scars”. The eagle was huge, an in-flight rendition, and was startling to hospital personnel all the rest of his life. I got so I didn’t even see it. He related that he had drunk ‘sufficient’ beer, some of the guys were getting tattoos and insisted that he do likewise, and when he refused, they offered to pay for it. He remembers thinking that if they were stupid enough to pay, he was stupid enough to do it, and recalled that he must have passed out from the pain (or was it the beer?) and when he woke up the next morning he was in his bunk, in pain, with a bloody bandage covering his chest. I was always glad it was hidden when he was fully clothed. Having him appear on dress-up occasions, especially in a tux at Tom’s wedding, with a visible tattoo would have been embarrassing. He was sorry he had it.

It was in San Diego that he married a divorcée, Anita Nadine McNulty née Ansel, the daughter of Harold Ansel and his wife Ila, née Elliot, on Halloween, 31 October 1951. Ben: “We wore masks”. Ben became very attached to Anita’s children, Dennis and Diane McNulty, but the marriage ended in divorce on 2 October 1952, the final decree being issued on 5 October 1953. This was an episode in his life that was a taboo subject after he told me about it before he asked me to marry him. Any questions I didn’t think about asking on that occasion simply went unanswered until after he died and I did some research on Anita’s family. I began realize how curious I had been over the years, and eventually found closure with the answers to my questions. She died in 2000; the official cause of death was cirrhosis of the liver. John A. “Jack” Foster called me late in 2006; he had been a witness at the wedding and confirmed my suspicions that Anita was already an alcoholic at the time Ben married her. Jack described her to me as a self-centered, demanding shrew; Ben never bad-mouthed her to me. As far as I know Diane is living [2006] in the Oakland, California, area; and Dennis died at the age of twenty-six of a drug and alcohol overdose. Ben would have been sad if he had known about that.

In March 1953, Ben was transferred from San Diego to the Navy Receiving Station in San Francisco, for further transfer to Yokosuka, Japan. By April he was at the Receiving Station at Sasebo, Japan. He was to serve in Carrier Division Three in the Pacific Fleet, on the staff of a Flag Officer who moved from one aircraft carrier to another as war conditions demanded. Among the ships on which he served were the USS Valley Forge (CV-45), USS Princeton (CVA-37), USS Essex (CVA-9), and USS Philippine Sea (CVA-47). It is to be emphasized that he was never assigned to the ship’s company, but moved from place to place with the admiral.

There were memorable experiences connected with this service: Ben was in a room below
The flight deck when parts of a crashed plane penetrated the overhead, but he was not injured. Sometimes he was transferred between ships by Boatswain’s Chair, an apparatus rigged with line and pulleys that dipped alarmingly near the water when the ships neared because of the ocean’s movement, lifted frighteningly high and taut when they drifted apart.

His service in the Pacific during the Korean conflict earned him three separate awards of the Navy Unit Commendation, plus the United Nations Service Medal, Navy Occupation Service Medal, National Defense Service Medal, Korean Service Medal, China Service Medal. I am all but certain that he was also awarded the United States Presidential Unit Citation for this service, but I am unable to find documentation.

On 16 November 1953 he was promoted to Yeoman Second Class. Official records show that he left Carrier Division Three in November of 1954.

He must have taken considerable leave, because he did not report to the Bureau of Naval Personnel (officially in Washington, D. C. but physically located in Arlington, Virginia) until January of 1955. He manned a desk in the Navy Annex in a department that concerned itself with statistics, but I don’t know any particulars.

His official military records do not include dental records. When his permanent teeth came in, no permanent teeth replaced his two lower central incisors. At some time during his naval service, he lost one upper central incisor. At that time, the Navy did not permit restoration unless there was need to restore more than one tooth. The dentist extracted the two deciduous teeth—Ben described it as “like pulling a matchstick out of the sand”, and made removable bridges to replace the upper tooth and both lower teeth. Later, he had extensive dental work done, both to preserve his teeth and for cosmetic reasons.

In addition to the appendectomy and thyroid surgery mentioned above, he had various medical problems, some of which were corrected by surgery. He suffered from back problems throughout his adult life, undergoing several surgeries, after which his left leg was weak and he continued to have pain. He also underwent carpal tunnel decompression. He was afflicted by a hiatal hernia which must be a congenital weakness, because several family members suffer from the same disorder. He and nearly all of his siblings were plagued by skin cancers.

Beginning in February, 1956, Ben’s story becomes “our story” which is impossible to separate from my autobiography. The part beginning with my birth up until my meeting with Ben is below. **OUR STORY** begins on page 715. The conclusion of Ben’s biography begins on page 723, and my autobiography resumes on page 729.

***

3 - Lila Marie NIEMANN. I am the daughter of August Oscar Niemann and Mildred Hilda Gumbel. I was born at 12:10 p.m. Central Standard Time on 15 September 1937 at home, 804 Main Street in Seward, Seward County, Nebraska. I weighed eight pounds and was nineteen inches long.
Excursus: With my marriage, the Niemann name daughtered off in the United States. Here I will explore the meaning of the name. “What’s in a (German) Surname?” by Jürgen Eichhoff appeared in the August/September 1999 issue of German Life, relating to the development of surnames in Germany. Mr. Eichhoff writes:

“It can be said that in the 11th century A.D. there were no family names; by the 1500s they were firmly established in most places.”

He goes on to tell that names are tied to the German linguistic environment, reflecting the dialect in the area from which they originated, and mentions some technical changes that occur in the various dialects.

“Original monophthongs shifted to dipthongs [sic] in the south, accounting for names such as Neumann (new man), Neubauer (new farmer), and Mauermann (bricklayer) but Niemann, Niebuhr, and Muhrrmann in the north. In central Germany there is an area stretching from the east to west where the eu’s became au’s accounting for Naumann and Nauber...the first element also meaning ‘new’...”.

So, we can assume that the first Niemann, arriving just about the time surnames were being acquired, was the “new man” in the community. Inasmuch as new men in many communities might have been assigned that name, Niemanns living in various places didn’t likely come from the same roots.

(It should be noted that names beginning with ‘Nieder’ don’t fall into this category at all; nieder means ‘lower’ and refers not to status in life but to altitude.)

***

I was baptized on 23 January 1938 by the Rev. C. Jankowsky, pastor of Friedens Evangelical and Reformed Church (later United Church of Christ) in Seward. My mother’s brother and sister, Lester C. Gumbel and Nellie Gumbel Bye (Uncle Slim and Aunt Nellie) were my sponsors. I was confirmed on 28 May 1950 in Friedens Church by the Rev. M. L. Seybold.

The house where I was born is still standing (2006) and has become an apartment house. This was the home of my Grandmother, Millie Gumbel, who died in December of 1937, and the Niemann family lived there until her estate was settled, moving to the Niemann farm south of Seward, in G Precinct, on 1 March 1942. If anyone is thinking about the beginning of World War II, and thinks my parents moved to the farm so my dad, by becoming a farmer, could avoid the draft, they are mistaken. It was simply a case of expediency: Grandmother’s house was sold when the estate was settled and the Niemann family had to move; the farm had been deeded to Dad a bit earlier, but the renter had a contract and couldn’t be removed. Things simply fell into place.

Like most people, I don’t remember a great deal about my early life. We always had enough to eat, but luxuries were few. Our dentist, Dr. Roy P. Belden, recommended

Zeitgeist Publishing, Inc., 226 North Adams Street, Rockville, Maryland 20850-1829
early straightening of my teeth because of an underbite.\textsuperscript{536} He took impressions and put braces on when I was four. Apparently my subconscious remembers this as a horrendous experience although I don't have a conscious memory of it, and I have always been a nervous dental patient, partly because, when the "bib" was put on, I thought I was chained to the dental chair. I still have feelings of violation and claustrophobia when I have to endure dental treatment. An orthodontic procedure was of course, a luxury, but it was torture for me. The baby teeth are so small that the braces often slide off; we sometimes made two or more trips to the dentist in one day. The braces did their job, though, and came off after about six months. In spite of the treatment trauma and its lifelong effects, I will feel forever indebted to Dr. Belden for correcting of this disfiguring problem; he only charged $25 for the procedure, an amount my parents sacrificed to be able to afford.

While I'm on the subject of teeth, I want to mention missing teeth. I never got Tooth Number 20, the lower left second bicuspid. No permanent tooth formed to replace the baby tooth, which I was able to keep until I was about twenty. It had a deep filling, and eventually the thin layer of tooth below the filling broke through and exposed the nerve, so I experienced my first toothache. The tooth had to be removed, and I have a bridge. I have often wondered if missing teeth are one of the results of the many cousin marriages among my ancestors.

I don't know when I began to realize that I wasn't like other children. The only child is often smothered with love and attention, a situation exacerbated when the parents are almost old enough to be grandparents. That is what happened to me. The situation can only worsen when the parents have lost a child. I have often thought that I would be qualified to counsel parents of a dead child, giving pointers on how not to treat the living child.

Like many lone children, I had a very close imaginary friend, Lamsley and one not so important, Woosley. Lamsley went everywhere with me and did everything I did. Sometimes she led me astray and got me into trouble.

My mother was on hand with a camera the first day of school, recording the event for posterity. I know now that the other children were envious of the attention I got, but it made them cruel to me. I had no idea how to relate to people my own age, as there really wasn't anyone to play with before I started to school. School was decidedly not a good experience, although I learned easily. The teacher in a rural school, the only adult present, can be a wonderful influence or can be a fiend. Mine was the latter, egging on the other students who were making my life miserable. The facts that the United States was at war with Germany, and my father spoke with a thick German accent, provided extra fuel for their fire.

\textsuperscript{536} Underbite, a lay term, the professional terminology being "class three mal-occlusion": condition of overlapping incisors: a dental condition in which the lower incisors overlap the upper. Thanks to Duane H. Smith, DDS, for this technical explanation.
For a time I was able to transfer to another school, where the teacher, Miss Nan Miller, was a real joy. This transfer was not possible for more than a couple of years, so I was back in the nasty environment until my parents realized they had to take things in hand, and they paid tuition for me to attend school in Seward from about the middle of Sixth Grade in January, 1951. We moved to Seward in the summer of 1951 after the Blue River had risen so high that the floodwaters got into the house.

From that point on, my life took a more normal course, although I don’t believe I ever related in a completely comfortable way to my peers.

Added to my square-peg-in-round-hole existence was the fact that I was always very tall for my age. By the time I was in Sixth Grade I had reached my adult height, but my peers were still small. I can still hear my mother’s friends asking in saccharine tones, “Isn’t she tall for her age?” and, “You’re going to have to put a brick on her head!” I thought I was a freak.

Nearly everyone who can remember the day that World War II came to an end, also remembers what he or she did to celebrate. Our country road—it became Fletcher when roads in Seward County received names—was closed due to construction and dredging of the ditches. We drove across the field and got to Seward, where people drove around and around the square, sounding their horns.

I’m always amazed when I realize how soon luxuries began to reappear in stores: things that had been out of production during the war. I’m as certain as can be that we made our annual trip to Lincoln in August (before school started) that year, and balloons, something I didn’t remember if I had played with any before the war, were available. I believe they were priced at two for a quarter, and I was allowed to have two.

After due deliberation among all the color choices, I chose two green ones, a decision I recall as agonizing. I recognize this as the first manifestation of my lifelong affinity for the color green. I decorate with green, choose green cars, and have facetiously stated that if I could have, I would have married a Martian and had green children. It was long after the boys were named that I discovered Ben’s grandfather, William Green Dafford. Surely ‘Green’ would have been part of both boys’ names if I had known about him sooner. The lime greens, grass greens and chartreuse are most pleasing to my eye, and I chose a lot of clothing in those shades until I discovered that blue-green and teal hues are more flattering to me.

Above I mentioned our annual trip to Lincoln. Perhaps we went more than once a year, but it seems like only once to me, and we definitely didn’t go often. A trip was made before school started, fabrics for school clothes were purchased, and my mother busied herself sewing right away. It makes me feel every day of my age when I realize that during my childhood we planned for six weeks or more before making a trip to Lincoln; and now I’ve been known to set out alone in the middle of the night for the Omaha airport.

VI Day (Victory in Japan Day) occurred on 14 August 1945.
In August of 1946 I had an accident with lasting consequences. I always had a swing in a box-elder tree just south of the house, and that summer someone put up an extra rope with a lead pipe tied into it, creating what I called a trapeze. I loved to hang by my knees, but that fateful evening I must have lost my concentration, and I fell on my head.

I can pinpoint the date so accurately because of another event. I was hanging onto my composure by a thread when I went into the house when it was nearly dark that night. I knew if I admitted to being injured, the trapeze would be dismantled, so I was determined not to cry. When I got inside my mother told me she had news to tell me: “Uncle Slim”, her brother Lester C. Gumbel, had announced to the family that he was going to get married. My self-control lapsed and I burst into tears. Everyone must have been puzzled at my reaction—of course I could be expected to miss him, because he’d been living with us ever since I could remember except while he was away in the Army during WWII. But tears? It was my mishap that caused the tears of course, and I never told anyone about falling on my head, but the trapeze was never any fun after that. I have suffered lifelong neck problems, but never told anyone what happened until I realized that I wasn’t going to be punished and revealed the root of my problem to Ben, late in his life. I will always believe an only child learns early to keep his own counsel.

This is only one example of what my mother once termed my “secretiveness.” She got annoyed with me and I with her, although I quelled my rebelliousness and dared not argue. One time, when I’m certain I had done or said nothing outrageous, she looked me square in the eye and remarked, “I don’t know what you’re made out of.”

Perhaps it was the trapeze accident that made me realize that I am no athlete. When I’ve tried anything remotely resembling an athletic pursuit, my clumsiness has caused an injury. I can ride a bicycle.

Sewing clothing (beginning with doll clothes) and household items has been my long-time hobby. Actually, when money was really scarce, it was more than a hobby; it was a necessity—but hand sewing bores me. I also like to knit, but since genealogy has taken over my life, knitting has taken a far-back seat.

Along with hand sewing, things that bore me include shelling peas, shelling nuts, schnippeling beans—all the things that are monotonous and repetitive and don’t require much thought.

Words have always interested me, as they have many of my relatives. My mother once remarked that someone “wouldn’t be a Gumbel if he didn’t like crossword puzzles”. In the paragraph above, I’ve used a German word with an English ending: “schnippeling”, but I’m unsure just how a German-English hybrid should be spelled. Several German words were used as a matter of course when I was a child, but the verbs were given English conjugations and the nouns acquired English case and number endings. Schnippel means “to cut” and cutting beans in a precise, diagonal pattern and achieving equal-size pieces was very important in my early life. Schnippel takes on another
meaning as a noun, and I’m afraid I didn’t know the English word until long after I was
grown up: snippet. My mother and her sisters and sisters-in-law exchanged letters, and
snippets “schnippels” of cloth from the current sewing project were often enclosed. “It
rootched” was an expression I often heard when my mother was cutting out a garment
to be sewed. Only fairly recently did I discover the German verb “rutsch” which means
to slip or to slide. I always knew what it meant but had no idea how to spell it.

Some English words and expressions also acquired, in our family, German-language
properties. The one used most was “upgemixed”, meaning confused or mixed up. Even
Ben adopted that one.

My speech developed during the terribly dry years of the late 1930s on North America’s
Great Plains. I suppose there was some discussion about a cistern, a deep vat in which
rainwater is collected. About the same time, I heard my dad mention something about
his sister-in-law, which I heard as cistem-law, and remember trying to make a
connection, and being very puzzled, because I knew his sister-in-law was my very dear
Aunt Nellie.

Living in Seward, we had a widowed neighbor lady, Mrs. Anna Belle (Gordon) Imig,
née Fender. When my mother and Aunt Nellie went to the same function, such as
Rebekah Lodge or Past Noble Grand Club meetings, Mrs. Imig was my baby sitter.
Because her own granddaughter, Sylvia Gordon, lived far away and I had no
grandmother nearby, she wanted to be called ‘Grandma Imig’. My mother didn’t want
me to crawl, I suppose because of what it would do to the knees of my stockings, but
Grandma Imig got down on the floor with me one afternoon and taught me to crawl. I
only remember being told about this, not the event itself. Within the past twenty years,
it has been determined that children who crawl as infants learn to read more easily. I
had no trouble learning to read. Thank You, Grandma Imig.

I was well old enough to remember this incident: Grandma Imig was going to walk
‘uptown’ (the Seward business district) and asked if I could go with her. I was permitted
to go, but was admonished that I was absolutely not to tell her I was hungry. I know
exactly where we were in Seward, in front of the Rivoli Theater,538 when I began to
scheme. I must have walked in silence while my naughty little brain composed a
sentence that worked while not mentioning hunger: “I sure am thirsty for ice cream.”
Grandma Imig bought ice cream for me—there was an ice cream parlor across the street
north of the courthouse, at or near the west end of the block. Ice cream was served in
cardboard cups with flat wooden spoons.

My mother had been a telephone operator before her marriage, and her sister, Aunt
Nellie, had been chief operator in Seward. Although they were required to resign at the
time of their marriages (because married women were supported by their husbands, and
single women needed the jobs), their conversation often revolved around the telephone
company and friends still employed there. When I heard the words “let freedom ring” in

538 The theater was then and is now (2007) across the street south of the Seward County Courthouse.
America (“...from every mountainside, let freedom ring”) I figured out that Freedom must be a telephone operator.

When I was really young, I remember looking at the moon, and my mother commented that it was hard to believe, but that same moon shone over Germany. Ben and I were on a camping trip in Minnesota when we watched the last total eclipse of the moon visible on this continent in the Twentieth Century. I was in for a real treat when I saw the last (I’m not certain that it was total) eclipse of the moon to be visible in the Twentieth Century in Western Europe. We were visiting the Gumbel village of Niedermüllrich; the moon hangs at a somewhat different angle in that far-north location.

I graduated from Seward High School in 1955. By this time, I was feeling quite rebellious. My mother had insisted that I take a stenographic course, so there was no time to take any college prep courses except Latin; in spite of that, I qualified for an Alternate Regents Scholarship to the University of Nebraska at Lincoln. The things that I suggested that I might do to further my education (University of Nebraska) or seek in the way of employment (I wanted to join the women’s branch of one of the military services) were vetoed by my parents. So I struck out with a Ruth Abele, a high school classmate, for Washington, D.C. with the promise of a job as a civilian with the Department of the Navy. Our jobs turned out to be at the Bureau of Naval Personnel in Arlington, Virginia.

Ruth and I had a housekeeping room in Arlington, where we met two North Carolina girls, Orpha Willis and Olamae Edmunds. Pooling our resources, the four of us rented an apartment. One of the girls worked in a division where she met a guy, the guy was Ben’s friend, and that’s how Ben and I met, in February 1956. Things clicked for us right away, and we married 15 August 1956.

My interest in and pursuit of genealogy is described in the Foreword to this volume.

I have always wanted to do the unusual or the nearly impossible. Ben once told a man, “My wife is very determined”, which is true. Making something work or making something fit has always been a fun challenge. If someone says I can’t do something, I am almost certain to try, although this trait is diminishing with the years, along with energy and agility.

OUR STORY

Ben and I had a happy and interesting life together. We were lucky to get the family of two that we wanted, after a scary time when we thought there weren’t going to be any babies. Our sons have been a joy to us. We were able to settle in Milford before the boys were very old, and remain there until their school careers were finished (and beyond). As a family we did a lot of camping, boating and fishing, and the boys participated in various sports. They moved on into lives of their own, and what might have been a struggle adapting to an “empty nest” turned out to be, for us, a very exciting retirement. After considerable travel during Ben’s career in the Navy, we
continued seeing quite a lot of the world together, much but not all of it in pursuit of the facts that make up this family history.

Our courtship appears to me in retrospect as a “whirlwind”, but the days seemed to pass slowly at the time. I believe Ben and I met on February 9, but I’m not certain of that. He placed a diamond engagement ring on my finger in May, and we were married on 15 August 1956 at Grace Reformed Church in Washington, D.C.

We honeymooned at our apartment in Alexandria, Virginia, because Ben, coming back from leave to Arkansas in June, sped through western Virginia so fast that he lost his driver’s license. He always said he was in a hurry to get back to me, a romantic excuse. The restriction was for only a short period of time and I can’t recall that we were much inconvenienced. I overheard someone predict that our marriage would last “fifteen minutes” but it did last until death us did part on 25 April 2002.

When it was time for him to be transferred from the Washington, D.C. area, Ben applied for Attaché duty—we were hoping for Continental Europe—and was ordered to Lajes Field, a U. S. Air Force Base in the Azores. Technically in Europe, the Azores belong to Portugal. He reported there in January 1958, and I followed in April, having lived at home in Seward with my parents while I waited for housing to become available so I could join him.

The notorious Charles Starkweather went on his killing spree during the winter of 1958 while I was in Nebraska. As news about his route was analyzed, my mother and I were sure that we were shopping at Penney’s in Seward when he drove through Seward after murdering several Lincolniters. He was still on the loose when it was time for choir practice, which was cancelled because authorities recommended that people not gather in groups. Starkweather’s mental condition was such that he may have delighted in finding a group and mowing them down.

A house in the Azores became available about Easter time that year, and I went by train to McGuire Air Force Base in New Jersey, flying to Lajes by way of a base in Newfoundland, I believe Gander. A brass band welcomed the passengers to the terminal, a large building with a very low ceiling. My flight had been delayed for a long time due to crosswinds at Lajes. Ben gave up and went to bed, having been told that no flights were due in until late the next day, but I arrived there about dawn. I confess to being a little scared, in a foreign country with no one to meet me. Some sailor or airman took pity on me and made phone calls until he located Ben, who rushed to the terminal.

Our house, what would be called a tar-paper shack in the United States, was situated across the street from the power generating plant, and we simply rose above the noise of the engines that ran day and night. We could see the ocean from our front door. The climate was mild but damp, so it often felt chilly. Rain was a daily event, and during the winter, the rain was wind-driven. We made friends there with Clyde and Bettye Thomas, and they have been our friends for a lifetime. We often went to the beach together, and picnicked at Seretta Park. We created fantastic meals, and local flowers provided centerpieces for our picnic table.
After we were ready to have a baby and no baby came along, we went through a fertility work-up. No real reason for infertility was found, but my physician recommended that we adopt, so we planned a trip to Germany, for that purpose and to visit my relatives, late in the summer of 1959. We found a little boy, Manfred Meißner, who was available for adoption, but something made us get cold feet and we went back to the Azores without him.

Ben was promoted to Yeoman First Class (E-6) on 16 December 1959, with the notation that “For the purpose of final multiple computation and determining eligibility for advancement to next higher pay grade, GARNER’s service in pay grade E-6 is considered to date from 16 November 1959.” He received notification of his promotion a few days after that. We celebrated.

Because Yeoman was a “closed rate”, meaning that no promotions to Chief Yeoman were being made although Ben had had established his proficiency and eligibility for promotion, he qualified for and received “proficiency pay” from 16 January 1960 until 15 July 1961. The extra income was especially helpful after he was transferred to the Navy Recruiting Station in St. Louis early in 1960. We settled on the Illinois side of the river, and welcomed our first baby, Thomas Earl Garner, in August.

During our four years in the St. Louis area, we managed to do a lot of interesting things. The St. Louis Cardinals played in the old Busch Stadium, and men in military uniform were admitted free. We could afford to go on Ladies’ Night when Ben wore a uniform and women were admitted free, and spent many evenings there during the summer of 1960 before Tom was born. Toll was not charged men in uniform when the crossed McArthur Bridge, our chosen route. Parking was critical and there was a charge for that. We went to a baseball game on our wedding anniversary, and Ben told the parking clerk that we might need to leave suddenly (the due date had passed a week earlier, and no baby). The clerk raised his eyebrows but gave us a space that would remain unblocked, and when he saw me get out of the car, he said, “Now I see why you might have to leave in a hurry.”

A few days before Tom was born, an event occurred that I have adapted and attributed to a fictional couple that I created in 2004. I was looking ahead toward the time that we would be tied down and wouldn’t be free to attend ball games and the like, and suggested that we play miniature golf. For some reason Ben didn’t want to (there was probably a baseball game on television), and when I was adamant, he told me he didn’t know why I wanted to play miniature golf when I couldn’t even see the ball. It made me mad; we did play miniature golf and I beat him, and I never let him forget it.

The St. Louis Zoo and the Jewel Box, both in Forest Park, became favorite Sunday-afternoon pursuits. Our Illinois years were never boring.

Growing up as an only child was a nightmare that I would wish on no one, but infertility continued to rule our lives. With great joy and to my profound relief, we were blessed with another baby boy, Robert Paul Garner, in August of 1963.

After nearly four years in the St. Louis area, late in 1963 Ben received orders to a Destroyer
based on the West Coast. A few weeks later he was asked if he would accept orders to Guam, instead of sea duty. Apparently there had been some kind of snafu in the system, because it was time for the Navy Recruiter on Guam to be transferred, but no relief had been named. Ben fit all the criteria: First Class or Chief Yeoman, capable of independent duty, with recruiting duty experience, already ordered to the Pacific Fleet. He gladly accepted the post, which came with concurrent travel for the family, in preference to the ‘fast tin can’ (Destroyer).

We drove to the West Coast and turned the car in for shipment to Guam. Our flight left at 1300 hours on Friday, 13 March 1964. Ours was the last scheduled non-jet military passenger flight to Guam from Travis AFB. It was a long haul, with stops at Hickam AFB in Hawaii and Wake Island. We came back by jet.

“Guam is Good!” is an expression heard every day there, especially when something occurs that is not so good. All of us had trouble getting acclimated, and one of us was sick nearly all the time during the first year. Ben was hospitalized with tonsillitis and Bob with pneumonia. It rains nearly every day, but there is a dry season when fires break out in the “boonies”, the uninhabited waste lands on the island. Between the dampness and the smoke, allergies abound, but we survived. I enjoyed the geckos that shared our home, and have started a little collection of wood and ceramic geckos.

When there was a typhoon watch or warning, Ben’s presence was required at the barracks, the shelter for those whose quarters were not typhoon proof. Since our house was typhoon proof, I weathered the not-very-bad typhoons alone with the boys.

Ben drove a base taxi in the evenings and we saved enough money to pay cash for a new car when we returned to the mainland. I was a stay-at-home mom, and can’t recall being bored. I did a lot of sewing for myself and the boys. Ben’s taxi job required a white shirt, and he wore a white uniform to work every day. No fabrics back then were wrinkle-free, and the ironing was a never-ending job.

We picnicked at Gab Gab beach, took rides around the island, and enjoyed our second year in the tropics after our health improved. I was active in Protestant Women of the Chapel, played at working in ceramics, took swimming lessons—I’ll never be a good swimmer but I can float—and spent lots of time reading in the evenings while Ben was at his taxi job or had the duty.

My first experience of an earthquake—it felt like I was in a rocking chair, but rocking sideways—occurred while I was reading a library book concerning the base-born son of a French nobleman. I must have abandoned the book during someone’s illness. Curiosity about its outcome haunted me for a long time, but since I was able to recall neither the book’s title nor its author’s name, I was stymied in my search for it. I knew that the book’s English version was a translation from another language, and that the author’s name came near the end of the alphabet; I pictured the library at the Naval Station on Guam, and the book was shelved near Sigrid Undset’s works. Resolution was

---

539 Snafu=Situation Normal: All Fouled Up.
After two years on Guam, Ben was transferred to the USS Navarro, a Guided Missile Destroyer based at Long Beach, California. We rented half of a duplex in Hawaiian Gardens, and felt like short-timers the whole time we were there. It wasn’t the best duty, and the living conditions left a lot to be desired. We made a number of weekend trips to Fresno, where Ben’s brother Willard and his wife Mellie lived, and to Lompoc, to visit his brother Vance and his family. A memorable Fresno trip was Super Bowl I, which could be seen on television in Fresno but was blacked out in the Los Angeles metropolitan area. We also vacationed at Pismo and Avila Beaches and at Yosemite, Kings Canyon and Sequoia National Parks.

Performance evaluation forms were filled out routinely during Ben’s service, and he consistently earned high marks, at one point averaging 3.77, with 4.0 being perfect. It was necessary for him to handle classified material, and he was granted necessary security clearances, including a NATO (North Atlantic Treaty Organization) clearance while he was on Attaché duty in the Azores.

Ben transferred to the Fleet Reserve in March, 1967. Essentially in a retirement status, he was subject to recall to active duty in the event of a national emergency. We had made the decision that we would move to Nebraska to be near my parents, and we arrived later that month. Ben found a job working for a trucking firm in Milford, we bought a house here, and put down roots. Both boys graduated from Milford High School.

After a few months working for the trucking firm, it became clear to Ben that the situation was not as described, and it would be to his benefit to resign before the boss’s illegal practices rubbed off on him.

Shortly afterward, he was hired as a property accountant by Centel Corporation. He assumed a great deal of responsibility and advanced rapidly. It was great while it lasted, but the operating headquarters, and Ben’s job, transferred to Chicago. Since he would not uproot the family again, he was offered a different job at Centel, but working conditions were miserable and he took early retirement about 1983.

Meanwhile, I realized after the boys were both in school, that I was bored at home. In an effort to meet people and not fall into a Hausfrau rut, I took a tailoring class during the winter of 1968. Although tailoring was not for me—I don’t like to sew by hand—I met Juanita Smith, who was to become a lifetime friend and confidante. Her husband, Richard, worked at Centel also, and was a compatible companion for Ben. Their son Myron and his family continue to be loyal friends.

After Bob began to be in school all day, I was hired at the Milford Public Schools as an assistant cook, a job I loved for nearly eighteen years. The advantage was that I was at home when the boys were not in school; my summers were free, as were school vacations and

For persons reading this in the (for me) unforeseeable future, the Super Bowl is where professional football championships are decided.
snow days. The disadvantage was the boring nature of the job.

During the boys’ school years, we followed Milford athletic teams and Ben developed a consuming interest in Nebraska football. We were lucky enough to obtain season football tickets and he rarely missed a home game. I accompanied him often, not so frequently after my interest in genealogy began to consume me.

I can’t recall the year, but it was traumatic for us when our beloved pet cat, Ellie Mae, died. Ben volunteered to dispose of the remains, and a new facet of his character was revealed to me when he announced that he had taken a shovel so he could “give her a decent burial.” I expected that he would just toss the body in a ditch.

We bought a pick-up camper and a boat, in which we often made trips to Gallagher’s Canyon State Recreation area in Nebraska for camping, fishing and waterskiing. We camped elsewhere as well, making a trip to the Black Hills in South Dakota and to Yellowstone National Park. Another time we went to California with the camper and took in Disneyland, Knott’s Berry Farm, a professional baseball game, favorite beaches, and Yosemite Park. By this time, the boys were both old enough to remember.

One of the things I discovered about travel is that there is a mountain between me and everywhere I want to go. Since I don’t love mountains (I guess because when we traveled in a passenger car I suffered from motion sickness), they present a barrier that has to be overcome on every trip. I found when we got our pickup camper that I didn’t get sick, so the mountains are not so bad any more. I seem to get along fine in any vehicle that is heavier, higher and more solid than a passenger car, and suspect that I’d be all right in any kind of car as long as I was driving.

Retiree updates were published by Centel Corporation. Two have been found; in 1984, Ben wrote that he “enjoys traveling and loafing”. The 1985 update states that Ben “vacations, travels, camps, and fishes during the summer months. He and his wife Lila also do occasional babysitting for their first grandchild…”

Ben and I had always dreamed of traveling during our retirement years, and travel we did. After a shake-down trip a year earlier, our first major camping trip, in 1984, was to the East Coast, down the coast to Florida, then back home with a stop to visit with those of Ben’s family who lived in Arkansas. At that time we were tenting with a little tent that required pounding sixteen stakes.

We took in a number of points of interest and historic sites, including the Football Hall of Fame in Canton, Ohio, the Baseball Hall of Fame in Cooperstown, New York, a couple of glass museums—because I was collecting grape-motif pattern glass by that time—and a brief stop at the headquarters of the National Geographic Society because I was also

541 For anyone reading this in the distant future, this was a very small dwelling unit mounted in the bed of a three-quarter-ton pickup truck.
542 It became evident to both of us early in our travels that we were not much interested in sites created to attract tourists. We were both more interested in natural phenomena and points of historical interest.
collecting National Geographic Magazines. We drove past the church where we were married, then continued to Williamsburg and Yorktown Virginia, to Charleston, Savannah, St. Simon’s Island, St. Petersburg, then back home after visiting relatives in Arkansas.

Somewhere on that trip, probably in Ohio, we visited a flea market where a book reached out and shook my hand: *The Bastard* by Brigitte von Tessin, the book I’d failed to finish on Guam and for which I had conducted an arduous search. It was a strange, eerie feeling.

On the same trip we tented in the rain on Skagaway Island; we shared happy memories of a “Rainy Night in Georgia” every time that song was played on the radio.

In 1985 we only made a small camping trip to Arkansas, Louisiana and Texas. We realized that the tent was too much work, and we bought a nicer one that required only four stakes.

We drove to Glacier National Park, then the Alaska Highway in 1986, all the way to Seward: because I was born in Seward, Nebraska, it had been a long-time dream. I shall always regret not going as far north as the Arctic Circle. We came back by way of Expo 86 in Vancouver, then down the California Coast taking in the sights, then to Grand Canyon, Monument Valley, Mesa Verde National Park and finally back home.

The years begin to run together and I’m no longer sure what we did when. One year we went to Arkansas, then to St. Louis for research, then to Wisconsin and North Dakota, the only two states that I had not visited previously. Ben had completed his record of visiting all fifty when we went to Alaska.

During the nineteenth year of my cooking career—the boys had both graduated from high school long before—I was so burned out that I decided to retire and prepare for a trip to the United Kingdom during the summer of 1990. I made a list of places I was determined to see. By that time, Ben had a retirement job driving a van for a motel. He worked twelve-hour shifts three nights a week, plus one six-hour shift. He loved every minute of it.

While he was working so many evenings, I began to organize the bushel or so of family papers that had been saved, and I began active genealogical research and discovered a few facts about Ben’s ancestry. Kilbournie, Scotland was special to him, the birthplace of his ancestor, John Crawford. We visited every point of interest on my list as well.

When I had successfully researched all my own immigrant ancestors, I began to dream about a second trip to Germany, which we began to plan. Ben’s began to feel ill and was diagnosed with pneumonia, but seemed to recover. An ominous phone call brought the news that an x-ray showed something suspicious, and he was diagnosed with a squamous-cell lung tumor. Surgery was successful and the cancer cells had not spread into the lymph nodes; he suffered some complications, but bounced back and in January of 1993, his physician dismissed him with the statement, “of course you’ll be able to go to Germany in June.”

We made preparations right away, and visited each of the villages and cities from whence my ancestors had departed for America, a real dream come true. Those places are named in
the biographies of the immigrant ancestors. Unfortunately, I never found birthplaces for
Ben’s ancestors who had emigrated from Germany.

Ben said he felt uncomfortable camping in a tent after his surgery, and we bought a
Volkswagen Westfalia Eurovan and continued to travel, most trips incorporating family
research, sightseeing, professional baseball games and family visits. On one trip, we went to
visit another couple at a campground in Quincy, Illinois, who were driving a van much like
ours. The man was also a military retiree, and they described how easy Space-Available
camping was and gave us some clues about how to do it. We were intrigued, and determined
that we’d try this military-retirement benefit.

We made several Space-A trips to Germany after that, including three consecutive summers
during the 1990’s. Most times we made some kind of side trip—to Scandinavia and as far as
the Arctic Circle in Norway; through France and by ferry to the Isle of Jersey from whence
Ben’s Poindexters may have emigrated; to Austria, Switzerland and Liechtenstein. Ben
experienced a dream-come-true in Bad Hersfeld, drinking beer in a Biergarten while I
researched in an archive—I’m very sorry I didn’t take a picture of him on that occasion. One
of the trips back to the United States was exciting: our flight was an air-refueling mission.
Ben was invited to sit in the cockpit and observe the procedure, a memory he treasured all
his life.

Ben liked to read, specially enjoying courtroom stories and western literature. It was in 1994
as nearly as I can recall, that he experienced another dream-come-true. We were invited to a
cattle branding at the Streiff cousins’ T-Bone Ranch west of Tryon, Nebraska. One of the
illustrations is a snapshot taken that day. He always hoped he would be summoned for jury
duty, but that dream remained unfulfilled.

We made a number of trips to Texas, renting accommodations a couple of times so that we
were comfortable staying longer than we would have been able to live in the camper. Ben
said we couldn’t live in it, but I said in jest that he thought couldn’t live with me in it. While
Ben played cribbage I did a lot of writing, completing much of this book there.

Son Bob and his family lived on the Hawaiian Island of O’ahu from 1996 until 2001, and
Ben and I went there each of those years. One year we took a cruise from Honolulu, stopping
at Kauai, Maui and Hawaii (The Big Island). Another time we flew to Sydney, Australia and
toured that country for about ten days. Again using our Space-A privilege we flew to Guam;
what changes had been made there since our earlier sojourn! The last time we went to
Hawaii in the spring of 2001, we were already tired from having come from Germany.
Before taking over child-care responsibilities so Bob and Sally could go to Maryland on a
house-hunting trip, we spent three days on the Kona side of The Big Island, just resting and
sightseeing. I walked to the southernmost tip of Hawaii, which is also the southermost point
in the United States.

That summer we made a nostalgic camping trip in Nebraska, visiting many places we had
been before and spending a little time at Fort Robinson. Bob and his family visited late that
summer on their way from Hawaii to their new home in Severna Park, Maryland. In
November we went to Arkansas for niece Jamie Sue Petifer’s wedding, then on a sightseeing trip into Louisiana, finally swinging through Missouri to do some Krome research.

Ben began to have a great deal of pain in his right hip, and since we had already planned to spend a couple of months in Texas during the winter of 2002, he coaxed his physician to give him a shot of cortisone and he made the trip fairly comfortably. He already knew that permanent relief would only come with a hip replacement, which was planned as soon as we got home in March. He played in the St. Patrick’s Day cribbage tournament in Sioux Falls, South Dakota, and a week later won a tournament at Ord, Nebraska.

The surgery was successful; his physician told me that the hip was in very bad condition and he really needed the surgery. Hours later, he began to have brain-stem strokes, and although he recovered enough to begin rehabilitation therapy, he had more little strokes and his lungs began to fail. I will always believe that he gave up the fight to live after a hospital social worker told him that he would never drive again.

I would have handled the announcement differently, but the deed was done and there was nothing I could do but live with the consequences. All in all, Ben and I did very well for a couple who had nothing in common 46 years earlier.

* * *

2 – Bennie Fay GARNER: conclusion.

Ben died at 9:05 on the morning of 25 April 2002. The following obituary was published in the Lincoln [Nebraska] Journal Star:


“Survivors: wife, Lila; sons, daughters-in-law, Tom and Sue, Milford, Bob and Sally, Severna Park, Md.; grandchildren, Brandon, Lauren, Jacob and Joel Garner; brother, sister-in-law, Vance and Pauline Garner, Lompoc, Calif.; sister, Lottie Petifer, Amity, Ark.; sisters-in-law, Mary Garner, Fresno, Calif., Doris Mae Garner, Fort Worth, Texas; nieces and nephews. Preceded in death by parents; brothers, Earl, Clyde, Willard, Pat, Charles; sister, Sue Thomason.

“Graveside service: 1 p.m. Monday, Seward Cemetery, Seward. No visitation, cremation. Register book signing, today and Sunday, Lincoln Memorial Funeral Home, 6800 S. 14th St. Memorials to the family.”

Published in the Little Rock [Arkansas] Gazette-Democrat:

“Ben F. "Cotton" Garner, 73, of Milford Neb., died Thursday, April 25, 2002, in Lincoln, Neb. Born in Amity, AR to J. Claude and Neva Ann Dafford Garner, he was retired from the U.S. Navy, a Centel Corp. accountant and member of Fleet Reserve Association and American Cribbage Congress. He was predeceased by five brothers, Earl Garner, Clyde Garner, Willard Garner, Pat Garner and Charles Garner, and one sister, Sue Thomason.
Survivors include his wife, Lila Niemann Garner; two sons and daughter-in-laws [sic], Tom and Sue Garner of Milford and Bob and Sally Garner of Severn Park, MD; four grandchildren, Brandon Garner, Lauren Garner, Jacob Garner and Joel Garner; one brother and three sisters-in-law, Vance and Pauline Garner of Lompoc, CA, Mary Garner of Fresno, CA, and Doris Mae Garner of Ft. Worth, TX; one sister Lottie Petifer of Amity, AR; nieces and nephews.

The service will be 1 p.m. Monday in Seward Cemetery, Seward, Neb. The body will be cremated. Memorials may be made to the family. Arrangements are by Lincoln Memorial Funeral Home, Lincoln, Neb.”

His death certificate states septic shock as the immediate cause of death, with pneumonia, hyponatremia and anticoagulation contributing. It also states that tobacco use did not contribute to his death. While he had stopped smoking before lung cancer was diagnosed in 1992, his lungs were damaged and he had been suffering from emphysema, unquestionably caused by smoking.

Ben had made his will on 20 November 1984. When he died, his business affairs were well in order, and there was no need for probate; therefore the will is not on file in the Courthouse in Seward County, Nebraska. His Will is transcribed below. Expecting that no one will read it in its entirety, the technical portion is printed in a very small font size.

**Last Will and Testament**

OF

BENNIE F. GARNER

I, BENNIE F. GARNER, a resident of and domiciled in Milford, Seward County, Nebraska, do hereby expressly revoke any and all Wills, codicils, and instruments of a testamentary nature, that I formerly have made, and being of sound and disposing mind and memory, and not acting under any duress, restraint, or undue influence, being aware of the nature, location and value of my estate, knowing the natural objects of my bounty, having a testamentary plan, desiring to accomplish such plan, desiring to avoid intestacy, and intending to dispose of all real estate, personal property, and property of every kind which I may own on the date of my death, and over which I may have power to dispose, whether owned by me now, or acquired by me hereafter, and I do herein and hereby make, publish, declare, execute and acknowledge the following as my Last Will and Testament, in manner and form following, that is to say:

**ARTICLE I–VITAL STATISTICS**

I represent, state and declare that my full name is BENNIE FAY GARNER; that I was born on December 18, 1928, at Amity, Arkansas, although my Birth Certificate shows my date of birth as December 10, 1928. I am married to LILA M. GARNER, whose full name is LILA MARIE GARNER, who was born on September , 1937, at Seward, Nebraska. Prior to my marriage with LILA M. GARNER I was married and said marriage was lawfully terminated and no issue thereof was born. I was married to LILA M. GARNER on August 15, 1956, at Washington, D.C. The issue of my marriage with LILA M. GARNER are our two sons, THOMAS E. GARNER, whose full name is THOMAS EARL GARNER, and who was born on August , 1960, and ROBERT P.
GARNER, whose full name is ROBERT PAUL GARNER, and who was born on August 1963. THOMAS E. GARNER is married to SUSAN L. GARNER, and issue of that marriage is expected to be born on or about February 1985. ROBERT P. GARNER is single, unmarried and without issue. R. L. JEFFREY, Attorney at Law, 3601 Calvert Street, Lincoln, Nebraska 68506, is my Attorney and he is familiar with my familial and financial facts and circumstances, and he has prepared this instrument in strict accordance with my express directions and intentions.

**ARTICLE II - TAXES, DEBTS AND EXPENSES OF ADMINISTRATION**

I direct that all estate, inheritance and other death taxes of any nature, together with any interest and penalties thereon that may be payable upon or with respect to all property required to be included in my gross estate, or taxable to any person receiving it, under the provisions of any present or future domestic or foreign laws, regardless of whether that property passes under our outside of this Will or any Codicil to it, or whether such taxes are payable by my estate, or by any recipient or beneficiary of any such property, together with all debts which I am legally obligated to pay at the time of my death, my last illness and funeral expenses, and other costs of administration of my estate, shall be paid, or other provision for payment made, by my Personal Representatives out of my general estate in the same manner as an expense of administration of my estate, with no right of reimbursement from any recipient or beneficiary of any such property or any temporary or remainder interest in such property.

**ARTICLE III - BEQUEST OF TANGIBLE NON-INCOME-PRODUCING PERSONAL PROPERTY**

A. Bequest to Spouse: If my spouse survives me, I give and grant to her, all of my tangible non-income-producing personal property, including, but not limited to, my personal effects, jewelry, cameras, sporting equipment, tools, lawn and garden equipment and any automobile or automobiles owned by me at the time of my death and used as my personal vehicles. This bequest does not include any furniture, fixtures, household furnishings, silverware, china, dishes, kitchen utensils, linens and household goods used by my spouse and me for the reason that these items are and have been her property absolutely, and to such extent as may be necessary, I hereby confirm her absolute ownership thereof.

B. Alternate Bequest if Spouse Does Not Survive: If my spouse predeceases me, I direct that any and all of my tangible non-income-producing personal property shall be given to my sons, THOMAS E. GARNER and ROBERT P. GARNER, or the survivor of them, in equal shares, share and share alike, absolutely, and the division of said personal property shall be made in approximately equal shares with respect to valuation, and the decision of my Personal Representatives shall be absolute and final.

C. Regard for Memorandum: While the foregoing bequests are absolute, it is my wish that any memorandum I may leave whether or not addressed to my Personal Representatives indicating my desires with respect to the disposal of any items of my tangible non-income-producing personal property shall be fully performed.

**ARTICLE IV - DEFINITION OF RESIDUARY ESTATE**

For all purposes of dispositions herein, I herein and hereby define my "residuary estate" as meaning consisting of, being, including and deemed and construed to be all real estate, personal property, and property of every kind and nature, which I may own on the date of my death, and over which I may have power to dispose, whether owned by me now, or acquired by me hereafter, so that, in any event, intestacy is avoided in all events in the disposition of my estate.

**ARTICLE V - DISPOSITION OF RESIDUARY ESTATE IF SPOUSE SURVIVES**
I give, devise and bequeath said residuary estate to my spouse, LILA M. GARNER, if she survives me, in fee simple, absolutely, forever, free and clear of any and all restrictions.

ARTICLE VI – DISPOSITION OF RESIDUARY ESTATE
 IF SPOUSE DOES NOT SURVIVE

In the event my spouse predeceases me, I give, devise and bequeath said residuary estate in the following manner, to wit:

A. Distribution to THOMAS E. GARNER: ONE-HALF (1/2) of said residuary estate shall be distributed absolutely unto THOMAS E. GARNER, if he survives me; if he does not survive me, then unto his then living issue, per stirpes, subject however, to the terms, conditions and provisions of Paragraph D below.

B. Distribution to ROBERT P. GARNER: ONE HALF (1/2) of said residuary estate shall be distributed absolutely unto ROBERT P. GARNER, if he survives me; if he does not survive me, then unto his then living issue, per stirpes, subject, however, to the terms, conditions and provisions of Paragraph D below.

C. Distribution to Surviving Son if a Son Predecesses Me Leaving No Issue Surviving Me: In the event that a son of mine predeceases me, leaving no issue of him surviving me, then, and in such event, the share of such son shall pass unto his brother, or the then living issue of his brother, per stirpes, subject, however, to the terms, conditions and provisions of Paragraph D below.

D. Separate Trust for Minors: Notwithstanding anything in this Will to the contrary, in the event any part of my estate shall vest in absolute ownership in any minor, I devise and bequeath the share of such minor to the Trustees hereinafter designated, IN TRUST, nevertheless to be held, managed and distributed as a separate trust upon the following terms and conditions. During the minority of such person, the Trustees shall distribute to or for the benefit of such minor, such portion or all or none of the income or principal or both of such minor’s separate trust as the Trustees, in their absolute discretion, deem necessary or desirable to provide for the proper health, education, maintenance and support of such minor, any income from such separate trust earned in any calendar year and not distributed within one hundred five (105) days after the end of such year shall be accumulated and added to the principal thereof. When said minor attains legal age, or upon his or her death, whichever event occurs first, said Trustee shall distribute, absolutely, in fee simple, forever, free and clear of all restrictions, the then balance of the trust for such minor, both principal and income, in the entirety thereof.

ARTICLE VII – SIMULTANEOUS DEATH

In the event my spouse and I both die simultaneously or under such circumstances that there is not sufficient evidence that we died other than simultaneously, my spouse shall be conclusively presumed to have predeceased me for purposes of this Will. In the event any person who would be a beneficiary under any provision of this Will, (except my spouse), if he or she shall survive me, should die simultaneously or at about the same time with me, in or as the result of a common disaster, or simultaneously, or at about the same time in or as a result of a common disaster, or should die irrespective of any common disaster, under such circumstances as render it impossible or difficult to determine whether or not such person survived me, I direct that for the purposes of this Will which are dependent upon such person surviving or not surviving me, such person or persons shall be deemed to have predeceased me and all assets subject to this Will shall pass and vest hereunder pursuant to such presumption.

ARTICLE VIII – FIDUCIARIES

A. Appointment of Personal Representatives: I appoint my spouse to serve as Personal Representative of this Will. In the event my spouse should be or become unable or unwilling for any reason to serve as Personal Representative, I appoint me sons, THOMAS E. GARNER and ROBERT P. GARNER, or the survivor of them, to serve as Personal Representatives or Personal Representative, as the case may be, of this Will.

B. Appointment of Trustees: I appoint my sons, THOMAS E. GARNER and ROBERT P. GARNER, or the survivor of them, to serve as Trustees or Trustee, as the case may be, of the trust created herein or arising hereunder.

C. Waiver of Bond: I direct that no Personal Representative or Trustee named in the Article shall be required to furnish any bond or other security in any jurisdiction for the faithful performance of their duties as such, the same being specifically waived hereby.

D. Waiver of Qualification of Trustees: I hereby waive compliance by the Trustees appointed hereunder with any law now or hereafter in effect requiring qualification, or administration, or accounting by said Trustees to any Court.

ARTICLE IX – POWERS OF FIDUCIARIES

In addition to, and not by way of limitation of, the powers and discretions elsewhere herein granted, or those conferred by law, or those conferred by the Nebraska Probate Code, as the same may provide, from time to time, I give and grant to my Personal Representatives and Trustees the power and authority to do any of the following as in their unrestricted judgment and discretion they deem advisable for the better management and preservation of my property, without resort to any person or court for further authority:

A. Retain Property: To retain such property as an investment without regard to the proportion such property as an investment without regard to the proportion such property or property of a similar character so held may bear to the entire estate held by them;

B. Sell and Exchange Property: To sell such property at either public or private sale for cash or on credit; to exchange such property, and to grant options for the purchase thereof;

C. Invest and Reinvest: To invest and reinvest in any property, including, but not limited to, bonds, notes, debentures, mortgages, certificates of deposit, common stocks, preferred stocks, money market funds, mutual funds, common trust funds, real estate or any interest therein, and other property, real or personal, of every kind or nature, without being limited to the class of investment in which fiduciaries are authorized by law or any rule of court to invest funds;

D. Participate in Reorganizations: To consent to and participate in any plan of reorganization, consolidation, merger, combination, or other similar plan,
and to consent to any contract, lease, mortgage, purchase, sale, or other action by any corporation pursuant to such plan;

F. Vote Stock: To exercise all conversion, subscription, voting and other rights of whatsoever nature pertaining to any such property, and to grant proxies, discretionary or otherwise, in respect thereof;

F. Borrow: To borrow money and to pledge or mortgage any such property as security therefor;

G. Compromise Claims: To settle, collect, compound, compromise, release, sell or pay and discharge any and all claims or demands belonging to or made against me or my estate on such terms as may seem for the best interests of my estate, and to accept any security for any debt and to allow such time for payment thereof, either with or without any security as shall seem proper.

H. Allocation Between Principal and Income: To apportion or allocate between principal or income any and all receipts of money or other property paid or delivered to them, and any and all capital gains and losses on estate assets, and any and all expenses, including taxes, incurred by them, which apportionment or allocation shall fully protect them with respect to any action taken or payments made in reliance thereon;

I. Distributions in Cash or in Kind: To satisfy any general legacy or any part thereof in kind; and in the division or distribution of my property or any part thereof, to make partition, division or distribution of property in kind; and for such purposes, to determine the value of any such property, which determination shall be conclusive and not subject to review;

J. Collect Property: To collect and receive any and all sums and any and all property of whatsoever kind or nature due or owing or belonging to them in their fiduciary capacity, and to give full discharge and acquittance therefor;

K. Insurance Policies, Premiums and Options: To retain as an asset of the estate and to pay premiums on all policies of insurance, including life insurance, held by them, and to elect any options or settlements or exercise any rights under such policies;

L. Joint Income Tax Returns and Gifts of Spouse: Without duty to give or obtain consideration therefore, to join with my spouse or my spouse’s estate in the filing of any Federal income tax return for any year for which I have not filed such return prior to my death, and to consent to any gifts made by my spouse as being made half by me for the purpose of the Federal gift tax law, even though such action may result in additional liabilities for my estate; any income and gift taxes due on such returns, and any deficiencies, interest or penalties thereon shall be allocated between my estate and my spouse or my spouse’s estate, or all to any of them, in such manner as my personal representatives in their discretion, shall deem equitable and proper;

M. Business Interests: With respect to any business interest that may be or become a part of the estate, whether organized as a sole proprietorship, partnership or corporation, upon such terms, for such time, and in such manner as they deem advisable:

1. To hold, retain and continue to operate such business solely at the risk of the estate and without liability on their part for any losses resulting therefrom;
2. To dissolve, liquidate or sell such business at such time and upon such terms as they deem advisable;
3. To enlarge, diminish or change the scope or nature of the activities of such business;
4. To incorporate such business and hold the stock as an asset of the estate;
5. To use the general assets for the purposes of such business;
6. To borrow money for business purposes and to mortgage, pledge or otherwise encumber the assets of the estate to secure the loan;
7. To employ such officers, managers, employees or agents as they deem advisable for the management of such business; and
8. To exercise with respect to the retention, continuance and disposition of such business all the rights and powers of which I would have been capable, including all powers as may now or hereafter be conferred upon them by law or as may be necessary to enable them to administer the estate in accordance with the provisions of this Will, subject to any limitations thereof that may be provided for herein;

N. Real Property: To deal with real property in any manner lawful to an owner thereof. This authority includes the right to manage, protect, and improve it, to raise, alter and repair improvements, to see or contract to sell it in whole or in part, to partition it, to grant options to purchase it, to donate it, to convey it, to acquire it, release, or grant easements or other rights relating to it, to dedicate parks and thoroughfares, to subdivide it, to vacate any subdivision or any part thereof and resubdivide it from time to time, to lease it in whole or in part, and to renew, extend, contract for, and grant options in connection with leases. Leases, contracts to sell, mortgages and any contract entered into by them can be made on any terms and for any period, including a period beyond the duration or termination of the administration of my estate or any trust, and

O. Deal With Property as Absolute Owner: To do all such acts, take all such proceedings and exercise all such rights and privileges, although not hereinbefore specifically mentioned, with relation to such property as if the absolute owners thereof.

ARTICLE X - DEFINITIONS

Whenever used in this Will, unless the context of any passage thereof requires otherwise:

A. Singular Includes Plural and Masculine Includes Feminine: The singular includes the plural and the plural includes the singular, and the masculine includes the feminine and the feminine includes the masculine.

B. Personal Representatives: The term “Personal Representatives” shall include any and all personal representatives of my estate, whether in connection with the domiciliary or any ancillary administration thereof, and whether male or female, and whether one or more than one, as well as the substitutes and successors.

C. Trustees: The term “Trustees” shall mean the Trustees appointed herein and all substitute and successor Trustees.
D. Spouse: The term "my spouse" shall mean my wife, LILA M. GARNER.

E. Education: The term "proper education" shall be construed to mean not only all levels of education in the customary sense, including private tutorials and professional and advanced education, but also spiritual education, musical instruction and physical education, including summer camps for minor beneficiaries.

F. Health: The term "proper health" shall be construed to include medical, dental, hospital, drug and nursing costs, as well as all expenses of invalidism and costs of medically prescribed equipment and travel.

G. Maintenance and Support: The term "proper maintenance and support" shall mean the maintenance and support of the income beneficiaries in accordance with their accustomed manner of living.

H. Child and Children: The terms "child" and "children" shall mean descendants by blood of the first degree and persons conceived but not yet born.

I. Issue: The term "issue" shall be limited to lawful issue and shall include descendants by blood and persons conceived but not yet born.

J. Adopted Children: Legally adopted children shall be deemed to be natural born children of their adoptive parents, and terms of kinship or descent used herein shall be construed accordingly.

ARTICLE XI - APPLICABLE STATE LAW

This will shall be interpreted, construed and administered under the laws of the State of Nebraska and the Nebraska Probate Code as the same provide on the date of my death since I am a resident of and domiciled in the State of Nebraska on the date of execution hereof and since this Will is being made by me within the State of Nebraska.

ARTICLE XII - WAIVER OF ATTORNEY-CLIENT PRIVILEGE

I hereby waive the attorney-client privilege existing between myself and R. L. JEFFREY, Attorney at Law, who is acting as a witness to the execution by me of this Will and I specifically authorize said Attorney at Law to testify as to any conferences, conversations or discussions which I had with him in connection with the preparation and execution of this Will and my testamentary plan set forth in this Will.

ARTICLE XIII - EMPLOYMENT OF COUNSEL

I hereby represent, state and declare that it is my express desire and wish that my Personal Representatives and Trustees appointed hereunder shall employ R. L. JEFFREY, Attorney at Law, 3601 Calvert Street, Lincoln, Nebraska 68506, if he is, on the date of my death, ready, willing and able, as counsel to assist them in the administration of my estate and the administration of any trusts created under this Will, notwithstanding the waiver of the attorney-client privilege made by me pursuant to the provision of ARTICLE XII above, and it is my unilateral hope, wish and direction that he will accept such employment.

ARTICLE XIV - CONSTRUCTION OF WILL

The headings and subheadings used throughout this Will are for convenience only and have no significance in the interpretation of the body of this Will, and I direct that they be disregarded in construing the provisions of this Will.

I, BENNIE F. GARNER, the Testator, sign my name to this instrument, consisting of ten (10) typewritten pages, this included, on the margin of each of which I have placed my initials for the purpose of identification, all done on this 20th day of November, 1984, and being first duly sworn, do hereby declare to the undersigned authority that I sign and execute this instrument as my Last Will; that I sign it willingly; that I execute it as my free and voluntary act for the purposes therein expressed; that I am of legal age; that I am of sound mind and under no constraint or undue influence.

/s/ Bennie F. Garner
Testator

We, Letha L. Jeffrey, Mae P. Baker and Jim L. Henshaw, the witnesses, sign our names to this instrument, all done on the 20th day of November, 1984, and being first duly sworn, do hereby declare to the undersigned authority that the Testator signs and executes [sic] this instrument as his Last Will; that I sign it willingly; that I execute it as my free and voluntary act for the purposes therein expressed; that I am of legal age; that I am of sound mind and under no constraint or undue influence.

/s/ Letha L. Jeffrey of 6420 West Shore Dr Lincoln, Nebraska
/s/ Mae P. Baker of 2129 East Av Lincoln, Nebraska
/s/ Jim L. Henshaw of 7320 Yosemite Drive Lincoln, Nebraska

STATE OF NEBRASKA
COUNTY OF LANCASTER

Subscribed, sworn to and acknowledged before me by BENNIE F. GARNER, the Testator, and subscribed and sworn before me by /s/Letha L. Jeffrey,
/s/Mae P. Baker and /s/Jim L. Henshaw, witnesses, on this 20th day of November, 1984.

MARGARET A. OSTWALD
GENERAL NOTARY PUBLIC
STATE OF NEBRASKA
Siblings, surname Garner:

- William Earl "Earlie" died young without issue
- Clyde married Thelma Berniece Covington; no issue
- Lottie Jane married James Burl Petifer; issue without issue
- Jessie Willard (called Willard) married Mary Louise Sublette; no issue
- Orvelle "Pat" married Doris Mae Wolfe; issue without issue
- Audie Sue (called Sue) married James Milton Thomason; issue
- Vance Floyd married Pauline Tackett; issue
  [Bennie Fay]
- Charles Edward died young without issue

See Illustrations Numbers 2 and Numbers 2 and 3.

Parents are Numbers 4 and 5, Book Two.

3 – Lila Marie NIEMANN – autobiography continued from page 715.

I learn to live alone: Ben’s funeral arrangements were the easy part. I inherited the remaining spaces in the Seward Cemetery lot that Grandmother Gumbel bought in 1929 when Grandfather died, my parents and sister also having been buried there. Ben and I had our gravestone placed there in 1994, later making explicit arrangements and paying for our cremations and funerals and the burial of our cremains.

I realize, since almost five years have passed, that I did some things to torture myself. Although there was no viewing, I made arrangements with the mortuary staff and went there to clip a lock of Ben’s hair, thinking about DNA at some future time. Later I was to learn that unless a hair follicle can be found, hair alone is worthless.

Determination can be a good thing. Determination set in, and I gritted my teeth and did everything that had to be done, not shedding a tear for nearly five weeks before the dam finally burst.

We decided that while Bob was in Nebraska, he would help me with business that needed to be done in connection with Ben’s death; when I needed further help later Tom would assist me. That is the way it worked out.

As soon as the relatives went back to their homes and we were alone in the house, I dropped the bomb on Bob about Ben’s first marriage, and later that day divulged the facts to Tom. Both were surprised to say the least, but both declared that they did not feel betrayed or angry with either of us for keeping the secret.

---

543 I believe that at some time in the future, a better identifier than DNA will be discovered; and a future family historian will be able to tie William Green Dafford to his parents, through some material found in the bodies of both Billie’s descendants and related people.
I realized that, in spite of my numbness and grief and shock, it was going to be necessary to make some kind of life for myself without clinging to the boys. I had coaxed Bob to buy a one-way ticket for his flight to Nebraska for Ben’s funeral, planning that he and I would return to his Maryland home in my car, and I would drive back home to Nebraska alone. I suppose I felt the need to get my feet wet immediately, as far as doing the driving as well as the navigating was concerned. I even got off the beaten track and drove to North Carolina to take the photo of Rev. Henry Pattillo’s historical marker found on page 485. Perhaps I was right to jump in with both feet, although it was difficult, because ever since I’ve felt confident traveling alone.

Still reeling from the aftermath of telling the boys about Ben’s first marriage, which proved lots more challenging for me to deal with than it apparently was for them, it occurred to me on the way home from Maryland that I could research Anita and her family, and perhaps find closure. Research kept my brain occupied, at least, and by the end of the summer I knew practically everything I was to find out. A call late in 2006 from Jack Foster, a Navy buddy of Ben’s, filled in the last of the blanks. He had been a witness at the wedding.

My own sorrow prevented me, I know now, from being supportive to my sons and their families. Some of that go-it-alone behavior is part of only-child syndrome. I kept my own counsel, too submerged in my own grief to consider that they were grieving too. My own parents had lived to be so debilitated by the ravages of old age that, while I mourned them sincerely, my feelings were mitigated by relief that they had been released from their suffering. Ben, on the other hand, up to the time he drove to the hospital for his hip surgery, had been himself. My grief for my parents differed vastly from that my sons and their families experienced after Ben’s death, but it took me a long time to recognize that.

There was no defining moment when it suddenly dawned that I was a single adult for the first time in my life. Rebellion may have colored my demeanor—I’ve been told by a handwriting expert that I’m a rebel and an optimist. My rings came off too soon; I ran across the box they had come in, and before I knew it they were in the box. As soon as I stopped crying at the drop of a hat, I began to experiment with makeup again—a California neighbor had introduced me to eye makeup. I knew all along that I liked the feeling of self-confidence it gave me when I looked my best, but Ben would accuse, “You’ve got that black stuff on your eyes again,” and it was less trouble to be compliant. After a time I sought out a hairdresser recommended by a friend I made at Nebraska Romance Writers, and she improved my hair a lot. I’ll never be glamorous.

I have said that the only good thing about being the only child comes when it’s time to divide the inheritance. My recovery after Ben’s death was complicated by the fact that I had no sibling to lean on. Cousin Peggy Streiff Haskell and her husband Charles came to my rescue more than once, as did Marvin and Evelyn Stewart and Myron and Barb Smith. I don’t mean to imply that the boys and their families have not been supportive, because they certainly have.
The Lord provides: A year or more before Ben died I had been asked if I would volunteer at the Family History Center in Lincoln. Since I’m not a Mormon, my appointment had to be approved through the church hierarchy. Before we headed for Maryland, Bob and I dropped in at the Family History Center to renew a film, and I was told that the permission had been granted and I had a volunteer job to come home to, a job that helped save my sanity.

The first trip alone with the camper was just horrible; I knew I wasn’t ready, but I also knew that no matter how long I waited, it was going to be tough; and it was. I went to Alexandria where Ben and I had often camped together, and some long-time camping friends, Bill and Lucille Peperkorn, were there to help me deal with my tears. Eventually I came to enjoy camping alone, often finding solace as nowhere else. After that first year, I bought a refrigerator for the camper and rearranged things to make camping alone comfortable. In 2006, I joined Loners on Wheels (LoW), an organization for camping singles.

When the first Christmas came I was determined to keep everything as normal as possible. It was such torture to put up the tree that I decided I would buy a new tree and new decorations for the next year, and did so. By this time I was also doing some redecorating and having some reupholstering done, realizing that I was living alone and my house would suit me better if it looked a little more feminine.

My interest in art led me to volunteer at Sheldon Art Museum’s visitors’ desk, until I realized that I wasn’t a very good volunteer; the acoustics in the Great Hall are not conducive to conversation, and I had a lot of trouble hearing visitors’ questions.

My determination never let up. We had arranged to rent, for two months during the winter of 2003, the same house we had been renting. After Ben died, I cancelled the reservation and was later sorry. When I decided to rent a place for that winter, the house wasn’t available but I rented another, and made the trip to Texas. Eleven miles south of Austin, my car lost power, and I had to call AAA for assistance. Its fuel pump had burned out. This was my first major car trouble to be dealt with alone. In the spring of 2004 I bought a new car, not nearly the ordeal I anticipated.

My research material and my computer went along to Texas, and I wrote the Grolm-Stillwold biographies found in this volume that winter. It rained a lot and I couldn’t be outdoors, so I ran out of research material before the time had all elapsed, which ultimately got me into trouble. Recall that emotionally, I was still fragile.

I used the library in Mission a good deal, checking E-mail, finding bits and pieces of information that I wanted to quote (I was also polishing biographies already written). Since I was running out of things to do, I walked through the stacks thinking I’d find some light escape reading. One book reached off the shelf and shook my hand. I saw that among its characters were some whose names were very similar to those in our

---

544 Perhaps my readers think I should have done some more polishing.
family; perhaps I left it for a last treat, because I didn’t read it in Texas. Soon after I returned home, I checked it out of the library in Milford.

The characters’ names were uncannily like those in our family; I believe, however, that it wasn’t the names but the divulging of a secret in the story, not one like mine but nonetheless a secret, that sent me into the downward spiral which resulted in a near-nervous breakdown. I hope it is understood that my pain was never caused by the secret itself, but by its revelation. The story ended ‘all right’ but left many loose threads. I was so distraught that I sat down at the computer to write a satisfactory ending and tie up those loose ends; before I was finished I had written a book-length novel that might be described as a sequel.

While trying to recover, I made a trip to Amity to see Ben’s sister and touch base with other relatives, a difficult venture and another way of torturing myself: I simply was not ready.

Traditions. Ben and I established too many. Every time I start on a trip, I hear his voice singing to me, “On the road again...” He had a pleasant speaking voice and a lovely singing voice, but few people ever heard him sing. This is only one example. Suffice it to say that Christmas Eve has been an unusually difficult time, and after that painful first year when I filled the Christmas stockings alone, the stockings aren’t hung by the chimney with care any longer.

Back home from Arkansas and coming apart at the seams, I started and finished a novel of my own, and have written parts of at least two more works of fiction; when it’s finished it will be a family saga. It remains to be seen whether the books will ever be published but I have to say that it’s doubtful, because I may never have courage enough to try to market them. My pen name, if I need one, may be some variation of my maiden name, such as Lylah Niemann, or perhaps Lyla Bennie.

During this tortuous period while I was discontented with everything about my life, I made some trips with my dear Azores friend Bettye Thomas, including one to Key West. Another time we visited Bellingrath Gardens near Mobile on a weather-perfect day while the azaleas were at their peak. It was a glorious experience. While in Mobile I bought a painting that depicted the combination of subjects I’d been dreaming of: hollyhocks, stair steps and the sea.

Floundering, I tried to focus enough to pick up the last of the research that would complete this book and happened to run into some leads that took the ancestry back several more generations. Cousin Peggy helped me gather the illustrations, but I experienced a kind of block that rendered me unable to scan them and prepare them for printing. The fact that my scanner was not compatible with my new computer, and scanning could only be done in the basement, may have been part of the problem.

Again, the Lord provides: About 1988, we had received a letter from Dr. Duane H. Smith, a dentist who had been adopted as an infant by Harry E. and Pauline (Wochner)
Smith. He asked if we knew anything about his biological mother, Ethel Marie Garner, who gave birth to him at Milford in 1937. I recall replying that our Garner family’s roots were in Arkansas, and I knew nothing—but I never forgot his puzzling situation. Early in 2005, he made contact again; this time, although I still knew nothing about his Garner roots, I did know something about genealogical research. Modern Nebraska research was new to me, however.

After pursuing many false leads, we uncovered the clues that united him with his birth family; sadly, both parents were already deceased. Pivotal in the success of the search were two documents held by the State of Nebraska but not in the public domain.

Duane obtained, by order of the York County, Nebraska, Judge, his original birth certificate; it stated his mother’s birthplace: Bridgeport, Nebraska. That, together with the 1930 census, placed the Garners in Morrill County. After we knew family names, online databases located a living uncle in California, who told us that Ethel had married—he didn’t know her husband’s name—and gone to New York. He also supplied the name of a cousin in South Sioux City, who stated that William Garner, their (her own and Duane’s) grandfather was buried at Walthill, Nebraska.

On 6 June 2005, as I braked for a stop sign while driving home from an Alexandria camping weekend, I ‘saw’ William Garner’s obituary, containing married names of his surviving daughters. I had already sought and failed to find it, having obtained a wrong death date from an online database. The Walthill Village Clerk was able to furnish his correct death date; that led to his newspaper obituary naming his married daughters including Ethel, Mrs. Frank Mercik of New York City. The Angel that hovered at my shoulder six miles east of Daykin must have followed me to the Historical Society the next day, because the obituary was buried under a misleading headline in the Walthill newspaper and printed a week later than expected. Only by the grace of God did I find it.

The Mercik name is unusual enough that a Confidential Intermediary, Darlene Wilson, found Ethel’s other two living sons, Frank J, Mercik, Jr., and Ronald L. Mercik, the next day. Frank (he held a different position from Duane in the eyes of the State, because he had not been relinquished for adoption) asked for and obtained the paperwork compiled about Ethel while she was at the Nebraska Home for Dependent Children. These papers named Duane’s father, Howard Lorenz. Appendix 9 is Duane’s four-generation pedigree chart.

This intense, emotionally-draining but rewarding research pulled me out of the doldrums and propelled me forward. When exciting new documents about Duane’s forebears arrived, my ‘block’ dissipated and I scanned them—a way had been found to make my old scanner compatible with my new computer—so they could be sent to him by E-mail. Soon I was able to work on my own scanning. After Duane spoke with his father’s daughters, Pamella Lorenz Kleidon and Sandra Lorenz (Martin) Holbrook, I found enough closure to return to this book in earnest. When I can approach that
intersection six miles east of Daykin without experiencing a starburst in my middle, I’ll know that I’ve found complete closure.

I resolved that I would make a trip to Germany during the summer of 2005, and during the spring I made flight reservations as well as arranging to rent a car and a cell phone. My trip worked out beautifully; I flew from Omaha to Cincinnati to Frankfurt, Hertz gave me a nice little Mercedes, and I had a fantastic time, driving about 1,300 miles, many of them very fast. I love to drive fast. I visited most of the places from whence my ancestors had emigrated, as well as many living relatives. It had been my dream to sleep in all of the villages my immigrant ancestors actually departed from, and the last remaining portion of that dream came true on the 2005 trip, when I spent a night in Stemmen at the home of cousin Christine Day and her family, Grolm cousins. This was the ‘good bye’ trip, as I don’t believe I’ll undertake such a trip again, although there is no reason why I cannot.

While writing “Our Story” I failed to mention the family recipe book I compiled. It was in the works for many years and was completed and printed during one of our Texas winters. I had every intention of incorporating it in this volume, but the project got so unwieldy that the plan had to be abandoned.

With nothing in particular in the planning stages as I write this early in 2007, I fully expect that the Lord will again provide something interesting for me to do with the rest of my life. I plan to continue working on the fictional stories I’ve begun; and of course as long as I’m able I’ll be a genealogy volunteer and a camper. If I do anything noteworthy or outrageous, I invite owners of this book who know about it to make notes in the margins.

While I wait for the Lord to let me know how I will serve Him during my remaining days, I look back over my life and privileges I’ve enjoyed. Foremost of course, it was my privilege to enjoy the love of a good man for forty-six years, and that of another good man after some three years of widowhood.

Awe overwhelms me as I relive my life experiences, some undreamed-of because of their remoteness, some fantastic from the standpoint of their fame and beauty, some important from a historical perspective, some whimsical by their very ordinariness. Ben and I both were always more interested in natural or historical phenomena than sites created to attract tourists, and we saw many. An important but omitted marvel will doubtless come to mind after this is printed, but here is a little overview of those events and sights that I count among myself privileged to have seen or experienced, certainly not in order of importance:

Wet snow melting as it fell at the Arctic Circle in Norway; a flowing stream in Norway, rocks and limbs in it snow-capped while nearby trees showed evidence of spring; the Niemann Hof in Germany, including the dwelling of my forebears from attic to cellars; the Schilling Hof in Schartau; the old barn, all that is left of the Gumbel dwelling-place on Strandweg in Niedermüllrich; the Grolm-Stüllwold Hof in Stemmen; Bentsen-Rio Grande State Park in Texas, in my opinion one of the most beautiful spots on earth; Niagara Falls; Bridal Veil Falls; Smith
Falls; Stonehenge; Runnymede; all the publicly accessible cliff dwellings at Mesa Verde National Park; Monument Valley; Grand Canyon; a ‘bright canary yellow’ sky almost every morning over tropical Guam; the Opera House in Sydney; kangaroos in the Australian Outback, where I actually drove several miles on the ‘wrong’ side of the road; the Glockenspiel and Hofbrauhaus in München; sudden Nebraska summer storms that sent the chickens running to shelter while the wind blew the soft feathers beneath their tails flat against their bodies, making them a funny sight; Colonial Williamsburg; a pouring rain viewed from the camper window, lighted by a street light, but the street light itself being hidden by a tree so the rain seemed to glow in the indirect light; playing in a granary containing wheat a couple of feet deep; the hilarious (to me) experience of wearing thermal long underwear with an evening gown; Tintagel; New Orleans before the destruction of Hurricane Katrina; the plantation mansions along the Mississippi River; the Lewis and Clark winter headquarters near Seaview, Washington; Unter den Linden.

Over the years I’ve made a statement I’ve termed “Lila Garner’s Law” and it goes like this: If you despise anyone on account of race, or religion, or ethnicity, or lifestyle, your child, or your grandchild, or your great-grandchild will marry someone of that race or religion or ethnicity or will adopt that lifestyle.

If I were a crusader I would espouse a cause: an attempt to do something about the fact that women’s boots and overshoes are not designed for traction on ice equal to men’s. It is the worst kind of discrimination.

My obituary will read something like this (I hope that the survivors I list here will not have to be moved to the ‘predeceased by’ list):


“Survivors, sons and daughters-in-law Tom and Sue of [residence] and Bob and Sally of [residence]. Three grandsons, Brandon, Jacob and Joel Garner; Granddaughter Lauren Garner [state spouses’ names]. Great-grandchildren [?]. [Special friend?] [Sisters- and brother-in-law?]”

“Predeceased by husband of forty-five years; parents; sister, Janet Ruth Niemann.

“Graveside service: [date and time] Seward Cemetery, Seward. No visitation, cremation. Register book signing [dates and times] Lincoln Memorial Funeral Home, 6800 S. 14th St. Memorials to the family.”

My Last Will and Testament is very like Ben’s, and I’m not going to type it here; if our estate planning works, it will not be probated. I created a Trust in 1984 and the Trust Agreement, containing genealogical information, is on file in the Seward County Courthouse.

My descendants know that I expect them to have my death date engraved on the
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

gravestone I share with Ben in the Seward Cemetery.

Afterthoughts: In my obituary draft I described myself as a collector, and it might be well to tell about my collections other than ancestors: old National Geographic Magazines, Victorian (and newer) pressed glass in the grape patterns, world globes and maps, furniture created to imitate Duncan Phyfe’s designs. And dishes! How I love dishes!

No one can possibly imagine how difficult it has been for me to complete Ben’s and my own biographies. I realize that they seem not to flow well, jumping from subject to subject, but they are the best I can do. It was much, much easier to compile biographies of the ancestors I had researched. Their paper trails, however, tell us little about their personalities, and I deemed it important to tell personal anecdotes about Ben and me.

Sibling, surname Niemann:
   Janet Ruth, stillborn
   [Lila]

See Illustrations Number 3 and Numbers 2 and 3.

Parents are Numbers 6 and 7, Book Two.
Illustration Number 2: Bennie Fay Garner

About 1935-36

The Reflector
(Yearbook)
Amity High School
1946

SCHOOL DAYS 1941-42
Amity High

10 November 1947
Graduation from U. S. Navy
Boot Camp
San Diego, California
Illustration Number 2: Ben’s signature from a durable power of attorney granted to wife Lila on 15 November 1984.

Illustration Number 2: This must have been taken at the time of Ben’s first reenlistment in the U. S. Navy in 1950.

Illustration Number 2: Ben Garner. Ben had this portrait made for his parents while he was in Japan about 1953.

Illustration Number 2: Ben Garner. I don’t think I ever saw Ben laugh any harder than when he opened this Christmas 1991 gift from Bob, a cap with a catfish ‘swimming though’ it, head coming out the front and tail out the back. Ben collected caps and prized this one as part of his extensive collection.

Illustration Number 2: Ben Garner helps hold a calf while branding at the Streiff cousins’ T-Bone Ranch west of Tryon, Nebraska. About 1994.

Illustration Number 2: Ben Garner in last photo, taken at Ord, Nebraska 23 March 2002 after he won the cribbage tournament there. It was the last tournament he played in.
Illustration Number 3: Lila Marie Niemann

Age 6 days.

Age 5 weeks.

Age about nine months

Photo by Alvin G. Gumbel.

15 May 1939. The rocking chair, originally Mildred Gumbel’s, is still in the family.

Second birthday, September 1939.
Illustration Number 3: Lila Niemann, with kittens escaping from a basket. Taken in front of the lilac bush, some time before we moved from the farm in 1951. Neighbor's home is in the background.

Illustration Number 3: Lila Niemann, about Sixth Grade, 1949?

Illustration Number 3: Lila Niemann, graduation from Seward High School, 1955.

Illustration Number 3: Lila Niemann Garner; believed to be photo for first ID card as a military dependent, 1956.
Illustration Numbers 3 and 2:  
Lila (Niemann) and Ben Garner  
After their 15 August 1956 wedding at  
Washington, D. C.

Illustration Numbers 1b and 1a, 3 and 2: Standing, Bob Garner, Tom Garner.  
Illustration Numbers 3 and 2: Lila (Niemann) Garner and Ben Garner, 1957, Photo by Sample's Studio, Seward.

Illustration Numbers 2 and 3: Ben wrote "She's Cute" after seeing granddaughter Lauren the day she was born, 12 December 1988. Lila wrote her name 'Lauren' as soon as it was announced, adding middle name 'Renee' later. Her Garner grandparents were communicating by blackboard because Ben was working nights and Lila was working days.


Illustration Numbers 2 and 3: Gravestone of Ben and Lila (Niemann) Garner at Seward Cemetery, Seward, Nebraska. Flag Holders represent Ben's Korean and Vietnam era Naval service.
Illustration Numbers 2 and 3: Ben and Lila Garner and their descendants.

Back row, left to right: Bob Garner, Sally (Pitluck) Garner, Sue (Jorgensen) Garner, Tom Garner.

Front row: Lila (Niemann) Garner holding Bob and Sally's son Jacob; Tom and Sue's daughter Lauren Garner and son Brandon Garner; Ben Garner holding Bob and Sally's son Joel Garner.

Lauren was not happy to have her picture taken that day.

January 1994 photo by Randy's Studio, Milford.
Appendix 1: Four-generation Pedigree of the Two Brothers.

Bennie Fay "Ben" Garner
B: 18 Dec 1928
P: Amity, Clark County, Arkansas
M 15 Aug 1956
P: Washington, D.C.
D: 25 Apr 2002
P: Lincoln, Lancaster Co., Nebraska
Cremains buried at Seward Cemetery.

Neva Ann Dafford
B: 4 Feb 1892
P: Amity, Clark County, Arkansas
D: 2 Mar 1970
P: Hot Springs, Garland Co., Arkansas
Cremains at Seward Cemetery, Amity.

1a Thomas Earl Garner, B. Aug 1960 at Belleville, St. Clair County, Illinois
1b Robert Paul Garner, B. Aug 1963 at Belleville, St. Clair County, Illinois

Oscar August Niemann
B: 24 Aug 1892
P: G Precinct, Seward Co., Nebraska
M 24 Feb 1932
P: Seward, Seward County, Nebraska
D: 25 Apr 1978
P: Seward, Seward County, Nebraska
Seward Cemetery.

Lila Marie Niemann
B: Sep 1937
P: Seward, Seward County, Nebraska
D:
P: Cremains to be buried at Seward Cemetery

Mildred Hilda Gumbel
B: 25 Aug 1903
P: Leahey, Seward County, Nebraska
D: 22 Aug 1993
P: Lincoln, Lancaster Co., Nebraska
Seward Cemetery.

Wife of Number 1a: Susan Lorraine Jorgensen
Wife of Number 1b: Sally Ruth Pitluck

Jesse M. Garner
B: 8 Nov 1845
P: McNairy County, Tennessee
M 18 Aug 1867
P: Amity, Clark County, Arkansas
D: 16 Jul 1903
P: Amity, Clark County, Arkansas
Pea Ridge Cemetery, Alpine, Clark Co.

Mary Jane Robinson
B: 8 Aug 1851
P: Clark or Montgomery Co., Arkansas
D: 23 Jun 1932
P: Salem, Clark County, Arkansas
Pea Ridge Cemetery, Alpine.

William Green Dafford
B: About 1852/1857
P: IL, KY, TN, GA?
M 6 Dec 1876
P: Clark County, Arkansas
D: 17 Mar 1902
P: Amity, Clark County, Arkansas
Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery.

Minervia Jane Elizabeth Runyan
B: 1 Sep 1855
P: Talladega County, Alabama
D: 30 Nov 1914
P: Amity, Clark County, Arkansas
Thompson’s Chapel Cemetery.

Heinrich Gottlieb Niemann
B: 5 Oct 1850
P: Währntrup, Lippe, Germany
M 23 Sep 1891
P: Seward, Seward County, Nebraska
D: 10 Mar 1936
P: Währntrup, Lippe, Germany
Helpup Cemetery.

Caroline Augusta Henriette Grolm
B: 26 Aug 1871
P: Stemmen, Lippe, Germany
D: 31 Jan 1948
P: Währntrup, Lippe, Germany
Helpup Cemetery.

George Alfred Gumbel
B: 29 Jul 1864
P: Peoria, Peoria County, Illinois
M 23 Sep 1891
P: Warsaw, Hancock County, Illinois
D: 24 Dec 1929
P: Seward, Seward County, Nebraska
Seward Cemetery.

Millie Schilling
B: 8 Jun 1864
P: Quincy, Adams County, Illinois
D: 26 Dec 1937
P: Seward, Seward County, Nebraska
Seward Cemetery.
Appendix 2: Pedigree of Tom Garner's wife, Sue.

1 Susanne Lorraine Jorgensen
   B: August 1960
   P: McCook, Red Willow County, Nebraska
   M: 10 Jan 1981
   P: Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska

2 Loren Rasmus Jorgensen
   B: October 1927
   P: Lincoln County, Nebraska
   M: 4 October 1952

3 Lorraine Regina Stohlmann
   B: August 1929
   P: St. Louis, Missouri

4 Jorgen Peter Jorgensen
   B: 10 Jul 1889
   P: Council Bluffs, Pottawattamie Co., Iowa
   M: 22 Nov 1916
   P: 
   D: 29 Aug 1977
   P: Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska

5 Anna Elsie Jepsen
   B: 12 Apr 1894
   P: Lincoln County, Nebraska
   D: 12 Dec 1958
   P: Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska

6 William Frederick Stohlmann
   B: 17 Nov 1887
   P: St. Louis, Missouri
   M: 10 Aug 1910
   P: St. Louis, Missouri
   D: 16 Oct 1961
   P: North Hollywood, Los Angeles Co., California

7 Mary "Mamie" Jesse Oetzel
   B: 3 Jun 1889
   P: St. Louis, Missouri
   D: 25 Nov 1979
   P: Van Nuys, Los Angeles County, California

8 Rasmus Jorgensen
   B: 23 Oct 1860
   P: Denmark
   M: 12 Nov 1886
   P: 
   D: 17 Dec 1893
   P: Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska

9 Maren Sophie Hansen
   B: 2 Aug 1863
   P: Denmark
   D: 25 May 1931
   P: Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska

10 Turkel Jepsen
    B: 13 Oct 1886
    P: Orne, Denmark
    M: 15 Apr 1899
    P: Lincoln County, Nebraska
    D: 29 Jan 1946
    P: Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska

11 Else Christina Jensen
    B: 22 Feb 1877
    P: Esbjerg Ribe, Denmark
    D: 10 Aug 1947
    P: Curtis, Frontier County, Nebraska

12 Ernst Stohlmann
    C: 1 Nov 1863
    P: Weiherg, Westfalen, Preußen
    M: 20 Jan 1885
    P: St. Louis, Missouri
    D: 7 Nov 1925
    P: St. Louis, Missouri

13 Catherine Hackenworth
    B: 1862
    P: 
    D: 1933/1934
    P: St. Louis, Missouri

14 Frederick Oetzel
    B: 
    P: 
    M: 
    P: 
    D: 
    P: St. Louis, Missouri

15 Margaret Kissell
    B: 
    P: 
    D: 
    P: St. Louis, Missouri

---

1 The 1900 census states her birth as June 1890. Her name has also been known to her daughter Lorraine as Mary Margaret "Mamie." Research into the Jesse name is needed: is it a surname?

2 Name variations found in St. Liborious Catholic Church records in St. Louis state name variations such as Hagenewert and Hakenewert.
# Appendix 3: Pedigree Chart of Bob Garner's wife, Sally.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Birth Date</th>
<th>Place of Birth</th>
<th>Marriage Date</th>
<th>Death Date</th>
<th>Place of Death</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Sally Ruth Pitluck</td>
<td>August 1957</td>
<td>Spokane, Washington</td>
<td>Aug 1987</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(Spouse of no. 1)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Robert Paul &quot;Bob&quot; Garner</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Jacob Pitluck</td>
<td>1874</td>
<td>Knyzyn, Poland</td>
<td>1894</td>
<td>1938</td>
<td>Chicago, Cook County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Sarah or Sora-Rivka Woroszylski</td>
<td>Nov 15 1873</td>
<td>Biatystok, Poland</td>
<td>Feb 1970</td>
<td></td>
<td>Chicago, Cook County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Harriet Benson Walton</td>
<td>Apr 28 1890</td>
<td>Milo, Warren County, Iowa</td>
<td>Apr 1983</td>
<td></td>
<td>Roberts, Ford County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Samuel or Shmuel Pitluck</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Malka &quot;Mollie&quot; Burnette</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Mordachai or Benjamin Woroszylski</td>
<td>Nov 15 1873</td>
<td>Biatystok, Poland</td>
<td>Feb 1970</td>
<td></td>
<td>Chicago, Cook County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Joel David Underwood</td>
<td>Nov 19 1860</td>
<td>St. Clair County, Missouri</td>
<td>Mar 1884</td>
<td>Jul 11 1953</td>
<td>St. Clair County, Missouri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Nancy Jane Allison</td>
<td>Aug 16 1859</td>
<td>Missouri</td>
<td>Mar 11 1954</td>
<td></td>
<td>St. Clair County, Missouri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Homer Goode Walton</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Lula Bridges</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

PLEASE NOTE: Appendix 4 does not exist; I lost track of the numbering system.
ADMINISTRATORS

SALE,

"BY order of SPARTAN GOODLETT, Esq. Ordinary for Greenville District.

"Will be Sold at the late residence of John Blassingame, dec. in Greenville District, three miles from the Court House—All the perishable property belonging to the estate of said deceased consisting of Negroes, horses, mules, oxen, cattle, sheep, hogs, goats, &c. as follows:

"38 NEGROES, some of the most valuable fellows in this country, wenches, girls, boys and children, of all ages and sizes, 12 head of horses, 6 mules, one valuable jack, 50 head of cattle, 1 yoke of oxen, 250 head hogs, 70 or 80 sheep, 12 or 14 goats, 4000 weight of bacon, two road waggons, 1 ox cart, an excellent northern made gig and harness, 1 sulkey and harness, two cotton machines, one still and stands, two thousand bushels corn, a quantity of fodder, oats, and rye, 33 bales picked cotton in good order, packed in square bales, weighing about 300 lb. each—all the household and kitchen furniture, farming and plantation tools, belonging to said estate; and a great many other articles too numerous to be inserted in a common advertisement.

"The sale to commence on Tuesday the 17th Feb. next, at 11 o’clock, and continued from day to day until all the property is sold; for all sums above 5 dollars, 12 months credit will be given, by the purchaser giving note with approved security; for all sums under five dollars, Cash will be required.

WM. E. BLASSINGAME,\{ Admr’s

E. B. BENSON,\}

"January 12, 1824."
Appendix 6.

Norman Runyon's Disclaimer

(Edited for clarity and footnoted by Lila Niemann Gamer)

As I looked over all the discussion about Anna "Barefoot", I feel that I owe everyone an explanation of where that fictitious name came from and why: It was my fault—although unwittingly so. I purchased Marie Runyan Wright's first book Tracking Barefoot Runyan shortly after its publication. I began a correspondence with Marie and I was intrigued by her statement that she thought that her Isaac "Barefoot" Runyan's nickname (?) might have come from his mother's family. Since, as seems to be common in many families, there is a tradition that my branch has "Native American" ancestry I did some speculation (ONLY) that maybe his mother's name might be Bearfoot. Another tradition has it that my John Runyon, Sr.'s wife's name was Anne and, hence, "Anna Barefoot" seemed possible.

I didn't hear from Marie, for a long time after that, and I was shocked when I learned "through the grapevine" that she had turned that speculation into "fact".

Since that time, new evidence has come to light, in the form of documents handed down through the family, that John, Sr.'s wife was probably Anne Goodpasture. That makes more sense since the first Runyon land record in the Brock's Gap area was a newly obtained land grant being transferred from one Jacob Goodpasture to a John Runying. But I still must state that, at this time, the name of John Runyon, Sr.'s wife has not been proven.

Another item that I have noticed being mentioned, in this same context, is Marie's claim that John's wife was from an Indian village named Tunis. There was (and is still shown on some maps) a village named Tunis on the northern end of Runion Creek. In fact, Runion Creek was originally called Tunis Creek. There is no evidence that Tunis was ever an Indian village—or that there were ever any Indian villages anywhere in that area. According to the various county histories that I have of that part of the Shenandoah Valley, the Indians never lived in the Valley. They used it as a hunting grounds but not as a residence. In fact, these histories state that they would deliberately burn off the Valley each fall to keep it clear of trees. This ended up working to their disadvantage, when the Europeans came, because it made the Valley a virtual highway and very desirable farm land.

I hope this lays Anna Barefoot to rest peacefully.

If any of you are descended from my John Runyon, Sr. or from Marie's Barefoot, there are some other areas of her book that need to be set right. Mind you, I have no reason to believe that there are any problems with what Marie wrote on the descendants of Barefoot. She put a lot of hard and, hopefully, good work into that but I have not investigated that part.

However, much of what she says about Barefoot's marriage and, probably, everything she says about his ancestry is suspect at best. She is correct in her marriage date between Barefoot and Margaret Rambo and she is correct in saying that the marriage was performed by Rev. John Alderson (Rev. John Alderson, Jr. to be specific.)

Unfortunately, she is quite adamant that the marriage took place in the existing Brock's Gap Baptist Church, on Runion Creek. That is impossible. Rev. Alderson never served at that church. He served at a predecessor of that church called the Linville Creek Baptist Church, which was south of the town of Broadway. That church was started around 1753. By 1808, that church was so run down that funds were raised to build a new church adjacent to it. By 1843, so many people had moved west that most of the congregation was from Brock's Gap so new land was donated and the present church built. By that time

---

1 This is probably a loose translation of the Swiss-German name Vollenwider (Fulenwider).
2 Otherwise 'Tunnis'.
3 There are date errors and misspellings of names.
the Rev. Alderson was permanently relocated to Greenbriar County, West Virginia\(^4\) and no longer a pastor in Rockingham County.

As for the actual location of Barefoot’s marriage—that is hard to say. Rev. Alderson was a circuit-riding preacher and while serving at Linville Creek, he had a second church in what is now Greenbriar County. While he did record all the marriages he performed, his records do not say where they were performed. All civil records concerning Barefoot indicate that he lived in Shenandoah County up until the time he moved west. There is no county record of the marriage in either Rockingham or Shenandoah County. Of all the marriage records that I have copies, from that time period, the place of choice for the ceremony seems to have been in a private home—often the home of the bride’s parents.

Since there was a family named Ramboe listed in the civil records of Rockingham County, it is possible, but not certain, that Margaret may have been from that family\(^5\). In any case, neither Barefoot nor anyone named Rambo are mentioned in the preserved records of the Linville Creek church so it is unlikely that they attended there.

Regarding Marie’s assertions about Barefoot’s parentage: He was definitely not a son of John Runyon, Sr. of Brock’s Gap. The time frames are all wrong and there is not even any circumstantial evidence of such a connection—with the possible exception of Barefoot being married by the pastor of John’s church. It is possible that Barefoot may have been a younger brother of John but could just as easily have been a cousin. John’s first child was born ca. 1761 and county records document the fact that he died in 1830. We also, have copies of family records showing that John was still living in 1829 and that his estate was proven in 1830. For John to have been Barefoot’s father, in 1850, John would have had to have been born around 1730. I know that Marie says that Barefoot lived to be over 100\(^6\) but there is no evidence of such a great age in the surviving documents surrounding John’s death.

Continuing back up Marie’s listed ancestry for Barefoot: There is no evidence, that I know of, for that, either. Again, I’m afraid that I was the unwitting originator of her theories. In the same aforementioned correspondence with Marie, I told her that we were looking at the John Runyon (b. 15 Aug 1705 in Piscataway, NJ) to Peter and Providence (Blackford) Runyon as a possible candidate for our ancestor.

Obviously, she took that and ran with it too. While I still consider him as a possible ancestor, we have not been able to uncover any evidence that he was so. There are, at least, two other John Runyons\(^7\) who must be considered as possibilities as well: The most likely candidate being a descendant of Thomas Runyan born ca. 1723 and who was a great-uncle to the Vincent Runyon who died in Highland County, OH in 1826.

The 1705 John is a pretty elusive character. Monette’s\(^8\) book on the First Settlers of Piscataway says that John married Prudence Smalley, daughter of Joshua Smalley, but he offers no proof. In Joshua Smalley’s will, daughter Prudence Runyon is mentioned but neither her husband nor children are mentioned. (By the way, many records give Prudence’s birthdate as 12 March 1698. This is incorrect. If you read Joshua’s will, look at the date of the will and look at his stated age, you will see that 1698 is his birthdate—not that of daughter Prudence. Other records corroborate the fact that that was his birthdate.)

One footnote, I do not think that the John Runyon who purchased the land in Brock’s Gap in 1753 is the one we call John Runyon, Sr. More likely it was his father. I will go into that another time if anyone is looking into that. This past summer, I wrote to Marie and told her that I would buy her second book if she could provide the documentation for the ancestry she lists. She has not answered me nor do I expect her to. It doesn’t exist. So, enjoy what Marie has accomplished on the descendants of Barefoot but when it comes to Barefoot’s ancestry “Let the Buyer Beware!”

---

\(^4\) West Virginia was not in existence in 1843, but cut itself off from Virginia at the beginning of the Civil War.

\(^5\) Margaret’s ancestry has been proven elsewhere.

\(^6\) Insufficient proof has been found for Barefoot living to such an advanced age.

\(^7\) Norman seems to be fixating on John as the name of Barefoot’s father; Barefoot and Margaret did name a son John Wesley Runyan.

\(^8\) Monette’s book has been found to be unreliable.
Appendix 7.

Information about Alexander Clingman

_from Dan Baird_

(Footnotes added by Lila Niemann Garner)

Based on the date which Alexander took an Oath of Allegiance it is assumed that he was born before 11 October 1738. This is assuming that he was at least 16 years of age when he took the Oath. It is presumed that Alexander was born in Prussia and immigrated to the colonies. There is little or no information about him until 1754. Some researchers have indicated that Alexander was married to a Mary Ehrenhardt in Bucks County, Pennsylvania. This information was reported in the early 1970s and has not been verified. There are some facts that coincide with this possibility. Johan Philip Ehrenhardt's family is known to have lived in Berks County, Pennsylvania. Johan's father Johannes Ehrenhardt and Johann Philip Ehrenhardt both took Oaths to the Government in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania on 2 Nov 1744, having arrived from Rotterdam on the ship 'Friendship'. Johann Philip Ehrenhardt was born in Prussia in about 1722 or 1723. Knowing that Alexander was born before 1738 it is thought that if he was married to a Mary Ehrenhardt it would probably have been a sister to Johann Philip Ehrenhardt. IGI records indicate that it was Johann's daughter but this may be an error.

Another possible indication that Alexander was in Pennsylvania is the family of John Michael Clingman that is well documented as living in Berks, Pa. To date no positive connection has been made.

The first positive information as to the existence of Alexander Clingman is when he is listed as a chain carrier for surveys which were performed on 2, 3, and 6 of May 1754 and again on 29 Aug 1754. The survey performed on 29 Aug, 1754 was for the land which was later granted to Peter Arront, who was a neighbor to Alexander. This is documented in the Abstracts of Land Grants, Vol. 3, for The Granville District of North Carolina, 1748-1763.

Alexander took the Oath of Allegiance in Rowan County, North Carolina on 11 October 1754. He would normally have been at least 16 years of age to take this oath. It is also presumed that his father did not immigrate or did not take an oath of allegiance when Alexander was a child.

On the 12th of May 1756 land is granted to Peter Arrant which is described as being adjacent to land owned by Alexr. Clingman, George Cathey, John Nisbet and the Courthouse. This documents that Alexander had already received land of his own.

On the 22nd of January 1757 John Verbell bought land which is described as being adjacent to the Courthouse, Alexander Clingman, and the path to George Cathey and John Nisbet.

Alexander Clingman is listed as a Taxpayer for Rowan County in both 1759 and again in 1761. Alexander's name is not found on the taxlists for later taxes, until 1778. This could mean that he had sold his land and had nothing to tax or possibly that he was away, perhaps in Prussia, at the times, or that there were two Alexanders and the older one was deceased at this time.

There is a rather long stretch of time where no reference to Alexander is found. Nothing is found until 1772. This leads some researchers to believe that there are two Alexander Clingmans, the father and a son. Other researchers believe that Alexander returned to Prussia to get married. This belief is substantiated by a couple of

1 Dan is using the word 'Prussia', but what he means is one of the German-speaking countries in Europe. In 1790, according to expert genealogist Lloyd Bockstruck there were 1,789 places on the European Continent entitled to be called 'nations' where the German language was spoken.
2 I questioned whether this is yet another corruption of the name 'Ehrenhardt', and Dan believes that it is a separate name.
pieces of information. In Peter Keiser's will he names his daughter as Elizabeth Clingerman. A second document is the immigration record of an Elizabeth Clingmanin and son Andreas, 2½ years old. This was in 1766 in South Carolina as part of the Protestant Refugee Bounty Act of 1761. On the same ship was listed a 19 year old Peter Keysher. It is thought that these are the children of Peter Keiser. Also listed are several Irrigs and a Fisherin. I have wondered if Alexander went to Prussia as a representative of several of the members of the community to arrange for the immigration of family members, using the Protestant Refugee Bounty Act of South Carolina as a means of immigration and acquiring land in South Carolina. The land given to Elizabeth Clingmanin was located between the Savannah and Broad Rivers. This is a very large area and exact location of Elizabeths land grant is not known. It is a fact that a couple of Alexander and Elizabeths children moved to South Carolina later on. Is it possible they moved to the land which had been given to their mother. If Andreas is the son of Alexander he was born in Germany in 1763 and since no further reference is found of him it is presumed he died young.

George Clingman is the eldest son of Alexander and Elizabeth as mentioned in Alexander's will. George was born approximately in 1770.

On 7 May 1772 Alexr. Clingerman and several other men were placed on a Jury to lay out a road from Salisbury to Henry Fulwider's land. This piece of information indicates to me that Alexander was of mature years and possibly refutes the theory that there were two Alexanders.

On 19 Feb 1774 Alexr. Clingman purchased 28 acres of land from Philip Aaronhart and his wife. Alexander ends up owning much of Philip's land, more so than Philip's own sons. It is this relationship that leads me to believe that the relationship between Alexander and the Ehrenhardts was more than business. I suspect that he was in fact married to Philip's sister or maybe his daughter Mary.

Alexander's daughter Esther was born approximately 1775. Alexander's children Catherine, Henry Alexander and Peter were also born sometime between 1774 and 1786. Michael was born about 1785.

Alexander is listed on the 1778 Tax list for Rowan, North Carolina.

On 4 Nov 1779 Alexander is appointed as a Juror for Rowan County. Again this is a function normally assigned to a mature person substantiating that there was only one Alexander.

Some researchers have stated that Alexander served in the Revolutionary War. It is claimed he was with General Benjamin Lincoln at the siege of Charleston and that he was in the group of North Carolina volunteers that were paroled when Lincoln surrendered. This occurred from around Sep 1779 to about June of 1780. I am skeptical that this happened. One researcher states that Alexander received a sum of money for providing goods to the war effort.

Again Alexander was appointed to be a Juror on 10 May, 6 Aug, and 8 Aug of 1782.

On the 9 Aug 1782 Alexander was listed with Michael Crite as a bondsman in giving security to indemnify the County of Rowan on the account of an illegitimate child of Zacharias Lyardly and Barbara Smatters. This was probably part of the function of a Juror.

On 10 October in 1783 Alexander purchased 400 acres of land on Second Creek adjacent to his own land and the land of Philip Earenhart and Frederick Fisher. This was State Grant 486.

On 8 Nov 1783 Alexander was once again appointed as a Juror.

On 4 Nov. 1784 Alexander's land is used in the description of the purchase of State Grant 1057 by Wm. Smother. The land is adjacent to Alexr. Clingman, Frederick Fisher, and Michael Knight.

Alexander's son Jacob was born 30 November 1786.

On 8 November 1788 Alexander was once again appointed to serve as a Juror.
On 7 Aug 1789 Alex Klingeleman and others were appointed to a road jury to layout a road from Salisbury to the old road.

Alexander Klingeleman is listed on the 1790 census for Rowan County. In his house are 3 males less than 16, 4 males over 16, and 4 females.

On 18 June 1796 Alexander purchased 150 acres of land, on both sides of Panther Creek, adjacent to Jacob Fisher, from Henry Smathers.

On 14 Feb 1797 Philip Ehrenhardt willed part of his land to his son John. The land is described as being adjacent to Lander's Klingerman.

Alexander Clingerman is found in the census for Rowan County in 1800. In Alexander's household are listed one male 10 to 16 years of age, 3 males between the ages of 16 and 26, and one male over 45. There are two females between 10 and 16 years of age and two females over 45 years old. It would be interesting to know who the other older female was living in Alexander's household. Elizabeth's father died about 1780 so this might be Alexander's mother-in-law.

Alexander Clingerman's will is dated 19 June 1803, and it was probated in 1803 indicating Alexander had died.

---

3 The cursive capital 'S' in early American handwriting often looks like an 'L'. I believe this name is 'Sander', pronounced 'Zander', the last two syllables of 'Alexander'.
Appendix 8.

Descendants of Thomas Mackgehee and Ann Bastrop/Baytop

found on an Internet Website maintained by Eleanor Colson

For many years, Thomas Mackgehee was called the “immigrant,” and identified as James MacGregor, son of Patrick MacGregor and Marian McDonald of Auchatrichatan. Believed to have come to America when Clan MacGregor was outlawed following Cromwell’s defeat of the Scots, he supposedly changed his name to Thomas MackGehee in an attempt to hide his identity from the Crown. Quite a number of researchers today think that Thomas was the son of the immigrant, William MackGahey, not the immigrant himself. Recent material suggests that a William MackGahey had sons William and Thomas in Virginia by 1653. The evidence suggests that the elder William may have changed his name from James MacGregor, making him the immigrant ancestor, and that “our” Thomas was his son.

Thomas owned land in several Virginia counties according to Dorothy Helmer. She said that, “Thomas MackGehee owned land in New Kent Co, as early as 1689, when it is recorded in St. Peter’s Vestry, p. 20, that he ‘marked the bounds of his land’.” Several years later, on 28 October 1702, Thomas petitioned for 256 acres in Pamunkey Neck on the west side of Nicatywance Swamp, in King William Co. This patent was granted for transporting six persons into the Colony. However, this land grant was not confirmed until 10 November 1713, according to English Duplicates of lost Virginia Records. Less than a year after his above petition, Thomas bought 110 acres from Wiliam Glover, recorded 20 September 1703, King William County. This land was farther up the Nicatywance Swamp, which is now called Harrison Creek. According to Helmer, these acres had been granted to James Johnson on 1 April 1702, then sold to William Glover. Glover, in turn sold them to Thomas MackGehee. The Quit Rent Rolls of 1704 for King William County list “Thomas MackGehee 250 acres.”

From McGehee Descendants, E. C. W. Grider says, “First, let’s consider the ancestry of Marian MacDonald whose husband was Patrick MacGregor. According to Sir Gregor MacGregor there were two Patricks and the one who married Lady Marian MacDonald of Slate is not our Patrick. Our Patrick married Marian MacDonald of Auchatrichatan, who was possibly a cousin of the MacDonalds of Slate.”

From a letter by Sir Gregor MacGregor, 2 February 1970: “There were, in fact, two Patricks living at this time who were distant cousins. The first was Patrick MacGregor of that Ilk, 13th Chief of Clan Gregor, led his Clan under Montrose in 1644 and fought at the battles of Inverlochy and Kilsyth in 1645. . . . The other Patrick MacGregor of Ardchoille (called Aberach after his father), Chieftain of the Children of the Mist and is also said to have fought under Montrose at Kilsyth in 1645. He would, of course have been subordinate to the other Patrick who was his Chief. He married Marion MacDonald of Auchatrichatan in Glencoe member of the family of the MacDonalds of Glencoe and, perhaps, a distant relative of the MacDonalds of Sleat. By her, with other children, he had two sons--- - Iain, his heir, and James who settled in Virginia and was your ancestor. I am directly descended from his elder brother, Iain, as a matter of interest. In the latter half of the 16th century, this branch of the Clan led such wild and hunted lives in the misty mountains that they became known as MacEaigh or “Sons of the Mist.” It may be that it is from this Gaelic patronym that James MacGregor took the name MacGehee.” (McGehee Descendants by E. C. W. Grider)

Persons who could be James, the Immigrant:
1. Thomas MackGehee who died in Virginia in 1727
2. James MacGregor who was in Virginia and Maryland and had one son, Hugh
3. William Mackgahye who was in Virginia in 1653

Many researchers now believe that William Macgahye is the “immigrant”. His two sons were William and Thomas.

The children of Thomas MackGehee were: William, Anna, Diannah, Abraham, Edward, Mary, Samuel, Jacob and Sarah.

The children of William MackGehee, the Quaker, brother of Thomas, were probably: Catherine, wife of Thomas Butts, James, who married Rebecca Prewitt; and Samuel, who married Mary Ladd.

The McGehee name has been pronounced many different ways: Mc-Ga-hee, Mc-Ge-hee, and Mc-Gee among them. Stark Young, in his famous and rare book So Red the Rose (about the McGehees of the 19th century in Mississippi, particularly in and around Natchez) quotes Lucy as saying “McGehee rhymes with McFee.”

Abstract of the will of Thomas Mackgehee dated 27 July 1727, St. John’s Parish, King William County, Virginia:

Son William 10 shillings to buy a mourning ring
Dau Dinah and her husband Joseph Lipscomb 20 shillings
Son Abraham 96 acres, part of land I live on, one negro, bed and furniture, and a large chest
Sons Jacob and Samuel and Dau Sarah, when they come of age, £5 each to be paid them by son Abraham
Son Edward 50 acres of land, one negro, one bed and furniture, one large chest which was his mother’s
Son Samuel 50 acres of land, one feather bed and furniture, one large chest, riding mare, saddle and bridle
Dau Sarah one feather bed, chest and drawers, sealskin trunk, £5 currency, her mother’s horse saddle and bridle
Dau Mary Dickson one feather bed, one pair blankets, desk, etc.
Cattle, sheep, hogs, etc., to be equally divided
Executors: Sons Abraham, Edward and Samuel
Witnesses: Robert Bambridge, W. Craddock, J. Buckley
Appendix 9: This is an entirely separate Garner family researched by Lila Niemann Garner, 2005-06. See Page 732.

4 Arthur Henry Lorenz
B: 3 Jul 1893
P: Logan, Harrison County, Iowa
M: 23 Dec 1915
P: Lincoln, Lancaster Co., Nebraska
D: 21 Nov 1975
P: York, York County, Nebraska
Buried Lincoln, Lancaster County, Nebraska.

2 Howard Arthur "Hal" Lorenz
B: 21 Jul 1917
P: Elmwood, Cass County, Nebraska
M: 7 Jun 1936
P: Cass County, Nebraska
D: 8 Nov 1988
P: Bodfish, Kern County, California

5 Lucille Henrietta McKenzie
B: 20 Mar 1894
P: Colfax County, Nebraska
D: 28 Mar 1976
P: Fairbury, Jefferson Co., Nebraska
Buried Lincoln, Lancaster County, Nebraska.

8 Frank William Lorenz
B: 9 Mar 1870
P: Missouri Valley, Harrison County, Iowa
M: 20 Apr 1892
P: Harrison County, Iowa
D: 10 Jul 1953
P: Elmwood, Cass County, Nebraska

9 Elizabeth Mary Stirtz
B: 28 Feb 1872
P: Lee County, Illinois
D: 9 Nov 1914
P: Fort Morgan, Morgan County, Colorado
Buried Magnolia, Harrison County, Iowa.

10 Murdock Donald McKenzie
B: 26 Oct 1868
P: Lyndale or Valleyfield?, PEI, Canada
M: 27 Jan 1890
P: Schuyler, Colfax County, Nebraska
D: 20 Nov 1945
P: Norfolk, Madison County, Nebraska
Buried Schuyler, Colfax County, Nebraska

Duane Harry Smith, DDS, né Stanley Duane Garner
B: Mar 1937
P: P Precinct near Milford, Seward County, Nebraska
M: 16 Jun 1957
P: York, York County, Nebraska
D: P:

Joyce Dawn Roehrs
(Spouse of no. 1)

6 William E. "Willie" Garner
B: 5 Apr 1885
P: Mapleton, Monona County, Iowa
M: 3 Jul 1912
P: Winnebago, Thurston Co., NE
D: 7 Feb 1944
P: Sioux City, Woodbury County, Iowa
Buried Walthill, Thurston Co., Nebraska.

3 Ethel Marie "Happy" Garner
B: 23 Jun 1922
P: Bridgeport, Morrill Co., Nebraska
D: 6 Dec 1975
P: New York, New York

11 Barbara Mae Bestor
B: 9 May 1871
P: Ohio
D: 13 Apr 1902
P: Schuyler, Colfax County, Nebraska

12 Charles Henry Garner
B: 27 May 1861
P: Huron Island near Keithsburg,
M: 14 Sep 1883
P: Onawa, Monona County, Iowa
D: 5 Apr 1922
P: Aledo, Mercer County, Illinois
Buried Keokuk, Mercer Co., IL

Cora Ann Lewis
B: 4 Oct 1869
P: Mapleton, Monona County, Iowa
D: 26 Apr 1928
P: Keithsburg, Mercer County, Illinois

13 Albert Miner Chambers
B: 29 Jan 1858
P: Nashua, Chickasaw Co, Iowa
M: 11 Mar 1890
P: West Point, Cuming County, Nebraska
D: 15 Apr 1927
P: Walthill, Thurston County, Nebraska

Mary Grier
B: 14 Jul 1871
P: Henry County, Illinois
D: 7 Apr 1954
P: South Sioux City, Dakota Co., Nebraska
Buried Walthill, Thurston Co., Nebraska

Ethel Marie Garner married Frank J. Mercik and was known as Happy Mercik.

The remains of Persons Number 2 and Number 3 were cremated.

Where no burial place is mentioned separately, the burial place is the same as the place of death.
Appendix 10.

The article below appeared in Heritage Quest, a genealogy magazine, Issue #59, September/October 1995. It should be remembered that further research since that time has resulted in new information.

Finding My German Ancestry

Lila Niemann Garner

My name is Garner. My mother was a Gumbel and my grandmother Niemann was a Grolm. I collect National Geographies, world globes, and glassware with grapes. I have a special affinity for the color green, and I’m absolutely gooney about my grandchildren. But genealogy is a disease.

When our first grandson, Brandon Thomas Gamer, was born on February 1985, I began to think about a "family tree" wall chart detailing his ancestors.

I can’t remember when I wasn’t interested in genealogy. Over the years, I had been bringing out regularly the box containing the family pictures, a genealogy notebook compiled by my mother’s sister, Nellie Gumbel Bye, and bits and pieces that my mother and I added: obituaries, birth announcements, and letters containing genealogical information. My mother at one time was attempting to find all living descendants of her immigrant ancestor, Carl Gumbel. I would paw through the contents of the box, wonder how I could a) organize it, b) add generations to it, and c) find out exactly how some of the known relatives were connected. I was working full time and was busy with two active sons, Tom and Bob, so I’d close the box and put it back on the shelf until my next flight of curiosity.

When I left my job in May of 1989, I knew that genealogy was to be one of my retirement pursuits, but still hadn’t a clue about how to get started. A friend guided me in the right direction; she knew of a genealogy workshop, and I attended. How-to information and forms were available, and I was on my way!

I began by working on my husband Ben’s ancestors. Many of his lines proved to be quite easy because the families had kept some records; the trick was to go back two or three generations, enough to “hook on” to someone else’s research.

One major point that I gleaned from the workshop was that a German birthplace had to be known before one could trace ancestors in Germany, there being no national indexes for Germany, which did not exist as a nation until 1871. A large part of what is now Germany was Prussia, and there were many small principalities and duchies that enjoyed their own nationhood.

Finding The Places of Origin in Germany: A Case Study

Since all my ancestors had come from Germany, I started to look for birthplaces. There was no need to search for villages of my father’s German ancestors. His father, Gottlieb Niemann of Währentrup and mother, Henriette Grolm of Stemmnen came to Nebraska before 1890. The married in Seward County in 1891, had four children, then picked up their family and moved to Germany in 1900. My father, Oscar Niemann, returned to Nebraska alone in 1925. Since he had brothers and sisters in Lippe (now a part of Nordrhein-Westfalen) there was an ongoing if somewhat sporadic communication between the German and American Niemann families. Finding my mother’s people was another story. Aunt Nellie wrote her family notes in a spiral notebook. It was a wonderful beginning; how she would have enjoyed using the genealogical forms now available! Among her paper were the obituaries of her grandparents, Ernest W. H. Gumbel and his wife, Angelica Nuhn. Both stated their birthplaces, although spelling was slightly garbled: Ernest at Niedernollerich and Angelica at Niederouwel, Kurhessen. Research at the Family History Center in Lincoln revealed that Gumbels were recorded at Niedermollrich and Nguyen at Niederaula. I wanted to know more, but since everything could not be researched at once, the Gumbel and Nuhn families were pushed to the back burner while I pursued the other side of the family, Herman Schilling and his wife, Conradine Krone.
Aunt Nellie listed the Schilling family, but notes were sketchy. Herman’s Civil War service was mentioned in his obituary, and Conradine’s obituary related that she had come to America with her parents when she was ten years old, the family landing in New Orleans and settling in St. Louis. Family lore mentioned a five-week sailboat trip. My research tells me that 8 weeks was about normal.

I sent for Conradine’s death certificate. My grandmother, Mrs. Geo. “Gumble” was the informant. Since her surname was misspelled, I took little note of the fact that Conradine’s father’s name was given as Henry “Krome.” Her mother’s name was unknown. As I scanned New Orleans passengers lists, I did write down the Krome as well as Krone passengers listed. I haven’t yet found the family on a passenger list; another plan of attack presented itself when I found Conradine’s birthplace given as “Brunswick” on both the 1870 and 1880 censuses of Hancock County, Illinois. Within days after this discovery, a workshop speaker, Larry Jensen, German Genealogical Digest, told of a book that detailed emigrations from the Duchy of Braunschweig: Auswandererlisten des ehemaligen Herzogtums Braunschweig ohne Stadt Braunschweig und Landkreis Holzminden 1846-1871 by Fritz Gruhne. It is available on microfilm at Family History Library. I ordered it, and found Conradine and her family immediately: Krome, Andreas Heinrich Ludwig and his wife Elisabeth Marie Sophie nee Deipenau from Gross Stockheim, Braunschweig. The parents and four children emigrated in 1846, the eldest son in 1851. Birth dates were given, and Conradine, whose birth date matched the one on her death certificate, was among the children. After I had the Krome name correct, I found Mrs. Sophie “Krom” and some of the children on the 1850 census of St. Louis. Her husband remains a mystery, as does her death date and burial place.

At the same time I was conducting the Krome search, I was pursuing the Schillings. Herman had contracted an illness during the Civil War that caused his death at age 42. He had begun proceedings to secure a pension, but he died before action was taken on it, and his widow continued the pension effort after his death. Among persons signing affidavits in support of her claim were Adam Christ, Ottielie Christ and Johanna Schilling of Quincy, Illinois, sworn to be “relation” to Herman Schilling. At about the same time I received a letter from a Schilling cousin asking me for genealogical information. He enclosed a copy of a letter from a descendant of Adam and Ottielie Christ, speculating on the possible relationship, and stating that Ottielie’s maiden name was Schilling, and that Johanna was her mother. The writer also stated adamantly that Ottielie had only one sibling, a brother Robert who had moved to Milwaukee. She conjectured that Johanna was a sister-in-law to Herman. Since the affidavit gave the ages of the persons involved, it seemed to me that the dates fit better for Herman and Ottielie to be siblings, Johanna being their mother. In addition, my mother distinctly remembered her mother’s uncle Robert Schilling coming from Milwaukee to visit. However, if Ottielie’s granddaughter was so sure that Ottielie had only one brother I now knew of two Robert Schillings in Milwaukee.

Ottielie’s granddaughter thought that Johanna Schilling’s husband was also Robert, but I found a city directory of Quincy stating that “Joanna” Schilling, widow of Godfrey, was living at the same address as Adam Christ. After we found Johanna’s stone at Woodland Cemetery in Quincy giving her dates 1810-1899, Ben scanned Quincy newspaper microfilm and found her death notice, which stated that she was the widow of Gottlieb Schilling.

Basing her calculation on Herman Schilling’s death age as listed in his obituary, Aunt Nellie stated his birthdate as 1 November 1835. She had made a subtraction error which should have made that 1834. A lesson to me: Always double check.

The family lore about “our” Robert Schilling of Milwaukee was not really helpful. He was unmarried. He “was a nice old guy and a spiffy dresser.” He belonged to a religious group that tried to communicate with the dead. (Later I would learn that he was a Spiritualist.) The conversation during his visit was conducted in German, which the younger generation did not understand.

I looked through the family pictures again and found two snapshots of Uncle Robert that were taken during his Seward visit, and, having been exhorted at still another workshop to “let a document [photo] speak to you”: I deduced some things. The snapshots were the same paper and printing style of the pictures of tornado damage to Seward on 14 May 1913. In light of the severity of the tree trimming shown in the pictures, it seemed to me that his visit had been after the tornado. I conjectured that he came to visit before his sister-in-law, Conradine Schilling, died on 12 March 1915. The trees were in leaf, so the pictures were taken in the summer. Therefore, his visit was during the summer of 1913 or 1914. I read Seward papers for that period, hoping that I would find a report of his visit and mention that either 1) he
had visited his sister Ottielie Christ in Quincy, Illinois on his way to Seward or 2) that he would visit her on his way back to Milwaukee. I found nothing about his visit in the Seward papers. Perhaps it was after Conradine’s death that he visited. There was no need to try to find Uncle Robert on the 1880 census; if he wasn’t married, he didn’t have any children 10 or under, so he probably wouldn’t be in the Soundex. Actually, there was no need to look for him at all; Milwaukee was a big city, and if I knew of 3 Robert Schillings, there could be a dozen!

In the meantime, I was trying to pin down Herman’s birth date. Subtracting years, months, and days from his death, I had three different dates because his age at death differed on his gravestone, in his obituary and on his death certificate. Was he born 1 October, 13 October, or 1 November 1834?

Each available census was checked for both Herman and Ottielie (Herman died in 1882). Nothing produced any clue about a specific birthplace. Neither Ottielie’s death certificate, nor her obituary helped. Her descendant sent more family lore: Johanna’s husband “Robert” (really Gottfried) Schilling had left his family in St. Louis sometime before 1860 because the marriage was intolerable; his wife, who had not wanted to come to America, had not spoken to him since their arrival. The original plan had been to settle in Texas, but she was so distraught when she saw Galveston, that he promised her that she would be happy in St. Louis, and they went there.

I was still gleaning information from the pension application. It did not ask for Conradine’s maiden name; it asked for “name married under.” Since the clerk had made an error and written Krone, that was the “name married under.” Herman had been in St. Louis 5 years before he entered the Army in 1860. I’m still trying to find the family from the 1847/48 immigration that is listed for both Robert and Ottielie in the 1910 and 1920 censuses. I first find them on the 1860 St. Louis census.

Herman and Conradine were newlyweds when the 1860 census of St. Louis was taken. There were two children in their household, Louy and John Schilling, ages 5 and 2, both born Prussia. Herman and Conradine had been in America when they were born, and the pension application states that neither had been married before. Coupled with Johanna’s husband’s promise that she would be happy in St. Louis, I began to believe that there was a clan of Schillings there. I looked at every Schilling on the 1860 St. Louis census; some birthplaces were given, but there is no pattern to suggest that my “clan” theory is correct.

The 1860 census of St. Louis revealed the family of Johanna Schilling widow age 50, “Othilie” 23 and Robert 17. The women were sewing for a living, and Robert was a laborer in a brickyard. All were born “near Magdeburg, Prussia.” Here’s where I put genealogy with geometry: According to the theorem, things equal to the same things are equal to each other. Therefore, if Herman Schilling was related to Johanna and Ottielie, he too was likely born near Magdeburg.

No naturalization could be found for Robert, Herman or Ottielie. In desperation, I decided to find out if I could glean anything from the Milwaukee census. Since 1910 is not indexed, I decided to start with 1900. Only one Robert Schilling was in the Soundex. He was the right age for Ottielie’s brother, but he was a married man with a family, which didn’t fit for Herman’s brother. His immigration year was a match with Ottielie’s: 1847. His wife Clara and his oldest child were born in Missouri, the next children in Ohio. Could this be the Robert Schilling found on the St. Louis marriage index who married Christine Wehner in 1867? A quick look at the Ohio Soundex for 1880 and the 1880 census of Columbia [sic: Columbiana] County, Ohio proved that he was: his wife and the first child were born in Missouri; the next five children were born in Ohio, and there was the clincher: sister-in-law Mary Wehner was living in the Schilling home.

Ben was good enough to scan the entire unindexed 1910 census of Milwaukee, where I hoped there would be more information about Robert. He has been a lucky scanner before, sometimes announcing “I found it” before I had time to thread on the film that I was planning to scan. This time I was not so lucky; he found many Schillings, but no Robert that matched our known facts.

The Schillings had to be on the back burner for a while. I did a lot of thinking about them. If the family man of Milwaukee was Uncle Robert, why did my mother and aunts think that he had never married? The release of the 1920 census was finally looming on the horizon. Some pre-release information included the fact that persons who had been born in German-speaking areas were required to tell specific birthplaces
in 1920. Knowing that Ottielie had lived until 1929, I searched for her first. Apparently women were not yet considered persons, because, although she gave her native language as German, place of birth “Germany” was about as non-specific as possible. Robert was next; even though we had not found him in 1910, I was sure he had been living as late as 1913. My library decorum was almost compromised by a shout of “Eureka!” when I found Robert on the 1920 census. His mother tongue was German, and his birthplace was Osterburg, Germany! By now he was a widower, possibly accounting for the family lore that he was unmarried.

A search of the Family History Library Catalog revealed that Osterburg church records were available for the time frame of the Schilling children’s births. I ordered the films and the nail-biting wait began. Still lurking was the question of whether I had found the right Robert Schilling in Milwaukee.

A sort of numb calm descended upon me as I drove to the Family History Center in Lincoln, and the germ of an idea was forming. If I had really succeeded in finding the birthplaces in Germany of all my immigrant ancestors, could we make a trip to Germany and visit those places?

Almost everything I could have hoped for was on the Osterburg microfilm. Herman’s birth on 1 October 1834 which matched the death certificate; Robert’s birth; the marriage of their parents Gottfried and Johanna (Schulz) Schilling including their fathers’ names, mothers’ maiden names, and the deaths of both fathers. When Johanna’s father died, she was listed as a survivor, married to Schilling, living “in Amerika.”

The only thing missing from the Osterburg church books was Ottielie’s birth. In spite of the assertion that Ottielie had only one sibling, I believed that she was the sister of my Herman also. Did she belong in another family? Herman’s brother Robert of Osterburg, Ottielie’s brother Robert of St. Louis in 1860, and Robert of Milwaukee were all the same age, and Robert of Milwaukee was Herman’s brother. Herman and Robert’s mother was Johanna, born 1 May 1810. Ottielie’s mother, Johanna’s age, as given on the U.S. Censuses, always indicated a 1810 birth. I began trying to tie up the loose ends. I knew where Ottielie’s mother was buried. Was I visiting the grave of my great-great-grandmother? Ottielie’s descendants had supplied abundant family lore. Could I claim this as my own? A document I found in the Adams County Courthouse in Quincy, Illinois gives Johanna’s birthdate. It is 1 May 1810, the same as her marriage document in Osterburg. Her daughter is listed as Mrs. Adam Christ. She’s mine!

According to the Osterburg church records, Gottfried Schilling was a brickmaker. This probably explains why Robert was a laborer in a brickyard in St. Louis. Pursuit of the American Dream has to explain how he went from being a laborer in a brickyard to editor of a big-city newspaper.

Some questions remain: where was Ottielie born? What happened to Gottfried Schilling after he left St. Louis? Were there additional children? There is a long time between Ottielie’s and Robert’s births. Do any of Uncle Robert’s or Aunt Ottielie’s descendants possess a photograph of my great-grandfather Herman Schilling? (I have found some descendants of each, and they do not).

After I had found Conradine Krome’s birthplace at the Family History Center, I found a postcard in my mother’s things (she had said that she gave me all the genealogy before). It was written in German, but dated June 11th 1910 and mailed from Cassel on June 12. It is written to Mrs. C. Schilling, Warsaw, Ill. The writer, Henrietta Koch says “Dear Aunt, Today I visited the place where you were born...Your Niece” and pictured on the front of the card are scenes in Gross Stockheim. When she writes “th” after the date, it makes me think she usually wrote in English. She was traveling; she was in Gross Stöckheim on the 11th and Cassel on the 12th. Who is she? I obviously haven’t found all of the nieces of Conradine and Herman.

Finding Living Cousins in Germany: An Unorthodox Method

After all the ancestral birthplaces in Germany had been located, Ben and I began to talk seriously about visiting them. Osterburg had been behind the Iron Curtain, so the reunification of Germany made such a trip less complicated. People we talked with told us about their ancestral-village experiences. An inquiry at the City Hall or a chance encounter in a hotel occasionally produced a living distant cousin, but the language problem and lack of advance planning usually resulted in a less-than-satisfactory visit. One man told us of meeting in the ancestral village a man who shared his rather unusual surname. Each of them,
not understanding the other’s language, talked louder and louder, and the meeting turned into something of a shouting match. If we were going to look at the villages we would do just that: Look. If we were going to try to make contact with living cousins, there must be a way to do so before we arrived on the scene.

Issue #40 of Heritage Quest provided the idea that became the answer. An Illinois woman asked Mr. Horst Reschke how she would locate persons in Germany who were researching the same persons that she was interested in. He advised that she write to a newspaper located in her ancestral town. This seemed to be what I should do, so I wrote to Mr. Reschke asking the names and addresses of newspapers whose circulation areas included my ancestral towns: Niedermöllrich, Niederaula, Osterburg and the neighboring towns of Gross Stöckheim and Klein Mahner. I also asked him to translate the little paragraph that I had composed, stating my facts and asking my questions.

When his reply arrived (see Heritage Quest #45), I fired off four letters immediately. While awaiting replies, I began a tape-recorded German language course. At the same time as the replies began arriving, most of them in German, both my husband and my mother experienced serious illnesses. Ben was so sick that it seemed unlikely that we would be doing any traveling. Looking back, I wonder how I found time to keep up with the correspondence, not to mention all the other things at hand.

Mr. Reschke asked me to let him know if this plan worked. From one newspaper I received what Mr. Reschke regarded as a brush-off. Much later I received from the mayor’s office a reply telling the names of the immigrant ancestor’s parents, but it wasn’t what I had asked for.

I also received a letter from a couple in Wolfenbüttel who had known a Mrs. Krome in Gross Stöckheim, but we were unable to connect her to my Krome ancestors.

Several answers arrived from the Osterburg area in response to my Schilling story and its connected surnames of Schulz and Jacobs. The names are common, and only one proved to be mine. After I sent my Ahnentafel, a cousin in Stendal was able to figure out the relationship; she sent a copy of an Ahnentafel which had been prepared for her father during World War II. It added two Schilling generations to my chart, and contained an invitation to visit her and her family while we were in the area.

Four Gumbel connections in and near Niedermöllrich replied. One is a fairly close cousin who documented in her first letter just how she is related to my immigrant ancestor. Another’s husband’s grandmother was Gumbel. A third is the namesake of the immigrant, who father had always told about the cousin who went to America. He offered to pick us up at the airport. The fourth is a genealogist!

Just because of the Gumble [sic] name, she had copied the emigration information about Carl Gumbel and his family when she was doing research at the Staatsarchive [sic] Marburg. Her husband’s grandmother was a Gumbel. She sent a 4-generation Ahnentafel for both Carl Gumble [sic] and his first wife (my ancestor) Sabine Ritter. She herself is connected on the Ritter line.

From each of these German cousins we also received gracious invitations to come for a visit.

A Trip to Germany

When Ben’s physician was ready to dismiss him, I inquired rather timidly whether he might be able to make the planned trip to Germany in June. When he said, “Of course he’ll be able to make a trip to Germany in June,” we began to plan in earnest.

WONDERFUL doesn’t begin to convey my feelings about our trip. We were indeed met at the airport by the Frankfurt Gumbels. Their gracious hospitality is something to remember and savor. We were royally entertained by all the cousins in the Niedermöllrich area, and the family genealogist, Liselotte “Lilo” Habenicht presented me with a genealogy of Carl Gumbel and Sabina Ritter stretching back into the eighth generation and into the sixteenth century.

She also tracked down the archives in Bad Hersfeld where Niederaula church records are on file, and made an appointment to research there. We were able to add several generations to my Nuhn chart.
On our own, we visited Niederaula, Gross Stöckheim, Klein Mahner, Osterburg and several smaller villages where Schilling ancestors had come from.

At the Family History Center, I had been researching church books from the former Principality of Lippe, and gained enough confidence in my ability that we went to the Niedersachsches Staatsarchiv in Wolfenbüttel and the Landeskirches Archiv in Braunschweig to search for Kromes and Deipenaus. I was able to add some information but many church books have been burned, so early information is not available.

We spent quite a long time finding the Schillings cousin in Stendal, but people are friendly and helpful, and a woman who spoke some English led us to the address in her car. We had time for only a brief visit, but it was most pleasant.

The Niemanns in Lippe were not strangers, because we had been there in 1959. Our arrival felt like a homecoming, although two first cousins were born after our previous visit. A number of things were on our agenda, genealogy taking a rather low priority because all the Lippe church books are available on film at the Family History Library. We did visit an archives in Detmold to ferret out a birthdate lost in a tight binding on the microfilm copy. We also visited cousins in the village of Stemmen and discovered a name above a barn door that led to a new clue about the family, a man’s birth name. (Lippe is one of the places in Germany where a man might take his wife’s surname in marriage, or, when he assumes management of a farm, might take the farm name.) My Aunt Edith Niemann entertained at a “family afternoon” in our honor where we got to see all the first cousins as well as Aunt Alwine, at age 97 my father’s only living sibling. What priceless memories!

Afterword

Recently, it has been our pleasure to reciprocate, as some Niemann cousins came to Nebraska for a visit, my first-ever opportunity to introduce anyone by the name of Niemann!

Many of the new-found German cousins have said that they plan to pay us a visit, and we sincerely hope that they will be able to do so.

Sources Consulted

Unpublished family history by Nellie Gumbel Bye
International Genealogical Index
Family History Library Catalog
Nebraska Death Certificate of Conradine Schilling
New Orleans and Galveston [sic] passenger lists
Federal censuses, indexes and Soundexes 1850-1920
Auswandererlisten des ehemaligen Herzogtums Braunschweig ohne Stadt Braunschweig und Landkreis Holzminden 1846-1871 by Fritz Gruhne
National Archives: Civil War Military and Pension records of Herman Schilling
City directories: Quincy Illinois and St. Louis, Missouri
Newspapers: Seward, Nebraska and Quincy, Illinois
Hancock County, Illinois death certificate of Herman Schilling
Adams County, Illinois Almshouse record
Osterburg, Sachsen, Prussia church records
Heritage Quest #40.

Lila Garner was born in Seward, Nebraska in 1937 to Oscar and Mildred (Gumbel) Niemann. She married Ben Garner, a native of Clark county, Arkansas in 1956; they have two married sons and four grandchildren. She has taken history, anthropology and English courses at the University of Nebraska in Lincoln. A self-taught genealogist, she is now teaching classes on the use of German church records, and continues to search for her own and her husband’s ancestors.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner  
by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as ä, ö, ü and ß.

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There’s a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Allen, (cont)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Robert</td>
<td>582, 636</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Rose</td>
<td>441, 509, 582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Rubin</td>
<td>439</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Samuel</td>
<td>405, 492, 495, 582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>.</td>
<td>636-637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sarah</td>
<td>442, 582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sarah Hull</td>
<td>442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Susanna</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Susannah</td>
<td>509, 579, 582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Thomas</td>
<td>492</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Tristram</td>
<td>442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Valentine</td>
<td>405, 495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>363, 403-404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>.</td>
<td>441, 490, 492, 498, 582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>.</td>
<td>636-637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William Hunt</td>
<td>405, 495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>.</td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Zachariah</td>
<td>509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Zilla</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alley, Kay</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Kenneth</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Boram</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allin, Abigail</td>
<td>580</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ann</td>
<td>491</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ebenezer</td>
<td>580-581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Hu</td>
<td>491</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Hudson</td>
<td>491</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Increase</td>
<td>580</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>580</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Joseph</td>
<td>580</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Patience</td>
<td>580</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ralph</td>
<td>580</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ralph Senr.</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>491, 580-581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Zachariah</td>
<td>580</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allison, Nancy Jane</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alllyn, George</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Katherin</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ralph</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alscop, Wm.</td>
<td>618</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Altendorf, Ludwig</td>
<td>v, 162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Altrogge</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Anna Catharine</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Anna Catherina</td>
<td>374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Anna Catherine</td>
<td>374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alwood, James</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amburn, Elizabeth</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anderson, Capt.</td>
<td>424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. David</td>
<td>366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Frances</td>
<td>vi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Francis</td>
<td>vi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Larkin</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary</td>
<td>199, 346, 421, 431</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andersson,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Brita Mansdotter</td>
<td>579</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mans</td>
<td>579</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anglin, Adrian</td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ansel, Anita Nadine</td>
<td>708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arnold, W.O.</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apfel, Katherine</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appenzeller, Georg</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apperson, Peter</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arch, Joseph</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Archer, Gabriel</td>
<td>446</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. George</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Jack</td>
<td>192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>446</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Judith</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Martha</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Beville</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Area, Abraham</td>
<td>282, 286, 344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arici, Janet Green</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arning, Greta Ilsabe</td>
<td>312</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arnold, Ann</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Kezia</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Lawrence</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Wyatt</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arrant, Peter</td>
<td>338, 759</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arrey, Abraham</td>
<td>282, 286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arronhart, Philip</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arront, Peter</td>
<td>759</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Artcher, John</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asher, John</td>
<td>618</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ashley, William</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Askew, Ann</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aston, Ferdinando</td>
<td>627</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atkinson, Martha</td>
<td>372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atwood, Frances</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aus dem Linenhaus, Catrina</td>
<td>303, 375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Avalon, Jane</td>
<td>356</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Babbicim, James</td>
<td>557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>.</td>
<td>633-634</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Katherine</td>
<td>634</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bab, Jas</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Babthorpe, Christiana</td>
<td>513</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachmann, Mr.</td>
<td>252</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bacon, Nathaniel</td>
<td>659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baehring, Anna Maria</td>
<td>302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baering, Anna Maria</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baetz, Anna Barbara</td>
<td>394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Katharina</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Margareta</td>
<td>479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Maria</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E. Katharina</td>
<td>394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>317, 394, 479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Georg</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans Heinrich</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Georg</td>
<td>243, 317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann George</td>
<td>394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Heinrich</td>
<td>479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Konrad</td>
<td>244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Peter</td>
<td>479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johannes</td>
<td>244, 317, 393</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Katharina</td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Katharine</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth Heid</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kunigunda</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margarethe</td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maria</td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martin</td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilhelm</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bagbey, Robert</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bagby, Robert</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baggett, Annie F.</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bagly, Elizabeth</td>
<td>456</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baier, Silke</td>
<td>426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bailey, John</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>490</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baird, Dan</td>
<td>338, 759</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baker, Judith</td>
<td>449, 456</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mae P.</td>
<td>728</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter</td>
<td>588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Russell P.</td>
<td>4, 206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baldwin, Charles</td>
<td>373, 457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polly W.</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ball, John</td>
<td>331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Landon C.</td>
<td>404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walter Lafayette</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bambridge, Robert</td>
<td>590, 763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bandson, Andrew</td>
<td>575, vii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yertrude</td>
<td>575</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bankson, Andrew</td>
<td>575</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yertrude</td>
<td>575</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bankston, Andrew</td>
<td>508, vii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yertrude</td>
<td>vii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barbour, Philip</td>
<td>191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barefoot, Anna</td>
<td>757</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baring, Anna Maria</td>
<td>302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barker, John</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barkhausen, Agneta Ilsabein</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, ii and B.

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Billups, George</td>
<td>452-453</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>451-452</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bilstein,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.M. Domeyer</td>
<td>469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharina Ilsabein</td>
<td>384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cord</td>
<td>469,540-541</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trina</td>
<td>469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Binder, Anna Lucia</td>
<td>532</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans</td>
<td>532,600</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann &quot;Hans&quot;</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Binders, Anna Lucia</td>
<td>531</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Hans</td>
<td>601,603</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Johann</td>
<td>603</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bingham, Benjamin</td>
<td>347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Binks, George</td>
<td>618</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bird, Abraham Capt.</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Andrew</td>
<td>359,436</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Wm. Capt.</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bishop, Borum</td>
<td>225,298,300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Borum</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Matthew</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bissmarck, Paul</td>
<td>665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black, John C.</td>
<td>160-161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blackford, Providence</td>
<td>758</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blackstone, James</td>
<td>511,585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blake, Robt.</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blankenbaker, John</td>
<td>399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blasingame, John</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>332-333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blasingham, Eliza</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blasinghame, James</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blassingame, Ann</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Caroline</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Eliza 122,124,126,192</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Elizabeth 277,325,335</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Esther</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. James 275-276,332</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John 273-275,277,325</td>
<td>335-336,756</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John Gen. 192-193,195</td>
<td>257,323,331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John W.M. 199</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary 198,275-276</td>
<td>335-336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mrs.</td>
<td>277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Nancy 335-336</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Nancy Ann Easley</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Obedience</td>
<td>274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Philip</td>
<td>331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Polly</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Rachel</td>
<td>274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>274-276,333,335</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W. Doak</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W. Doak Dr. 123,276,323</td>
<td>325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>273-274,276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William Easley 198,275</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Wm. E.</td>
<td>756</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blasingame, William</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blasingham, William</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blome, Anna Catharina</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Conrad</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Johan</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bluhm, Theodore</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boatwright, Hopy W.</td>
<td>454</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Jerusha</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Lucy</td>
<td>456</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Reuben</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bockstruck, Lloyd</td>
<td>759</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Lloyd D.</td>
<td>133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boddie, William</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William Willis</td>
<td>275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bode, Barbara</td>
<td>550,614</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bodiger, Elisabeth</td>
<td>601</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Heinrich</td>
<td>601</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bodigers, Anna Maria</td>
<td>600</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeke, Cordt</td>
<td>385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Johann Cordt</td>
<td>470</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Johann Friedrich</td>
<td>385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Juergen Friedrich</td>
<td>385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Simon Friedrich</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeckemeier,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Heinrich Conrad</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bogle, Ayliffe Jacobs</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 124,271</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mrs. 196,198,272</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bokus, Carl</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bolender, Caspar</td>
<td>395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bolling, John 488-489</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 562</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John Capt. 559,561</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bond, Hannah</td>
<td>362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John 362,364</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Margaret Allen</td>
<td>362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bondurant, Joseph</td>
<td>569</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary 63</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Booker, Edward</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Efford</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Eford</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as ä, ö, ü and ë.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Booker, (cont)</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>George</td>
<td>445,447</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith Archer</td>
<td>445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richerson</td>
<td>447</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boon, Andreas</td>
<td>571</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lawrence</td>
<td>508</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Niels</td>
<td>508</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boone, Daniel</td>
<td>279,337</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Squire</td>
<td>337</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Booth, James</td>
<td>333</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rachel</td>
<td>333</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boram, Dianne</td>
<td>447</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmund</td>
<td>370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>370,447</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joanna</td>
<td>370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha</td>
<td>370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>370,447</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>370,447</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah Hilsman</td>
<td>447</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bornharn, Thomas de</td>
<td>225</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bornemann, Diederich</td>
<td>644</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bornkessels</td>
<td>645</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gelen Hofmann</td>
<td>670</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gertrud Dieling</td>
<td>547</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guida</td>
<td>476,546-547</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans</td>
<td>654,670</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johannes</td>
<td>547,610-611</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Borum, Edmond</td>
<td>654</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmund</td>
<td>67,225,298-300</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>327,369-371,373,445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth F.</td>
<td>224,300,445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James Carroll</td>
<td>445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joannah</td>
<td>445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>300</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Hilsman</td>
<td>226</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>67,134,369-370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith P.</td>
<td>444-445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith Penick</td>
<td>222,225</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha</td>
<td>225</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary P.</td>
<td>445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy</td>
<td>134,300,373</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy McGehee</td>
<td>225,372</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy Walker</td>
<td>226</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Permelia H.</td>
<td>226</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
Brault, Henriette 98
Braun, Henriette 98
Brazer, Mr. 356
Brechin, Ann 500
  Elizabeth 500
  James 500
  James Rev. 498, 500, 564
  Jean 500
  Sarah 499-500, 564-565
  Susanna 500
  William 500, 565-566
Bremer, John 332
Breger, Henning 610
  Herberg 610, 653
Brenizer, Emma 73
Brenner,
  Elisabeth Meyer 546
  Eugene G. 394
  Henning 546, 610
  Johannes 476, 546-547
  Martha Elisabeth 391
  476
Bricken, James 564
Bridges, Lula 755
Bridgewater, Sam 559
  Samll 560
Briggs, Alex Sloan 128
  Clement 636
Brightwell, Gary Hagood v
Brinkbock, August 79
  Friedrich 145
  Heinrich Gustav 145
Brinkmann, Johann 471
Brinton, Agnes 24
  Agnes 24
  John 24
Brookes, George 450
Brookett, H. 330
Brown, Catherine 512
  Dorothy Knox 570
  Goran 448
  Jacob 338, 340
  John 216
  Joseph 452
  Lawrence 452
  Michael 338
  Priscilla 582
  William vi
Brownlee, Mildred 364
Broxam, Edwd. 618
Bruce,
  Lucie Virginia -
    Hagood v
Brumfield, Lewis 201, 213

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner - by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as ä, ö, ü and ë.

Burton, (cont)
- Madalen 449
- Madalen 457
- Mary Parker 557,634
- Mr. 558,570
- Noel 619
- Richd. 587
- Butler,Bryce Mr. 73
- William Sen. 516
- Bye,Aunt Nellie 710
- Aunt Nellie Gumbel 714
- Charles 96
- Charles Harvey iii
- Charlie 27
- Nellie A. 95,97-98
- Nellie A. Gumbel 95
- Nellie Angelica
- Gumbel iii
- Nellie Gumbel 18,91
- 152,710,765,770
- Byrd,William 555,617,624
- 634
- Cabell,William 495
- Caesar,Sid 29
- Calton,Christiana 513
- Josiah 513
- Campbell,Eleanor 297
- J.A. 219
- John A. 220
- Cannon,Esther 568,619
- John 568,619
- Cardwell,George 451
- Sarah 516
- Thomas 557-558
- Carey,James 288
- Carol,Roger 567
- Carroll,Charles 566
- Carson,Thomas 339
- Carson,James 338
- William 340
- Carter,Samuel 587
- Thomas 568
- Carteret,Philip Gov. 287
- Carver,George 357
- Case,Elisabeth 189
- Hiram 122
- Jesse 190
- Jesse A. 54
- Thomas 190
- William 122
- Castens,

Dennis A.Rev. 659
- Caswell,Richard 426
- Catharina Louise 468
- Cathey,Geo. 338
- George 759
- Catton,Carol 187
- Cave,Jno. 588
- John 586-587,589
- Mary 515,586,588-589
- Mary Sarah 226
- Nathaniel 589
- Phoebe 589
- Rachel 589
- Samuel 589
- Sarah 515,588
- Chamberlain, Joseph 638
- Tho. 631
- Chamberlin,W.A. 221
- Chambers, Albert Miner 764
- Henrietta Mae 618,764
- Mr. 57
- Susan Elizabeth 130
- Chandler,Joel Jr. 403
- Joice 404,495
- Chapman,Erasmus 348
- John 347
- Chappell,Sarah 450
- Chastain,Peter 497
- Cheeseman,Elizabeth 452
- Cheeseman,Edmund 453
- Chesler,Andrew 296
- Chess,Thos. 438
- Chestnut,Rev. 73
- Chickley,Henry Sir 618
- Childers,Abraham 619
- Hester 567
- Mary Milner 557,634
- Mr. 570
- Tabitha 567
- Chinn,Jesse 357
- Chisholm,Elizabeth 417
- Chism,John 448
- Chisum,Eleanor 512
- Elizabeth 512
- John 512
- Chisholm,Sarah 358
- Christ,Adam 156,158
- 247-248,250-252,766
- Adam Mrs. 252,768
- Lavina 247,250
- Ottie lie 156,248

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
A person’s name and his or her spouse’s name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Craig</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter Stebbins Dr.</td>
<td>294</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sam</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel T.</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cramer, Caspar</td>
<td>665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cramwinkel, Pieter</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>228-229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane, John Glover</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cranston, Andrew</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel</td>
<td>509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crawford, Angelina</td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>David</td>
<td>563,617,658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>David Jr. Capt.</td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>566,617-618</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>658-659,721</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malcolm</td>
<td>659-660</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>498,563,619</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crawinckel,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hadewich v.</td>
<td>228</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinrich v.</td>
<td>228</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crews, James Capt.</td>
<td>630</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crite, Michael</td>
<td>760</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crofford, Thomas</td>
<td>516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cromwell, Oliver</td>
<td>659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cronemeyer, Paula Dora</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crook, Jeremiah</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crop, Cord</td>
<td>601</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cross, Lucinda Reeves</td>
<td>57,130,280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann Martha</td>
<td>57,130,280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dr.</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizaabeth</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joshua H. Dr.</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joshua Ham Dr.</td>
<td>54,57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>122,130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucinda</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucy</td>
<td>57,130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melba</td>
<td>350</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rebecca</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sallie</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susan</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susan Elizabeth</td>
<td>57,130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W.J.</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William J.</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crowell, Mary</td>
<td>636</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cubage, Melinda</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melinda Ann Jones</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melinda Jones</td>
<td>122,285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. 207-209,214,340</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W.D. Mrs.</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cumber, John</td>
<td>631</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cummins, Rosemarie</td>
<td>11,76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rosemarie Naether</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cunningham, Margaret</td>
<td>659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>660</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curtis, Mrs.</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ollie Mrs.</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P. Col.</td>
<td>214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D'Oial, Mary</td>
<td>273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dabyn, Robt</td>
<td>639</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dafer, Aletha</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joel C.</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John C.</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William F.</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daffern, Green Martin</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dafford, And. J. Andrew</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andrew Jackson</td>
<td>61-63,65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andrew Jefferson</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Billie 62,70,101</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cora</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cora Elizabeth v. 10,61</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elnora Belzora</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euclid J. v. 61,66</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euclid J. &quot;Euke&quot; 10,59</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euclid &quot;Euke&quot; 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euke 9,62,70</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euke J.</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Giles</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James A.</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James Archey</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James Archey&quot;Jimmy&quot; 10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James Archibald</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Runyan</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lenora Belzora</td>
<td>10,66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neva 7,39,41,63</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neva Ann 3, 8, v, 61,66</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>220,703,723,753</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nora Ann</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nora Bell</td>
<td>61,66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nora Bell &quot;Node&quot; 10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert Lee 10,61-62,64</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>66-67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W.G.</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.*
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner
by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, b, ii and B.

Dafford, (cont)
. William Green 58,101
. 712,729,753
. William -
. Green "Billie" 8
. William Levi 67
. Willis 63,66
Daffron, Giles 67
. Green 67
. Joel 68
Dalbo, Catherine 575
. Peter 575
. Peter Mattson 576
Dalton, Jonathan 280
Sarah 280
Dam, Alexander 548,611
. Anna Maria 477,548
. Cecilia Otto 548
. Diele 656
. Tiele 656-657
Damen, Heinrich 655-656
Dankwerth,
Charlotte Sophie 143
Dankworth, Charlotte 233
Charlotte Sophie 233
Darale, Richd. 618
David, W.E. 92
Davidson, Edward 522
Davies, Mr.
. Samuel, Rev. 421
Davis, Betsy 279
. Betty 364
. Dolar 583
. Elizabeth 279,341
. George 225,297,364
. George Jr. 225
. Hannah 225
. Hugh 587
. Jefferson 487
. Leonard 347
. Melissa Ellen 10
. Polly 225
. Richard 340-341
. Rudelle Mills 359
. Solomon 279,341
Day, Christine 734
Phillip 81
DeBlasis, Celeste 249
DeJarnette, Daniel 518
. Eleanor 451,516,518
. 591
. Elias 518
. Elizabeth 516,518
. Jean 518,591
. John 518,591
. Joseph 518
. Mary 518
. Mumford 518
DeMarce, Dr. 403-404,490
. 498,553-554,557,560
. 617,633-635
. Virginia Easley -
. Dr. 276
. 402,488
DePettilkok, Ade 350
. William 350
Dearing, John vi
Deaton, Goodin 3,65,120
. 122
. Lucinda 120,189-190
Dedman, Phil 492
Defoor, James 64
Martin 64
Dehlendorf, Ilsabein 644
. 666,668,674
Deipenau,
. Heinrich Juergen 396
. Detlev Emil 253
. Elisabeth Marie -
. Sophie 158
. 252-253,766
. Heinrich Juergen 253
. 320-321
. Juergen 320,396
. Maria 320,396
. Maria Christine -
. Strue 320
. Marie Christine -
. Strue 253
Deischer,
. Anna Catharina 239
Dejarnat, Mary 592
Delendorf, Ilsabein 664
Deming, Simeon 361
Deppe, Harald 640
Depping,
. Amalia Charlotte 233
. 307,381
. Anna Catharine 527
. Anna Sophie -
. Elisabeth 309
. 383
. Bernd 460
. Carl Friedrich -
. Heinrich 309
. Carl Ludwig 308-309
. Christoph 466
. Conrad Dietrich 381

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
Depping, (cont)
  . Dorothee 309
  . Florentine -
  . Wilhelmine 308
  . Hans 460,527
  . Hans Fridrich 460
  . Hans Friedrich 380,527
  . Hans Herman 383,465
  . Herman Conrad 309,381
  . Herman Conrad -
  . Dietrich 308
  . Hermann Conrad -
  . Dietric 380
  . 461-462
  . Johan Herman 236
  . Johann 527
  . Johanna 143
  . Tons 465
Depping-Kiel,
  Anna Sophia 466
Deppings,T. 460
Deppingsmeyer,
  . Jobst Henrich 383
  . Anna S.E. 309
  . Anna Sophie Elis 383
  . Hans Herman 383,465
Deppytyllock, John 350
Detering,
  . Anna Elisabeth 461
  . 528-529
  . Bernd 528-529,596
Detmar, Johan Henrich 232
Devol, Jeremiah 442
Dick, Peggy Davidson 359
Dickson, Mary 590,763
  Mr. 518
Diedrich, Adam 608,652
  . Andreas 670
  . Anna 545,608
  . Catharina 608,652
Dieling, Caspar 611,655
  . Cyriacus 655,671
  . Gertrud 547,610-611
Dillard, James 364
  . M.D. 56
  . Sarah 364
  . W.D. 56
Dillingham, Edward 638
Dingerdisse,
  Johann Henrich 378
Dingerdisse,
  . Anna Margarethe B 233
  . Catharina 232
  . Catrina 140
  . Johann Henrich 233
Dirks, Tho. 588
Ditmar, Anna 610,654
  Hans 654,671
Dittes, Friedrich 234
  Konrad Friedrich 143
Dittman, Frieda 29
Dixon, Dave 217
Doan, Eliz. 587
Dobbikin, John 442-443
Dobehin, John 436
Dobins, John 436
Dodgege,
  . Lavina Christ 247,250
  . Mrs. 248
Dodson, J. 220
Doe, Daniel 588
Doering, Margaretha 671
Dofer, Joel C. 68
Dohmeier, Anna Maria 541
Dohmeyer, Anna Maria 541
Dohrmann, Dick 86
  Dietrich"Dick" 19
Dolton, Jonathan 348
Domeyer, A.M. 469,541
  Anna Maria 541
Donohoo, Chief 410
  Elizabeth 417-418
Doran, W.H. 251
Dotson, Charles 443
Douglas, William Rev. 506
Douithit, William 357
Dozer, P. James DS 332
Draper,
  Lyman Copeland 273
Drayton, John 662
Drekker,
  . Anna Elisabeth 383
  . Jobst Henrich 383
  . Johann Konrad 234
  . 309-310
Dreuscher,
  . Anna Catharina 239
  . Catharine 149
Dreves,
  Johann Diederich 601
Drew, Tho. 662
Dreyer,
  . Anna Margarethe 468
  Driggers, Geo.W. 58
  Drinkard, Lazarus 226
  Drury, William 559
Duckett, James 513
  Margaret 513

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ui and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, i and s.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Duke, William</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunlap, Grace</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, John</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunphy, Mr.</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dupray, Francis</td>
<td>488</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Margaret</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Thomas</td>
<td>403-495,555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duran, John</td>
<td>522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>During, Johannes</td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margaretha</td>
<td>657,671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dusenbury, H.</td>
<td>282</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dust, Johann</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dustonbury, Sarah</td>
<td>282,285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dyer, John</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dyres, John</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eades, Barbara L.</td>
<td>273,331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Earenhart, Philip</td>
<td>760</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Earle, Marie E.</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Earnhart Family</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Easley, Robin</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Easley, Ann</td>
<td>557-558,617</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ann &quot;Nancy&quot;</td>
<td>277,334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ann Parker</td>
<td>488</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Anne</td>
<td>634</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Catherine</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Daniel</td>
<td>403,489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Elizabeth</td>
<td>273,489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Elizabeth Smith</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 275-276,334,337,406</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. James Daniel</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>277,335-337,402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 404,488,558,562</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John A.</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John Allen</td>
<td>277,334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John Jr.</td>
<td>334,402,404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 489</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Joyce</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Joyce Allen</td>
<td>334,403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 498</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Judith</td>
<td>336,404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Kevin Dr.</td>
<td>561</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Margaret</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Allen</td>
<td>334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Millington</td>
<td>337,404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Nancy</td>
<td>276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Robert 274-276,337,397</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 403-404,406,488-489</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 553,557-558,570,617</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 634</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Robert &quot;Robin&quot;</td>
<td>334,405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Robin</td>
<td>276,634</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Samuel 335-336,337,404</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Samuel Allen</td>
<td>277,334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Stephen</td>
<td>403,489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Thomas</td>
<td>336,403,489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Warham 403,489,558,617</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 634</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>336-337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 403-404,489,558</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Easy, John</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Joyce</td>
<td>403,488</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Judith</td>
<td>403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Millington</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Robert</td>
<td>402,633</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Samuel</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Warham</td>
<td>488-489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>402,495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Wm.</td>
<td>404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eaton, Peter</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Thomas</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebell, Hans</td>
<td>668</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, Catharina</td>
<td>607,650</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Johannes</td>
<td>656</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Tile</td>
<td>650,670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Echols, Abraham</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ann</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Eleanor</td>
<td>447,511-512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 515,586</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Elizabeth</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Eva</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. James</td>
<td>511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>512,515,585-586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John Jr.</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Cave</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Sarah Cave</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Milner 511-512,515,585</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 588</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Richard</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Robert Milner</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sarah Cave</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Thomas Jefferson</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Eckholls, Jno.</td>
<td>588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 586-587</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ecles, John</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Milner</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edinger, Mr.</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edington, John</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmonds, Olamae</td>
<td>714</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmonson, Sarah</td>
<td>276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eggerling, Alfred Mrs.</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ehlebe, A.W. Mrs.</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Albert</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Albert William</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ehrenhardt, Elizabeth</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Page Numbers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ehrenhardt, (cont)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johan Philip</td>
<td>759</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>761</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>339, 343, 759</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philip</td>
<td>338-339, 761</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eichhoff, Jurgen</td>
<td>710</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eichmann</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adam Heinrich</td>
<td>548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Katharina</td>
<td>548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Margarethe</td>
<td>548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christina</td>
<td>477, 548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christine</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth Wendel</td>
<td>548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gueta</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans Heinrich</td>
<td>548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans Heinrich</td>
<td>611, 613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinz</td>
<td>548, 657</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Jacob</td>
<td>548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johannes</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kaspar</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Katharina</td>
<td>613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margarethe</td>
<td>613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martin</td>
<td>613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walter</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eichrod, Magdalena</td>
<td>604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eichrodt</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Magdalene</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Magdelena</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eickenauger, Fredrick</td>
<td>156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elam, Britt</td>
<td>66, 101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elder, Thos. R.</td>
<td>191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ellenberger, Barbara</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conrad</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth Gumbel</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ellerbee, Thomas</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ellerbrock, Augusta T.</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ellerkamp, Anna Maria</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ellermeier, Pastor</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elliot, Ila</td>
<td>708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elmore, J.A.JP</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John A.</td>
<td>364, 366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>English, Abraham</td>
<td>453</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>453</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enoch, Harmon</td>
<td>576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epes, Fran.</td>
<td>633</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epps, Francis</td>
<td>631</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eseley, Robert</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Esley, Ann</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warham</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Essex, Tho.</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Estes, John</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Estly, Robt.</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eudaily, Pattie</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evans, Caty</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr.</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walter</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evert, Anna</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Catharina</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Cathrina</td>
<td>232, 303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Cathrina</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evert</td>
<td>303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinrich Herman</td>
<td>376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hermann</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ilsen Besten</td>
<td>376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ilsen Senior</td>
<td>459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jobst Henrich</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johan Henrich</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Henrich</td>
<td>376, 458</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann J.</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margarete Ilsabein</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ewing, John</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Falckman</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catrina Agnese</td>
<td>532</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Falckmann</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharin Agnese</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharine Agnese</td>
<td>462</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Friedrich</td>
<td>604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Otto</td>
<td>604, 646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Falkman</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Henrich</td>
<td>463</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Falkmann</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthon Friedoich</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharine Agnese</td>
<td>463</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>464, 536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Henrich</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Friedrich</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>604, 646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Henrich</td>
<td>464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margrete Magdalena</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Otto</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sophia Maria</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fanning, Edmund</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Farrow, Mr.</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Featherston, J.C.C.</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feigehenn, Catharina</td>
<td>608</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>651</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, i and B

Freitag, (cont)
  . Anna Louise 236
  . Henriette 313
  . Anna Louise Meinolf 313
  . Anna Margret Catharin 543
  . Anna Margret Ilsabe 543
  . Anna Sophia Ilsabein 313
  . Caroline 388
  . Florentina 238
  . Florentine 237
  . Conradine 236
  . Florentine 236-237, 311
  . Ernst Dietrich 313
  . Hans Friedrich 236, 311
  . Hans Henrich 237, 311
  . Simon 83
  . Sophia 143
  . Sophia Louisa 237
  . Wilhelmine
  . Conradine 237

Freitag, Barthold 648
Freme, John 662
French, Judeth 639
Freund,
  . Anna Catharina 601
  . Anna Lucia 535
  . Anna Maria 463-464, 535
  . Anna Sophia 463
  . Dorothea 463
  . 464
  . Berend 601, 603
  . Berent Jr. 601
  . Bernd 601
  . Bernd Sr. 645
  . Bernhard 531
  . Catharina Margarete 381
  . Catharina Margarethe 382
  . Catharine Agnese 462
  . Catharine Margarete 464
  . Catharine Margarethe 462, 463, 600
  . Christoph Moritz 463
  . Frantz Diedrich 535
  . Johan Henrich 382
  . Johann Anton 464
  . Johann Anton Heinrich 464
  . Johann Anton Heinrich 463
  . Johann Christian 463
  . Johann Friedrich 464
  . Johann Friedrich 463
  . Johann Henrich 463, 531
  . 533, 536, 603, 665
  . Lucie Dorothee 463-464
  . Margrete
  . Cathrina Elisa 535
  . Moritz Pastor 532
  . Moritz Rev. 645
  . Moritz Sr. Rev. 666
  . Mr. 673
  . Simon Friderich 535
  . Freunds, Anna Lucia 603
  . Frevert,
  . Anna Catharine 540
  . Anna Catherine 605, 647
  . Arndt 605, 647, 668
  . Hans 469, 540
  . Heinrich 647, 668
  . Maria Lisabet 473
  . Maria Lisabeth 543
  . Freytag,
  . Ernst Dietrich 236
  . Greta Ilsabe Arning 312
  . Friederike, Dorothee 319
  . Weferling Dorothee 252
  . Friedrichs,
  . Heinrich Ludewig 252
  . Frogmorton, Wm. 619

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
Frohne, Agneta Anna 230
  . Anna Ilsabey 230
  . Anna Maria 302
  . Anna Marie 301
  . Christian Wilhelm 137
    230, 301-302, 374
  . Frans Henrich 136, 227
  . Franz 265
  . Franz Henrich 227, 233
  . Johann Berend 230
  . Johann Henrich 227, 301
  . Johann Wilhelm 228, 230
  . Margreth Ilsabey 230
  . Metta 641
  . Tonnie
  . Christoffel 230
Fulwider, Henry 338, 760
Fuqua, S.M. 448, 451
Furr, Elizabeth 122
Fussell, Mary W. Robinson 57
Gaillard, W.H.D. 192
Garden, J.R.'s 592
Gardiner, Dorothy 620
Edward 620
Garmon, George 407
Garner, A.K. 56
  . Annie 187
  . Arthur 57
  . Arthur K. 7
  . Arthur Mrs. 55
  . Audie Sue 729
  . B.F. 9
  . Ben 5-6, 20-21, 31, 47
    703, 714, 718-719, 722
    730, 732, 739, 745, 747
    749, 751, 765, 770, iii
  . Ben F. 723, 735
  . Bennie F. 32, 34
  . Bennie Fay 683, 687, 695
    703, 723-724, 729, 737
    739, 749
  . Bennie Fay "Ben" 753
  . Bennie Faye 705
  . Benny Fay 7
  . Bob 17, 83, 684, 695-697
    699, 701, 718-719, 722
    723-724, 729-731, 735
    739, 745, 749, 751, 765
    iii
  . Brandon 31, 691, 693
    723-724, 735, 751
  . Brandon Thomas 37, 687
    765, iii
Calloway 53-54, 121
  . Charles 7, 723
  . Charles Edward 729
  . Charles Henry 764
  . Claud 4, 57
  . Claude 4, 8, 39, 41, 723
  . Claude Mrs. 4
  . Clyde 7, 9-10, 64, 723
  . . 729
  . Cotton 704, 723
  . David 187
  . Doris Mae 723-724
  . Doris Mae Wolfe 687
  . . 695
  . Earl 723
  . Elizabeth 119, 187
  . Elizabeth "Betsy" 112
  . Ethel Marie 618, 733
  . Ethel Marie "Happy" 764
  . German research -
  . German research
  . clue vi
  . Gracie 7
  . Henry 65, 187
  . J.B.R. 56
  . J.C. 4, 56
  . J.Claude 723
  . Jacob 31, 699, 701
    723-724, 735, 751, iii
  . Jacob Louis 37, 695
  . Jesse v, 54, 57, 119-121
    . 187, 189
  . Jesse Claude 7
  . Jesse J. 99
  . Jesse M. 3, 53, 753
  . Jessie C. 9
  . Jessie Claude 3, 39, 220
    703, 753
  . Jessie Willard 729
  . Joel 31, 699, 701
    723-724, 735, 751, iii
  . Joel Robert 37, 695
  . John 54, 119, 187
  . John B.R. 7
  . John C. 9
  . John Jr. 121
  . Lauren 31, 691, 693
    723-724, 735, 751, iii
  . Lauren Renee 37, 687
    . 749
  . Lila 21, 31, 47, 723, 770
  . Lila M. 21-22, 33-34
    724, 726, 728, 743
  . Lila Marie 32, 735
  . Lila Marie Niemann 695

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be
indexed only once in his or her own biosranhv. although their names appear on several pages.
Garner, (cont)
  Lila Niemann 111,724
  743,745,747,749,751
  759,764-765
  Lottie 5,8-9,54,70
  Lottie Jane 729
  Lucinda 54
  M.J. 55,211,215,420
  Margaret 54,121
  Martha 54,69
  Martha L. 7
  Mary 5,723-724
  Mary Jane 5-6,55,198
  420,557
  Mary Jane Robinson 3
  99
  Mellie 719
  Miley 53,121
  Miley E. 7,54
  Nancy 54,121
  Necey 121
  Neva 39
  Neva Ann Dafford 703
  723
  Neva Dafford 7,41,63
  Neva Mrs. 4
  Orvelle 687
  Orvelle"Pat" 695,729
  P. 220
  P.J. 56
  Pap(error:Pat) 7
  Pat 9,723
  Pauline 723-724
  Perneca 121
  Peter 6,53,55,57,119
  130,165,187,189-190
  220
  Peter Jacob 7
  Pleasant 53-54,121
  Robert 6-7,31,55,566
  755
  Robert P. 34,726
  Robert Paul 32,91,684
  687,695,717,724-725
  753,111
  Sally 695-696,701
  722-724,735
  Sally Pitluck 751
  Sally Ruth Pitluck 699
  Sarah Jane 121
  Stanley Duane 764
  Stephen 121,189
  Sue 6,8,24,693,723-724
  735
  Sue Jorgensen 751
  Susan 120,189-190
  Susan Elizabeth 7
  Susan Jackson 53,165
  Susan L. 32,725
  Susan Lorraine
  Jorgensen 691
  Susannah 187
  Tabitha "Betsy" 121
  Thomas 31,566
  Thomas E. 34,725-726
  Thomas Earl 32,39,91
  684,687,696,717,724
  753-754,111
  Tom 17,24,89,684,689
  691,693,718,723-724
  729,735,745,751,765
  723
  Vance 4,7,9,67,703,705
  719,723-724
  Vance Floyd 729
  Whitey 707
  Willard 7,9,706,719
  723
  William 53-54,119,187
  733
  William "Billy" 121
  William "Dutch" 187
  William E. 618,764
  William
  Earl"Earlie" 729
  William"Earlie" 7
  Wilma 187
  Garret, Joseph 406
  Garrett, Rebecca 135
  Garro, Mary 585
  William 511,585
  Garrow, William 511
  Gaunt, Peeter 363
  Peter 637
  Gee, Henry 555
  Geiss, Friedrich Jos. 241
  Friedrich Josias 238
  Gerbelin, Anna 676,678
  Gerlington, John 513
  Nicholas 513-514
  Germen, Jean 407
  Germ, George 407
  Gibson, Betty Puryear 352
  Johathan 441
  Giesel, Jost 614,658
  Magdalena 549,614,658
  Gifford, Rachel 441
  Giletine, Nicholas 515

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
### Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as ë, ö, ü and å.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gillington, Nicholas</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gill, Francis 135, 226, 298</td>
<td>370, 444, 511, 513</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Francis Calvin</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. James Newton</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillard, Wm.</td>
<td>622</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillentine, Ann</td>
<td>446-447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Catherine</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Eleanor</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Eleanor Echols</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Elizabeth</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ellender</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Nicholas</td>
<td>447, 511, 512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sarah</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillington, Jerushea</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Nicholas</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Girlington, John</td>
<td>511, 513</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Katherine</td>
<td>513</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Nicholas</td>
<td>513-514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>513</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gissage, Christian</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Givens, Annie</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jack</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glebe, Jacob</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Larry</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sue Ann</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glebe, Jacob</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glover, Mary</td>
<td>588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>586-587, 762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goebel, Hans</td>
<td>652</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goempel, Bertold</td>
<td>316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Eva Katharina</td>
<td>316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sebastian</td>
<td>316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goern,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Carl Friedrich</td>
<td>249</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Christoph</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goldstein, Ari Rabbi</td>
<td>695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rabbi</td>
<td>696</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gonzales, Wilma Garner</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gooch, William Gov.</td>
<td>494</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 495</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goode, John</td>
<td>559-560</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mack</td>
<td>525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodheart, Steffel</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodlett, Spartan</td>
<td>756</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodpasture, Anne</td>
<td>757</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodwin, Robert</td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goos, Samuel</td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gordon, Sylvia</td>
<td>714</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goslin, Elizabeth</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gosling, Elizabeth</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gott, John K.</td>
<td>329, 399-400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gowan, Ann</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary</td>
<td>276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gowen, Mary</td>
<td>275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gower, Abel</td>
<td>624</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Abell</td>
<td>633</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gray, Joseph</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greek, James</td>
<td>369</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green, Jno.</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greene, Gen.</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Nathaniel Gen.</td>
<td>351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gregory, Joseph</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grider, E.C.W.</td>
<td>762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethel</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grier, Mary</td>
<td>764</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griesel,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Anna Diedrich</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Catharina</td>
<td>608, 652</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Conrad</td>
<td>475, 545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Hans</td>
<td>608, 652</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Johann Adam</td>
<td>475</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Johannes</td>
<td>545, 608</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griesell, Cunze</td>
<td>390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Herman</td>
<td>390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Magdalena</td>
<td>390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Otto</td>
<td>390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griesel, Johann Adam</td>
<td>389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Magdalena</td>
<td>314, 389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griffin, C.S.DO</td>
<td>95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Dennis</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Rebecca W.</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Samuel</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sarah Ann</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grimpe, Edward</td>
<td>92, 152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grinert, Anna Maria</td>
<td>542</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Dorothea Hedwig</td>
<td>471</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 541</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Margaret Elisabeth</td>
<td>542</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Peter Christian</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Dr. 542</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Groeppers,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Catharine</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Margarethe</td>
<td>463</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grolm, Amalia Louise</td>
<td>309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. August Ferdinand</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Auguste</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. C.A. Henriette&quot;Jette&quot;</td>
<td>753</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. &quot;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Carl Ludwig</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Carolina&quot;Lina&quot;</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Caroline Auguste</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Henriet 81</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Caroline&quot;Lina&quot;</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Christian</td>
<td>309</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There’s a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner
by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, u and f.

Gumbel, (cont)
. Ernst Heinrich
. Wilhelm 145
. Ernst W.H. 177, 179
. Ernst William Henry 88
. Eulalia 606, 609, 648 652-653
. Fannie 22, 239
. Fannie Harriet 37
. Frank 89, 148, 706
. Frank C. 92, 148, 152
. Frank Conrad 92, 151
. Frank H. 29
. Fred 17, 89, 147-148
. Fred W. 92, 96-97
. Fred William 37
. Frederick 152
. Frederick Ernest 92
. George 109, 147-148, 152
. George A. 93, 109, 117
. George Alfred 22, 88, 95 113, 753
. George Mrs. 162
. Grandmother 729
. Hanna 149
. Hans Cort 314
. Hans Curt 238, 314, 317 389, 474
. Hans Curth 315
. Hans Kurt 238, 327
. Harry 93
. Harry Alfred 37, 95
. Heinrich 149, 242 544-545, 606
. Henn 146
. Henrich 609, 648, 652 668, 670
. Johann Adam 315
. Johannes 149, 241 314-315, 389-390, 474 544-545
. John 149, 240
. Jolly 239
. Karl 238, 265, 276
. Kate 152
. Katherine Elmira 92
. Katie 148
. Lester 17, 28, 147
. Lester C. 710, 713
. Lester C.E. 92, 95, 97
. Lester Conrad 37
. Ernest 37
. Lillian Angelica 92
. Lillie 148
. Margarethe 149
. Maria 149
. Mildred 17, 45, 47, 49, 51 89, 91-92, 111, 117, 161 735, 741, 770
. Mildred H. 45, 92
. Mildred Hilda 16, 22 709, 753
. Millie 17, 92, 109, 111 161, 710
. Millie Schilling 115 252
. Mrs. G.A. 111
. Nellie 17, 18, 24, 91, 152 710, 765
. Nellie A. 92, 95
. Nellie Angelica 37, 111
. Uncle Slim 710, 713
. Verden Carl 238
. Werner 146
. Wilhelm 149, 241
. William 148, 152, 240 92
. William Justice 92
. Winnifred 93
. Gumbell, Hans Kurt 327
. Gumble, Geo. Mrs. 766
. Gumpel, Johannes 474
. Gundy,
. Lucinda Cudiff 272
. Gunnarson, Sven 579
. Gunter, Mr. 136
. Gustafsson, Johan 578-579
. Gyrylyngton, Elizabeth 514
. Johanna 514
. Nicholas 514
. Nycholas 514
. William 514
. Gyrylyngton,
. Amabelia DeYork 515
. John De 514
. Matilda 515
. Robert De Sir 515
. Thomas De 515
. Haas, Henry 149
. Habenicht,
. Lieselotte "Lilo" 145 769
. Lilo 146, 239
. Mrs. 241, 314, 316 390-391, 547, 653, 656
. Silke 238
. Silke Baier 146
. Thomas 146
. Hachmeister,
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hachmeister, (cont)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anne Ilsabein</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berend Peter</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ilsihe Ramsel</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johan</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johan Toennies</td>
<td>378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Christoph</td>
<td>231</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marie Ilsabein</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hackenworth, Catherine</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Haden,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karen Kay Adamson</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McKim</td>
<td>410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kay</td>
<td>410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. 410,566,619,621</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>627-629,660</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert D. Haertling, Uta</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hagemann,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caroline Suellwold</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herr</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hagemeier, Caroline</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herr</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hagenewert, Catherine</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hagood,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elvira Caroline</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gary</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James Earl</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James Earle</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Haines, Jonathan</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>280-281</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hakenwirt, Catherine</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hall, Florence</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>590</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harrison</td>
<td>356</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joseph</td>
<td>583</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roy Dale</td>
<td>706</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>590</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm.</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hamblen, William</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hamelin, Steph.</td>
<td>661</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hammel, Henry</td>
<td>156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hammett, Joyce Self</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hampton, John</td>
<td>502</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hanar, Wm.</td>
<td>627</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hancke,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marie Ilsabein</td>
<td>385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>470-471</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sophie Ernestine</td>
<td>470</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hancock, Saml Jr.</td>
<td>520</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans, Wilhelmina</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hansard, Elizabeth</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Sir</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hansemann, Catharina</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth Gumbel</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hansen, Maren Sophie</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hansmann, Catharina</td>
<td>475</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans</td>
<td>608-609</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Otto</td>
<td>608,652</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harbin, George</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harie, Ludwig</td>
<td>581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harman, William</td>
<td>562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harper, Catherine</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diana Minor</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Experience</td>
<td>510</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, A.M.</td>
<td>211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann Martha</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann Martha Cross</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George Luton</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skipworth</td>
<td>449,457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thom</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W.B.</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harrison, Benj.</td>
<td>595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry</td>
<td>345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nath'11</td>
<td>594</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phyllis H.</td>
<td>273,331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard Maj.</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Henry</td>
<td>205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hart, Mary</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hartford,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sallye Swafford</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hartman, Don D.Rev.</td>
<td>695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Don Rev.</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hartsfield, J.W.</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hartwick, Adolph Mrs.</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dellie</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hartwig, A.Mrs.</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augusta</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conrad</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Della</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harvey, William</td>
<td>346</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm.</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hashagen, H.Master</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Haskell, Charles</td>
<td>730</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peggy</td>
<td>732</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peggy Streiff</td>
<td>141,144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>730</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hatcher, Benja.</td>
<td>631</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edw.</td>
<td>630</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Haustling</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sophia Louisa</td>
<td>252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henrie</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hawkins, Benjamin</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Hay, Jenett 441
Haymond, Henry 288
Haywood, William 426
Heans, William 407
Heard, John Capt. 583
Heckman, Elmer 86
Hedge, William 584
Heeger, Anna Sophia 387
  . Johann Diderich -
  . Heinrich 311
Heger,  . Anna Sophia -
  . Ilsabein 311
  . Heinrich 387
  . Ilsabein 387
Heiderich, Andreas 394
  . Heintz 395
  . Katharina -
  . Elisabeth 317
  . Katherina -
  . Elisabeth 394
Hein, Gregg Rev. 687
Heinemann, Ursula 141
  Ursula Brandsmeier 467
Heinhorst,
  . Elisabeth Nuhn 150, 244
  . Fred 244
  . Heinrich F.W. 153
  . Mrs. 152
Helmer, Dorothy 762
Henderson, Archibald 428
  . John S. 72
  . Josephine 72
  . Mathias 511
Hendrick, Priscilla 512
Henne, Anna 254
  . Loudeuw. 254
  . Louis 254
  . Sophie 254
Henshaw, Jim L. 37, 728
Herrmann, Henrich 532, 665
Herron, Isaac Newton 54
  Miley Garner 53, 121
Hewig, Anna Martha 392
  478
Hesehus, Barthold 673, 676
  . 678
  . Margarete 666, 673, 677
  . Margarete Bulle 673
Hesley, Rosa 145
Hespferdt, Anton 668
Heumann, August 73

Mr.
Heuwinkel, Uncle 73
Heydenreich,
  . Anna Martha 613
  . Barbara 613
  . Christian 613
  . Hans 613
  . Johannes 613
  . Kaspar 613
  . Margarethe 549, 613
  . Maria 613
Hickley, Ann 558-559
Hickman, Richard S. 498
  500
Higgledey, Ann 559-560
Higley, Ann 559
Hilcker, Alla Ilsabein vi
  . Anna Ilsabein vi, 384
  . 467-468
  . Hans Herman 384
  . Heinrich 539
  . Johanan 468, 539
  . Johann Herman 468
Hill, Abigail 509
  . D.B. 220
  . Dennis B. 7
  . Dr. 247
  . George 445
  . John 510
  . M.A. 56
  . Richd 587
  . Sarah 582
Hillhouse, Charlot 197
  . Clarence 197
  . Mariah 197
Hillsman, Ann 371, 512
  . Ann Gillentine 370
  . Dianne 371
  . Edward L. 370-371, 584
  . Elizabeth 371, 511
  . James 371
  . John 371, 510
  . John A. 510, 584
  . John Jr. 511
  . Joseph 371
  . Mary 371, 511
  . Matthew 370, 510
  . Naomi B. 370-371, 584
  . Nicholas 510
  . Sarah 298, 370, 511
  . Thomas W. 370-371, 584
  . Tom 135, 510
  . William 510-511
Hillson, Hugh 588

A person’s name and his or her spouse’s name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hilsman, Ann</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann Gillentine</td>
<td>446</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johan von</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joseph</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matthew</td>
<td>446</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nicholas</td>
<td>446</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nicholoss</td>
<td>585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>298, 370, 447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tom W.</td>
<td>585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>447, 585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hilton, Martin</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hilyard, Katherine</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Himmel, Adam</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Gumbel</td>
<td>240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George A. Rev.</td>
<td>149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John W.</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hinshaw, William Wade</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hobart, Peter Rev.</td>
<td>639</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hobson, Mary Louise -</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clingman</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stephen</td>
<td>205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stephen F.</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stephen H.</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Steve</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Alexander</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoe, Sarah</td>
<td>622</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoecker, Johann Anton</td>
<td>464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoegermann, Sven</td>
<td>303, 375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>461, 528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoegetmann, Catherine</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margareth</td>
<td>463</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoerentrup, Cornet zu</td>
<td>461</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans Barthold</td>
<td>527, 529</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoesli, Rosa</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoffman, Dr.</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hofman, Hans</td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hofmann, Gelen</td>
<td>654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hohmann, Johann Henrich</td>
<td>378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Holbrook</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandra Lorenz</td>
<td>733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>639</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Holcomb, Asa Chandler</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Betsy</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brent</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brent H.</td>
<td>274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brent W.</td>
<td>331</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, u and s.

Hubbard, (cont)
- Elizabeth Borum 445
- Judith 370
- Mr. 370
- Huber, Hannah 338
- Hudson, Ann 490
- Sarah 457
- Huey, Sarah 226
- Hugur, Daniel 193, 276
- Hughes, Edward 351
  - Ingeborg 364
  - Jane 487
  - Susan 409
- Hughston, Edmond 224
  - Elizabeth 224
  - George Dr. 224
  - John Edmund 224
  - John M. 224
  - Joseph 225, 296
  - Joseph Dr. 135
  - Judith P. 226
  - Newton K. 224
  - Tom L. 224
  - Walter Dr. 224
- Hulan, Richard Dr. 573
- Hulching, Elkanah 281
- Huling, Andrew 359
- Catherine Mounce 359
- Hull, Agnes 583
  - Agnis 639
  - Alice 640
  - Benjamin 583
  - Blanche 510, 583-584
  - Dorothy 583, 640
  - Elizabeth 583
  - Grissell 583
  - Hannah 510
  - Hopewell 583
  - Joan Peson 638
  - Joane 583
  - Joanna 583, 640
  - Joanne Peson 639
  - John 510
  - Joseph 510, 583, 640
  - Joseph Rev. 583
  - 637-638
  - Mary 510
  - Naomi 583
  - Reuben 583
  - Rev. 636
  - Richard 640
  - Ruth 583
  - Samuel 583
  - Sarah 437, 442, 509-510
- Temperance 583
- Thomas 638-639
- Tristram 510, 583-584
- Hulshizer, Godfrey 74
- Mart 74
- Martin 73
- Humphreys, W.W. 197
- Humrickhouse, Dr. 83
- Hunkemeier, Jobst H.H.C. 80
- Hunt, Charles 348
  - Mary 405, 490, 494
  - T.B. Dr. 155, 157
  - Thomas B. Dr. 156
- Hunter, John 497
  - Wm. 193
- Huston, Agnes 225
  - Archibald 67, 134, 222
  - 299
  - Cassie 225
  - Cassy 225
  - Elisha 296
  - Elizabeth 132, 225
  - Elizabeth Adair 222
  - 296, 366
  - Jane 136, 225
  - John 222, 296-297, 364
  - 366, 369
  - John Edmund 136
  - John Farmer 225
  - Joseph 296
  - Judith Borum 67, 134
  - Leroy 225
  - Mary E. 136
  - Minerva 67
  - Minerva Hillsman 132
  - 134
  - Minervia Hillsman 69
  - 167, 169
  - Newton B. 136
  - Pemelia 136
  - Thomas Finley 136
- Hutchens, A. 416
  - Mary 567
- Hutchinson, Mr. 215
  - Sarah F.A. 215
- Huth, Auguste 84
- Hermann H.F. 81
- Huxhol, Cord Heinrich 384
  - Hans 384
  - Heinrich Christoph 384
- Hyde, Harriette Pattillo 358

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Imig,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Belle Fender</td>
<td>714</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Belle Gordon</td>
<td>714</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indian, Dirt Bottle</td>
<td>291</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Donnoba</td>
<td>418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Donohoo</td>
<td>418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnny</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sammy</td>
<td>288, 295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sassa</td>
<td>288, 295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sue</td>
<td>631</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ireland, Gean</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr.</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isenbergs, Dr.</td>
<td>534</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ithai, Elisabeth</td>
<td>653</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George</td>
<td>653</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ittil, Anna Martha</td>
<td>476</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>.</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>609</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George</td>
<td>609</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Otto</td>
<td>609-610</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha Loeber</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson, America</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andrew</td>
<td>67, 298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barbara</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barbary</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>122, 189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hanna Matthews</td>
<td>442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iash</td>
<td>122</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucinda</td>
<td>122, 189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr.</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy</td>
<td>54, 122</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Necey</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perneca</td>
<td>54, 121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Romerica</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel</td>
<td>442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stonewall Gen.</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susan 6, 53, 119, 121, 165</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Thomas J.</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot;J. Stonewall&quot;</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jacobs, Anna Dorothee</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>.</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayliffe</td>
<td>57, 124, 271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jagdstein, E.H. Rev.</td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jakes, John</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James, Sarah</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jankowsky, C. Rev.</td>
<td>96, 710</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jarratt, A.H.</td>
<td>351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot;A.H. Jr. &quot;Hal&quot;</td>
<td>418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Isaac</td>
<td>201, 278, 344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Killian</td>
<td>278, 282, 286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jarvis, John Wesley</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jausi, Chester</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>24, 92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jeambe, Robert Rev.</td>
<td>687</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jeary, Ed</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jefferson, Allen</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Field</td>
<td>404-405, 494</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Garland</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Robertson</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Frances</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter Field</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phoebe</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>405, 554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Pres.</td>
<td>405, 494</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jeffrey, Letha L.</td>
<td>37, 728</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R.L.</td>
<td>37, 725</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R. Lloyd</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jenings, Edward</td>
<td>595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jenkins, Isaac (Isaac)</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Isaac</td>
<td>332-333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mrs.</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ralph</td>
<td>362, 437, 509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Widow</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jensen,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Elsie Christina</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Larry</td>
<td>766</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jepsen, Anna Elsie</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Turkel</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johanningsmeyer, Hans</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johannsdotter, Anna</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johannsdotter, Anna</td>
<td>577</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson, James</td>
<td>762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Jesse</td>
<td>415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>501, 505, 567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Josephine Mrs.</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Lyndon Baines</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Pres.</td>
<td>511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Alice</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Pledge</td>
<td>501</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mr.</td>
<td>212, 285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sam</td>
<td>426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jones, A.Dr.</td>
<td>211</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Jones, (cont)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alfred Dr.</td>
<td>131, 200, 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen</td>
<td>426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eliz.</td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J.P.</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane</td>
<td>297</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane P.</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Poindexter</td>
<td>Clingman 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melinda</td>
<td>122, 285, 337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melinda Ann</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tabitha &quot;Betsy&quot;</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W. Mac</td>
<td>506</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wayne V.</td>
<td>236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jonsson, Anders</td>
<td>571</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jorgensen,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jorgen Peter</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Loren Rasmus</td>
<td>687, 754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lorraine Regina</td>
<td>Stoh 687</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rasmus</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sue</td>
<td>751</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susan Lorraine</td>
<td>687, 691</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>753-754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joyner, Amiah</td>
<td>282, 286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amy</td>
<td>282, 286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kaechlich, Cord</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kahle, Mr.</td>
<td>252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kaiser zu Dingerdissen,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna C.</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann J</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kaiser, Anna</td>
<td>375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Cord</td>
<td>375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joost Henrich</td>
<td>375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kalm, Peter</td>
<td>573</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karegeannes, Carrié</td>
<td>592</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kasiski, H. Rev.</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Katzoffsky, Johann</td>
<td>605</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kazkowsky, Johann</td>
<td>605</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keeling, Ralph</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keenor, Casper</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keiser zu Dingerdissen,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna K.</td>
<td>233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna C.</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna K.</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Kat</td>
<td>136, 265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cathrina</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hanna Ca</td>
<td>140, 231</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hanne Ka</td>
<td>232, 304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joh. J.</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Kenter, Erich</td>
<td>529, 601</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinrich</td>
<td>645, 665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hermann</td>
<td>532, 667-668</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jobst Wilhelm</td>
<td>532</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann</td>
<td>665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kerbey, Richard</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kerchof,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friederike</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilhelmine</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kerr, Bill</td>
<td>221, 292</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keyes, Frances Parkinson</td>
<td>334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keysher, Peter</td>
<td>339, 343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>407, 760</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiel,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Catharina</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blome</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Elisabeth</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Sophia</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>465</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christoph</td>
<td>382, 465</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edith</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edith Inge</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans</td>
<td>465</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans Herman</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>465-466, 536</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herm</td>
<td>465, 536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jobst Henrich</td>
<td>382-383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>465</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Konrad</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Hermann</td>
<td>466</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Konrad</td>
<td>309-310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>383</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sophie</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiesau,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Florentine</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henriette</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>307</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kilpatrick, Easly</td>
<td>403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr.</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kimbell, Joseph</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kimbrough, George</td>
<td>346-347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George H.</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orman</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ormon</td>
<td>345, 355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ormond</td>
<td>347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kincheloe, Hannah</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>King,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lawrence William</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot;Larry&quot;</td>
<td>192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise C.</td>
<td>193, 195, 276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kirbey, Richard</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kirby, Sarah</td>
<td>582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kirk, J.H.</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiser, Catherine</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>343, 358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fanny</td>
<td>433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frederick</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margaret</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peeter</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter</td>
<td>343-344, 406, 433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rachel</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kissell, Margaret</td>
<td>754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Mary</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm.</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kixmuller, Herr</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kizer, Peter</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kizzie, Miss</td>
<td>286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kleidon,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pamella Lorenz</td>
<td>733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kleimann, Johan</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kleinmann, Maria Elisabet</td>
<td>236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Klingerman, Alexr.</td>
<td>340</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lander</td>
<td>761</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sander</td>
<td>761</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kingleman, Alex</td>
<td>761</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander</td>
<td>761</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Klingman, Annette</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Betty</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Klingmanin, Andreas</td>
<td>339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>407</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>339, 407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Klippert, Conrad</td>
<td>476</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kloetzke, Wilhelmina</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Klotcke, Wilhelmine</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knese, Heirich</td>
<td>668</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight, Michael</td>
<td>760</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knott, Widdow</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knox, Sarah</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Koch, Henrietta</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>768</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henrietta Ohlendorf v</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Koeenerkamp, Wolf-Dieter</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Koerner, Konradine</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kohmeier, Gret Ilsabein</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Korell, Elisabeth</td>
<td>145-146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>146</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Renate</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walter</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilhelm</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Last Name</th>
<th>First Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Korf</td>
<td>Ernst Dietrich</td>
<td>236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Korrumpf</td>
<td>Jost</td>
<td>654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kramer</td>
<td>Caspar</td>
<td>665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krug</td>
<td>Anna</td>
<td>666, 673, 676</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krop</td>
<td>Cord</td>
<td>665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krueger</td>
<td>Johan</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jaspers</td>
<td></td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kaspar</td>
<td></td>
<td>664, 666, 668</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krull</td>
<td>Agnesa</td>
<td>668</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krawinkel</td>
<td>Anna Elisabeth</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krome</td>
<td>Andreas Heinrich</td>
<td>153, 765</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krohme</td>
<td>Ludwig</td>
<td>252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krohme</td>
<td>Sophie</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krom</td>
<td>Sophie</td>
<td>254, 766</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krohn</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kromer</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krohn</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krumen</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krumen</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Krueger</td>
<td>Johan</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kuykendall</td>
<td>Jacob</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kyser</td>
<td>Cateran</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lack</td>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lacy</td>
<td>Drury Rev.</td>
<td>429</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lambert</td>
<td>Cora</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ladd</td>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lafferty</td>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lafo</td>
<td>Susan Stillwell</td>
<td>273</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as ä, ö, ü and ß

Lambert, (cont)
- Cora Daftord 62
- Fern 62, 66, 101
- Thomas Monroe 10, 62
Lamon, Duncan 426
Lampkin, Mr. 659-660
- Thomas Barnett Jr. 618
Landers, Isaac 587
- John Poindexter 283
Langshore, Robert 575
Lanier, Col. 353
- Elizabeth 284, 352
- Jane Pattillo 345
- Rebecca 353
- Robert 284, 345, 351, 354
- Thomas 284, 352
Largaespada, Richard 68
Lathrop, Barnabas 581
- Joseph 581
Laurens,
- Caroline Olivia 193
- 195, 276
- John Ball 193
- Mrs. 196
Lawler Children 299
Lawler, Robert 134
Robert W. 226
Lawrence, Ann 621, 627
- 660-661
- Anne 621, 627
- Arthur 629, 661-662
- James 629, 662
- Mary 621, 627-628, 661
- Sara 629
- William 622, 627-629
- 660, 662
- William Capt. 621
- Wm. 662
Lawson, Matilda 134
Matilda Mrs. 224
LeGrand, Judah 524
Lucy 524
LeGrande, Alexander 457
Leach, Thomas 427
Lead, Amos 567
Lee, Drury 426
- Jinks Mrs. 594
- William 129
Legrand, Alexander 455
Alexander Jr. 454
Lehmburg, Henriette 158
Leich, Alice 621
Leigh, Wm. 588
Leslie, James 426

Lewis, Cora Ann 764
- James 434
- Jno. 442
- Mary 353
- Mary Walker 352
- Meriwether 566
- Nicholas Col. 352
- Robert 566
- Z. 428, 432
Liese,
- Charlotte Juliane 143
- Dorothee Karoline -
- Amalia 143
Ligon, Joseph 450
- Richard 301
Lincoln,
- Benjamin Gen. 760
Linnemann, Catrina 303
375
Lipscomb, Joseph 518, 590
763
Little, Charty Adair 366
- David 297, 366
Lloyd, Col. 571
Lockhart, Gertrude 136
Lodewig,
- Amalie Sophia -
- Maria 307
- Anna Catherine 307
- Charlotte -
- Dankworth 233
- Charlotte -
- Florentine 234
- 308
- Friederike 233
- Friederike -
- Caroline 143
- Friederike -
- Wilhelmine 143
- Friedrich Bernhard 307
- Friedrich Simon 141
- 233-234, 310
- Friedrich Wilhelm 234
- Hans Henrich 307
- Heinrich 233, 310
- Henriette 233
- Herm Ludwig 307
- Johan Herm. 307
- Johann Friedrich -
- Bernh 233
- 307
- Johann Wilhelm -
- Heinric 143
- Marie Christine -

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, u and B.

Lodewig, (cont)
- Marie Luise 143
- Simon 233
- Simon H.C. 81
- Simon Heinrich 307
- Simon Heinrich Conrad 141
- Simon Heinrich Konrad 143
- Sophia Catharine 234
- Sophie Henriette 143
- Wilhelm 233
- Wilhelmine 82, 233
- Wilhelmine Friederike 141

Loeber, Georg 609, 653
- Martha 546, 609

Loetzherich, Anna 606, 649
- Otto 649, 670

Logan, Hugh 347

Londer, Henne 254

Long, Ann 452
- John 338
- Mary 367
- Richard 453
- Robert 367-368
- Susanna 367, 369

Longino, Thomas 348-349
- Thos.

Lorenz, Arthur Henry 764
- Frank William 764
- Howard Arthur "Hal" 764
- Pamella 733
- Sandra 733

Lorleberg
- Anna Clara Marie 462
  530-531
- Anna Ilsabein 601
- Balthasar 531-532
  599-601
- Eberhard 599
- Eberhards 531
- Heinrich 599
- Lorton, Mrs. 277
- Thos. C. 336
- Lothrop, Barnabas 582

Loudon
- Charlotte Sophie 319
  396
- Christian

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be
independently printed in the same hierarchy, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Family Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Lueking, (cont)</td>
<td>Johann Phillip 304, Florentine 140, Wilhelmine -</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Johannes Hermann 140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Luther, Martin 672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lyarding, Jacob 341, Zacharias 760, Lygon, Richard 629</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Luking, Frederica 73, Lykling, Frederica 73, Luther, Martin 672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>MackGahey, Thomas 762, MackGehee, Abraham 590</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>MacGregor, Gregor Sir 762, Hugh 763, James 516, 762-763, Patrick 762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>MackGahye, Thomas 762, William 762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>MackGehee, Abraham 590, Anna 763, Catherine 763, Diannah 763, Dinah 590</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Edward 590, Jacob 590, James 763, Mary 590, Samuel 763, Sarah 590, Thomas 590, William 590, 763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mackgehee, Abraham 763, Dinah 763, Edward 763, Jacob 763, Mary 763, Samuel 763, Sarah 763, Thomas 762-763, William 591, 763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mackie, William 587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maganoch, Hugh 495, Magee, Emily Meer 212, Mannel, Dorothy 514, Robert 514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mannerter, Anne Marie 386, Anne Marie E. 311, Anne Marie -</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Zophanias 760, Zacharias 760, Zacharias 576, 635</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Marchbanks, George 515, Marion, Francis Gen. 275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Martin, Alfred 213, 286, Charlotte 349, Job 414-416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mary V. 225, Nichas 587, Philip 489, 555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Marwood, Robt. 587, Maryon, Peter 588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mask, Eliz. 587, Massey, David Lee 133, Eliza 219-220, Henry 220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Matsdotter, Britta 570, Matthews, Benjamin 583, Hanna 442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mattsdotter, Britta 506, 576, 635</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mattsson, Peter 508, Mattzdotter, Britta 573, Maudlin, &quot;Queenie&quot; 128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Blake 225, Elizabeth 132, Elizabeth Moore 225, Frances -</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>M.H. &quot;Queenie&quot; v 124, 129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lewis 193, R. 193, Maxey, Elizabeth 569, Susannah 569</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maxwell, Robert Dr. 192, Mayfield, Carol Catton 187</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Jacob</td>
<td>373, 448-451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>372, 449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James Forrest</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>449-451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Booker</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John C.</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Josiah P.</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>299, 373, 449-450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith Pennick</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith Walker</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha</td>
<td>372, 449, 451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha Jane</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>373, 449-451, 518</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy</td>
<td>301, 372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy Penick</td>
<td>225, 298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polly</td>
<td>449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard B.</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel</td>
<td>518</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>449, 451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah C.</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah Chappel</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah Chappell</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>300, 449, 451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Virginia Nancy</td>
<td>Penick 300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>372-373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>449-450, 457, 516</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Sr.</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McGuire, William</td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McKenzie,</td>
<td>Lucille Henrietta 764</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Murdoch Donald</td>
<td>764</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R.J.Rev.</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ronald J.Rev.</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McLaughlin, Capt.</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McMeins, Henry</td>
<td>153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McMenis, Mary</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McNulty, Anita Nadine</td>
<td>708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dennis</td>
<td>708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diane</td>
<td>708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meder, Christoph</td>
<td>246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Medow, Ida</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meeke, Thomas</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier thomMenkhusen,</td>
<td>George</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>672</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier toBarchusen,</td>
<td>Adolph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>672</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christoph</td>
<td>663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cord</td>
<td>671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Georg</td>
<td>642</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ilsabein</td>
<td>642</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maynard, William</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mays, Alexander</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCameron, Mr.</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCannon, Isaac</td>
<td>416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCarroll, H.C.</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCleary, Michael</td>
<td>Wm. 278</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McClellan, George</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McClendon, Rick</td>
<td>455</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCloskey, James Capt.</td>
<td>191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCluskey, James Capt.</td>
<td>191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCord, Mary Ann</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCoy, Jerri</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCrary, Cassandra Adair</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCrary, Thomas</td>
<td>366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCraryes, Thomas</td>
<td>366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCready, John</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McCutcheon, John</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McDonald, Marian</td>
<td>762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marian Lady</td>
<td>762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McDougle, William</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McFall, James Madison</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McFarlin, Jesse</td>
<td>360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McGehee, Abraham</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>299-300, 371, 448-449</td>
<td>516, 518</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abraham F.</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abram</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abram F.</td>
<td>372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agnes</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann Bastrop</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anness</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Annice</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Betsy</td>
<td>449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dinah</td>
<td>518</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drusilla</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmund</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edward</td>
<td>516, 518</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleanor</td>
<td>373, 451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleanor DeJarnette</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>451</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleanor</td>
<td>449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elijah</td>
<td>373, 449-450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forrest Miss</td>
<td>372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frances &quot;Fanny&quot;</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Page Numbers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier to Barch (cont)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jobst</td>
<td>664, 671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann</td>
<td>642, 672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier zu Barchusen</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christoph</td>
<td>596, 642-643</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cord</td>
<td>675, 677</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier zu Bexten, Anna</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinrich</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jobst</td>
<td>527-528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margarethe</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mette</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susanna</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier zu Heerse, Anna</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier zu Hoerentrup, Hans</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier zu Volkhausen,</td>
<td>527-528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meier, Alwine</td>
<td>21, 31, 79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alwine Niemann</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>August</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christel</td>
<td>78-79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fritz</td>
<td>22, 77-79, 87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinrich</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paul</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meiger van Barchusen,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hartwig</td>
<td>679</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martin</td>
<td>679</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meigs, Col.</td>
<td>290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Return J.</td>
<td>291</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meinolf, Anna Louise</td>
<td>236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Louise</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henriette</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anne Luise</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharina</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margarethe</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cathrin Margret</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans Henrich</td>
<td>312-313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herman Henrich</td>
<td>314, 388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jobst Henrich</td>
<td>311, 313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Henriette</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharina</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margarethe</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharine</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meisbach, Tillie</td>
<td>89, 93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meise, Johann</td>
<td>374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Friederich</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Friedrich</td>
<td>458</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Henrich</td>
<td>227, 301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meisse, Johann</td>
<td>302, 374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Berend</td>
<td>302</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meissner, Manfred</td>
<td>716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mencken,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henriette Louise</td>
<td>386</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Henrich</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Menken, Henriette</td>
<td>386</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Menkmhausen, Mr.</td>
<td>642</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Menkhusen, Mr.</td>
<td>672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mensenkamp, Ilsabein</td>
<td>376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>458, 460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mercik, Frank</td>
<td>764</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frank J.</td>
<td>733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frank J. Jr.</td>
<td>733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frank Mrs.</td>
<td>733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ronald L.</td>
<td>733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Merhoff, Alheid</td>
<td>680-681</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meriweather, Edna C.E.</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meriweather, Nicholas</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Merriwether, Elizabeth</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>564</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Col.</td>
<td>499</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mertens,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Dorothea</td>
<td>395, 480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ilsabe</td>
<td>463-464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methan, Margaret</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meyer zu Bexten</td>
<td>460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meyer zu Bexten, Anna</td>
<td>460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bartold</td>
<td>596</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans</td>
<td>596, 641</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann</td>
<td>526, 596</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Philip</td>
<td>379, 460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meyer zu Elentrup,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Magdale</td>
<td>378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Magdalen</td>
<td>304, 378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jaspar</td>
<td>526</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Henric</td>
<td>378, 459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meyer zu Halen, Anna</td>
<td>378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trin</td>
<td>459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meyer zu Heepen, Johann</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dietrich</td>
<td>379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann</td>
<td>379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margarethe Magd</td>
<td>379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meyer zu Heerse, Anna</td>
<td>596</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bartold</td>
<td>641</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meyer zu Jerrendorf,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Ilsabe</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Ilsbei</td>
<td>379</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
German names containing the letters "ae, oe, ue and ss" in the index may be found in the text as "a, o, u and b.

Meyer zuMilse, Deppe 640
  Hans 595
  Ilsabein 459, 526
Meyer zuOhrsen, Anna 641
Meyer zuOhrson, Anna 663
Meyer zuOlderdissen, Margarete 379, 460
Meyer zuOstenhausen 469
Meyer zuSieker, Anna Ilsabein 304, 376
Meyer zuVolckhausen, Amelia 472
  Joh. Ber. 472
  Johann Ber 527, 542
  Louysa 472
  Sophia Agn 542
  Sophia Eli 472
  Sophie Eli 542
  Wilhelmine 385, 471-472
  527, 542-543
Meyer zuWistinghausen,
  Bartold 642, 663
  Bernd 596
  Margarethe 460, 526, 596
  Toennies 642
Meyer zuWistinghausen,-Deppe 00640 640-641
  Gese 641
  Ilsche 641
Meyer, Cord
  Elisabeth 546, 610
  Hans 236
  Johannes 610, 654
Meyger thoBarchusen,
  Martin 680
Michener, James A. 491
Mickeljohn, Rev. 425
Miesner, Martha 97
Miller, James 493
  Mattie Janet -
    Pattillo 421
  Nan 712
Mills, James 426
Milner, Elizabeth 511, 570
  John 91, 511, 554-555
    557, 569, 622, 629, 633
  Kath. 555
  Katherine 511, 554, 569
    629, 631, 633
  Martha 505, 569-570, 631
  Mary 557, 570, 629, 631
Milsaps, Robt. 437
Milsen, Laura 140
Minge, Ann Hunt 405
  Mary Hunt 405
  Robert 405, 490, 494
  Tabitha 405
Mitchel, William 406
Mitchell,
  Elizabeth Mauldin 132
  Elizabeth Huston 225
    Mr. 282, 286
  Scoty 301
  William Rev. 132, 225
  Wynelle Lowrey 134
Mock, Peter 346
Mockey, John W. 161
Moellenburg,
  Anna Dorothea 468
  Moeller, Adam 243
  Hans 532, 600, 603
  Johann 603
  Johann "Hans" 645
Monroe, John vi
Monson, Hance 571
Montgomery, James 368
  Rebecca 367
Moody, Mary 660
  Sam 623
  Samuel 569, 628-629
  Samuel Jr. 623, 628
  Samuell 624
  Tho. 628, 661
  Thomas 569, 621, 627, 660
Moor, Thos. 439
Moore, Elizabeth 371
  John 370
  Martha Borum 445
  Maurice 426
  Thomas 247, 364, 438
    442-443
Morgan, Jon 588
Morris, Robert 629
Morrison, James 126
Morrow, B.E. Dr. 161
  Joseph Dr. 29
Morton, George 372
  John 373, 457
  Martha McGehee 449-450
    Tabitha 456
  Mosby, Edward 493
  Jacob 404
  William C. 213
Mosell, Cordt 648
Moss, Edw. 584
Motley,  
- Elizabeth Forrest 452  
- Joseph 451  
Mounce, Catherine 359  
- Henry 359  
Mueller, Catharina 598  
- Catharine 643  
- Friedrich Andreas 252  
- Heinrich 665  
- J.W. 92  
- Pastor 79  
Muldrow, H.L. 160  
Mullen, Patrick 489  
Mullendore, Nancy 221  
Mumford, Ann 593  
- Daniel 593  
- Edward 591-593  
- Joseph' 593  
- Mary 518,591,593  
- Mary Watkins 591  
- Thomas 447  
- Thomas Capt. 592  
Munz, John Hartzell 151  
Murphy, William 515  
Murry, Dorcas 330  
- John 272  
Myers, Irma Bell 135  
Naether, Rosemarie 15  
Nailor, Benjamin 281  
Nall, Maria F. 195  
Nance, John 196  
Napper, Booth 414  
Naylor,  
- Emma Lou Russom 189  
Neal, Nicholas 587  
Negro, Abram 335  
- Adam 452  
- Aggy 454  
- Alice 200  
- Alcy 335  
- Alice 454  
- Amy 336,449,453,455  
- 516  
- Anthony 454  
- Beck 445,516  
- Becky 454  
- Ben 334-335,516  
- Bess 452,564  
- Bet 516  
- Bette 495  
- Betty 453,455  
- Bety 450  
- Billy 455  
- Bob 454,516,524  
- Booker 453,455  
- Cate 495  
- Cato 453,455  
- Ceasar 516  
- Champion 495  
- Charles 449,454  
- Charlott 503  
- Chester 519  
- Chloe 334,502  
- Claris 297,366  
- Cloe 503  
- Clovey 516  
- Crilly 445  
- Cully 445  
- Daniel 336  
- Darby 356  
- David 502-503  
- Davy 454  
- Delilah 455  
- Dennis 455  
- Dice 366  
- Dick 449,495,516,565  
- Dill 275  
- Dilse 449  
- Dina 565  
- Dinah 454,516  
- Diner 516  
- Don 281  
- Dorcas 495  
- Drew 281  
- Duke 366  
- Eder 454  
- Edith 455  
- Edmund 516  
- Edy 453,456  
- Elick 281  
- Fann 524  
- Fanny 516  
- Flora 503  
- Floro 335  
- Frank 453,455  
- George 453,455  
- Gidion 449  
- Gilbert 495  
- Gloster 516  
- Gonder 565  
- Great Ned 335  
- Hamer 449  
- Hannah 403,449,453,455  
- 503,516,520  
- Harry 453,455  
- Hays 450  
- Isham 336  
- Ishmael 453,455

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages in the manuscript.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Newberry, Wiley</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Newland, William</td>
<td>582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Newman, Rebecca</td>
<td>442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel</td>
<td>437</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nicholas, John</td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>627</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nicholson, Fr.</td>
<td>587-588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Francis</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Niebecker, Konrad</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Niebuhr, Alvin</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gustav Rev.</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H. Richard Rev.</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Friedrich</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Alice Johnson</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reinhold Rev.</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Niebur, Alvin</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Marie</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>388-389</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louis</td>
<td>16, 139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Niedermeier, Anna</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christina Ils</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Ilsabein</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Niehage, August</td>
<td>153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nielle, Herr</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Niemann, Oscar</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nielman, Alma</td>
<td>15, 76-79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>82-83, 87, 596</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alma Adelma</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alwine</td>
<td>76-79, 83, 87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alwine Amanda</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Elisabeth</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Elisabeth</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reue</td>
<td>138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>August Oscar</td>
<td>10, 709</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bernhard</td>
<td>139-140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caroline</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W.F. &quot;Hanne&quot;</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christa</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christoph</td>
<td>16, 76, 83-84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139, 141</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dietrich Gustav</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edith</td>
<td>11, 27, 31, 72, 82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>84, 141, 770</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edith Kiel</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Florentine</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilhelmine</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frans Henrich</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Franz</td>
<td>265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Franz Henrich</td>
<td>138, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friederike</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friederike Lueking</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friedrich W.A.</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friedrich</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilhelmine</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edith</td>
<td>11, 27, 31, 72, 82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>84, 141, 770</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edith Kiel</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Florentine</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilhelmine</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frans Henrich</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Franz</td>
<td>265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Franz Henrich</td>
<td>138, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friederike</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friederike Lueking</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friedrich W.A.</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friedrich</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, ii and b.

Niemann, (cont) 80, 83-84
Walter Adolf 22
Wilhelm 79
Niewald, Albert 600
Anna Agneta 647
Casper 530, 646
Christina 605, 646
Christoph 646
Heinrich 646
Johann 646
Kurt 534
Trina 605
Niewalt, Pastor 667
Nieweg,
Conradine Louisa 237
Nihill, Mary 22
Niseus, Johann 605
Nisbet, John 338, 759
Niseus, Diederich 604
Nitz, Audrey 150
Nixon, Samuel 212
Noble, M.C.S. 427
Norval, B.F. 97
Harry L. 97
Norwood, John 426
Nowlin, James 567
Nueber, Agnes 600, 644
667-668
Anna Krug 666
Hans 673, 675, 678
Johann 644, 666, 674
Margarete -
Wendtelein 673
Melchoir 600
Michael 666, 673, 676
Nugent, Nell Marion 554
589, 620, 622, 628
Nuhn, Angelica v, 61, 88
147-149, 177, 179, 765
Anna 244
Anna C. 147, 150
Anna Christina 478
Anna Eva 392
Anna Katharina 316
Anna Margareta 153
Anna Margareta -
Baetz 276
Anna Margareta 244
Anna Martha 478
Anna-Margarethe 244
Barthold Hermann 548
611
Barthold Valentin 242

Conrad 149, 151, 153
. Elisabeth 242-243
. Gela 150, 244
. George Wilhelm 153
. Heinrich 478, 549
. Jacob 153, 244
. Jacob Rev. 88
. Johann Bartol 242
316-317, 327, 393
. Johann Heinrich 392
. 477-478
. Johann Hermann 478
. Johann Niklas 478
. Johann Valentin 243
. 316, 392-393, 397
. Johannes 153
. Katharin Elisabeth 243
. Katharina -
. Elisabeth 153
. Katharina -
. Elisabeth Biebe 316
. Konrad 477, 548, 611
. Margarethe 243
. Margarette 150
. Regina 392
. Valentin 397
. Wilhelm v, 242, 276
. Wm. 244
O'Neill, John 362
Oakley, Tho. 587
Oberschmidt, Friedrich S.C. 15
Odeneal, Bartley 347
Oehm, Elisabeth 392
. 477-478, 549
. Valentin 549
. Valentine 478
Oesly, Katherine 561
Oetzl, Frederick 754
Mary Jesse "Mamie" 754
Ohlendorf, Henrietta v
. Louis v
. Ludwig v
Oliver, Elizabeth 452
Robert 361
Oppenheim, E. Phillips 90
Ortmann, Michael 304, 306
377, 379, 640
. Ostwald, Margaret A. 37
728
Otenhausen,
Otenhausen, (cont)  
  Trina Aagnes  469,540  
  Ottemeier, Alwine  79  
  Augusta  79  
  Auguste  141  
  Carl  79,141,144  
  Karl  88  
  Otto, Cecilia  548  
  Cecilia "Zisa"  611  
  Conrad  392,477  
  Ebert  611,657  
  Maria Elisabeth  316  
  Marie Elisabeth  392  
  Outlaw, Mary V.  586  
  Rex C.  586  
  Overton, James  499  
  Owen, Brackett  451,516  
  Elizabeth  516  
  Emma Redinger  241  
  John  525  
  Samuel  129  
  Owens, John  367  
  Owins, John  368  
  Mary  368  

  Paddock, W.B.  323  
  Page, John  587  
  Pahn, Ann  231  
  Amalia Margarethe  304  
  Amalia Margareta  231  
  Anna Dorothea  306  
  Lois  306  
  Anna Malia  306  
  Anna Maria  306  
  Margarethe  306  
  Colon  306  
  Heinrich  379  
  Loise  306  
  Pahn, Carl  153  
  Palmer, C.P.  56  
  Edward  511  
  John  511  
  William P. Dr.  594  
  Panton, William  662  
  Pardeu, Joseph  427  
  Parish, Susan  215  
  Parker, Ann  488,557  
  Anne  570,631  
  Cecil  96  
  Katherine  557,617  

  Mary  557-558,570,617  
  Nora  631,633-634  
  Will  555,557,570,617  
  William  557-558,570  
  Parnall, Elizabeth  593  
  Parrish, Noel  57  
  Susan E.  211  
  Susan Elizabeth  130  
  Thomas  514  
  Partlow, John  129  
  M.A.  197  
  Pet  197

  Pate, Anthony  593-594  
  Edward  593-594  
  J.B. Prof.  521  
  Jacob  593  
  Jeremiah  521,593-595  
  Jerusha  521,593,595  
  John  593  
  Judith  453,519,521,593  
  M. A.  594-595  
  Margery  593-595  
  Martha Tinsley  593  
  Thomas  593  
  Patt, Deborah  189  
  Patterson, Ann  340  
  George D.  226  
  Mrs.  222,297-300,364  
  366-367,369,448,452  
  453,519,522,524,591  
  594  
  Rebecca Garrett  135  
  Pattillo, Anderson  358  
  Ann  358  
  Caroline  357,432  
  George  421,431,506  
  Henry  355,421,429,431  
  485,506  
  Henry Jr.  356,423  
  Henry Rev.  345,350,499  
  James  730  
  Jane  283,345,350,421  
  424,499,505-506  
  Jane Johnstone?  506  
  John  355

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, ii and B.

Pattillo, (cont)
- John Franklin 354
  357-358, 429, 432
- Mary 358, 429
- Mary "Milly" -
- Anderson 350
- Mary Anderson 199
- Mattie Janet 421
- Mildred 345, 429
- Milly 358, 429
- Rev. 353
- Samuel Rev. 421
- William 421, 431
- William Dr. 281
- William Johnstone 358

Patton, James 436

Patulloh, Robert 350

Paul, Anna Loetzerich 606
- Werner 606, 649
- Paulus, Anna Gertrud 474
  354
  354
  354
- Martha 544
- Werner 606
- Paup, Major 203
- Sarah 284
- Payne, G. 505
- John 502
- John Jr. 505
- Pegues, Claudius 332-333
- Pemberton, Mary 518
- Penick, Betsey 454
  456
- Charles 456
- Edward 456, 518-521
- Elizabeth 456, 518-519
  521
- Elizabeth "Betsy" 373
- Fanny 454
- Frances "Fanny" 373
- Henry Matthew 373
- Hope Ann 373
- Hopy 454
- Jeremiah 456
- Jerusha 373, 454, 456
- Josiah 373, 453-455
- Judith 225, 300, 372-373
  453-454, 456, 519
- Judith Pate 453, 594
- Judith Walker 373, 522
- Kezeah 454
- Keziah 373
- Lucy 373, 454
- Nancy 373, 454
- Nathaniel 373, 453, 455
- Nathl. 457
- Polly W. 454
- Polly Walker 373
- Sally B. 454
- Sarah B. "Salley" 373
- Tabitha 373, 454
- William 373, 454, 457
  519, 521
- William III 373
- William Jr. 453
- William Sr. 453, 518
  593
- Willis W. 457
- Penicks, Judith 520
- Penix, Chals 519-520
- Edward 519
- Elizabeth 520
- Jarushe 520
- Jeremyah 519-520
- Judah 520, 524
- Judith 521
- Will 520
- William 519, 521
- Willm 519
- Penn, William 579
- Peperkorn, Bill 731
- Lucille 731
- Perkins, Abram 619
- Nicholas 619
- Nicholas Sr. 567
- Perry, Edward 580-581
- Edward Jr. 581
- Ludy Wright 66
- Mary M. 581
- Person, William 425
- Peson, Joan 638
- Joanne 639
- John 640
- Margery 640
- Richard 640
- Peter, Hans 607, 651
- Margaretha 544
- Margarethe 607
- Peterson, Eda 145
- Gunnar 635, 663
- Petersson, Gunnar 571, 635
- Pethilloch, Adam 350
- Petifer, James Burl 70
  729
- Jamie Sue 70, 723
- Lattie (error) 9

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
Petifer, (cont)
- Lottie 7, 9-10, 723-724
- Lottie Garner 54
- Pettifer, Lottie 7
- Pettitt, Benjamin 349
- George 349
- Pettus
  - Elenor McGehee 449
  - Thomas 373, 450
- Pfeil, Johannes 149
  - 243-244
- Pastor 480-481
- Pfughaupt, Charlotte 319
- Pharr, Ida Mae 70
- Pickett, George 126
- William S. vi
- Pifer, Miss 666, 673
  - Moritz Pastor 532
  - Moritz Rev. 674, 676
- Piepert, Catharina 650
  - 670
- Curt 650, 670
- Pierce, Alpha 37
- Pinson, Jane 361
- Pippert, Gertrud 607, 650
  - Hans Kurt 238
  - John Halvorsen -
  - "Hal" 314
- Piltuck, Harry Harvey 695
  - Harry Harvey DDS 755
  - Jacob 755
- Ruth Lucille -
  - Underwood 695
- Sally 751
  - Sally Ruth 695, 699, 753
  - 755
- Samuel 755
- Shmuel 755
- Plassmeier, Carl 78
- Plassmeyer, Alma 15, 21, 79
  - Alma Niemann 596
  - Carl 22, 78-80
  - Carl-Adolf 79
  - Karl-Adolf 80
- Pleasant, Dorothy 567
  - John 554, 619
- Pleasants, Joseph 555, 567
  - 568
  - Thomas 502-503
- Plecke, Johann Franz 385
  - 470-471
- Sophia Ernestine 310
  - 385
- Plecken, Anna Maria 383

Pledge, Elizabeth 4
- Agnes 505, 567
- Ann 505, 567
- Archer 421, 502-503
- Bettie 55, 417, 420
- Bill 418, 502
- Dorothy 501, 567, 619
- Elisabeth 502
- Elizabeth vi, 345, 356
  - 409, 501, 505, 551
- Francis 417, 421
  - 502-503
- John 420, 505, 567
- John Jr. 501, 566
- John Sr. 501, 619
- Judith 505, 567
- Martha 409, 421, 502-503
  - 505, 567
- Mary 501, 505, 567
- Nicholas 501, 619-620
- Tabitha 505, 567
- William 409-410
  - 417-418, 501-503, 568
  - William Jr. 409, 421
  - Wm. 551
- Ploeger, Conrad Philip 140
- Plummer, Mary 662
- Peter 661-662
- Poindexter,
  - Elizabeth Pledge 4
  - Henry P. 346
  - Andrew 210
  - Ann 199, 210, 279, 283
  - 286, 325, 346, 353, 355
  - Ann Radford 349, 356
  - Archibald 349
  - Bettie 420
  - Bond Veale 417, 498-500
  - Catherine 417
  - Christian 499
  - Dorothy 350
  - Edward Haviland -
  - Ph. 283
  - 563
  - Elizabeth 349, 353, 417
  - 421, 483, 503, 562
  - Elizabeth Pledge vi
  - 345, 356, 483
  - Eugenie 417
  - Frances 417
  - Francis 201, 283-284
  - 345, 397, 411, 420, 499
  - 505

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Francis Alexander</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Francis Anderson</td>
<td>346,499</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George</td>
<td>283,352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George Jr.</td>
<td>362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H.P.</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harry</td>
<td>356</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hattie</td>
<td>409-410,417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry P.</td>
<td>213,286,345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry Pattillo</td>
<td>281,284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane</td>
<td>129,199-200,214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Pattillo</td>
<td>283,397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Pattillo</td>
<td>420,499,505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>499-500,562-565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John B.Dr.</td>
<td>283</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John George</td>
<td>349,414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha Milner</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Wentworth</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nimrod</td>
<td>409-410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert Alexander</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert Downs</td>
<td>283</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>349,409,499</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susanna</td>
<td>499,562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T.W.P.</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>283,345-346</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Pledge</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas W.</td>
<td>346</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas W.P.</td>
<td>414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Wentworth</td>
<td>505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas William</td>
<td>505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas William</td>
<td>417,505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thos.</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>416-417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Pledge</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poindexter</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pool,A.F.P.</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Port,Robert</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Porter,Esther</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Powel,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caro C. Cleveland</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Powers, Virginia</td>
<td>339,343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prasuhn, Minna</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pratt,Harden Dev.III</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prewitt, Rebecca</td>
<td>763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Price, Mary</td>
<td>456</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Pugh</td>
<td>456</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>520</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pride, John</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prier,John</td>
<td>366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Printz, Gov.</td>
<td>571,577</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prior, Martha</td>
<td>610</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pritchett, John</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prudden, Sarah</td>
<td>582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puls,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margretha Ilsabein</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puryear, Betty</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>203,205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R.C.</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R.C.Col.</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R.Col.</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard C.</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pulwella, Maria Ilsabe</td>
<td>530</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pulwelen, Ludolf</td>
<td>598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ludolph</td>
<td>644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maria Ilsabe</td>
<td>598,644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pyrant, Mary</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quinley, William</td>
<td>585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Radford, Ann</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ragland, Sam</td>
<td>499</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Raibone, Sarah</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ramage, Mr.</td>
<td>367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ramage, Mr.</td>
<td>367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rambo, Anders (Andrew)</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andrew</td>
<td>435,507,575</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann</td>
<td>361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barbara</td>
<td>296,359,433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beverly Nelson CDR</td>
<td>294</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brigitta</td>
<td>435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Britta</td>
<td>507,570</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CDR</td>
<td>296,506-507,570</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharine</td>
<td>360,508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christiana</td>
<td>361</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be found in the text as a, o, ii and b.
Rambo,(cont)
  . Deborah 364
  . Deborah Allen 294,359
  . Elias 435
  . Gertrude 508
  . Gunnar 508,575
  . Isaac 296
  . Jackson 296,360,364
  . Jacob 294,359,364,435
  . 507
  . Jacob Jr. 296
  . Jane 361
  . Johann Christian -
    . Adam 294
  . John 435,507-508,573
    . 575
  . Johnson "Sol" 296,364
  . Joseph 296,361
  . Lars "Lawrence" 361
  . Lydia 296
  . Madlena 507
  . Magdalena 361
  . Magdalena Skute 433
  . Magdalene 361
  . Margaret 215,222,287
    . 294,327,363,757
  . Maria 361
  . Peter 361,433,435
    . 506-507,573
  . Peter Gunnarson 91,294
    . 506,570,615,635,vi
  . Peter Jr. 508
  . Rebecca 296,362
  . Swain 436
  . Swan 359,361,433
  . Swan Jr. 433,436
  . Swen 507
  . William 361
  . Ramige,George Rev. 147
  . Rammage,Jean 368
  . Ramsbotham,
    . Francis H. 124
  . Ramsel,Ilseh 377
  . Ramseh,Ilseh 459
  . Ramsey,Runeth 516
  . Randolph,Hen. 630
    . Henry 662
    . William 631
    . William Capt. 350
    . Wm. 627,633
  . Rankin,Ruth 135
  . Rattcliffe,Abraham 490
    . 492-493
  . Rattcliff,Judith 493
  . Rea,Mary C. 284
  . Reade,Robt. 491
  . Rector,Benjamin 331
    . Catharine Taylor -
      . Robins 329
    . Catherine 331,400
    . Catherine Taylor -
      . Robins 192
    . Charles 331,401
    . Daniel 331
    . Daniel Jacob 401
    . Elizabeth 331
    . Frederick 331
    . Henry 331,401
    . Jacob 331,401
    . John 329,400-401
    . John Jr. 331
    . Lewis Rev. 192
    . William 272
  . Redd,Martha 516
  . Reddick,Osiah 425
  . Redford,Agnes 569
    . Alice Leich 621
    . Ann 420,501,505
    . 568-569
    . Ann Lawrence 569
    . Anne 623
    . Elizabeth 569
    . Francis 506,569,621
      . 623,627-628,630,661
    . Francis Jr. 621,624
    . John 505-506,567-568
      . 570,619,621,623-624
      . 626
    . John Jr. 569
    . John Sr. 569
    . Judith 621
    . Martha Milner 505,570
    . Mary 506
    . Milner 506
    . Robert 621
    . William 501,506
  . Redinger,
    . Elizabeth Gumbel 240
    . Emma Katharina 240
    . Ernst Otto 240
    . John 149
    . John Franklin 240
    . Mary 149
  . Reed,Mrs. 155
  . Reese,Elizabeth 297
  . Reeves,James M. 586
    . Lucinda 57
    . Reid,Babsy 297

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
Reid, (cont)
  John  344, 406
  Reidinger, John  149
  Mary  149
  Reith, John  406
  Reschke, Horst  769
  Reue, Anna Elisabeth  138
    . Anna Katharina
    . Elisabeth  230
    . Anna Katharine
    . Elisabeth  139
  Reusseus, Anna Agneta 604
    . Johann Rev.  647
    . Johannes  604, 668
  Reuter,
    . Anna Elisabeth 390, 475
    . 480
    . Anna Gela Webert 546
    . Conrad  475, 546, 550
  Revill, Janie  339
  Rhea, Mary C.  284
  Rhode, Anna Cathrina 536
    . Herr  538
  Rice, John Holt Mrs.  428
    . Mr.  500
  Ricenbaw cousins  86
  Richardson,
    . Mary A. "Polly"  121
    . Nancy  121
    . S.E.  56
  Richie, Marcie 362, 509
    . Marcie Ward  437
  Richter, Arthur  93
    . H. Master  72
    . Mr.  93
    . Wendy  120
  Ricketts, Elizabeth  512
  Ridder, Peter Holland 571
  Riding, Jesse  349
  Ridings, Jesse  349
    . Mary Poindexter  421
  Riebe, Kurt  667
  Riecks, Meyer Johann 532
  Riedemann, Elisabeth 611
    . 656
  Riessel, Tolbert  348
  Right, John  588
  Rising, Gov.
    . Johan Gov.  577
  Ritte, Anna Catharina 547
    . Curt  611, 656
  Ritter,
    . Anna Elisabeth -
    . Vollmar 241
    . Anna Martha Ittal 546
    . Conrad  315, 391
    . Dietmar  391, 476, 546
    . Elsabetha  477, 547
    . Johannes  241, 315-316
    . 327, 611
    . Sabina 145, 238, 241, 327
    . Sabine  769
  Rivers, David  92
    . Miss  55
  Roane, Archibald  291
    . Archibald Gov.  290
  Robb, H. Amanda  296
  Roberts, Mary  125
  Robertson, John Dr.  192
    . Mary Frances  405
    . Rachel Elizabeth  133
    . Randolph  706
    . Wil  595
    . William  400
    . Wm.  399
  Robin, Tom  594
  Robinson, Adaline  195
    . Ann  331, 400
    . Anna LaBruce  128
    . Anthony  399
    . Benjamin 272, 330, 401
    . Blackwell  187
    . Catharine  195, 272, 487
    . Catharine Taylor  329
    . Catherine  330, 399
    . Catherine Taylor  192
    . Christine  194
    . David  329, 331, 399, 401
    . Dorcas  272, 330
    . Eliza  257
    . Elizabeth  195
    . Elizabeth Ann  v
    . Elizabeth Benson  191
    . Elizabeth Caroline  128
    . Erasmus  194
    . Erasmus B.  128
    . Esther Benson  v, 129
    . Frances  331, 400
    . Hannah  272, 330
    . J.B.  165
    . Jane  399
    . Jane A.  129
    . Jesse  330
    . John vi, 191, 195, 257
    . 271, 330-331, 399
    . John B.  122, 165, 196
    . John B. Dr.  215

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be
indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
Robinson, (cont)
- John Blassingame v, 122
  - 196, 257
- John Blassingame
  - Dr. 54
  - 488
- John Dr. 122, 124, 127
  - 273
- Joseph vi, 194, 271
  - 329-331, 400-401
- Julia V.
  - 129
- Knox
  - 195
- Lucy
  - 330
- Margaret
  - 195
- Martha
  - 271, 329-330
- Mary A.
  - 197-198
- Mary Adaline
  - "Polly" 129
- Mary Jane
  - 3, 54, 99, 130
  - 214, 753
- Mary W.
  - 57
- Maximillian
  - 272, 330
- Mildred
  - 195, 272
- Mildred Lindsey
  - "Minn" 129
- Molly
  - 272, 330
- Nancy
  - 271- 272, 330
- Peggy
  - 272, 330
- Sarah C."Sallie"
  - 129
- Sarah Smith
  - vi, 272
- Smith
  - 195
- William
  - 273
- William
  - 122, 195-196
  - 272, 329-331, 399-400
  - 401, 487
- William Bilikin
  - 122
- William Wickliffe
  - 129
- William Wycliffe
  - 124
  - 127
- Willis
  - 195
- Willis Dr. 126, 128, 194
- Wm.
  - 400
- Robison, E.
  - 257
- Rocker, Val
  - 86
- Rode, Barbara
  - 550, 614
- Roehr, Arend
  - 532
- Roehrs, Joyce Dawn
  - 764
- Roemer, Adam
  - 391, 476
- Anna Elisabeth
  - 315, 391
- Rogers, Ada
  - 92
- Eunice
  - 364
- Mr.
  - 187
- Rohls, Ted
  - 24
- Rohmeier,
- Gret Ilsabein
  - 383
- Rohrbach, Conrad
  - 316
- Johann Heinrich
  - 316
- Rongnion, Vincent
  - 287
- Rose, Affia
  - 212
- F.S.
  - 281
- Francis
  - 357
- Robert
  - 582
- Rousemeier,
  - Wilhelmine
    - Katherin 384
  - Christoffel
    - 467, 538
  - Christophel
    - 466
  - Herman Christoph
    - 384
  - 466-467, 538-539
  - Herman Henrich
    - 384
  - Hermann Heinrich
    - 309
  - Johan Peter
    - 466
  - Johann Peter
    - 467-468
    - 538
  - Margarethe Becker
    - 538
  - Maria
    - 234
  - Wilhelmine
    - Katherine 234
  - Wilhelmine
    - Katherin 309
- Ross, Adaline
  - 195
- Mary
  - 510
- Mr.
  - 447
- Z.C.
  - 218
- Rounsaville, B.C.
  - 282
- Royley, John
  - 587
- Ruddell, John
  - 443-444
- Ruddollesen, John
  - 437
- Rudy, W.A.
  - 219-220
- Ruegge, Friedrich
  - 385
- Rundels, Richard
  - 442
- Runnion, Barefoot
  - 291
  - Tavenor
    - 291
- Runyan, Aaron
  - 292
- Aaron Alexander
  - 221
- Albert C.
  - 65
- Andrew
  - Jefferson "Dutch" 70
- Barefoot
  - 91
- Benjamin
  - 133
- Deborah
  - 221
- Elisha
  - 287
- Eliza
  - 133
- Elizabeth
  - 133
- Frank
  - 219-220
- Franklin
  - 133
- Henry
  - Franklin "Frank" 70

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
Runyan, (cont)

- I.N. 220-221
- Isaac 132, 215, 263
- 292-293
- Isaac Barefoot 215-216
- 222, 287, 295, 363
- Isaac Newton 133, 218
- Isaac Wesley "Ike" 70
- Isaac "Barefoot" 757
- J.W. 169, 219-221
- Jane 8, 62, 65, 101
- Jefferson Wesley 67, 69
- 132, 167, 169
- John 293
- John Archibald 70
- John Wesley 221, 291
- 293, 758
- Loami Wesley 221, 295
- M.J. Miss 58
- Marcus 221, 290
- Margaret 221, 288, 293
- Margaret Rambo 222, 327
- 363
- Marie 59, 69, 167
- Marion 133
- Mary 221
- Mary Lowery 263
- Minerva 65, 133
- Minerva Hillsman 222
- Minerva
- Hillsman Huston 167
- 169
- Minerva Jane 101
- Minerva Jane
- Elizabeth 69
- 753
- Newton Houston 70
- Orabelia Mary 69-70
- Permelia
- Caroline "Kate" 70
- Tavenor 221, 288, 290
- 295
- Thomas 566
- Thomas J. 133, 217-218
- Thomas
- Jackson "Jack" 70
- Virginia Caroline 133
- Ware 221-222, 293
- Wear 216
- Wes 65, 133, 136, 218
- William 222, 292-293
- William F. 70
- William J. 133
- Wist. 219
Schaefer, (cont)

- 390-391,395

Johann Justus 315,317
- 390-391

Johannes 238,241

Kaspar 390

Schaob, Christine 98

Scheffer, Adam 657,671

Anna 611,657

Caspar 475,480

Johann Justus 390

Kaspar 390,475,480

Ursula 658

Schemel, Anna Catherina 230

Schemmel, 

- Louysa Margarethe 472

- Sophia 472

- Sophia Elisabeth 542

- Sophie Elisabeth 542

Schiepper, Arend 465

Schiereinker, Ilsa 663

Ilse 642

Schilling,

- Johann Gottfried 244

- Millie 22

- Alice 98,160

- Alvin 93,96,98,155-156

- 160,162

- Anna Dorothea -

- Lueder 317

- Anna Dorothee -

- Jacobs 245

- Anne Elisabeth 249

- Bernice 94

- C.Mrs. 768

- Carl August -

- Hermann 153

- Clara 22,767

- Conradine 94,185

- 766-767,770

- Conradine Krome vi,181

- 183

- Dena 181

- G. 269

- Godfrey 766

- Gottfried 94,158,269

- 767-768

- Gottfried Erdmann 245

- 317

- Gottlieb 251,766

- Grandmother 22

- Hans 395,480

- Henry 95

- Herman 93, vi, 153,181

- 183,185,245,248-249

- 251,269,765-766-767

- 770

- J. 156,269

- Joachim 317

- Joachim Gottfried 153

- 244

- Joanna 766

- Johann Gottfried 153

- Johanna 158,247,250

- 269,766-767

- Johanna Schulz 768

- John 159-160

- Kornadine 162

- Louy 159-160

- Ludwig 245,247

- Mildred 93

- Millie 89,91,93,111

- 117,160,252,753

- Nicolaus 317,395

- Oscar 94,96,98,155-156

- 162

- Oskar 160

- Othilie 250

- Ottiele 249

- Ottielie 153-154,158

- 245-247,250,767

- Robert 22,93-94,98

- 153-156,158,160,162

- 245-251,766-767-768

- Sophie Dorothee 480

- Sophie Friederike 249

Schimidt, Lina 103

Schlichting, 

- Anna Maria Ilsabei 376

- Ilsabein Mensenkam 376

- Johann 376

Schlichting, 

- Johann Cord 376

- Anna Maria -

- Ilsabein 303

- 375,380

- Johann 458,460

Schlotzawer, Anna Eva 394

- Anna Maria 394

- Johann Balthaser 394

- Johann Conrad 394

- Valentin 394

Schmidt, Anna 86,141,143

- 237

- August 10,79,82-83,88

- 141,143,313

- Aunt 16-18,27,76

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, ii and B.

Schmidt, (cont)
  . Bill 73
  . Carolina "Lina" -
  . Ilsabein 468
  . Lina 11, 19, 77, 79, 83
  . 85-87, 141, 144
  . Lina Grolm 175, 237
  Schmied, Anna Gertrud 545
  . Anna Catharina 396
  . Anna Maria 319
  . Erdmann 396
  . Seger, Erdmann 481
  . Self, Joyce 280
  . Senke, Meyer Johann 532
  . Seybold, M.L. Rev. 710
  . Shaha, Laura 7
  . Shanda, Cherry Suggs 121
  . Shue, Richard 587
  . Shell, Peter 439, 441
  . Shelton, John 502
  . Shepard, John 618
  . Sherwood, Rebecca 582
  . Shirley, Nora 37
  . Shresberry, Mr. 500
  . Shrewsberry, Elizabeth 565
  . Shrewsbury, Mr. 500
  . Shurtleff, Nathaniel B. 363
  . Siebold, Lena 144
  . Luise 73
  . Siegel, Gustav 600
  . Siekhans, Anna Maria Sophie 237
  . Anna Maria Sophie 313
  . Siervet, Hermann Heinrich 384
  . Simpson, R.W. 126
  . Singleton, Mrs. 354
  . Skute, Aremgot Garretson 508
  . Christina 508
  . Johan 508
  . Magdalena 433, 507-508
  . Sven 571
  . Sven Capt. 508
  . Sven Svensson 577-578
  . SIlarkes, Katherine 636
  . Sled, Joshua 492
  . Sloan, Sarah M. 199
  . Thomas M. 198
  . Sloane, Sally 282
  Small, Lucille Isabelle 59, 62
  . Small, Prudence 758
  . Smalley, Joshua 758
  . Smathers, Henry 761
  . Smathers, Barbara 760
  . Smidt, Peter 157
  . Smith, Alba 498, 500
  . Barb 730
  . Daniel D. 218

A person’s name and his or her spouse’s name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
Smith, (cont)

. Duane H. DDS 711
. Duane H. Dr. 618,732
. Duane Harry DDS 764
. Eleanor 516
. Elizabeth 566
. Harry E. 732
. Jno. 440
. John 584
. John B. 428
. Jonathan 516
. Jonathon 451
. Joseph vi,191,271
. Juanita 719
. Mary Borum 445
. Mr. 370
. Myron 719,730
. Paul 498,500
. Pauline Wochner 732
. Richard 719
. Samuel 429
. Sarah vi,191,195,271
. Stephen A. 121
. Snead, John 499-500,566
. Susana 565-566
. Susanna Poindexter 499
. Sneed, John 499
. Soane, Wm. 627
. Soelter, Susanna 495
. William 405
. Soelter, Johan 473
. Sonnsochein, Heinrich 245
. Sorrels, Polly 212
. Southerland, Frances 456
. Philemon 373
. Southward, Thomas 580
. Speares, Mr. 405
. Spears, Ann 495
. Anne 404,497
. Speckman, Johann Joachim 232
. Speer, Frances 201,208
. 214,279-280,282,285
. Frances White 199,337
. Mrs. 340
. Speidel, P. Rev. 10,73
. Spratlin, James 522
. Springer, Charles 573
. Spurrier, Lillian White 90
. Mildred 90
. Velma 90
. Staackmann, Johann Hermann 472

Stafford, Elizabeth 593
. James 403
. Stanfill, Taylor Rev. 57
. Starke, Simon Henrich 385
. Starkweather, Charles 716
. Starky, Mary 399
. Stegge, Thos. Capt. 661
. Stein, Christina 149
. Steinhage, Bernd 668
. Stephen, Maria 396
. Mr. 396
. Steven, Anna 528
. Anna Maria 526,596
. Stewart, Evelyn 730
. Marvin 730
. Stieglitz, Anna 606,649
. Elizabeth 544-545,606
. Johannes 606,649,653
. Stille, Herr 307
. Stille, Gertrude 508
. John 508
. Stillwell, Susan 273

Stirtz, Elizabeth Mary 764
. Stoakes, Christopher 593
. Elizabeth 593
. Stock, Anna Catharina 538
. Stock, Anna Cathrina 536
. Anna Maria 466
. Anna Marie -
. Elisabeth 466
. Anna Sophia -
. Elisabeth 383
. 466
. Christian 235
. Greta Ilsabe -
. Arning 474
. Johan Henrich 466
. Johann Christian 466
. 536
. Johann Herm 466
. Martin 384
. Simon Henrich -
. Adolph 466
. Sophia 465
. Stocker, John 92
. Stohlmann, Ernst 754
. Lorraine Regina 687
. 754
. Stokes, Durward T. 350
. 421
. Stonestreet, Edward 280

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stonestreet, (cont)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| Elisha            | 280  
| Strook            |  
| Johann Christian  | 466  
| Mr.               | 536  
| Straing, Elizabeth| 567  
| Mr.               | 505  
| Stratton, Edward  | 617, 635  
| Henry             | 502  
| Sarah             | 502  
| Streiff, Anna     | 16  
| Anna Schmidt      | 86, 237  
| Henry             | 141, 143  
| John              | 16, 20  
| John A.           | 32, 37, 237  
| John August       | 143  
| Opal              | 20  
| Peggy             | 141, 144, 730  
| Strickland,       |  
| Berry Thomas      | 132  
| Mattie A.         | 211, 215  
| Struckhold, Diderich | 680  
| Geske             | 681  
| Struckholt, Diderich | 681  
| Geske             | 679  
| Struebig,         |  
| Maria Christine   | 320  
| Marie Christine   | 253  
|               | 321  
| Stuckmann, Ermgard | 642  
| Studemann, Ludwig | 245  
| Stuyvesant,       |  
| Peter Gov.        | 571  
| Sublett, Susanna  | 404, 497  
| Sublett, William  | 405  
| Sublette, Mary Louise | 729  
| Suelewold,        |  
| Catharina Margreta | 470  
| Suellwold,        |  
| Adolph Gustav     | 144  
| Amalie            |  
| W.F. "Minnie"    | 145  
| Anna              | 19  
| Caroline          | 81  
| Catharina Margreta | 385  
| Conrad Adolph     | 144  
| Conradine         |  
| Florentine        | 237  
| Conradine L.F.K.  | 145  
| Friedrich Arnold  | 235  
| Friedrich Arnold  |  
| Chr               | 143  
| 235-236, 310-311  |  
| Friedrich August  | 144  
| Friedrich Wilhelm | 235  
| Gustav Karl       | 145  
| Heinrich Rudolf   | 144  
| Henriette Luise   | 141  
| Hermann Friedrich | 145  
| Hermann Heinrich  | 144  
| Johann Cordt      | 470  
| Johann Friedrich  | 310  
| 385, 470          |  
| Johann Friedrich  |  
| Wil              | 310  
| 311, 385         |  
| Johann Heinrich   | 466  
| Johanna           | 141, 237  
| 385, 470          |  
| Johanna           |  
| Henriette Lu      | 175  
| 173              |  
| Johanne           |  
| Henriette Lu      | 143  
| Johanne           |  
| Johanna           |  
| Henriette Lu      | 175  
| Johanna           |  
| Johanne           |  
| Marie Louise      |  
| Auguste           | 145  
| Moritz Eduard     | 145  
| Wilhelm August    | 145  
| Suellwoldsmeyer,  |  
| Cordt             | 385  
| Suellewold        |  
| Arnold Friedrich  |  
| Chri              | 235  
| Suellwoldsmeyer,  |  
| Johann Cordt      | 470  
| Suggs, Cherry     | 121  
| Sullwald, Henriette | 85  
| Sullwald, Corliss | 144  
| Summers, Richd    | 587  
| Sumner, David     | 426  
| Jethro            | 425  
| Theodorus         | 493  
| Svensson, Jacob   | 578  
| Svensson, Sven    | 635  
| Swafford, Sallye  | 69  
| William Marion    | 69  
| Swann, Thompson   | 525  
| Thomson           | 526  
| Swift, Esther     | 579  
| Swofford,         |  
| William Marion    | 69  
| Syler, Allen      | 208  
| Sylvester, Richard| 583  

* A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tackett,</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tackett, George Washington</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tackett, Pauline</td>
<td>729</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tackett, John</td>
<td>624</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tackett, John Lt. Col.</td>
<td>624</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tackett, Sarah</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tan, Richd</td>
<td>520</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tankersley, Martha Delia</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tanne, John</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tarleton, Gen</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Anne</td>
<td>401,487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Anne Catherine</td>
<td>192,399,401</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Charles</td>
<td>400-401,487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Charles Jr.</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Hannah</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Mrs.</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Sarah Knox</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Wm. H</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Zachary Pres.</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Teague, Evon Allen</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Teatter, Margreet</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tellmann, Ella Erne F.W.</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tempel, Gustav</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tempel, Gustave</td>
<td>86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Templeton, John</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terry, Jane</td>
<td>64,69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terry, Martha Jane</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terry, Mary</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terry, Samuel</td>
<td>293</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terry, William</td>
<td>64,69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetter, Mr.</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thacker, C.C.</td>
<td>588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Angelika</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Angelika 316-317,393</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Angelika 393,479</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Angelika 479,549</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Angelika 549</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Elisabeth</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Elisabeth 317</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Elisabeth 393,479</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Elisabeth 479,549</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Elisabeth 549</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Johannes</td>
<td>393,479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Johannes 393,479</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thamer, Michael</td>
<td>479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thilen, Catharina</td>
<td>642</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thode, Ernest</td>
<td>653,655</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas, Anna</td>
<td>395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas, Anna Bettye</td>
<td>716,732</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas, Anna Carl</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas, Anna Clyde</td>
<td>716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas, Anna Ehrman</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas, Anna Emma Flora</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. George</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. J.C.</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. J.J.</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mr.</td>
<td>511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Richard Curtis</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Theodore</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Thomasilton</td>
<td>729</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. James Milton</td>
<td>729</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sue</td>
<td>7,9-10,723</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ann Christopher</td>
<td>433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Elijah</td>
<td>213,286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. J.</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>133,220-221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John Rev.</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. W.</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Wm.</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. William</td>
<td>346</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Thrasher, Rebecca</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Mary Elizabeth</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Tidball, John C.</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Tihlen, Catharina</td>
<td>664</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Timpe, Alma Kuen</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Veronika 13,78,246,386</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 471,528,530,533-534</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 598,600,665</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Tinsley, Martha</td>
<td>593-594</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Tisdale, Alfred Andrew</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Fanney</td>
<td>372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Todd, Mr.</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Tofall, Ilsa</td>
<td>672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ilsabein</td>
<td>671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ilsabel</td>
<td>664,672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Ilse</td>
<td>664,671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Sophie &quot;Fige&quot;</td>
<td>671,675</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Topp, Mildred Spurrier</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Torrey, Clarence Almon</td>
<td>584</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Tosspenn, Anton</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Townes, Eliza Paul</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. 323</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Samuel</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Townes, William</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Travers, Elizabeth</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Giles</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. John</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Million</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Raleigh</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Rawleigh</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. Trent, Henry</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner  
by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as a, o, u and b.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Trieschmann, Anna Martha</td>
<td>476-477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trieschmann, Johannes</td>
<td>477,547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Triplett, Daniel</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trischmann, Anna Gertrud</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Schmie 545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Anna Martha 391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Curt 475,544-545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Eckhard 545,609</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Elisabeth 389,475</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trueman, Aggy Joseph</td>
<td>449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Truman, Harry S Joseph</td>
<td>451,516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tryon, William Gov.</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tucker, Louisa Nancy</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy Caroline Pinckney C.</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>122</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tuggle, John</td>
<td>454-455,457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy Susan L. Susan T.</td>
<td>454</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tullock, Vincent</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tupper, Edward W. Turley, Jacob</td>
<td>360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rebekah</td>
<td>360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Turner, Goodwife Sarah</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Turpin, Thomas Thos.</td>
<td>404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tyner, Larry</td>
<td>273,331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Underwood, Cliva Rhura Rev.</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joel David</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ruth Lucille</td>
<td>695,755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>502</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Undset, Sigrid Upton, Margt.</td>
<td>576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Utley, Dianne Boram</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Boram Jacob</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr.</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vagedas, Herr Ilsabe</td>
<td>679,681</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VanSant, Dr. Vaughan, Ann</td>
<td>678,680</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>87</td>
<td>155-156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S.F.</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vaughn, America B. Henry</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joannah Borum</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel Fetherson</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vaupel, Anna Martha</td>
<td>390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Veal, Bond Lydia Morris</td>
<td>476,480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Verbell, John Verrell, Peter</td>
<td>319</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Verrell, John Vietmeier, Adolph Chr. Hermann</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vincent, John Voigt, Anna Maria 309,384</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Marie 384,469 Franz 385</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hans 469,540,605 Hermann Christoph 469</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martin 540,605,647 Voickel, Elisabeth 610</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Voigt, Anna Maria 309,384 Anna maria 384</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herman Christoph 384 Volkering, Heinrich Eberhard 462</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>528-529 Volkhausen, Wilhelmine Louysa 472</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vollmar, Anna Elisabeth 241,316 Johann Heinrich 477</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Henrich 547 Johannes 241,316,392 477</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maria Elisabeth Otto 316 Sabina 241</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vollmer, Johannes Volmar, Johannes Volmer, Johannes 397</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VonBruchhausen, Georg Philip 535 Henrich 535</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karl Friedrich 236 VonGrothe, Junker Heinrich 532</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VonRinteln, Marie Elsebein 596 642-643</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VonTessin, Brigite Vorhaar, Friedrich Arnold 235</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Wadeny, Ronal.</td>
<td>588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wadly, Thomas</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wagstaff, Basil</td>
<td>492</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wagstaffe, Basil</td>
<td>492</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walbert, Rev.</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waldrum, Grace</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walker, Agatha</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benjamin</td>
<td>522, 524-525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry</td>
<td>522, 524-525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>457, 522, 525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joel</td>
<td>522, 525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>373, 449, 453, 456</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith Baker</td>
<td>449, 456</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judy</td>
<td>521-522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucy</td>
<td>522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Madalen Burton</td>
<td>449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Magdalen Burton</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N.W.</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pauline</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter</td>
<td>522, 525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert</td>
<td>522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robt. M. Capt.</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>373, 449, 457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah H.</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tandy</td>
<td>403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Virginsea</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warren</td>
<td>449, 457, 522-523</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>449-450, 456</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>521-522, 525</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wall, Ethelred</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wallace, John</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walls, Desmond</td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walper,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Justus Daniel Rev.</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walthall, John</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walton,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Taylor</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eunice Rogers</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harriet Benson</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Homer Goode</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith McGehee</td>
<td>449-450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simeon Jr.</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simion</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wambach, Elisabeth</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elsa</td>
<td>655, 671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jacob</td>
<td>655, 671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ward, Henry</td>
<td>452</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sevin</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simon</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warham, Katherine</td>
<td>617, 634</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warner, Dr.</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pauline Pearce</td>
<td>629</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Jr.</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warren, Mary Bondurant</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watkins, Elizabeth</td>
<td>593</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F.</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joseph</td>
<td>593</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margery</td>
<td>515, 591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>591-592</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>593</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watson, Don Dr.</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Don H. Ph.D.</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>489</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waugh, Ann</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wayne, John</td>
<td>297</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wear, Sam</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weatherford, Sarah</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm.</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weaver, Anne</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drusilla</td>
<td>516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary McGehee</td>
<td>449-450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Moore</td>
<td>451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Webb, Ann</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Giles</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>426</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weber, Anna</td>
<td>656-657</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm.</td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weber, Anna Gela</td>
<td>475, 546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weferling,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorothee</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friederike</td>
<td>319</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>320</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Heinrich</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wehner, Christine</td>
<td>767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christine Clara</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wehrmann,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Catharine</td>
<td>460, 527</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Friedrich</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weimann, Karl Prof. Dr.</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weismueller, Guetta</td>
<td>613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>658</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huetta</td>
<td>613, 658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wemhoff, Amelia</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wendel, Christine</td>
<td>613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elisabeth</td>
<td>548, 611, 613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinrich</td>
<td>613</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.
### The Ancestors of Two Brothers: Thomas Earl Garner & Robert Paul Garner by Lila Niemann Garner

German names containing the letters ae, oe, ue and ss in the index may be found in the text as ä, ö, ü and ß.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Wendelin</td>
<td>675, 678</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jacob</td>
<td>657</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jakob</td>
<td>613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Katharina</td>
<td>613, 657</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wenderoth, Adam</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heinrich</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wendleit, Margarete</td>
<td>673</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wentworth, Elizabeth</td>
<td>410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wessels, Sophie</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Supt.</td>
<td>534</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Westfield, John</td>
<td>275, 334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert</td>
<td>275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whight, James</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White, Archibald</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barbara Ellenberger</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caleb</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frances</td>
<td>199, 337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James Gen.</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lillian</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ruth</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vachal M.</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>439, 441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>443-444</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whitner, Mrs.</td>
<td>277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whittier, John Greenleaf</td>
<td>i11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whitton, Wm.</td>
<td>587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wicke, Angelika</td>
<td>391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angelika &quot;Engel&quot;</td>
<td>477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Catharina</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ritte</td>
<td>547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharina</td>
<td>611, 655-656</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cecelia</td>
<td>655</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Engel</td>
<td>391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ernst</td>
<td>547, 611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herbert</td>
<td>145-146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Jost</td>
<td>477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>547-548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jutta</td>
<td>145-146, 239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs.</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simon</td>
<td>611, 655-656</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wicker, Fenton</td>
<td>490</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wickliffe, W.E.</td>
<td>277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William E.</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wiegardt, P.H.</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wiernbach, Herman</td>
<td>156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wiese, Wilhelm</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilber, Benjamin</td>
<td>438</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilde, Elfriede</td>
<td>530, 598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>603-604</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A person's name and his or her spouse's name may be indexed only once in his or her own biography, although their names appear on several pages.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Range</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Wolf, (cont)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharina Wolf</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antonin Dr.</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caspar</td>
<td>599</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharina Dorothee</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharina</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margarete</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Conrad</td>
<td>381-382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pauline</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolfe, Doris Mae</td>
<td>687,695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Merritt W.</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolff,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Catharine</td>
<td>462</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorothee</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Maria</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharine</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Marie</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharine</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caspar</td>
<td>530,598,643-644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharina Mueller</td>
<td>598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catharine Dorothee</td>
<td>308, 381,462</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Conrad</td>
<td>308,464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>529,599-600</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Conrad Jr.</td>
<td>462</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Conrad Sr.</td>
<td>462</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kasper</td>
<td>598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rudiger</td>
<td>598,643</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolter, Christian</td>
<td>319</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Womack, Abraham</td>
<td>488,555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>629</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Capt.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>409</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Val</td>
<td>639</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodson, Ann</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles</td>
<td>502</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>David Jr.</td>
<td>342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drusilla</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jno.</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha</td>
<td>342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susn</td>
<td>503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tucker</td>
<td>505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ursely</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wooley, James E.</td>
<td>193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wooten, Ida C.</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ida Clingman</td>
<td>211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Worszyzlski, Benjamin</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mordachai</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sora-Riva</td>
<td>755</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wright, Alice</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evaline</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harold Bell</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ludy</td>
<td>10,66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margaret Ada</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marie Runyan</td>
<td>59,69,167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>757</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr.</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs.</td>
<td>216,287,290,293-295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rhoda</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Willis Alexander</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wyatt, Harvey</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wynne, Major</td>
<td>594</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yates, Harry Eugene</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucille Isabelle</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Small</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Young, Henry</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Phoebe</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stark</td>
<td>763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susan</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zaneis, Leah</td>
<td>149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zimmer, Caroline</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zoll, Barthol</td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Barthol</td>
<td>614,658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johannes</td>
<td>658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jost</td>
<td>658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Magdalena</td>
<td>478,549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Magdalena Giesel</td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zuch, Friedrich</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zulauf, Ann Catharina</td>
<td>390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Catharina</td>
<td>315,395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna Catharine</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conrad</td>
<td>476,480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johannes</td>
<td>476,546,550</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In case a name is not found on the page indicated, always look on the next page. There's a chance I forgot, while indexing, to insert the next page number when I turned the page.